



DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 02

Su Yue Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

Su Yue Xi

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 101 – Found A Secret Treasure

That same night, the moon was shining brightly in the sky. Moonlight sprinkled down like silver grains. Within the courtyard, Yan Chen Yu was laying in Jiang Chen's arms while appreciating the moonlight. Right at that moment, a phantom-like figure suddenly came from afar. In just a split second, it landed in front of Jiang Chen and Yan Chen Yu. This phantom-like figure was none other than Big Yellow.

“Puppy dog, where did you go?”

Upon seeing Big Yellow arrive, Yan Chen Yu immediately became happy.

“Pooh, damn it, those idiots from the Heavenly Sword Sect tried to catch me, their father? They haven't even looked into the mirror to see what they look like! An awesome being like me is not someone who can be caught easily!”

Big Yellow spat out and raised his head with pride. Then he looked at Jiang Chen with satisfaction, “Kid, not a bad performance today, I never expected you to have so much guts! You really made me, your father, have a new level of respect towards you!”

“Fuck off.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Big Yellow. This fellow, besides his evil-mind, there was only was his narcissism.

“You asked Xiao Yu to tell me there’s some treasure in this Whirling Sun City, what treasure?”

Jiang Chen couldn’t wait any longer and asked. He didn’t follow Han Yan and the rest back to the Black Sect all because of the treasure that was mentioned by Big Yellow.

“I also do not know what it is, but I can feel the place where that treasure is hidden. It is right within a wasteland behind the Whirling Sun City, and my feeling is definitely not wrong. Besides, since that treasure can be sensed by me, it is definitely going to be an extraordinary one!”

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up.

Looking at how Big Yellow was behaving, Jiang Chen couldn’t help but laugh. A treasure that can make Big Yellow behave like this was surely something extraordinary.

“Then what are we waiting for? Let’s hurry up and find it.”

Jiang Chen urged. In his past life, he had seen all kinds of treasures, but now everything had changed. He was so poor that he had to start gathering all his treasures again.

“What’s the rush? Give me, your father a cup of tea, I’m tired.”

Big Yellow acted like a human and sat down on a stool standing next to the stone table. He was waiting for Jiang Chen to serve him tea.

Jiang Chen grabbed Big Yellow's ear and pulled him up from the stool, "You damn dog, I gave you some light and then you started glowing. I showed you some respect, then you started acting like a master. What kind of damned dog drinks tea?"

Jiang Chen knew this dog very well. He was one who absolutely couldn't be spoiled. The evil-minded dog never knew the meaning of give him an inch, and he'll want a mile.

"Ruff, damn you, let your father go!"

Big Yellow showed his teeth and was thrown a few feet away by Jiang Chen. In the end, he unwillingly led Jiang Chen out from the courtyard and started walking towards the north side of Whirling Sun City.

"Can't even let me have a cup of tea, you're inhuman!"

"Asking I, your father to help you find treasure, but you don't even show any respect for I, your father, fuck!"

"Little bastard, when there's a chance, I will definitely bite your butt into dozens of pieces!"

.....

Along the way, Big Yellow kept muttering. This was his method of trying to release his dissatisfaction. Jiang Chen and Yan Chen Yu weren't bothered by him, they just followed behind.

The trio were walking a pretty remote path, that's why they didn't bump into anyone along their way. This was much better, as it would save them from unwanted trouble.

At the north side of the Whirling Sun City, there was a huge wasteland that was both desolate and uninhabited. This was a deserted area, and on a normal day, people would rarely come here. This deserted area was very big, it covered more than 20 miles of area in diameter. There were some buildings within the area, but they looked old and were in pretty bad shape.

This place made Jiang Chen think of the wasteland area within Fragrant Sky City. That place was where he had been reborn. There, he had been captured by two guards of the Jiang family that were trying to take his blood. It could be said that Jiang Chen's new life was birthed from a wasteland similar to this one.

"Puppy dog, are you sure this is the right place? A deserted area like this, how could a treasure exist here?"

Yan Chen Yu furrowed her brows.

"My senses are never wrong! The treasure must be residing within this area. Now that we have arrived here, my senses are much clearer!"

Big Yellow said in a firm manner.

“What Big Yellow said is right. I can sense some sort of a defense mechanism in this area. A deserted area like this shouldn’t have any defense mechanisms. But, if the defense mechanism is there to hide the treasure, then it would make sense.”

Jiang Chen said.

Big Yellow stared at Jiang Chen with a surprised expression, “What kind of a monster are you? You can sense the defense mechanism by just standing here? I, your father, found the place only because of the treasure’s smell, I have yet to sense any defense mechanisms!”

The way Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen now, was different from before. Defense mechanisms were something very abstruse, it was not something that just anyone could set up. Even if it was the simplest defense mechanism, it required someone at the Heavenly Core realm in order to set it up. Jiang Chen was only a Mortal Core warrior, and his Divine Sense had supposedly just awakened, so why was it that he could sense such an advanced thing as the defense mechanism?

“Big Bro Jiang Chen can do anything! He just sensed the defense mechanism, no big deal!”

Yan Chen Yu looked at Jiang Chen with admiration.

“Love-struck fool.”

Big Yellow wasn't bothered by Yan Chen Yu. When women fall in love, they lose reason.

“That's it. While the sky is still dark, let's hurry and search around, I want to see what kind of treasure exists within this wasteland.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen moved his legs and started walking towards the inner area of the wasteland.

With Jiang Chen's ability to sense the defense mechanism and Big Yellow's ability to sense treasure, the trio walked to the front of an old, damaged building in the center of the wasteland.

The building in front of them looked like a ruined temple. There were countless holes in the walls, some of wooden pillars had turned black and had been rotting for an unknown amount of time. A pungent smell came from within the building, making the trio furrow their brows.

“What a bad smell.”

Yan Chen Yu had the most difficulty enduring this smell.

“All the buildings here have decayed badly. Looks like it's been a

long amount of time since anyone came here. There's a defense mechanism within this building, let's go check it out."

Jiang Chen said.

"That's right, the treasure is in this ruined temple, I can't be wrong!"

Big Yellow said in a firm manner before they started walking into the ruined temple.

The scenery inside the ruined temple was similar to the scenery outside. Damage and decay could be seen everywhere. The dust on the floor reached their ankles, and there was even dust falling down from the wall. Aside from this, there was nothing else within the ruined temple.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's vision landed on the same spot, a broken door. Obviously, this was the place that Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had been searching for.

Big Yellow then said, "The treasure is inside there! There really is a defense mechanism outside the door."

Jiang Chen's eyes started glowing. A bright beam shot out from his eyes and fell onto the broken door. Ripples immediately appeared on the door.

"A defense mechanism set by a Divine Core warrior."

Jiang Chen said. If this was his past life, destroying this kind of defense mechanism would just require him to raise his hand. But now, it was going to take some effort.

“Don’t tell me this is a treasure left behind by a Divine Core warrior?”

Yan Chen Yu was surprised. Who would have ever thought that this wasteland would be hiding a Divine Core warrior’s secret treasure?

“Impossible, it can’t be that simple. If it was a treasure left behind by a Divine Core warrior, it wouldn’t emit this kind of feeling.”

Big Yellow said. A Divine Core warrior is indeed powerful, but it’s not at the point of knowing all underneath the heavens. And, the treasure that Big Yellow sensed was definitely not as simple as a Divine Core warrior’s treasure.

“Looks like there’s something fishy here. Let’s break open this defense mechanism first. Even if it’s just a Divine Core warrior’s treasure, it can still be considered a good treasure.”

Jiang Chen said. For his current situation, he could only look up to Divine Core warriors. If he could enter a Divine Core warrior’s secret treasure hiding spot, the benefits he would get would be unimaginable.

“Kid, since you can sense the defense mechanism, do you have any ways to break it open?”

Big Yellow said in a provocative manner as he stared at Jiang Chen.

“It’s just a Divine Core warrior’s defense mechanism, it can’t stop me. Both of you, stand back.”

Jiang Chen smiled lightly. If compared to a Divine Core warrior, then his strength was indeed weaker. However, defense mechanisms were something different. It was something that was set up by a cultivator who used some tricks to communicate with the qi that exists in the universe. As long as he could find the weak spot, it would be easy to break it open.

Both Yan Chen Yu and Big Yellow took two steps back. Big Yellow kept staring at Jiang Chen. He wanted to see what tricks Jiang Chen, who was only a Mortal Core warrior, would use to break the defense mechanism that had been setup by a Divine Core warrior.

Jiang Chen stood in front of the defense mechanism. Both his eyes were glowing brightly, the invisible defense mechanism outside the door was visible to him. The complicated tangled patterns could make anyone who stared at it feel horrified.

However, Jiang Chen was no ordinary man. Although in his past life he didn’t venture too deeply into the knowledge behind defensive mechanisms, understanding a defensive mechanism that

was setup by a Divine Core warrior was just a piece of cake for him.

With just one look, Jiang Chen had found the defense mechanism's weak spot. In the next second, a powerful force of soul energy was unleashed from his body. The soul energy was rolling within both of his palms. Jiang Chen kept forming some complicated patterns with his hands, and some mysterious patterns formed on his finger tips.

“Damn, this guy really knows defense mechanisms.”

Big Yellow was really surprised because only Heavenly Core warriors were able to form these kinds of defense mechanisms, and Jiang Chen, who was only an Early Mortal Core warrior, could use it in such a perfect way. This was too abnormal.

Jiang Chen's expression became more serious. Forming a counter defense mechanism was an exhausting process, even more exhausting than concocting pills. If it wasn't for him cultivating the Great Soul Derivation skill and the Dragon Transformation skill, it would be impossible for him to perform this task at his current level.

Soon, a ripple formed on Jiang Chen's finger tip. Right in the middle of the ripple, an invisible airflow swung around. This was an invisible counter defence mechanism that looked like a snake.

“Go!”

Jiang Chen shouted with a deep voice. He wave his finger, and the snake like counter defense mechanism pierced itself towards the door.

Pop! Bang!

When the air flow struck the defense mechanism, first came a popping sound, then the sound of a subtle explosion. The defense mechanism that had been set up by a Divine Core warrior an unknown amount of time ago was shattered into pieces. The explosive force pushed Jiang Chen back, and only after taking three steps backwards was he able to regain his stability.

Phew~

Jiang Chen took a deep breath. With his current situation, breaking the defense mechanism set by a Divine Core warrior by force was still too difficult for him. Big Yellow who stood aside had been startled, and his mouth was wide open. He had broken the defense mechanism in the Demon Prison Tower, so he obviously knew just how difficult it was to do so.

Chapter 102 – Broken Sword

Big Yellow was ready to make fun of Jiang Chen if he failed to break it, then he would break it himself. However, he had never expected Jiang Chen to break it so easily. This made him really baffled.

“You really are a monster!”

Big Yellow said in a grumpy manner.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen, look, there’s a passage!”

Yan Chen Yu pointed at the place where the defense mechanism had previously been. The old door had disappeared, and a dark passage had appeared.

“Let’s go and check it out.”

Big Yellow dashed forwards, he was the first one to enter the passage.

Jiang Chen and Yan Chen Yu followed behind. The passage wasn’t wide, and it only had enough space for 2 people to pass at the same time.

“This passage is going downwards. Looks like the secret treasure is hidden underneath the ground. No wonder it has yet to be

discovered after so long, it's hidden so well!"

Jiang Chen said.

"Haha, I can feel the smell of the treasure getting thicker and thicker!"

Both of Big Yellow's eyes were glowing. He hurriedly walked down the passage.

This wasn't a long passage. They only had to travel about ten meters before they arrived at the end of the passage. It wasn't a large area, it was about the size of three houses, and it was surrounded by cold, hard stone walls. On the stone walls, there were tens of fist-sized moonstones emitting a faint light in the dark space.

The moonstone was a rare item, but it didn't hold much value as its only use lay in decorative purposes. Therefore, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow didn't pay too much attention to those.

"Ah, Big Bro Jiang Chen, there's a skeleton!"

Yan Chen Yu shouted. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow followed her vision and looked at it, and right in the center of this secret chamber, they saw a skeleton sitting on the ground. The bones on this skeleton had decayed, tiny holes were everywhere on its body, and it seemed like a simple wind would be enough to turn it into ashes. This man had obviously been dead for a long time.

“This should be that Divine Core warrior.”

Jiang Chen said.

There was nothing else in the chamber, there was no treasure whatsoever. However, beside the skeleton, a light yellow storage bag was lying quietly. Big Yellow checked the storage bag, but he didn't show any interest in it. His nose kept sniffing, as if he was trying to find something.

Jiang Chen didn't care so much. He made a grabbing motion towards the storage bag from afar. Then, the storage bag, like it was being summoned by him, flew towards him and fell into his hand.

Sending his Yuan energy into the bag, he immediately saw what was within the storage bag.

Jiang Chen flipped his hand, and a thumb sized pill appeared in his palm. This pill was almost identical to a Mortal Restoration Pill, but the energy contained within was far superior to a Mortal Restoration Pill.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen, what pill is this? It looks just like a Mortal Restoration Pill, but I'm sure it isn't a Mortal Restoration pill.”

Yan Chen Yu asked.

“This is an Earth Restoration Pill, an Earth Restoration Pill with 100% effectiveness. There’s ten pills like this in the storage bag! Haha, what a fortune!”

Jiang Chen was very surprised. The value of an Earth Restoration Pill could not be compared with Mortal Restoration Pills. Furthermore, it had 100% effectiveness. An Earth Restoration Pill was equal to ten thousand Mortal Restoration Pills. The difference between the pills was huge.

Normally, Qi Hai, Mortal Core, and Heavenly Core warriors would all use Mortal Restoration Pills. Only when reaching the Divine Core realm, especially the Late Divine Core realm, would the energy supplied by Mortal Restoration Pills become insufficient. Then they would need something a bit higher level, like Earth Restoration Pills.

Put it this way, only Divine Core warriors and Combat Soul warriors would possess rare Earth Restoration Pills, and here were ten Earth Restoration pills with value equal to a hundred thousand Mortal Restoration Pills. Furthermore, if someone wanted to use a hundred thousand Mortal Restoration Pills to exchange for ten Earth Restoration Pills, no one would be willing to make that exchange.

Jiang Chen was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, and it required a huge amount of resources. No matter how much energy a single pill contained, it wouldn’t be enough for him. Now, he had ten Earth Restoration Pills, plus those thirty thousand Mortal Restoration Pills that Big Yellow had cheated from the others, and his own stockpile of nearly ten thousand Mortal

Restoration Pills. Jiang Chen's wealth was worth more than 140,000 Mortal Restoration Pills. Such a huge amount of pills was enough to support him until he reached the Late Heavenly Core realm.

In other words, in this short period of time, Jiang Chen wouldn't need to worry about getting pills. This had saved him a lot of trouble.

Jiang Chen took out all ten Earth Restoration Pills and stored them within his storage ring, then he took out an axe from the light yellow storage bag. This was a 3 meter long axe that glowed in a faint golden light. The axe was very sharp, and weighed more than a thousand pounds. Jiang Chen casually swung the axe, making it produce a buzzing sound as well as cause the thin air in front of him vibrate.

“What a powerful axe.”

Yan Chen Yu was astonished.

“This is a high-ranked combat weapon! The power a high-ranked combat weapon can bring out is unimaginable. If I were to use this axe, I can absolutely fight against a Heavenly Core warrior.”

Jiang Chen's eyes were glowing. His entire body portrayed an unparalleled confidence.

“There are some words carved on the axe.”

Yan Chen Yu pointed at the carved words. Jiang Chen turned over the axe handle and saw the words 'Axe of Thunder' deeply carved onto it.

Just from the name alone, one could tell how extraordinary this axe was. Jiang Chen was really satisfied with it, with the Axe of Thunder, he now had one more powerful tool in his hands.

The Divine Core warrior didn't leave too many treasures with him. Aside from the Axe of Thunder and the ten Earth Restoration Pills, there were only two more secret skill books in the storage bag. One was named the Skill of Storm, an Earth level skill, but Jiang Chen didn't take a second look at it as he just simply threw it into his storage ring. After cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, there were no more cultivation skills in this world that were worth his time.

Jiang Chen casually grabbed the other skill book. Just when he was about to throw it into his storage ring, he saw the name written on the book, and his eyes lit up.

'Clap of Thunder combat skill'

This combat skill, if it was just an ordinary combat skill, then Jiang Chen wouldn't even take a second look at it. Ordinary combat skills just couldn't compare with his Six Solar Fingers, and on top of the Six Solar Fingers, there was the Nine Solar Energies. However, the Clap of Thunder skill was different. This skill was an axe skill that could be used together with the Axe of Thunder.

The Axe of Thunder was a high-ranked combat weapon, if it could be used with a matching axe skill, the power would definitely be doubled.

“I can use the Clap of Thunder combat skill to increase the power of the Axe of Thunder.”

Jiang Chen kept the Clap of Thunder skill. This trip to the Whirling Sun City had so far been rewarding. Not only had he joined the Black Sect, he had also found some good treasures.

“Kakakaka.....”

Right at this moment, Big Yellow suddenly started laughing out excitedly. Jiang Chen and Yan Chen Yu turned around and looked at him, then they saw that he had dug out a rusty piece metal from a corner in the chamber. His paws were placed around the rusty metal piece, and his saliva was dripping all over.

“Don’t tell me puppy dog went nuts? How can a rusty piece of metal make him so excited?”

Yan Chen Yu asked with a puzzled expression.

“That dog will never go nuts. Looks like that rusty metal is the treasure he was looking for.”

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes, and his vision landed on the rusty metal piece in Big Yellow's arm. This piece of rusty metal was almost two meters long, and its width was the size of a palm. Its metal was rusted. This thing, no one would pick it up even if it was thrown onto a busy street.

What's more important was that, Jiang Chen with the vision of the once greatest Saint in the world, couldn't tell the difference between this thing and an ordinary scrap of metal. However, he could tell that this rusty metal piece was part of a broken sword. Jiang Chen didn't sense any energy fluctuations or sword laws from it. There was nothing special about this piece of a broken sword at all.

With Jiang Chen's judgment, even if there was just a tiny piece of an ultimate Saint level weapon in front of him, he would be able to recognize it. But now, he couldn't recognize this rusty metal. This only had two explanations. The first explanation was that this rusty metal was just an ordinary piece of a broken sword, and the second was that this rusty metal piece came from something above the level of Saint, something from a level where even Jiang Chen himself was unable to tell what it was.

Jiang Chen believed in Big Yellow's ability, this dog would never fall in love with a piece of scrap metal.

“Big Yellow, what is it?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Are you blind? This is just a piece of scrap metal, a broken sword! All the other things here belong to you, and this broken sword belongs to me! I warn you, don’t try to steal from this boss!”

Big Yellow hugged the broken sword tightly, fearing that Jiang Chen would take it from him.

The more Big Yellow behaved like this, the more Jiang Chen felt that this broken sword was something unusual.

“Hehe, Big Yellow, just let me have a look, I promise I won’t take it away from you.”

Jiang Chen showed a smile that he thought was very friendly.

“Get lost! Stop trying to play tricks on I, your father! I found this myself!”

Big Yellow then directly opened his large mouth and swallowed the broken sword.

“Damn you!”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes. It looked like taking that treasure out from Big Yellow’s mouth was going to be harder than climbing the heavens. Looks like he could only give up for now, and think of a way in the future.

“Fuck you! You brat, you’ve gotten a lot of benefits here, you should be crying and thanking I, your father right now!”

Big Yellow gazed at Jiang Chen. He was very unsatisfied with Jiang Chen’s reaction.

After that, the trio left the secret chamber and started walking towards the Black Sect’s Chamber of Commerce.

“Big Yellow, what kind of treasure is that broken sword?”

Along the way, Jiang Chen still didn’t want to give up. Something that even he couldn’t see through, of course he would be incomparably interested.

“I don’t know, I just know it’s a treasure.”

Big Yellow wagged his tail.

“Let me have a look, I promise I will return it.”

“No way!”

“Fuck you!”

“Ruff!”

.....

When they arrived back at the courtyard, Jiang Chen still hadn't been able to have his wish to obtain the broken sword from Big Yellow granted. In the end, he could only give it up. This dog was not only smart, he also had an evil mind. It was very difficult.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen, when are we going to head towards the Black Sect?”

Yan Chen Yu asked.

“I'm going to absorb the Earth Fruit now. We'll wait until I reach the Mid Mortal Core realm before we begin our journey towards the Black Sect. If everything goes smoothly, we should be able to leave by noon tomorrow.”

Jiang Chen said. He understood the rules, in this world, no matter where one goes, the most important was one's abilities. Only strength can be considered one's true wealth, and only then will one be respected. By reaching the Mid Mortal Core realm, Jiang Chen's worth would be higher.

After that, Jiang Chen entered a room and started closed door cultivation in order to absorb the Earth Fruit. Yan Chen Yu and Big Yellow were both standing guard in the courtyard, protecting Jiang Chen from any disturbance.

Jiang Chen sat with his legs crossed and took the Earth Fruit out

from his storage ring. The fist sized Earth Fruit was emitting some yellow light, and intense energy was overflowing from it.

Chapter 103 – 40 Dragon Marks

The Earth Fruit was formed by absorbing Earth essence. It was a rare natural treasure. The fruit in Jiang Chen's hand was only about one thousand years old, so the Earth essence contained within wasn't much. Nevertheless, the purity of the energy was not something that could be underestimated.

Such a natural treasure was just right for the current Jiang Chen. With this Earth Fruit, he could without a doubt break through to the Mid Mortal Core realm.

Buzz buzz.....

Jiang Chen circulated the Dragon Transformation skill. The Yuan energy within his Qi Sea was producing a buzzing sound. Twenty-five Dragon Marks were swimming around within his Qi Sea like real dragons, forming a whirlpool.

Only after the Dragon Transformation skill was circulating at its maximum speed did Jiang Chen swallow the Earth Fruit.

Bang!

The powerful energy contained within the Earth Fruit instantly erupted and started rushing into all limbs and bones within Jiang Chen's body.

“What powerful energy! Haha, this kind of feeling is awesome!”

Jiang Chen's face was full of excitement. The way he was absorbing the Earth Fruit, if it was seen by someone else, that person would be shocked speechless. The energy contained within a thousand years old Earth Fruit couldn't be immediately absorbed by a Mortal Core warrior. Even if the Little Devil King or Li Wu Shuang obtained this Earth Fruit, in order to absorb it, they would need to do it bit by bit. Swallowing the entire thing straight away like Jiang Chen did was just crazy.

Jiang Chen did this for a reason. The sudden intense surge of energy contained within the Earth Fruit could only be controlled by an ultimate skill like the Dragon Transformation skill.

Raaah!

[TL: Roar..]

When the Dragon Transformation skill circulated at its maximum speed, all the Dragon Marks in Jiang Chen's body started vibrating violently. There was even a faint sound like that of a roaring dragon coming out of Jiang Chen's body. Above his head, qi shaped like a dragon was floating around. His black hair was waving without wind, he looked like an ancient demon beast that was about to awaken.

Guided by the control of the Dragon Transformation skill, the energy within the Earth Fruit entered Jiang Chen's Qi Sea and started forming into new Dragon Marks.

Jiang Chen first absorbed the Big Yellow's Dragon Horse blood.

Then, he absorbed the Blood Winged Hawk's Demon Soul, and then he got his thoughts smoothened during the Qi Province competition. Right now, with the help of the Earth Fruit, it could be said that he had a rich accumulation, and was ready to break through.

In just a single hour, five new Dragon Marks appeared within Jiang Chen's Qi Sea. Including the previous 25, the total number of Dragon Marks was 30. When the 30th Dragon Mark was completely condensed, Jiang Chen's energy became restless.

“Going to break through.”

Jiang Chen immediately became thrilled. He grabbed a huge pile of Mortal Restoration Pills from his storage ring and absorbed them straight away. When cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, every single breakthrough would require the support of a huge amount of energy, and this was the reason why Jiang Chen's need for Restoration Pills was much higher than anybody else's.

Hoo hoo.....

Powerful jets of air rushed out from Jiang Chen's body. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen purposely controlling these, the room would have been destroyed by the them. Even with this, the energy from him breaking through was very intense. The natural energies within the air above the courtyard were instantly emptied.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen has broken through to the Mid Mortal Core realm!”

Within the courtyard, Yan Chen Yu was very happy.

“I wonder what kind of insane skill this fellow is cultivating... Every time he breaks through, there is always such a huge momentum, truly insane.”

Big Yellow muttered to himself.

At the same time, the people within the Black Sect's Chamber of Commerce also sensed the imposing momentum, shocking many of them.

“It's coming from Jiang Chen's courtyard! Looking at this momentum, it seems like Jiang Chen is breaking through!”

“So now there's another remarkable genius in the Black Sect! From now on, it won't just be Nan Bei Chao in the Qi Province!”

“Send my order, nobody is allowed to get close to the courtyard! Do not disturb Jiang Chen's cultivation!”

Jiang Chen's name had been heard by every single person in the Whirling Sun City. No one in the Black Sect's Chamber of Commerce hadn't heard about him. Besides, Jiang Chen was a genius even amongst all disciples of the Black Sect. Those who worked in the Chamber of Commerce could only feel pure admiration in their hearts.

Only after absorbing 1000 Mortal Restoration Pills, did Jiang Chen managed to completely stabilize his cultivation at the Mid Mortal Core realm. Such a huge consumption of Mortal Restoration Pills was not something an ordinary cultivator could afford. If he was going to break through to the Late Mortal Core realm, the amount he would need to consume would be even greater. He would at least need 3000 pills.

Buzz buzz.....

The Yuan energy within his Qi Sea was vibrating. The blood red Dragon Marks were rolling around, and powerful qi hovered around Jiang Chen. After the 30th Dragon Mark had been condensed, the whole process was still far from over. He had only used about 30% of the massive amount of energy stored within the Earth Fruit.

Jiang Chen circulated the Dragon Transformation skill at its maximum speed. New Dragon Marks continued forming within his Qi Sea. One mark, two marks, three marks, and it did not stop until next morning. A total of 10 Dragon Marks had been completely condensed. Only now was all the energy from the Earth Fruit consumed.

Right now, within Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, 40 Dragon Marks were hovering around his Mortal Core. They all resembled real and lively dragons, it was very mystical.

As for Jiang Chen's cultivation level, not only had he broken through to the Mid Mortal Core realm and stabilized it, there were even signs that he was about to break through to the Late Mortal

Core realm soon.

40 Dragon Marks, that was a force of 400,000 Jin. A Mid Mortal Core warrior possessing this kind of force was just unbelievable.

“According to the Dragon Transformation skill, if I want to reach the Late Mortal Core realm, I will need to form a total of 60 Dragon Marks. Now, I have managed to form 40 of them. The distance to the Late Mortal Core realm is not far away.”

Jiang Chen’s sharp vision kept blinking. The increase in strength that 40 Dragon Marks had provided him was unimaginable. He could only describe it with the word ‘powerful’.

“With my current strength and ability, I can kill any Mortal Core warrior in just a second. If I were to face Li Wu Shuang as I am now, I would be able to kill him with just a single slap, and I wouldn’t need to engage in a long fight. Now, even ordinary Early Heavenly Core warriors will not be my match. If I can use the Axe of Thunder, then I’ll be able to kill any Early Heavenly Core warrior with ease.”

With an imposing manner, Jiang Chen was unleashing an aura of confidence from every part of his body. Fighting a Heavenly Core warrior while just being a Mid Mortal Core warrior, this was just insane. The gap between the Mortal Core realm and the Heavenly Core realm was not small. Those who had reached the Heavenly Core realm had the ability to control the Yuan energy within the natural environment.

However, Jiang Chen was an unusual being, a complete monster. Cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, together with his experience and the methods of a Saint, he couldn't be judged by normal standards.

The increase in his cultivation level had also made Jiang Chen's combat skill's power up. With his current level, if he attacked with the Six Solar Fingers, he would be able to use Three Solar Fingers, and the Sonic Hawk Cry's power had also increased by a lot.

Jiang Chen didn't leave the room yet, but instead, he took out the Clap of Thunder combat skill from his storage ring. He already had a vast amount of combat skills, but if he managed to learn the Clap of Thunder skill, he would possess another powerful skill which would allow him to travel around the Qi Province without finding any match in the same generation.

Jiang Chen flipped through the Clap of Thunder skill book. It only required him to read it once before understanding all the key elements within this combat skill. With his cultivation experience of a Saint, reading and understanding an Earth level combat skill book was not difficult at all. This was an advantage that he had.

However, this advantage was simply too strong. When other people started cultivating a combat skill, they would need at least a few months, or perhaps even years before they could understand the key elements within. But for Jiang Chen, it only took him a single read before he understood everything. Besides, when using a combat skill through the Dragon Transformation skill, it would be much stronger than any ordinary skills. Such an advantage was already enough to make one a destined genius without any peers in

their generations.

Around noon, Jiang Chen tidied up his clothes and walked out of the room. Jiang Chen was very happy after breaking through to the Mid Mortal Core realm, and his face was covered in a bright smile.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen, have you broken through?”

Seeing Jiang Chen coming out, Yan Chen Yu immediately ran up to him.

“Of course.”

Jiang Chen pampered Yan Chen Yu by pinching her nose, making the little girl giggle.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen, are we going to the Black Sect now?”

Yan Chen Yu asked.

“That’s right. We’ll be leaving now. We are after all disciples of the Black Sect now, we have to go there.”

Jiang Chen said. After that, he turned around to Big Yellow and asked, “Big Yellow, are you going to come with us?”

“Go, of course I’ll go.”

Big Yellow said. His tail immediately began wagging.

“Let me first make this clear, the Black Sect is not the Heavenly Sword Sect. I owe them a debt of gratitude. Don’t cause any trouble when you’re there, if you can’t do that, then I won’t bring you there even if you killed me.”

Jiang Chen said in a solemn manner. The evil-minded dog was of a rare species. He would do whatever he wanted, and if he did in the Black Sect what he did in the Heavenly Sword Sect, it would be a huge problem.

“Don’t worry, I know what to do.”

Big Yellow nodded his head in a serious manner. Although he looked like a good doggy now, Jiang Chen still thought that this dog couldn’t be depended upon.

But at least, while he was together with Big Yellow, Jiang Chen believed Big Yellow wouldn’t be so cruel. Besides, benefits of bringing this dog with him just limitless. The ten thousand years old Freezing Crystal and the wealth left over by a Divine Core warrior had proved Big Yellow’s ability.

“Alright, we’ll fly to the Black Sect now. You’ll use your wings of light and carry Xiao Yu.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? No way!”

Big Yellow expressed a sad face, “Last time when we escaped from Silver Moon City, I overused my wings. I can’t use them again for the time being. In my opinion, you should use your blood wings to carry me and Xiao Yu!”

“Is that so?”

Jiang Chen pulled Big Yellow’s ear and spoke while grinding his teeth, “Damned dog, do not try to play any tricks on I, your father! Your innate ability was supposedly restored half a month ago! If you want to follow us, then just listen to what I say, and carry Xiao Yu! If not, then just stay here.”

This dog was really cunning, it would take half a month at most to recover from the backlash due to overexerting himself. They had spent more than half a month when traveling from Silver Moon City to Whirling Sun City, he should already have completely recovered a few days ago. If not, then he wouldn’t have been able to run so fast when the disciples of the Heavenly Sword Sect searched for him in the Whirling Sun Square.

Three figures shot up into the sky from the Black Sect’s Chamber of Commerce, and soon disappeared high into the skies. A young man in white with wings on his back, and a big dog with yellow fur all over his body who was carrying a young girl dressed in purple on his back, while muttering without stop in order to release his

dissatisfaction.

Evening!

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were flying above some mountain. While Jiang Chen was flying with great speed, his expression suddenly turned cold.

“Something’s not right.”

Right after Jiang Chen’s voice sounded out, four powerful energies suddenly appeared right in front of them. Four shadowy figures flew up from below and surrounded Jiang Chen and Big Yellow from four corners. These people had obviously been waiting here for a long time.

Chapter 104 – Splitting And Killing A Heavenly Core Warrior

Four figures suddenly appeared and surrounded Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. All four men were incomparably vigorous, and their ability to fly had proved that they were all Heavenly Core warriors. When one of them saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, he immediately became angry and suddenly roared out loudly.

“Little bastard Jiang Chen, today I’ll allow you to die without a burial site!”

The man with the harsh words was the mayor of Silver Moon City, Yin Zhong Cheng.

Jiang Chen now realized what was happening. No wonder there was a Heavenly Core warrior cornering him in the dark. When he saw that the person was Yin Zhong Cheng, he finally understood. The relationship between him and Yin Zhong Cheng couldn’t be resolved any more. The latter wished to devour him alive.

As for the other three, they were obviously here to help Yin Zhong Cheng. They had been waiting here and set a trap, trying to kill him for revenge.

“Mayor Yin, you’re being pretty thoughtful, and you actually set up a trap here to catch me.”

Jiang Chen's face had a casual smile. If this had happened some days ago, he would have definitely turned around and run away if he saw Yin Zhong Cheng. However, now it was different. After he had broken through to the Mid Mortal Core realm, his combat strength had increased by a lot. Even some regular Heavenly Core warrior wouldn't be his match. Besides, the four persons in front of him were all Early Heavenly Core warriors, and Jiang Chen was confident in dealing with them.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen, I never expected that you would participate in the Qi Province competition, and you even got first place! Having your name heard by many, not bad! This is really not bad! I really want to thank you for that, if you hadn't participated in the Qi Province competition and spread your name, I would have a hard time finding you! And if you had followed the Black Sect disciples back to their base, then I would have lost all chance of getting revenge! But, since you didn't go with them, we have been waiting for you here for a long time!”

Yin Zhong Cheng had a sneer on his face. That day when Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had escaped, he had found a few of his close friends and started searching everywhere for Jiang Chen. His own son was killed, and all buildings with the mayor's mansion had been ruined. All of this was because of the person and dog in front of him. Such profound hatred made Yin Zhong Cheng dream about killing Jiang Chen in his sleep.

With the abilities of these four men, it didn't take them long before they pinpointed Jiang Chen's location. When they had found out that Jiang Chen didn't return to the Black Sect together with Guan Yi Yun and the others, of course they didn't dare attack the Black Sect's Chamber of Commerce within the Whirling Sun

City. Therefore, they had set a trap along the path to the Black Sect, trying to meet Jiang Chen head on.

“Yin Zhong Cheng, I suggest you give up your hatred. If you leave now, then you will still be able to save your life. And the rest of you, there’s nothing between us, I advice you not to be fooled by Yin Zhong Cheng. Getting yourself killed here won’t be something fun.”

Jiang Chen glanced at them and spoke with an indifferent tone.

“Hahaha, what a sharp tongue! Being able to take first place in the Qi Province competition has proved that you really do have some abilities. However, no matter how talented you are, you are still a Mortal Core warrior. With the combined forces of four Heavenly Core warriors, dealing with a little Mortal Core brat like you... even if you had six pair of wings today, you will still die!”

An old white-bearded man started laughing out loud. He thought that what Jiang Chen said was a joke. There were four Heavenly Core warriors here, and if they still couldn’t kill a small Mortal Core warrior, then that would be the end for them.

“I’ve warned you all. If you still want to strike, then I will counter with all my strength. I, Jiang Chen, have never given anyone a second chance.”

Jiang Chen’s face turned cold. All of Jiang Chen’s enemies only had one kind of ending.

“Bullshit! Guys, this brat is very cunning, let’s strike together and kill him! Do not let him escape!”

Yin Zhong Cheng said. They had locked down Jiang Chen completely, and they were surrounding him from all corners, removing all possibility of escape.

“Fellow, I’ll leave this to you.”

Taking advantage of these four persons having their attention pointed at Jiang Chen, Big Yellow who carried Yan Chen Yu flew higher into the skies.

“Damn dog, don’t run!”

Someone extended his big hand and tried catching Big Yellow, but Big Yellow evaded with ease.

“Don’t bother focusing on that dog, let’s focus on killing Jiang Chen for now!”

Yin Zhong Chen’s eyes were glowing sharply. Jiang Chen’s performance in the Qi Province competition had shocked him, he couldn’t allow this kind of genius to escape today. If he did, then it would give him room to grow, and then Yin Zhong Cheng wouldn’t be able to get revenge.

“Let’s do this together!”

The old white-bearded man shouted. It seemed like the four men had made up their minds, as long as they could kill Jiang Chen, everything would be alright. They didn't care too much about their status, after all, four Heavenly Core warriors surrounding a Mortal Core junior is not something one can proudly talk about.

Bang!

The four of them wanted to kill Jiang Chen, therefore they attacked with all their strength. Four powerful energies shot up into the sky and covered it. There were typhoons everywhere, and the four men's attacks had connected and formed a huge web of energy. The web flew towards Jiang Chen with the intention of tearing him apart.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen who was surrounded let out a cold snort. A dignified expression emerged on his face. An Early Heavenly Core warrior's attack and the combination of four Early Heavenly Core warrior's attacks was a completely different concept.

However, Jiang Chen possessed diverse abilities and strength, no fear could be seen on his face.

“Six Solar Fingers!”

Jiang Chen suddenly shouted. He unleashed the Six Solar

Fingers; three huge golden fingers seemingly capable of poking a hole in the skies pierced towards two of the men. At the same time, Jiang Chen unleashed his Sonic Hawk Cry. The powerful sound waves formed into invisible ripples, going towards the two other men.

Bang.....

This was an ultimate collision between massive energies. At this moment, the whole sky produced a loud explosion, and the air started burning because of the friction. Huge amounts of fire sparks rained down everywhere. Four Heavenly Core warriors' combined attacks is not something to joke about.

Jiang Chen was violent like a tiger. With his cultivation realm at the Mid Mortal Core realm against four opponents, he was portraying an ultimate domineering image from all over his body. It doesn't matter if it was the Six Solar Fingers or the Sonic Hawk Cry, they were both powerful combat skills, and being able to attack with both of these major combat skills and still have energy as lively as a dragon and vigorous as a tiger; only Jiang Chen who cultivates the Dragon Transformation skill can do this. Now there were 40 Dragon Marks within Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, and he was never afraid of his Yuan energy running low.

The collision of energies was soon about to end. Jiang Chen with his own force alone had managed to resist the combination of four Heavenly Core warriors. Such a terrifying scene, if this was known by others, it would surely astonish them. If one were to survey the entire Qi Province, one would find that only Jiang Chen was able to do this.

“He leveled up again, and he is now at the Mid Mortal Core realm!”

“How could this be possible?! He is only a little Mid Mortal Core warrior, but he actually resisted the combined attack of the four of us?! Is this guy still human?!”

“Monster, this guy is definitely an unprecedented monster! Let’s work together and kill him today, if we don’t, we won’t have the chance anymore, and the next time we meet him, I’m afraid we’ll be the ones getting killed!”

The Heavenly Core warriors had shocked expressions on their faces. Jiang Chen’s performance had far exceeded their imaginations.

Clang clang!

Combat weapons emerged at the same time in all of the four men’s hands. Yin Zhong Cheng was still using the same mid-ranked golden axe, and the other three were all using low-ranked combat weapons.

Combat weapons were incredibly rare. Normal Heavenly Core warriors would have a hard time finding one unless they were disciples of the four big sects. The only reason Yin Zhong Cheng has a mid-ranked combat weapon is because he is a mayor.

The four of them raised their energy to their peaks, preparing themselves to kill Jiang Chen with a single blow.

Jiang Chen's face was as calm as a water's surface, and his gaze was sharp. If he was facing just one Heavenly Core warrior, then he would have full confidence in killing him, but when he was facing a group of four Heavenly Core warriors who worked together, then it would become very difficult.

“Haha! Come, let me see who is stronger!”

Jiang Chen gave a loud laugh. He shook his arm, then a 3 meter long golden axe appeared in his hand. The golden axe immediately produced a buzzing sound upon appearing, causing the air to start vibrating.

“High-ranked combat weapon!”

The four of them exclaimed. Those three who were carrying low-ranked combat weapons almost spat out some blood, this was a huge blow to their faces. They were great Heavenly Core warriors, but the weapon in their hands was only low-ranked combat weapons, and their opponent who was only a Mortal Core warrior actually carried a super rare high-ranked combat weapon. Comparisons were odious.

Even Yin Zhong Cheng felt despair. He looked at the Axe of Thunder in Jiang Chen's hand, then he looked at his own axe. The difference was clear.

“Kill him! This kid has more treasures and wealth, we can split it when the time comes!”

Right after Yin Zhong Cheng’s words left his mouth, the old white-bearded man was the first to thrust forwards. The long sword in his hand turned into a shining stream of light. At the same time, the attacks from the other three followed behind.

“Breaking them one by one, let’s kill one man first.”

Jiang Chen’s combat experience was just too rich. He had gone through countless fights such as this one. His vision locked onto the old white-bearded man, the blood wings on his back suddenly flapped together with the Dimensional Shift. He moved to the left side of the old white-bearded man. This was a spot where the attacks of the other three couldn’t reach.

“Clap of Thunder!”

Jiang Chen subtly cried out a name. He raised the axe in his hands high up into the air; streams of natural Yuan energy turned into whirlpools and gathered around the Axe of Thunder, making it shine brightly in a golden light. A vast force spread across and locked down onto the old white-bearded man in an instant.

“Die!”

With a grim face, Jiang Chen felt lucky that he had cultivated the Clap of Thunder combat skill before this, and could now put it to

good use.

Swoopsh!

The Axe of Thunder roared aloud as it chopped towards the old white-bearded man in an unchallenged manner, leaving a deep mark along its way. The intense amount of energy produced a loud roaring sound as it rolled down like a tsunami.

“What?!”

The old white-bearded man cried out in disbelief. He never expected that Jiang Chen would be able to use this high-ranked combat weapon to this level. In just this split second, he felt death threatening him.

The old white-bearded man's reaction was pretty quick, he tried to block the attack with his long sword. Too bad, the Axe of Thunder's force was simply too strong. Because Jiang Chen used his full strength with this attack, it simply couldn't be resisted by the old white-bearded man.

Clang!

Jiang Chen's Clap of Thunder struck the old white-bearded man's long sword, slicing it, as well as his hand, in half. Without losing any of its momentum, it sliced the old white-bearded man's head into two pieces.

Half the head flew high up into the sky, and blood was raining down. The old man didn't even have the opportunity to scream before he died.

Chapter 105 – The Black Sect

Jiang Chen used the most powerful and incisive way to kill the man in the fastest possible way. After killing the old white-bearded man using the Axe of Thunder, Jiang Chen again used his blood wings and Dimensional shift to easily evade the attacks from the other three men. The ripples of the attacks were shattered by Jiang Chen's axe as well.

“Lao Bai!”

Yin Zhong Cheng cried out in pain. It seemed like fire was going to shoot out from his eyes. Four Heavenly Core warriors ambushing a little Mortal Core warrior, but one of them was killed in an instant. This was a joke.

“Everyone, be careful! This brat is a super abnormal monster, and now that he has broken through to the Mid Mortal Core realm, his combat strength is comparable with an Early Heavenly Core warrior! Furthermore, he has a high-ranked combat weapon, and he knows combat skills that can be used together with his high-ranked combat weapon!”

Yin Zhong Cheng reminded them.

“Let's attack together and suppress him with our combined strength! No matter how monstrous he is, he is still just a Mortal Core warrior! Just now he unleashed two powerful combat skills, and he circulated the high-ranked combat weapon! I do not believe that he still has the Yuan energy to unleash the power of that axe

once again!”

Another old man said in a cold manner. The white-bearded man was his best friend, and witnessing his best friend die by having his head sliced in half by Jiang Chen, it made his hatred towards Jiang Chen grow exponentially.

“Heavy Stone Strike!”

“Three Beheading Hurricanes!”

“Quadra Invincible Waves!”

The three didn’t dare show the slightest neglect any longer. In their minds, Jiang Chen was a super abnormal monster who could never be treated as a normal Mortal Core junior.

The three simultaneously attacked with their strongest attacks. The conjunction between their combat skills and combat weapons had perfectly portrayed the imposing energy of the Heavenly Core warriors. The massive ripples of the battle had devastated the air.

Massive amounts of energy shined brightly like streams of glittering rainbows. The ripples produced by the energies fell down from the skies and destroyed a mountain in an instant.

The combined attack from three Early Heavenly Core warriors was truly massive and devastating.

“Haha, come, show me what you got! I, Jiang Chen, does not fear anything!”

Jiang Chen started laughing out loudly. He was floating in midair together with the Axe of Thunder. His black hair was dancing around together with the wind, a bright golden light covered his entire body. His appearance was just like a king that had just arrived at this world as his body was emitting a domineering aura.

Right at this point of time, Yin Zhong Cheng and the other three men felt a strong aura of one above all coming from Jiang Chen's body. This young man in front of them was like an innate king of the world, as if he was not just a young man, but an old demon who had lived for more than a few thousand years.

This kind of feeling was ridiculous, but it also felt so real.

Facing the attacks from the three Heavenly Core warriors, Jiang Chen did not have any intention of backing off. His stronger inner self didn't permit him to back off, and Jiang Chen would never run away from this. Right now, what he wanted to do was use his current combat strength and defeat three Heavenly Core warriors face to face, creating another miracle for himself.

Buzz buzz.....

The Axe of Thunder once again made a violent buzzing sound. The axe kept emitting a golden light, and a deep yet subtle dragon roar came out from Jiang Chen's body. Thick Yuan energy was

crazily rushing into the Axe of Thunder. His Yuan energy seemed endless like a deep ocean, as if it would never be depleted.

The Clap of Thunder combat skill by itself was a vigorous combat skill. When it was used by Jiang Chen, it even portrayed an imposing aura that could flatten a mountain.

Bang!

The sky was shaking. Followed by a loud explosion, Jiang Chen raised the Axe of Thunder high up, a bright stream of the axe's light turned into a golden pillar that shot high up into the skies. The next second, Jiang Chen swung it down with all of his strength.

Three gigantic axes that were made completely by Jiang Chen's intense energy pierced towards the three men's combined attack. Each golden axe carried a thunderous force that could destroy anything in their path. It was truly a devastating force.

Bang!

Fighting all three of them alone, this was an incredibly rare battle. Combat skills, combat weapons, both of these represented extermination. The skies were filled with devastating energies, and the whole area was ruined.

Yin Zhong Cheng and the other men were suffering from the vigorous impact that came from the Axe of Thunder, and they

were forced back tens of meters before they could regain control of their bodies. Looking at Jiang Chen once again, he was still covered in golden light and an imposing aura. He was like a judge of mortals with his axe being something that could decide the destinies of all mortals.

“How can this be possible? He is just a Mid Mortal Core warrior, how come he is so strong?”

“Is he really a Mid Mortal Core warrior? Why can he attack with such a powerful combat skill? And his Yuan energy seems endless, he isn’t afraid of any huge consumption! This is unbelievable!”

“Fuck! Brother Yin, what kind of demon have you provoked?!”

The three of them wanted to vomit blood. As Heavenly Core warriors, they had ruled this place for so many years, and they had never been involved in such a difficult battle.

Bang!

Just as one of them finished his words, they heard another loud bang. Jiang Chen’s wings flapped, and he struck again. He rushed out and arrived in front of one of the men. The Axe of Thunder approached the man’s head.

Fast, this was extremely fast! It was so fast that the man only had the time to react, but had no way of blocking the attack.

“This is bad!”

The man shouted with a shocked expression. He never expected that Jiang Chen, after using his most powerful attack, would be able to instantly attack right after with no pause.

But too bad, all was gone now. The battle axe was merciless, it sliced the man in half from the middle. Blood splashed everywhere, and some even poured onto the other two men. The two men felt a cold shiver down their spines.

Swoopsh!

Jiang Chen's killing intent raged on. Without any hesitation, after killing one man, he immediately swung his axe towards another man.

“Run!”

Yin Zhong Cheng shouted as he turned around and started escaping. There was no point in continuing the battle, Jiang Chen was too strong, brutal and cruel. There was no way for him to get revenge anymore. What was more important right now was saving his own life, and if he continued staying here, then he wouldn't be able to leave alive, he would be following the old white-bearded man's footsteps.

Yin Zhong Cheng was the first one to run away. The other man, who was so scared that sweat was pouring down from his forehead,

also tried turning around and running away, however, his reaction was too late. Because of all the fear, he had totally lost his will to fight, and was sliced in half by Jiang Chen.

One fight, three dead. Jiang Chen's face carried a ruthless expression, and his eyes were emitting a cold light. He raised his head and looked at Yin Zhong Cheng who had run far away. Jiang Chen's blood wings flapped, and he started chasing after him with great speed.

Right when Yin Zhong Cheng had run away, Big Yellow had actually started chasing him in order to block his way.

“Damned dog, out of my way!”

Without saying anything else, Yin Zhong Cheng swung his axe towards Big Yellow. He needed to escape from here right now. If he was caught by the demon behind him, then he would surely die.

Pop!

Big Yellow opened his mouth and spat out a huge golden energy orb. At the same time, Yan Chen Yu produced an ice curtain, blocking Yin Zhong Cheng's attack.

Bang!

The explosive energies started rolling. Because of Big Yellow blocking him, Yin Zhong Cheng was forced to slow down. Right at

this moment, Jiang Chen had caught up to him from behind.

With an intense killing intent, he looked at Jiang Chen, then he looked again at the Axe of Thunder in Jiang Chen's hand which was shining in a golden amber, Yin Zhong Cheng's face turned awful. A feeling of death was hovering around him, and what he felt now was only fear.

“Jiang..... Jiang Chen, don't kill me, please let me go! I promise I won't look for trouble with you anymore!”

Yin Zhong Cheng started begging.

“Those who kill can be killed.”

With a ruthless expression, Jiang Chen raised his battle axe high up towards the skies.

“Yin Zhong Cheng, you should know, a false step may cause a lifetime of regret. Looking back at the day in Silver Moon City, you shouldn't have messed with me.”

Jiang Chen's words had given Yin Zhong Cheng a death sentence. He was like a judge from hell, deciding who should die.

Bang!

The battle axe produced a 'bang' sound as it struck forcefully

from above with an extremely fast speed.

“No!”

Yin Zhong Cheng roared. With all of his effort, he raised the axe in his hand and tried blocking the attack, but it was unable to change his destiny. Finally, he was killed by Jiang Chen.

Killing four Heavenly Core warriors continuously and circulating the Clap of Thunder combat skill repeatedly, such a huge consumption of Yuan energy was even tiresome for Jiang Chen. The Yuan energy in his body had been over consumed, and he couldn't help but eat some Mortal Restoration Pills to restore his energy.

“You're getting more insane with each day! Killing four Heavenly Core warriors, if this was heard by others, I wonder how many people would die from fright!”

Big Yellow danced around joyfully in excitement.

“They were courting death by themselves.”

Jiang Chen smiled grimly. He casually made a grabbing motion, then the three combat weapons flew into his hand. He put them into his storage ring.

“Let's continue our journey.”

Jiang Chen's blood wings flapped, and he continued flying towards the direction of the Black Sect. The battle with the four Heavenly Core warriors had made him completely understand his current combat strength, so the battle had provided him with lots of benefits.

This was a tragic ending for Yin Zhong Cheng. Just like Jiang Chen had said, back at Silver Moon City, he shouldn't have messed with Jiang Chen, and he shouldn't have continued clinging to him after Han Yan had stood out. This all led to what happened today.

Jiang Chen had used the cruelest way to tell him the truth. There were some in this world whom you simply couldn't provoke, and once you did, the price would definitely be heavy.

The Black Sect was located in the north of the Qi Province. It was a land with splendid mountain ranges and tall mountain peaks. The natural Yuan energy was rich on top of the mountain. The mountains were surrounded by light fog all year long. This place truly gave off a holy and noble feeling.

This mountain range was called the Black Mountains. Countless mountain peaks spread across the top of the Black Mountain.

It was said that the founder of the Black Sect had discovered an underground energy vein here, therefore, he occupied this place and established the eternally prosperous Black Sect.

The energy vein, aside from it being able to provide the best

cultivation environment and gather natural energies, it was also representation of fortune. Each of the Qi Province's four big sects had occupied land with energy veins, this was the reason why they were eternally prosperous and had produced countless of geniuses.

Two days later, around noon, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had finally arrived at the Black Sect. They landed at the foot of the mountain.

“This is so pretty!”

Yan Chen Yu stared at the beautiful scenery filled with light fog, she couldn't help but praise it.

“It's really a nice place, and it has a favorable geographical location as well.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head, but his reaction wasn't as big. His experience was much richer compared to Yan Chen Yu. A small sect like the Black Sect weren't qualified to even be ranked in the Divine Continent.

“Let's go, we're all disciples of the Black Sect now, so let's report that we have arrived first.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. His feet started moving, and he started walking up the mountain.

“Go no further!”

Just when Jiang Chen had ascended half the mountain, he heard a loud shout, and then three young men dressed in white clothes walked towards them with arrogant expressions.

Chapter 106 – To Have Eyes But Fail To Recognize Mt Tai

Jiang Chen's vision landed upon these three men, and he instantly discovered that they were only Qi Hai warriors. They were probably only novice disciples, which was the lowest disciple rank. Those outer circle Mortal Core disciples wouldn't be guarding the entrance here.

However, as the disciples of the Black Sect, even just being a novice disciple would be enough to make anyone proud of themselves. There were talented people amongst the novice disciples, and many of the current outer circle disciples and inner circle disciples were actually novice disciples at one point.

“Who are you? Why are you trespassing within the Black Sect? Are you courting death?”

A fat guy said in an arrogant tone, he was portraying a superior image.

Jiang Chen was amused by their response. The disciples from a big sect are indeed different. The way they showed their arrogance was more imposing than others.

Just as Jiang Chen was about to tell them his name, he saw a disciple who had his gaze locked upon Yan Chen Yu, he kept on checking her body out, and his eyes were glowing brightly.

“Hey pretty girl, what’s your purpose for coming to the Black Sect? Big Bro here can help you!”

The disciple kept smiling at Yan Chen Yu, but he had no idea that his actions just now had offended someone’s taboo.

“You better watch where you’re looking.”

Jiang Chen glared at the disciple and spoke bluntly, then he continued walking up the mountain. If that disciple wasn’t from the Black Sect, he would have already died because of his actions.

“What the fuck? Who is this guy, why is he so arrogant? And how dare he act so wildly in our Black Sect?”

“Brat, stop there!”

The three disciples rolled their eyes, then they chased up and blocked Jiang Chen’s path. The fat guy even showed a fierce expression. This guy came out of nowhere and dared to act wildly in the Black Sect; he was now marked for death.

“Get out of my way.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He wanted to be more polite, but their responses had disappointed him.

“Damn, this guy is just too arrogant!”

That fat man scolded.

Slap~

Just as the fat man finished his words, a slap hit his face with speed resembling lightning. Followed by the crystal clear sound of someone being slapped, the more than 200 pound fat man fell onto the ground and cried out in pain.

“How dare you attack someone from the Black Sect? You’re courting death!”

Another man saw this young man, who had come out of nowhere, dare attack a disciple from the Black Sect. However, before he could finish his words, he was also slapped and sent flying into the ground. He was in the same situation as the fat man.

The last man was startled. He opened his mouth widely and stared at Jiang Chen with a look of disbelief. Jiang Chen’s aggressiveness had shocked him. There had never been anyone who had dared to attack a Black Sect disciple at this place. This was ridiculous.

“You... you... you, just wait here! You wait here for me!”

The disciple finally responded. He turned around and started running towards the mountain top.

“Kaka, that fellow is going to get some help!”

Big Yellow was laughing out loud.

“Never thought this would happen when we arrived here, this is disappointing.”

Yan Chen Yu showed a pouting expression.

“We can use this opportunity to build up my reputation. We’ll just wait here, let’s see if he can get help from Guan Yi Yun.”

Jiang Chen crossed his arms around his chest. A light smile emerged on his face. He didn’t rush up towards the mountain top, instead, he started waiting for someone to come here and invite him up.

Not long after this, 7-8 disciples wearing white clothes came down from the mountain top with fierce expressions. The leading man was a tall guy with a beard-covered face. Next to him was the disciple who went up to get help.

“They are all novice disciples at the Qi Hai realm, not strong enough for us.”

Big Yellow squatted down on a rock next to him while wiggling his tail leisurely.

“Senior disciple Liu, that’s him, that’s the guy who attacked us!”

The disciple pointed his finger at Jiang Chen. The senior novice disciple, Liu, had a fierce expression as he looked at the two men lying on the ground, then he stared at Jiang Chen angrily.

Senior disciple Liu was pretty famous amongst all the novice disciples. His cultivation realm had also reached the peak of the Qi Hai realm. The other novice disciples who followed along were also somewhat famous amongst the novice disciples.

“Brat, do you know where this place is?”

Senior disciple Liu stood in front of Jiang Chen and spoke in a harsh tone.

“Get lost, you’re not qualified to talk with me.”

Jiang Chen spoke in an indifferent manner.

“The fuck?”

Senior disciple Liu instantly became angry. With his status, no one amongst the novice disciples would dare disrespect him. But this brat who came out from nowhere actually asked him to get lost. Fuck, this was the Black Sect’s territory.

“I think you’re courting.....”

Slap!

The same thing as before happened. Senior disciple Liu didn't have the chance to finish his words before he was slapped and sent flying down onto the ground. The rest of the disciples showed expressions of disbelief. Senior disciple Liu was one of the strongest disciples amongst the novice disciples, but he was slapped by this guy as well. This young man was just too strong.

Not allowing them more time to express their shock, Jiang Chen took a step forward, then; slap, slap, slap, slap....

Crystal clear slapping sounds that sounded like the explosion of fireworks. Those 7-8 men who came here were now spread out on the ground. Sorrowful noises came from all disciples on the ground.

The novice disciple who went looking for help was still standing there, but this time he was completely startled. He couldn't help but look at the messy situation in front of him and think that this young man was just too mean. He never said too much, he just slapped them once they arrived.

“Go ahead, go get more help.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Fine, fine! Just you wait!”

The disciple was trembling as he once again ran up the mountain with great speed. Not long after that, another three men descended the mountain. Aside from the disciple who went looking for help, there were another two young men.

These two men were even more arrogant, and their cultivation realm was even stronger. Both of them had reached the Early Mortal Core realm, and were outer circle disciples of the Black Sect.

In the Black Sect, the difference between novice disciples and outer circle disciples was huge. It was just like the difference between the outer circle disciples and inner circle disciples, their statuses just couldn't be compared.

“Senior disciple Huang, look, this is the guy who beat up our men!”

The novice disciple pointed at Jiang Chen once again.

When the two outer circle disciples saw the number of people laying on the ground, their anger started boiling. Senior disciple Huang laid his vision on Jiang Chen and examined him, he wanted to see who the person with such big guts was.

“Brat, I don't care who you are, when you dared to come to our Black Sect and started beating our men, you were just courting death! I want you to kneel down immediately and apologize to them!”

Senior disciple Huang had an imposing aura. He wanted Jiang Chen to kneel down. It was pretty obvious that they were just some small potatoes amongst the outer circle disciples who didn't participate in the Qi Province competition. If not, they wouldn't be so arrogant upon seeing Jiang Chen.

“What's your name?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Fuck, are you deaf? Senior disciple Huang is asking you to kneel down!”

Another Mortal Core disciple scolded. He raised his palm and prepared to slap Jiang Chen.

Slap!

Another crystal clear slapping sound. It wasn't Jiang Chen who was slapped, it was that arrogant Mortal Core disciple. The man was slapped by Jiang Chen and fell down onto the ground. He struggled for a bit, but he was unable to stand up again.

What happened had shocked everyone. Senior disciple Huang opened his eyes widely, and the novice disciple was completely frightened. Slapping a novice disciple and an outer circle disciple were two totally different concepts. Just who was this young man? He was just too strong!

Slap!

Another slap! Jiang Chen's palm hit senior disciple Huang's cheeks. The arrogant senior disciple Huang didn't have the time to respond, the slap made him spin three times. However, because Jiang Chen had controlled his force, this senior disciple Huang didn't fall down.

"You... You... You just wait here! You just wait!"

Senior disciple Huang turned around and started running towards the mountain top, replacing the role of the novice disciple.

The novice disciple stood blankly in the same spot. Fear covered his entire face, he was hoping that Jiang Chen could slap him as well and make him unconscious. However, Jiang Chen didn't. To him, this was torture, he could only stand there without moving a single inch.

Not long after that, another two men descended the mountain. One of them was senior disciple Huang, and the other one was someone who had a much higher cultivation realm. He was emitting the qi of a Late Mortal Core warrior.

These two men moved with great speed. Soon, they had descended half the mountain. The Late Mortal Core disciple first looked at those disciples who were laying on the ground and crying in sorrow, then he looked at Jiang Chen. When he saw Jiang Chen's face, then Yan Chen Yu, and then Big Yellow who was

standing beside him, his expression immediately changed.

“Senior disciple Wang, this is the guy! He dares come to the Black Sect and cause trouble, and he also beat up our men! Please cripple him, beat him till his mom can’t recognize him!”

The disciple named Huang pointed at Jiang Chen and spoke in a fierce manner. With a winning expression, he was ready to witness the look of horror on Jiang Chen’s face. Senior disciple Wang was one of the strongest outer circle disciples, he could surely beat this guy until even his mother couldn’t recognize him.

“I will cripple your arrogance! I, your father, will beat you till your mother can’t recognize you!”

Senior disciple Wang immediately became furious. Without saying anything else, he slapped senior disciple Huang’s face.

What? What was this all about?

Huang’s mind went blank after being slapped, what happened? Didn’t senior disciple Wang come here to help him? Why did he slap me instead?

“Senior disciple Wang, why did you slap me?”

Disciple Huang felt wronged.

“Why can’t I slap you?! I’ll make your dog eyes blind!”

Senior disciple Wang slapped him once again, then he jumped on top of him and started slapping disciple Huang continuously. Soon, he was beaten so much that his head resembled a pig’s head. He was really beaten so much that even his mother couldn’t recognize him.

Disciple Huang was laying on the ground crying in sorrow. Tears flowed down from his face. What happened, why was he always the one getting beaten?

Not just him, those disciples who were lying on the ground making sorrowful noises were also startled. They had no idea what had just happened.

Disciple Wang started walking towards Jiang Chen, and then he respectfully bowed down to him. With a smile he said, “Senior disciple Jiang Chen, my name is Wang Yun! These bastards don’t know senior disciple Jiang Chen and senior disciple Yan! I hope senior disciple Jiang doesn’t blame them!”

What? Senior disciple Jiang Chen? Senior disciple Yan?

He was Jiang Chen, and the beautiful girl was Yan Chen Yu.

Plop!

The novice disciple, who had been watching all of this, had his

eyes rolled, and he immediately fainted. It wasn't obvious whether he had really fainted, or if he was just pretending. Disciple Huang immediately cried out. After the Qi Province competition, there was no one in the Black Sect who didn't know the name Jiang Chen.

Chapter 107 – This Is Fame

When hearing the name Jiang Chen, those who were making sorrowful noises on the ground immediately had a change in expression. Their faces turned grey, and they wished to slap themselves a few times.

This was what was called being blind as a bat, to have eyes but fail to recognize Mt Tai. You won't die if you don't look for trouble, but this could precisely be described as looking for trouble.

Feeling wrong after taking a beating? Serves you right!

Disciple Huang straight away started crying like a baby, what had he just done? He had been arrogant in front of senior disciple Jiang Chen, and he had even said he wanted to beat senior disciple Jiang Chen so much that even his mother wouldn't recognize him. He was courting death.

Everyone gazed at the novice disciple who had just fainted. If looks could kill someone, then this disciple would have been killed a thousand times. If it wasn't for this novice disciple asking for their help, there would have been no way for them to offend Jiang Chen.

This was Jiang Chen. Within just one day, his story had spread across the entire Black Sect. He had gotten first place in the Qi Province competition, he had killed Ling Ao and Li Wu Shuang, and he had a fight with Nan Bei Chao in one year. Although they

had yet to see Jiang Chen's face, he had already been the idol of many of the Black Sect disciples.

‘Damn it, I had the audacity to offend the idol I had yet to meet... There's nothing wrong with me being beaten until I looked like a pig's head!’

Not only did they not feel wronged, these men even felt blessed. They were luckily disciples of the Black Sect, and thankfully, Jiang Chen showed mercy. They had heard that Jiang Chen was a cruel man. He dared to kill Ling Ao and Li Wu Shuang in front of Nan Bei Chao and Liang Xiao. Today they had provoked this Jiang Chen, and if he killed them with a slap, then there would be no place for them to complain. The sect wouldn't punish a genius because of some outer circle disciples.

“All of you bastards, hurry up and apologize to senior disciple Jiang! You should all be thankful that senior disciple Jiang is showing mercy!”

Wang Yun glanced around and scolded loudly.

Hearing this, those disciples didn't dare show any hesitation. All of them struggled as they stood up from the ground. They couldn't be blamed for this clumsy response, Jiang Chen had slapped them pretty hard, making it difficult for them to move.

After being slapped and still needing to climb up and apologize, supposing they would've felt wronged, but none of them felt wronged at all, just like what Wang Yun said, they should be

thankful to Jiang Chen's mercy, if it was according to senior disciple Jiang Chen's approach, they would be dead corpses by now.

“That's enough.”

Jiang Chen casually waved his hand as he continued walking up the Black Mountain. Yan Chen Yu and Big Yellow followed behind him, proudly ascending the mountain.

Wang Yun showed a regretful expression when these disciple didn't live up to Jiang Chen's expectations, then he once again scolded disciple Huang before he started running to catch up with Jiang Chen.

Disciple Huang sat down on the ground again, he was just like a lost soul. His face had an expression of one feeling wronged. He felt like crying when he thought about his future position in the Black Sect. He let out another loud cry again.

Damn, he had offended Jiang Chen, how was he going to mix in with the rest of the disciples of the Black Sect in the future? Although he was also an outer circle disciple, could he really be compared with Jiang Chen? Although this was Jiang Chen's first day here, his position amongst all outer circle disciples was not any weaker than Han Yan's.

“Fucking idiots! Who was the one in charge of guarding the mountain today?!”

Disciple Huang roared at all the disciples in front of him. It almost seemed like fire was going to shoot out from his eyes. His name was Huang Zheng, and he had been doing pretty well in the Black Sect. However, after what happened today, it could be said that his future was completely ruined.

“Senior disciple Huang, those three were supposed to guard the mountain today!”

One of the disciples pointed out the three novice disciple who were the ones in charge of protecting the mountain today. One of them immediately fainted, and when the other two saw that they were pointed out, their faces immediately turned grey, then they kneeled down on the ground because of fear.

“Senior disciple Huang, we’re sorry, we didn’t know that he was Jiang Chen!”

One of the disciples kept crying. When he recalled that he was checking out Yan Chen Yu in front of Jiang Chen, he started wishing for himself to die.

“Damn it, do you have eyes where your butt is? Can’t even recognize senior disciple Jiang, are you really guarding this place properly? I, your father, had his future ruined because of you three bastards.”

Huang Zheng scolded with harsh words. He walked up and kicked these two disciples onto the ground.

Both of these disciples were crying out in sorrow. In their hearts, they couldn't help but wish to scold back. Did you, Huang Zheng, recognize Jiang Chen just now? If you could recognize him, would your future be ruined? If you want to blame something, then you can blame your own dog's eyes! This had nothing to do with us! Just look at that Wang Yun, perhaps he will get praised by senior disciple Jiang later, and will be protected by senior disciple Jiang in the future. Who would dare mess with him in the Black Sect then?

“Because of you three bastards, we offended senior disciple Jiang! Let's beat them!”

“That's right! Let's beat them until even their mothers can't recognize them!”

.....

The angry disciples had just found a method to release their anger; those three disciples in charge of guarding the mountain had instantly become their targets.

Bang bang bang.....

Ah ahh ahhh.....

This was terrible. Nevertheless, this was human nature.

The guard trio had met ultimate misfortune today. They had

never encountered anything like this before while they were standing guard. It was just their bad luck to encounter Jiang Chen today.

The unluckiest one was probably the novice disciple who had fainted. He was awakened because of the beating from the others, then he fainted once again because of the beating.

“That’s enough, stop beating them. There’s no use even if we beat them to death.”

Huang Zheng said. If they continued beating them, then these three would definitely die.

“Brothers, do you all still want to get along well in the Black Sect?”

Huang Zheng asked.

“Of course, it has always been my dream to be a part of the Black Sect!”

Someone amongst the disciples said. The Black Sect was one of the Qi Province’s four big sects, and joining it did not only represent one’s status, but being able to cultivate here was also much more beneficial than anywhere outside. There was an underground vein underneath the Black Mountain, this place couldn’t be compared with anywhere else. It didn’t matter if it was the natural Yuan energy in the air, or the cultivation resources, all

the disciples on the spot had gone through hard effort in order to become disciples. Of course, every one of them wanted to continue staying in the Black Sect and have a good future.

“After offending senior disciple Jiang, you’re still thinking about how to get along well with him.”

Huang Zheng said again, then he looked at the three novice disciples rolling around on the ground making noises. He was trying his best to resist kicking them once again.

“Then what should we do, senior disciple Huang? Please give us advice!”

Someone said. The situation now was pretty obvious, Jiang Chen had taken first place in the Qi Province competition, he had also killed Ling Ao from the Burning Sky Pavilion and Li Wu Shuang from the Heavenly Sword Sect, and he also had an agreement to fight Nan Bei Chao in one year. Such an outstanding genius who was just like Nan Bei Chao and couldn’t be found even in the last thousand years in the Qi Province, now that he had joined the Black Sect, he would definitely get lots of attention from the management. Jiang Chen would just need to mention this event, and none of them would be able to continue staying here.

Even worse, Jiang Chen might not need to say anything. If today’s events were known by others, they would all become public enemies and become the other disciple’s targets. At that point of time, there would surely be someone who wanted to lick Jiang Chen’s boots and find trouble with them. If this truly happened, then they would have a hard time in the sect.

“I’ll go find senior disciple Wang Yun later and ask him to help us arrange a meeting with senior disciple Jiang Chen. All of us will go and apologize to senior disciple Jiang Chen! At that time, all of you will need to pay some price, take out some Mortal Restoration Pills or treasures that you think are valuable. With senior disciple Jiang’s status, I’m sure he won’t really bother about what happened!”

Huang Zheng continued, “Now let me ask you all, if any of you are unwilling to go or are unwilling to take out money, stand out now!”

Who dares to stand out? Who is unwilling? If some money was enough to solve this disastrous situation, they’ll get exactly what they’ve been hoping for.

Besides, most of the disciples on the spot were from big families in the Qi Province. Those who could come to the Black Sect and cultivate usually had families that were doing quite well, they didn’t really mind paying some price.

“All of us are willing to do this! Senior disciple Huang, we’ll just let you handle this.”

Someone said.

“Fine, carry these three bastards as well. Later, ask them if they agree or not.”

Huang Zheng angrily gazed at the trio who were lying on the ground. Nevertheless, he was still thinking about helping them. This proves that Huang Zheng could still be considered a nice guy. If he brought everyone except for the trio to apologize to Jiang Chen, then the trio wouldn't be able to get along well in the sect in the future.

Being led by Wang Yun, Jiang Chen and the other two crossed the outer perimeter of the Black Mountain and arrived at the place where all outer circle disciples were staying.

There were a lot of mountains within the Black Mountain range. From the border where the novice disciples were, to the outer circle disciples' region, then to the inner circle disciples' zone; they all had their own respective territories.

Besides, the deeper one went, the richer the natural Yuan energies were. This would no doubt serve to increase the healthy competition among the disciples.

“Senior disciple Jiang, senior disciple Guan Yi Yun has specifically arranged a special place for senior disciple Jiang to stay and cultivate. He has also ordered that no matter whoever receives senior disciple Jiang, they can not show any neglect. Being able to personally receive senior disciple Jiang, this is truly I, Wang Yun's honor!”

Wang Yun said.

“Where is Han Yan?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Senior disciple Han immediately entered closed door cultivation upon returning. However, before he began his closed door cultivation, he had had informed all of us, and now everyone in the Black Sect knows that senior disciple Jiang and senior disciple Han are good brothers! I heard that senior disciple Guan Yi Yun also entered closed door cultivation upon returning. Besides, senior disciple Guan has a high position in the sect, and he normally won’t come to the outer circle disciples’ zone. He is someone we all look up to, and this time he came here personally to make arrangements, and this was all because of senior disciple Jiang!”

Wang Yun said. What he said was pretty obvious, from now on, every single outer circle disciple would take Jiang Chen as their leader. A strong man would be followed blindly no matter where he went, this was one fact that could be applied everywhere.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Han Yan and Guan Yi Yun entering secluded cultivation at the same time was expected by him. The Ancient Devil in Han Yan’s body was going to awaken, and after this secluded cultivation session, he would be able to break through to the Heavenly Core realm.

As for Guan Yi Yun, he was defeated by Nan Bei Chao in the Qi Province competition with just a single strike. His confidence had surely suffered greatly. As a prideful man who would never admit defeat, he wouldn’t allow this to happen again. Therefore, Guan Yi Yun should be attempting to break through to the Divine Core

realm during his secluded cultivation.

“Eh, who is that guy? He doesn’t look like someone from our Black Sect, and Wang Yun is even following behind, it looks like he is being very respectful towards that guy.”

“That’s right, I have never seen him before. A young man who can make senior disciple Wang Yun nod and bow, I guess he must be someone important.”

“I know! That’s Jiang Chen, I’m sure he is Jiang Chen!”

.....

Along the way, they met a lot of outer circle disciples. All of them were clueless about Wang Yun’s behaviour, but soon, someone managed to guess Jiang Chen’s identity.

Chapter 108 - Guidance

A young man whom no one had met before was able to make Wang Yun, a Late Mortal Core warrior, bow his head. Perhaps only the rising star Jiang Chen would be able to do this. It was a pretty good guess.

Right at this moment, two outer circle disciple walked up from ahead. When they saw Jiang Chen, they immediately greeted him.

“Senior disciple Jiang Chen, you have settled your matters! That was fast!”

“Welcome to the Black Sect, senior disciple Jiang Chen! I hope that senior disciple Jiang Chen can guide us in the future!”

The two of them bowed their heads. With this, Jiang Chen’s identity had been confirmed. Those who hadn’t participated in the Qi Province competition all had their eyes wide open as they looked at Jiang Chen from head to toe.

“Heavens! He is Jiang Chen, he looks so young, perhaps only 15-16 years old!”

“I heard he killed Ling Ao and Li Wu Shuang while he was only an Early Mortal Core warrior! This man looks so delicate and handsome, it’s hard to think that he is such a fierce man!”

“Lower your voice, senior disciple Jiang Chen will be the outer

circle disciples' leader in the future. He has a fight with Nan Bei Chao one year from now, and he will surely get all the attention from the top management!”

“Wow! Senior disciple Jiang Chen is so handsome, it would be nice if I could be his girlfriend!”

“Get lost! You haven't even seen your own face, open your eyes and look at that purple clothed girl beside Jiang Chen, she should be senior disciple Yan Chen Yu. If senior disciple Yan is the swan, then you can't even be compared with a wild goose! Only this kind of girl can match senior disciple Jiang!”

.....

The surrounding disciples' discussions became heated. Although people were communicating privately with quiet voices, Jiang Chen had good hearing, so he heard every single word spoken. He couldn't help but laugh and shake his head. He had never expected that even before coming to the Black Sect, he would already become so famous.

Obviously, his fame was spread out by those outer circle disciples who had participated in the Qi Province competition. The Black Sect was only so big, and a big event such as the Qi Province competition, it wouldn't take more than an hour before even the lowest ranked disciple knew the result.

“Alright, alright, carry on with your own matters. Senior disciple Jiang has gone through a long a journey, I will need to bring him

to his residence. In the future, if you have any questions regarding cultivation, senior disciple Jiang will show you some guidance.”

Wang Yun waved at the disciples, then he continued leading Jiang Chen towards the inner part.

Along the way, they met quite a number of disciples who had participated in the Qi Province competition. All of them happily greeted Jiang Chen when they saw him. The disciples of the Black Sect weren't idiots, pleasing Jiang Chen may not give them any advantages, but it surely wouldn't bring them any disadvantages either.

Not to mention his relationship with the Little Devil King Han Yan and Guan Yi Yun, just Jiang Chen's way of doing things alone made him deserving of all the respect.

“Kid, I never expected you to be so famous here. Even I, your father's glory has been overshadowed by yours, you're too presumptuous.”

Big Yellow said with a hint of dissatisfaction.

“Don't speak if you've got nothing to say.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Big Yellow. If this dog could behave a little better in the Black Sect, then Jiang Chen would be glad.

“Puppy dog, this is the Black Sect, you better not mess around.”

Yan Chen Yu patted Big Yellow's head and reminded him.

After following Wang Yun for a bit, they arrived at the outer circle disciples' living quarters.

The living quarters for the outer circle disciples were located between the mountains. They were lined up in rows of fine courtyards and ancient buildings.

“Senior disciple Jiang, these are the living quarters for our outer circle disciples. They are normally in the form of courtyards, and the buildings are connected to the underground energy vein. Normally, six people will stay in one living quarter within a courtyard. Late Mortal Core disciples can own an entire courtyard for themselves, and those who break through to the Heavenly Core realm will enter the inner circle.”

Wang Yun said.

“Who is staying in the same living quarter as me?”

Jiang Chen asked with a smile.

“Senior disciple Jiang is making fun of me. Although you haven't reached the Late Mortal Core realm yet, but with your abilities, you can defeat every single outer circle disciple here. Therefore, senior disciple Guan Yi Yun had specifically ordered us to prepare the best living quarter for senior disciple Jiang.”

Wang Yun led Jiang Chen past the area where all the living quarters were located. Behind the living quarters, a very fine courtyard was built. It was located at the top of the mountain, isolated from the living quarters' area. It was surrounded by mountains and rivers, and there was even a waterfall nearby. The scene was very soothing, the natural Yuan energy was rich, and it was isolated from all the noise coming from the living quarters' area. This was simply the best place for cultivation.

“Wow, this place is so beautiful!”

Yan Chen Yu was standing on the mountain top where she could view the entire Black Mountain. The feeling of having the view of all the mountains underneath her feet made her feel happy and relaxed.

There were a total of three well built rooms within the courtyard. Aside from Jiang Chen and Yan Chen Yu, even Big Yellow would be able to have a room of his own. This kind of treatment was unique amongst the outer circle disciples.

Pushing the door open, the decorations in the room were simple. Aside from a bed, there was only a [golden praying mat](#) right in the middle of the room.

“Senior disciple Jiang, this praying mat can communicate directly with the underground energy vein. Cultivating on top of it can yield twice the result with half the effort!”

Wang Yun explained. This futon was specifically prepared for Jiang Chen by Guan Yi Yun. Amongst all the outer circle disciples, aside from Han Yan, only Jiang Chen had this special privilege.

“En, not bad, senior disciple Guan is very kind.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He felt very thankful to Guan Yi Yun in his mind. The residence he had arranged for him was very unique.

“Is senior disciple Jiang satisfied with this place?”

Wang Yun asked with a smile.

“En, not bad. Wang Yun, what cultivation skill are you cultivating?”

Jiang Chen looked at Wang Yun.

Wang Yun was startled. He didn't know why Jiang Chen would suddenly ask him about his cultivation skill.

“Senior disciple Jiang, I am cultivating the ‘Water Breaking Script’ from the Black Sect, it is a High Ranked Mortal cultivation skill.”

Wang Yun replied.

“You’re lying, you’re not cultivating the ‘Water Breaking Script’.”

Jiang Chen casually pulled a chair and sat down on it without even looking at Wang Yun.

But Wang Yun’s expression had changed dramatically. He stood still, and he didn’t show a slight hint of his energy, and Jiang Chen was actually able to tell that he wasn’t cultivating the ‘Water Breaking Script’.

“Let me ask you, during the last three months, when the time reaches midnight, does your ‘Origin Pass’ acupuncture point start hurting? Even worse, during the last few days, has the pain become unbearable?”

Jiang Chen asked.

Now, Wang Yun’s expression had completely changed. He opened his eyes widely and stared at Jiang Chen. With a trembling voice he asked, “You, how do you know that?”

“Hmph! Still trying to lie to me when you have cultivated wrongly. With your current condition, it wouldn’t take more than two months before you die because of psychosis. Now tell me, what skill are you cultivating?”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. If it wasn’t for Wang Yun behaving well today, he wouldn’t bother showing him any

guidance at all.

Plop!

Hearing that he would die within two months because of psychosis, Wang Yun kneeled down in front of Jiang Chen, and without daring to hide anything else, he said, “Senior disciple Jiang is truly a genius, you were able to tell my symptoms with just a look! You’re right, the ‘Water Breaking Skill’ is just a cover up method. I am cultivating a Mid Ranked Earth skill called the ‘Cloudy Rock Skill’. I obtained this skill by accident during an expedition. An Earth ranked skill is much more valuable than a Mortal ranked skill, and I was unable to resist its temptation, so I began cultivating it. This skill is really weird, and I have no idea what went wrong. Three months ago, I began feeling pain in my ‘Origin Pass’ acupuncture point, and to this day, the pain has reached an unbearable state. Please, senior disciple Jiang, I beg of you to save my life!”

If Wang Yun previously only felt fear towards Jiang Chen, then he had now begun worshipping Jiang Chen like a god.

“Circulate your ‘Cloudy Rock Skill’.”

Jiang Chen said indifferently.

“Yes!”

Wang Yun didn’t dare show any neglect, he immediately begun

circulating the 'Cloudy Rock Skill'. A cold breeze emerged from his body which contained a slight evil feeling. Jiang Chen looked at him carefully and found out that when Wang Yun began circulating the 'Cloudy Rock Skill', there was an evil light within his eyes. That was a symptom of psychosis.

“Stop it.”

Jiang Chen asked Wang Yun to stop circulating the skill and said, “The 'Cloudy Rock Skill' by itself is a skill more partial towards yin and coldness. Although it can't be considered a modest skill, but it's not an evil skill either. Nevertheless, you have entered the wrong path, turning it into an evil skill. When you first obtained the 'Cloudy Rock Skill', you were absorbing the natural Yin Qi at night, and you even absorbed some evil Yin Qi. Cultivating the 'Cloudy Rock Skill' with this method can indeed give you a cultivation boost for a short period of time, but because of this, you have also destroyed yourself.

“Mighty senior disciple Jiang, please save me senior disciple Jiang!”

Wang Yun kept kowtowing to Jiang Chen. The only thing he felt for Jiang Chen right now was that he was a man he highly admired. He had only circulated the 'Cloudy Rock Skill' once, and Jiang Chen was really able to tell how he had been cultivating it. Wang Yun felt like he was a transparent man in front of Jiang Chen, he couldn't hide any secrets in front of him.

In Wang Yun's mind, the young man who sat in the chair in front of him was not a young man any more, but a wise senior who was

able to do anything. With just a few words he had made him know the seriousness of the skill that he had been cultivating.

“Stand up and walk towards me.”

Jiang Chen said.

Wang Yun stood up, then he moved closer to Jiang Chen and respectfully stood in front of him, it was as if he was a child who had just done something wrong.

“I told you just now, the ‘Cloudy Rock Skill’ by itself is a skill that’s more partial towards yin and coldness, but it isn’t an evil skill. You previously cultivated the ‘Water Breaking Skill’, and with this as the foundation, you started cultivating the ‘Cloudy Rock Skill’, and this is the problem. Even worse, you chose a cultivation method you shouldn’t have chosen at all. From now on, you need to completely give up on the ‘Water Breaking Skill’ and start cultivating the ‘Cloudy Rock Skill’ with the normal method. Do not purposely absorb Yin Qi.”

After speaking those words, Jiang Chen pointed his finger out with lightning like speed, precisely hitting Wang Yun’s ‘Origin Pass’. Wang Yun felt hot air flowing into his body. Underneath the impact of this hot air, the pain in his ‘Origin Pass’ immediately disappeared.

When the hot air diminished, Wang Yun immediately felt clear-minded and energetic. The abnormal feeling in his ‘Origin Pass’ acupuncture point was completely gone, allowing him to return to

his original form.

“Cultivate the ‘Cloudy Rock Skill’ according to what I’ve told you. Tonight, you won’t feel any pain in your ‘Origin Pass’. With your talent, it’ll take you at most half a year before you’ll be able to break through to the Heavenly Core realm and become an inner circle disciple.”

Jiang Chen said.

Plop~

Wang Yun kneeled down on the floor once again and said, “Thank you, senior disciple Jiang for this great kindness! Wang Yun doesn’t have much I can repay you with, but from now on, Wang Yun’s life will belong to senior disciple Jiang! Senior disciple Jiang just needs to tell me what to do, and no matter what it is, I, Wang Yun will definitely accomplish it without even furrowing my brows!”

Chapter 109 – The Kindhearted Senior Disciple Jiang

Wang Yun really felt like he had struck gold. At this point in time, his respect and admiration towards Jiang Chen was endless like a river's stream.

Lucky, he was incredibly lucky. If he hadn't met Jiang Chen, then he would surely have continued cultivating the 'Cloudy Rock Skill' until psychosis took over and he died.

Looks like a kind-heart could earn good rewards. He was behaving pretty well in front of senior disciple Jiang today, and because of that, he was lucky enough to receive guidance from senior disciple Jiang. Not only did he save his life, his future would be limitless as well.

The only thing that puzzled Wang Yun was, Jiang Chen, at such a young age, why did he have the abilities to point out his problems with just a single look? This really puzzled him.

But in the end, Wang Yun just gave credit to his genius talent. In this world, there were many items and people that simply could not be measure by normal standards.

"Stand up. This place isn't bad, I am very satisfied with it. You deserved my guidance."

Jiang Chen said. He was portraying an aura of someone from the

top. This kind of noble and gracious manner could easily make anyone submit to him.

“Damn, what kind of monster is this guy?”

Big Yellow muttered. The more he followed Jiang Chen, the more mysterious he found Jiang Chen to be.

“Thank you, senior disciple Jiang!”

Wang Yun stood up from the ground, his face carried an expression of gratitude.

“En, you can leave now. Remember, if there’s anything in the sect in the future, come here and inform me.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright. I will not disturb senior disciple Jiang and senior disciple Yan’s rest.”

Wang Yun cupped his fists, then turned around and left. This guy was jumping all the way down as he descended the mountain. After obtaining the ‘Cloudy Rock Skill’, this was Wang Yun’s happiest moment.

Big Yellow, while wiggling his tail, slowly started walking out from the courtyard.

“Stop there, Big Yellow, where are you going?”

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes.

“Strolling around. Staying here would be too boring.”

Big Yellow said with a grin on his face.

“No way, just stay here, you’re not allowed to go anywhere.”

Jiang Chen berated. If he let this dog out, perhaps it wouldn’t take long before the entire Black Sect turned chaotic.

“Fuck! I, your father, was going to check if there were any treasures in this Black Sect!”

Big Yellow was not happy.

“If that’s the case, I won’t let you out. You better stay next to me and behave yourself. From now on, wherever I go, you will follow.”

Jiang Chen said. This dog’s ability to sense treasure was the best, and the Black Sect, as one of the four big sects, was sure to have a lot of treasures. If he allows this dog out and cause losses for the Black Sect, then he wouldn’t be able to continue staying here.

“Damn you, how dare you limit my freedom? Damn it! I suddenly feel sleepy, let me sleep first.”

Big Yellow felt depressed. He angrily walked into a room. However, Jiang Chen could clearly see that when Big Yellow entered the room, his body had started glowing in a golden light.

“Don’t tell me this dog is going to break through again? Just by sleeping, he is able to level up... What a weirdo.”

Jiang Chen could still remember, the last time Big Yellow broke through, he was still sleeping. And just now, Jiang Chen could clearly feel the restless Yuan energy within his body; this was a symptom that he was about to break through.

Jiang Chen sighed. The heir of a Divine Demon Beast like Big Yellow always possessed some advantages that no one else could have. You never really knew when Big Yellow was about to break through. And after he broke through, then a new powerful innate ability would also awaken.

“Xiao Yu, do you feel tired after following me?”

Jiang Chen held Yan Chen Yu’s hand and asked gently. Every since they left Red City and up until now, Yan Chen Yu had always followed him around. She had gone through continuous battles and killing, and because of the intense atmosphere, Jiang Chen had rarely taken the time to take care of Yan Chen Yu.

“I’m not tired. As long as I can be by Big Bro Jiang Chen’s side, Xiao Yu doesn’t fear anything. Besides, Big Bro Jiang Chen has introduced me to another kind of life that I previously would have never dared imagine! This is really exciting!”

Yan Chen Yu said with a playful smile. This kind of life was something she would never have dreamed about. If it wasn’t for her following Jiang Chen, even if her Nine Yin Meridians had successfully awakened, she would still be a little princess within Red City.

“Xiao Yu, Big Bro Jiang Chen is going to walk an unusual path, and we will experience more of this kind of life in the future. You possess the Nine Yin Meridians, and you’re destined to walk an extraordinary path, so cultivate with your best effort. Once I finish my journey, I will marry you.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face. The path he wanted to walk was one only he himself knew. This was a path destined to be filled with slaughter and the blood of all his enemies. The first thing he wanted to do after being reborn was reach his previous peak level, and then enter the legendary Realm of Immortals.

In his past life, he had used every single drop of his blood to break open the door leading to the Realm of Immortals, but he never had a chance to enter it, and this was his biggest regret. However, he now had the chance to do so. Jiang Chen would never give up this opportunity.

Of course, it was still too early to talk about the Realm of Immortals right now. The rebirth was just a new beginning. Not to mention the Realm of Immortals, even the time when he could step onto the land of the Divine Continent was still far from here.

“En.”

Yan Chen Yu was feeling shy. Ever since Jiang Chen had helped her awaken her Nine Yin Meridians, Yan Chen Yu had given herself to Jiang Chen. Right now, when she heard Jiang Chen say he was going to marry her, it was hard for her not to feel joy.

“Xiao Yu, how much of the ten thousand year old Freezing Crystal have you absorbed?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“I have absorbed about one third of it, and I am preparing to enter secluded cultivation and absorb the rest of it with all my effort. I want to break through to the Late Mortal Core realm as soon as possible!”

Yan Chen Yu said.

“Alright. The Black Sect’s condition is pretty suitable for cultivation. If you have nothing else to do, then you should just stay here and cultivate in the future.”

Jiang Chen said with a hint of concern. At the same time, he was

astonished by her Divine Body's cultivation speed. Ever since Yan Chen Yu's Nine Yin Meridians had awoken, her cultivation realm had advanced swiftly and vigorously, and now she was going to use the ten thousand year old Freezing Crystal to break through to the Late Mortal Core realm. This kind of speed, ordinary people could only feel envy and shame.

Big Yellow had already gone to sleep, and Yan Chen Yu had entered another room and begun her secluded cultivation. Jiang Chen was sitting alone next to a stone table within the courtyard. With a calm and relaxed mind, he was enjoying the cold breeze sweeping through the mountains and rivers. His soul energy and Divine Sense was hovering around within the courtyard, indulging himself and feeling the existence of nature.

As a cultivator, depending solely on cultivation was not enough. In the path of cultivation, insight was the most important element. The Mortal Core realm was only one of the foundation realms, and one was still far away from understanding the importance of insight at this stage. Once the cultivation realm passed the Combat Soul realm, and reached the Combat King realm, insight became extremely important. A Combat King warrior could control the Dimensional Laws and stand high above the masses, the cultivation realms beneath simply couldn't be compared with this realm.

Evening!

Wang Yun came once again. Together with him was Huang Zheng and the other disciples Jiang Chen had encountered earlier, including the three guarding disciples who had been beaten so

much their heads started resembling pig heads.

“Wang Yun, what is this about?”

Jiang Chen glared at the group and asked indifferently.

“All of you bastards, hurry up and apologize to senior disciple Jiang!”

Wang Yun hooted at these disciples.

“Senior disciple Jiang, we were blinded, we didn’t know it was you when we offended your dignity! We hope senior disciple Jiang can forgive us!”

Huang Zheng bowed deeply towards Jiang Chen.

“That’s right senior disciple Jiang, we were all blinded, and we couldn’t recognize Mt. Tai! We really hope senior disciple Jiang can forgive us, and not to take it to heart.”

“It was all our fault, senior disciple Jiang, please punish us as you see fit!”

.....

Everyone spoke and stated their stand. The guard trio who had

their faces bashed in kneeled down on the ground and started crying their hearts out. It hurts, it hurts so fucking much.

Looking at what had happened, Jiang Chen couldn't help but laugh. He hadn't taken this matter to heart, but these disciples had become so restless that they had even come here to apologize to him. However, after giving it some thought, Jiang Chen finally understood why they behaved like this. His reputation was there, and he had a predetermined fight with Nan Bei Chao in one year. He was considered the Black Sect's representative. These men had offended him, so they would surely suffer torture from Jiang Chen's future.

“Senior disciple Jiang, this is a gift from of all of them! I've counted, there's a total of 3000 Mortal Restoration Pills in here!”

Wang Yun grabbed a storage bag and handed it over to Jiang Chen.

3000 Mortal Restoration Pills, this was nothing much for Jiang Chen. However, for these disciples, it was actually a huge amount, especially for those novice disciples. They weren't particularly wealthy before this, and these 3000 Mortal Restoration Pills could be considered all their fortune. From this, one could easily tell that they were sincerely apologizing to Jiang Chen.

“I never took today's events to heart, so you guys don't need to take it to heart either. As for these Mortal Restoration Pills, I don't think you're all that wealthy, so just take them back.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Senior disciple Jiang, please accept these Mortal Restoration Pills. If you don’t, they won’t be able to feel peace in their minds.”

Wang Yun said.

“That’s right, senior disciple Jiang! This is all our fortune, and if you think it is too little, I, Huang Zheng will try my best to get more for you!”

Huang Zheng said again.

Jiang Chen smiled. He knew these men had misunderstood him, therefore he grabbed the storage bag and asked, “Fine, I’ll accept these Mortal Restoration Pills. What’s your name?”

Jiang Chen looked at Huang Zheng.

“My name is Huang Zheng!”

Huang Zheng hurriedly replied.

“Come over here.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand.

Huang Zhen didn't dare show any neglect as he hurriedly walked over to Jiang Chen.

“Huang Zheng, you should all know my approach by now. That's right, I fought three battles during the Qi Province competition, and I killed three men, including Ling Ao and Li Wu Shuang. I, Jiang Chen am cruel, and I never show any mercy to my enemies. However, I would never do so to my own friend. I can't blame any of you for what happened today, after all, none of you knew me before this. Take these Mortal Restoration Pills and distribute them among all your brothers.” [\[1\]](#)

Jiang Chen pushed the storage bag to Huang Zheng. He had seen these men's sincerity. Besides, he had a good impression of the Black Sect, these Mortal Restoration Pills weren't a big amount in his eyes, but to these disciples, it was very important.

“Senior disciple Jiang, this... this.....”

Suddenly, Huang Zheng was at a loss for words. He never expected Jiang Chen to forgive them so easily, and even return their Mortal Restoration Pills.

“Senior disciple Jiang is a kind person, all of you should be grateful for his great kindness! You all better help senior disciple Jiang in the future with sincere hearts!”

Wang Yun said. All of these disciples were so touched that they started crying. They thought to themselves that they had been wrong about senior disciple Jiang; he was actually a simple and

straightforward man to his own friends. What's more important was that senior disciple Jiang had actually treated them as his friends.

Footnotes:

[\[1\]](#) Approach (手段) way of doing something, Jiang Chen's way of handling situations.

Chapter 110 – Enemy At The Door

The first thing Jiang Chen wanted to do once he arrived at the Black Sect was to gain the support of the disciples. In this life, Jiang Chen wanted to be respected and hailed by all mortals again, however, he did not want to be alone anymore. Since he had come to the Black Sect, he just wanted to lead the Black Sect and achieve greater strength. Staying in the Qi Province was far from enough.

What Jiang Chen did today had completely won over the hearts of these disciples. Wang Yun had completely submitted to him. Besides, for disciples like Wang Yun who mixed along pretty well within the Black Sect, his submission could basically represent the submission of all outer circle disciples.

As for Huang Zheng and the other disciples, aside from feeling grateful, their minds were filled with respect towards Jiang Chen. It was actually very difficult to change someone's opinion of someone else, especially from fear to respect.

“That’s enough, you can all leave now. There’s no need to mention today’s events anymore.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand.

The group once again bowed to Jiang Chen before they turned around and left.

At the bottom of the mountain!

“I really never expected that senior disciple Jiang Chen who was known for his cruel and fierce approach would really forgive us, and even return the Mortal Restoration Pills to us!”

“You know nothing but shit, senior disciple Jiang is a special man, he doesn’t care about this small amount of Mortal Restoration Pills! Besides, senior disciple Jiang felt pain for us, he knew how important these Mortal Restoration Pills are to us!”

“Judging from what happened today, the way senior disciple Jiang treats his enemies and his own men are completely different! From now on, I’ll do whatever senior disciple Jiang asks me to do! As long as he orders, I will never refuse!”

Everyone let out a sigh. Jiang Chen had completely changed their opinion towards him.

“In the future, just help senior disciple Jiang do whatever he asks. I’m sure it’ll bring a lot of advantages!”

Wang Yun said. The benefits he had gotten today couldn’t be equal to any amount of wealth. It was a fact that no matter how wealthy you were, you couldn’t buy back your life.

The next day, early in the morning. A huge bang came from outside the Black Mountain, and after that, a thunderous roar sounded out above the Black Sect.

“Jiang Chen! Get out here!”

“Get out here!”

“Come out!”

“Come!”

.....

The loud roars echoed out, causing the peaceful Black Sect to immediately start boiling.

“Damn it! Who is the one so arrogant that he dares to challenge senior disciple Jiang Chen in front of the Black Sect?! He is courting death!”

“Come, let’s go and have a look, let’s see who is the one who’s brave enough to do so!”

Many people had come to the outer area of the Black Sect. They all saw a young man wearing a yellow robe floating high in the sky. His black hair was waving in the wind, and strong killing intent, that he didn’t bother hiding, leaked out. There was a short sword embossed on the young man’s chest. He was from the Heavenly Sword Sect.

“He is from the Heavenly Sword Sect! Fuck, a man from the

Heavenly Sword Sect came here and challenged us at our front door, isn't he courting death?"

"What the fuck, does he think there will be no one from the Black Sect who can fight him? Just send two senior disciples from the inner circle, he will die a horrifying death!"

"I know him, his name is Li Wu Ling, brother of Li Wu Shuang! This man only has an average talent, and can't compare with his brother. He is an outer circle disciple of the Heavenly Sword Sect, but he has surprisingly broken through to the Heavenly Core realm! I think he came here to get revenge for his brother!"

Someone recognized who the person was and immediately caused restlessness amongst the crowds. Although Li Wu Ling was also a genius outer circle disciple, his talent was far lower than his brother's. However, when he came here today, his cultivation realm had already reached the Heavenly Core realm, and this really puzzled people.

"Jiang Chen, get out of here!"

Li Wu Ling was being pompous and arrogant. With high killing intent, his intentions were clear; kill Jiang Chen and avenge his brother. This man had dared to come here alone, and with just his guts alone, he was someone worthy of respect.

"Damn it! This son of a bitch is so arrogant! Does he think that the Black Sect has no one to fight him?"

Huang Zheng who had also come to the outer area of the Black Sect spoke angrily.

“Senior disciple Huang, do we need to inform senior disciple Jiang?”

A disciple asked. All of these disciple were treating Jiang Chen as their leader now, and since Li Wu Ling had come to their place, they needed to immediately inform Jiang Chen.

“What’s the point? With such loud shouts, do we still need to inform him? Senior disciple Jiang isn’t deaf.”

Huang Zheng gazed at the disciple.

Within the Black Sect, Jiang Chen who was resting with his eyes closed suddenly opened up his eyes and furrowed his brows. At the same time, three men were flying towards the entrance, they were inner circle disciples.

“Who dares to find trouble at our Black Sect?”

Together with a loud shout, three men had arrived at the entrance. The leading man was a handsome man with a dignified appearance, and the energy that was unintentionally leaking from his body served to make people respect him. Although the other two men had weaker energy, they were both Early Heavenly Core warriors as well.

“Look, its senior disciple Duan Li from the inner circle! He has reached the Mid Heavenly Core realm! It’s very rare to see him!”

“This Li Wu Ling has the guts to find trouble at the entrance of our Black Sect! If we don’t teach him a lesson, we, the Black Sect will become everyone’s laughing stock! Since senior disciple Duan Li is here, he will kill that Li Wu Ling with just a single strike!”

“That’s right, this Li Wu Ling coming here is just him courting death!”

The appearance of Duan Li immediately caused the crowds to become restless. In the eyes of all outer circle and novice disciples, any disciple from the inner circle was a superior existence.

“Get that Jiang Chen out here, I want to challenge him!”

Wind ruffled through Li Wu Ling’s hair, he was being presumptuous.

“Hmph! Junior disciple Jiang Chen isn’t here!”

Duan Li snorted. Jiang Chen’s name had been heard by everyone in the Black Sect, including Duan Li. Of course, with his performance in the Qi Province competition, it was hard to ask anyone to ignore him. Besides, Guan Yi Yun also had his eyes upon Jiang Chen.

“Senior disciple Duan, Jiang Chen actually arrived at the Black

Sect yesterday.”

Wang Yun who had just arrived immediately told Duan Li about Jiang Chen’s arrival.

“Oh?”

Duan Li expressed his surprise, then with a snort, he said, “If I remember correctly, you are the brother of Li Wu Shuang, right? You have normal talent, I didn’t expect you to reach the Heavenly Core realm so quickly; you really surprised me. However, as a Heavenly Core warrior, do you not feel ashamed to challenge Jiang Chen who is only a Mortal Core warrior?”

Duan Li stared at Li Wu Ling, he had actually met him before, but he didn’t remember that much about him. With Duan Li’s cultivation at the Mid Heavenly Core realm and his status, he never really cared about Li Wu Shuang, much less his brother, Li Wu Ling.

“Save your breath, my purpose for coming here today is to get revenge for my brother! If Jiang Chen is a man, ask him to come out and fight me!”

Li Wu Ling behaved like a madman as he loudly roared outside the Black Sect’s entrance. Everyone within the Black Sect could hear him clearly.

“Damn it! Who does he think he is? How could he be so arrogant

when he's here to kill?"

"He is simply a shameless guy! With his Heavenly Core cultivation realm, not only does he challenge senior disciple Jiang Chen, he even came to the Black Sect with such an aggressive attitude, is he an idiot?"

Many disciples started cursing. In their opinion, Li Wu Ling just needed to say that he was here to kill someone for revenge. There was no need to mention anything about a challenge.

"Li Wu Ling, you're just a little guy who has recently broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, and yet, you're being so arrogant! Do you think that we, the Black Sect, have no disciples who can fight you? Since you challenge us, I, your father will fight you!"

A tall, bad tempered disciple from the inner circle who was standing next to Duan Li shouted back to Li Wu Ling. It seemed like he was ready to jump forwards to fight Li Wu Ling.

"I won't fight with you, my target today is Jiang Chen!"

Li Wu Ling glared at the disciple and showed no will to fight him. He had made up his mind before coming to the Black Sect, Jiang Chen was his only target.

"Jiang Chen, if you are a man, get the hell out here!"

Li Wu Ling roared continuously.

“Damn you!”

The disciple from the inner circle of the Black Sect had become mad. Li Wu Ling’s behavior had shown that he was looking down on him, and he also continued making noise at the Black Sect’s entrance. If he didn’t teach him a lesson, the Black Sect would become a laughing stock.

Right as the disciple was going to strike, the sound of someone flying came from the Black Mountain. In the next second, Jiang Chen, with the blood wings on his back had arrived.

“It’s senior disciple Jiang, wow! He can really fly, and the pair of blood wings look amazing!”

“This is so cool! He can fly although he is only at the Mortal Core realm, I’m so envious!”

“So he is senior disciple Jiang who had gotten first place in the Qi Province competition! He looks so handsome! However, since he came here at this point of time... Don’t tell me he is going to accept Li Wu Ling’s challenge?”

When Jiang Chen appeared in front of everyone, he immediately became the center of attraction. Even Duan Li and the other two inner circle disciple were looking at him. Jiang Chen had become a famous person after the Qi Province competition, but this was the

first time many of these people had seen his face.

“A man with amazing characteristics, no wonder senior disciple Guan Yi Yun thinks so highly of him!”

Duan Li nodded his head.

“Are you Jiang Chen?”

Li Wu Ling stared at Jiang Chen with a sharp vision, while thick amounts of killing intent was pouring out of his body.

“I am. Who are you?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“My name is Li Wu Ling! Li Wu Shuang was my brother, and you killed him! Now, I want to challenge you and get revenge for my brother!”

Li Wu Ling roared again.

Jiang Chen now understood. No wonder this man was looking only for him, even going as far as risking his life by coming to the Black Sect, it was all because he wanted to get revenge for his brother.

“Jiang Chen, I challenge you to a deathmatch! Accept my challenge if you are a man!”

Li Wu Ling said in a stern manner.

“Junior disciple Jiang, don’t bother with this person, let us handle everything.”

Duan Li said.

“That’s alright, I accept his challenge.”

Jiang Chen gave Duan Li a smile and accepted Li Wu Ling’s challenge.

“What? Senior disciple Jiang accepted Li Wu Ling’s challenge? He is too impulsive!”

“You’re right, he is too impulsive! Although he killed Li Wu Shuang and Ling Ao, Li Wu Ling is a Heavenly Core warrior! The gap between the Mortal Core realm and the Heavenly Core realm is huge!”

“He can’t accept the challenge, it is too unfair!”

Many disciples of the Black Sect started complaining. No one expected Jiang Chen would really accept Li Wu Ling’s challenge.

“Quiet down, senior disciple Jiang must have his own reasons, we need to have confidence in him!”

Wang Yun calmed the crowds down. Since Jiang Chen had helped him solve the danger in his ‘Origin Pass’, Jiang Chen had become a strong and mysterious man in his mind. Besides, Jiang Chen had always portrayed a confident attitude, a man like him would never do anything that he wasn’t confident about. When he accepted Li Wu Ling’s challenge, it simply meant that he had the methods of dealing with Li Wu Ling.

Chapter 111 – Another Fight Of Fame

“Good, you do have some courage!”

When Li Wu Ling heard Jiang Chen agree to his challenge so easily, he too felt surprised. He came here today without caring for his own life. After all, this was the Black Sect’s headquarters. Jiang Chen could easily just ignore him if he wished.

Jiang Chen threw an examining look on Li Wu Ling. After sensing his energy frequency, he couldn’t help but laugh and shake his head.

"What are you laughing at?"

Li Wu Ling's pupils shrunk.

"I laughed because you are an idiot."

Jiang Chen showed a scornful face.

"What did you say?"

Li Wu Ling immediately became angry.

“I can totally understand your decision to avenge your brother, but you shouldn’t take such an extreme path. Your energy frequency is really unstable, but I suppose that is because you just

broke through to the Heavenly Core realm. Also, there's an evil qi coming from you, I think you're cultivating a demonic skill! With your below average talent, you're completely different from your brother. Cultivating a demonic cultivation skill can help your cultivation level increase with great speed, so you can without doubt reach the Heavenly Core realm in such a short amount of time. However, too bad, you don't know the proper way of cultivating demonic skills, and you forced yourself to cultivate it. Now, you have destroyed your future. But of course, since you decided to challenge me, you had already given up your future.

Jiang Chen said in a slow pace. Each and every word coming from his mouth were like sharp thorns stabbing right into Li Wu Ling's heart. Li Wu Ling's eyes widened, and an unbelievable expression appeared on his face.

How did this young man in front of him find out that he was able to break through to the Heavenly Core realm because of him cultivating a demonic skill? Standing in front of him made him feel as if he was naked, as if no secret could be hidden from his eyes. This was impossible!

Besides, what Jiang Chen said was completely right. Li Wu Ling had obtained a demonic skill not long before this, and he had entered secluded meditation to study it. This was why he hadn't participated in the Qi Province competition. When he heard his brother had been killed, he was so angry that he had forced himself to break through to the Heavenly Core realm with the help of the demonic skill and some pills, then he immediately rushed to the Black Sect to look for Jiang Chen. However, he would never have expected that Jiang Chen could see through everything.

"So what? My cultivation realm is more than enough to kill you!"

His killing intent towards Jiang Chen was getting larger. Li Wu Ling felt that Jiang Chen was a frightening man, he was just a 15-16 year old young Mortal Core warrior, but he wasn't even nervous when standing face to face with him. On his face, there was only a calm and confident expression.

"Is that so? Perhaps you still don't understand your current situation? Fine, let me explain it to you so you won't die in the dark. On the surface, you are a Heavenly Core warrior, you can control natural energies and fly in the air. Nevertheless, you can't deny it, your cultivation base is unstable, your cultivation realm is impetuous, and you haven't mastered the demonic skill. With your current situation, I can just find any Early Heavenly Core warrior, and he would be able to easily defeat you. To make my point clearer, you're just a little bit stronger than your dead brother, so, if you want to get revenge, I would suggest you go back and spend a few more years in secluded cultivation."

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. With his experience and judgment, he could easily see through Li Wu Ling. With Li Wu Ling's current situation, he couldn't even compare to those ordinary Heavenly Core warriors like Yin Zhong Cheng. Not to mention the inner circle disciples of all four big sects.

With Jiang Chen's current combat strength and abilities, Li Wu Ling simply did not stand a chance at winning the fight.

"Save your breath, prove your words with the fight! Let me see how you, with your Mortal Core strength, was able to kill my

brother!”

Li Wu Ling’s killing intent was soaring high in the skies. Nevertheless, his mind had been twisted by Jiang Chen’s words, and his energy had become more unstable.

Swoopsh.....

Wild wind emerged from Li Wu Ling’s body. He circulated his demonic skill, and his eyes turned blood red. His lips turned black because of the demonic qi, then, he forcefully struck out his fist towards Jiang Chen.

The attack carried an intense evil demonic energy. The energy transformed into a demonic dragon as it swirled and rolled like a flying tsunami towards Jiang Chen.

Everyone from the Black Sect felt their nerves tensing up, they didn’t have the experience and judgment that Jiang Chen had. Even Duan Li couldn’t tell what Li Wu Ling’s real situation was like, he could only tell that Li Wu Ling had just broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, and his foundation was unstable.

However, in their minds, a Heavenly Core warrior could never be defeated by a Mortal Core warrior. Although Jiang Chen was a mighty warrior, it was hard to tell if he really could withstand a Heavenly Core warrior’s attack.

“Hmph! I am not in the mood to play with you. Since you miss

your dear brother so much, I'll allow you to reunite with him."

A cruel look emerged in Jiang Chen's eyes. In his mind, when Li Wu Ling had come here and challenged him at the Black Sect's entrance, Li Wu Ling was already dead.

Jiang Chen would never allow someone who wanted to kill him stay alive. Besides, this place belonged to the Black Sect, and the result of this battle would also affect the Black Sect's dignity. He had to maintain the Black Sect's dignity.

"Six Solar Fingers."

Jiang Chen shouted with a deep voice, immediately struck out his Six Solar Fingers, and with his fingertips glowing, he pointed toward Li Wu Ling forcefully.

Bang.....

A ground-shaking loud explosion swept across and even shook the skies. Then, everyone could see three huge golden fingers suddenly appearing, piercing towards Li Wu Ling's demonic dragon.

Bang.....

Both attacks collided and caused another massive explosion. Without any resistance, Li Wu Ling's demonic dragon shattered in an instant because of the powerful impact from the Six Solar

Fingers.

The Six Solar Finger's force didn't lower at all. With an incredible speed and a golden colored tail behind it, it carried a destructive force and continued flying towards Li Wu Ling.

“What?”

Struck with consternation, Li Wu Ling had never expected his opponent to be so strong. The demonic skill that he was cultivating couldn't even resist a single attack from Jiang Chen, this was unbelievable!

Ahhh.....

Li Wu Ling raised his head and howled. He gathered all the energy in his body and focused it into a black demonic shield to defend himself from Jiang Chen's Six Solar Fingers.

Bang.....

Another intense and powerful impact. A dark smoke emerged from the center of the impact.

Plop plop plop.....

Li Wu Ling kept stepping back in midair, only to regain control after flying nearly one hundred meters backwards. His breath was

rapid and he spat out some blood. His face had turned pale.

There was only one expression on Li Wu Ling's face; shock. He could never have imagined this result, he simply couldn't understand how a Mortal Core warrior could be so strong.

“My god, so this is senior disciple Jiang Chen's true power? He is so strong, this is freaking abnormal, is he really just a Mortal Core warrior?”

“Senior disciple Jiang has become stronger now than he was at the Qi Province competition, he is now a Mid Mortal Core warrior! No wonder he can defeat Li Wu Ling!”

“Although he has just broken through to the Mid Mortal Core realm, defeating a Heavenly Core warrior is just too shocking. I can't believe that there exists someone so freaking abnormal in this world like senior disciple Jiang Chen! With his Mid Mortal Core strength, he can defeat Heavenly Core warrior Li Wu Ling with just a single strike! If I hadn't witnessed this myself, I wouldn't have believed it even if you killed me!”

“Did you guys see that finger skill senior disciple Jiang Chen used just now? It is definitely an Earth combat skill! It's so powerful!”

“Finally, I am able to understand why senior disciple Jiang Chen can kill Li Wu Shuang and Ling Ao! Li Wu Ling came here in a threatening manner and challenged senior disciple Jiang; he was simply just courting death and looking to strike his own face!”

.....

All the disciples of the Black Sect were incredibly excited, especially Wang Yun and Huang Zhen. The worry in their minds were now completely gone, and instead, they were so excited it felt as if they had been given some stimulants. They were jumping and cheering like it was themselves who had defeated Li Wu Ling, and not Jiang Chen.

“What a guy! When we are at the same cultivation realm as him, there will be no way for us to compare with him! No wonder he dared challenge Nan Bei Chao to a fight one year from now!”

Duan Li was shocked as well. He had prepared to strike if Li Wu Ling was close to defeating Jiang Chen. After all, if he let a disciple of the Heavenly Sword Sect kill the number one genius from the Qi Province competition in the Black Sect’s territory, that would be a huge blow in the Black Sect’s face.

What he didn’t expect was that Jiang Chen was so strong. With just a single attack, he had seriously wounded Li Wu Ling.

“I don’t believe it! I can’t believe it! Why is a Mortal Core warrior so strong?! I want to kill you! Jiang Chen, I must kill you and get revenge for my brother!”

With both his eyes turning red, Li Wu Ling roared and entered a frenzy. In his hand, a combat weapon covered in demonic energy appeared.

Looking at this, Jiang Chen shook his head. Li Wu Ling's mind was struck by extreme anger. He was now at the border of entering psychosis.

“You won't have the chance anymore.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. The blood wings on his back flapped, and like a Blood Winged Hawk, he flew forwards with lightning speed and appeared above Li Wu Ling.

Jiang Chen transformed into a hawk and let out a loud hawk cry towards Li Wu Ling.

The hawk cry shocked the world. This was the innate combat skill, the Sonic Hawk Cry. After Jiang Chen had broken through, the power of this innate combat skill had increased as well

In the blink of an eye, layers of sound waves turned into ripples and interweaved into one giant web which covered Li Wu Ling.

Like snakes, the sound waves penetrated into Li Wu Ling's brain.

Blergh!

Li Wu Ling kept spitting out blood as he howled out in extreme pain. Jiang Chen's sound waves had destroyed his Divine Sense.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen's blood wings transformed into a sharp scythe which cut towards Li Wu Ling with speed resembling lightning. Li Wu Ling's head was chopped off in an instant and was sent flying high. Followed by a pillar of blood that was formed from Li Wu Ling's blood, the horrified howl went silent.

Jiang Chen's movement was too fast. Although Li Wu Ling had taken out his combat weapon, before he even had the time to use it, he had been badly injured by the Sonic Hawk Cry's sound waves and killed on the spot.

At this point of time, the outer perimeter of the Black Sect went completely silent. Everyone raised their heads and looked at the young man with a pair of blood wings on his back. Their eyes carried one thing, shock.

This was terrifying, was this still considered a human?

No one expected Li Wu Ling to die in such a fast and complete manner. This guy came here early in the morning to try and get revenge for his brother, and only a few minutes later, he had been killed by Jiang Chen.

No one could remain calm. Those outer circle disciples who had witnessed how Jiang Chen had killed Ling Ao and Li Wu Shuang could still accept what happened, but for those disciples who had witnessed Jiang Chen fighting for the first time, they were completely startled. Not only did Jiang Chen have powerful abilities, he struck without mercy, and he didn't even blink his

eyes when killing. These people didn't dare directly look into his eyes.

Chapter 112 – Meeting The Sect Chief

Li Wu Ling's dead body and head fell down from the sky together with a large amount of blood. The scene looked pathetic underneath the bright shine of the morning sunlight. Li Wu Ling, who had just broken through to the Heavenly Core realm by forcefully cultivating a demonic skill, and Jiang Chen who had condensed 40 Dragon Marks; the two of them were simply not on the same level. Jiang Chen didn't even use his Axe of Thunder.

“Awesome!”

Amongst the crowds, Huang Zheng shouted out loudly.

“Almighty senior disciple Jiang!”

Wang Yun also shouted out loudly. Not only the two of them, at this point of time, all the disciples who witnessed how Jiang Chen killed Li Wu Ling couldn't hold their excitement. An outer circle disciple from the Black Sect had killed an inner circle disciple from the Heavenly Sword Sect, this was glorious for the Black Sect.

After Guan Yi Yun, who was the pride of the Black Sect, was defeated by Nan Bei Chao with just a single attack, it had left a shadow in the minds of all the Black Sect disciples. Ever since then, whenever someone mentioned the Burning Sky Pavilion, they had felt lower than them.

However, with Jiang Chen's performance today, they had seen the future hope for the Black Sect. It had removed the shadows in

their minds. This was a super genius, even Nan Bei Chao would have not been able to kill a Heavenly Core warrior while only at the Mid Mortal Core realm.

Therefore, although Jiang Chen was only an outer circle disciple, he had lifted the spirits of all the Black Sect disciples, and he had become one of the Black Sect's representatives. In many of these disciples' minds, the Black Sect had finally found someone who could fight Nan Bei Chao.

“This man has a limitless future, I can never be like him.”

Duan Li murmured to himself. Right now, only an idiot would be unable to see Jiang Chen's huge potential.

“Fellow disciples, please help me spread these words! From now on, whichever Heavenly Sword Sect disciple dares provoke me, I will kill him!”

While floating in the air, Jiang Chen said with a voice that could be clearly heard by every single disciple of the Black Sect. After that, he flapped his blood wings and flew back into the Black Sect, disappearing in front of everyone.

Kill anyone who dares provoke him, this was so domineering, so arrogant! There was not a single person in the entire Qi Province who dares to say something this heroic. Setting an entire sect as his enemy, this was an absolute bold statement. And he, Jiang Chen, was the first one who dared to say this.

“So domineering! He is truly amazing! From now on, senior disciple Jiang will be my idol!”

“Senior disciple Han Yan was my only idol, but from now on, I have one more idol! In the future, both of them will be my goal!”

“Guys, let’s spread senior disciple Jiang’s words! We’ll let those guys from the Heavenly Sword Sect know that we, the Black Sect, are not to be provoked!”

.....

Under the lead of Wang Yun and Huang Zhen, the atmosphere amongst all the Black Sect disciples became heated. Jiang Chen’s arrogant and domineering manner didn’t make any of them feel disgusted, instead, it had made him become an idol for many of the disciples.

“Senior disciple Duan, this junior disciple Jiang Chen is really an incredibly strong man, he killed Li Wu Ling just like that. However, in my opinion, Li Wu Ling had just broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, and his foundation was unstable, so he couldn’t be compared with real Heavenly Core warriors. If we were to fight with Jiang Chen, who do you think would win?”

One of the Early Heavenly Core disciples came to Duan Li and asked.

Duan Li gazed at the disciple and said, “I can’t say for sure who

would win if you fought Jiang Chen, but let me tell you this; do not provoke him, this man is not simple.”

Duan Li reminded him out of kindness, then he flew back to the Black Sect. The other two Early Heavenly Core disciples looked at each other, then they too flew back to the Black Sect.

“Huang Zheng, ask someone to burn Li Wu Ling’s body. The rest of you, dismiss yourself and go back to what you were doing.”

Wang Yun told Huang Zhen, then he waved his hand at those who were gathered here. The incident had finally come to an end.

The Qi Province competition had given Jiang Chen his fame, and today’s battle had given Jiang Chen the opportunity to show his might in the Black Sect. Personally witnessing events always left more impact than hearing it from someone else. After killing Li Wu Ling today, Jiang Chen had established his unshakable position in the Black Sect.

After killing Li Wu Ling, Jiang Chen went straight back to his residence. He stood on the mountaintop, gentle breeze waving through his white clothes. He wore a calm expression, he was already used to killing. Jiang Chen knew the path he was going to walk, and in the future, there would be more people he would have to kill.

Half an hour later, a man suddenly landed beside Jiang Chen. It was Guan Yi Yun.

“Junior disciple Jiang, from your energy frequency I can tell that you have broken through to the Mid Mortal Core realm! Also, I just heard that you killed Li Wu Ling, a Heavenly Core warrior! You’re amazing, you became an idol for so many disciples so quickly!”

The news of Jiang Chen fighting Li Wu Ling had spread across the entire Black Sect, even those disciples from the inner circle who hadn’t been at the scene had gotten the news.

“Senior disciple Guan, weren’t you in secluded meditation in order to break through to the Divine Core realm? Why did you stop cultivating so quickly?”

Jiang Chen was startled. He threw an examining look at Guan Yi Yun, but he found out that Guan Yi Yun was still at the peak of the Heavenly Core realm. Obviously, his secluded meditation hadn’t been successful.

“It is not that easy to break through to the Divine Core realm. I had given it a thorough thought, and secluded cultivation alone won’t help me. In order to break through, I’ll need to find an opportunity. I’ll leave the Black Sect tomorrow to search for the opportunity to breakthrough.”

Guan Yi Yun said with a smile.

“What is senior disciple Guan’s plan?”

Jiang Chen asked with a hint of curiosity.

A dignified expression suddenly appeared on Guan Yi Yun's face, he said, "I am going to the Inferno Hell!"[\[1\]](#)

"Inferno Hell? What place is that?"

Jiang Chen asked with a puzzled expression.

This couldn't be blamed on Jiang Chen, after all, he wasn't familiar with the Qi Province, it was perfectly normal that he had never heard about the Inferno Hell. If it was someone else who heard this name, just the name itself would be enough to turn their faces pale.

"So junior disciple Jiang has never heard about Inferno Hell. Then, let me tell you about it. In fact, I've known about it for quite some time, but I have never entered it before. In the entire Qi Province, not more than a handful of people have the guts to enter it."

With a stern expression, Guan Yi Yun expressed his fear of the Purgatory, "The Inferno Hell is located in a special place within the Eastern Continent, there's a node in every single one of the 28 Eastern Continent Provinces connected to it, and in all the big sects of all provinces, there is an ancient portal that can transport people into the Inferno Hell. However, rarely do any disciples purposely go train themselves in the Inferno Hell. The Inferno Hell is almost the same as death itself, rumors say that it has a harsh environment with foul and evil demons running across the lands. It is a true land of vanquishing, and with my cultivation base,

entering the Inferno Hell is almost equal to certain death. Not only me, it would also mean death for those Divine Core warriors!”

This was the Inferno Hell, a special place that existed in the Eastern Continent. It was a training ground for hundreds of sects and clans in all the 28 provinces in the Eastern Continent. However, just like its name, the Inferno Hell was truly a hell for those who entered it for training.

No ordinary disciple would ever step into the Inferno Hell without a valid reason. Those who entered were all the fiercest men. In some of the big sects, once a disciple had made a huge mistake, they would sometimes be sent into the Inferno Hell. This was basically the cruelest punishment.

However, those who had walked out from the Infernal Hell were all those who had gone through severe tests of life and death. Their future achievements would be limitless.

“I never expected such a special place to be in the Eastern Continent...”

Jiang Chen muttered to himself. The Inferno Hell was a place where no ordinary man could go, but Guan Yi Yun had the guts to enter it. With this brave heart alone, he had won Jiang Chen’s respect.

“Senior disciple Guan, since the Inferno Hell is such a dangerous place, you better think twice before rushing into it.”

Jiang Chen reminded.

“Haha, junior disciple Jiang, you should know this, opportunity and danger always comes together. Of course, the Inferno Hell is a dangerous place, but there’s also plenty of opportunities. I, Guan Yi Yun, do not want to be an ordinary man without any great achievements, this trip to Inferno Hell, it doesn’t matter if I die inside or come out alive, I won’t regret it at all!”

Guan Yi Yun said with a laugh.

Jiang Chen nodded his head silently. During the Qi Province competition, he had found out that Guan Yi Yun was an unyielding and passionate man. The decision of entering the Inferno Hell is not something someone ordinary can make.

“You’re right, a man should have a great dream! Living an ordinary life is just boring! We don’t ask for longevity, we just want to live a glorious life! Even if our lives were like shooting stars which only shine brightly for a short amount of time, we would still leave our own glorious days in this world!”

Jiang Chen completely supported Guan Yi Yun’s decision. Besides, he was also interested in the Inferno Hell. However, his cultivation level was weak as it was now. If there was a chance in the future, he would definitely enter the Inferno Hell and have a look at it.

“Haha, what great spirit! Junior disciple Jiang, your talent and potential is not any weaker than that of Nan Bei Chao’s! I have

confidence in your fight one year from now!”

Guan Yi Yun patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder, then he said again, “Oh right, I’m actually here for something!”

“What is it, senior disciple Guan?”

Jiang Chen was startled.

“The Sect Chief wants to see you, I am here to bring you to him.”

Guan Yi Yun said.

“Sect Chief?”

Jiang Chen was startled once again. He was only a little disciple from the outer circle, the Sect Chief shouldn’t have noticed him.

“Junior disciple Jiang, this is good news, and it is a huge honor as well! You must know this, the Sect Chief is the top man of our sect, he usually wouldn’t meet an outer circle disciple personally, but you are different! You’ve become the champion of the Qi Province competition, and you have a fight with Nan Bei Chao one year from now, you’ve gained the acceptance of the Sect Chief! Today you even killed Li Wu Ling who is a Heavenly Core warrior with just your Mid Mortal Core cultivation base! With all of these outstanding achievements, the Black Sect will definitely support your cultivation with all sorts of resources!”

Guan Yi Yun explained to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen nodded his head, what Guan Yi Yun had said made sense. Looks like his performance today had completely attracted the Sect Chief's attention. Therefore, he decided to meet him personally.

A true peerless genius would be a sect's greatest asset, he was the future hope of a sect.

“Alright, I'll follow you to greet the Sect Chief.”

Since he had become a disciple of the Black Sect, he would need to get along well. Meeting the Sect Chief who sat up high in the leading position wasn't something bad.

“Let's go. After bringing you there, I'll need to prepare for my trip to the Inferno Hell. This might be the last time we meet.”

A smile jumped onto Guan Yi Yun's face.

“Don't worry, we will meet again for sure.”

Jiang Chen replied.

[\[1\]](#) – ‘Inferno Hell’ (炼狱) can also be translated as ‘Purgatory’. I just thought that Inferno Hell sounded better.

Chapter 113 – Daoist Black

Under Guan Yi Yun's lead, both of them went through the Black Mountain and arrived at its deepest area. An ancient palace was built at this place, and from the way it looked, it had at least a few hundred years of history.

Along the way, Guan Yi Yun told Jiang Chen about the Sect Chief. The Black Sect had set its foot in the Qi Province more than a few hundred years ago, and there had been a few Sect Chiefs. According to Guan Yi Yun, almost no one knew the Sect Chief's real name, all the previous Sect Chiefs had been using the same name, Daoist Black.

Daoist Black was the strongest man within the Black Sect. His cultivation realm was at the peak of the Divine Core realm, only one step away from the Combat Soul realm. However, there was a huge gap between the Divine Core realm and the Combat Soul realm. Most people couldn't overcome this gap no matter how much they cultivated. The Black Sect had existed for so long, but there had yet to be a single Combat Soul warrior in its history.

The palace was the Black Sect's most important place. Normally, only the Divine Core sect elders would come here. Even Guan Yi Yun himself couldn't come to this place without permission.

Actually, in the Black Sect, there were a group of core disciples. However, there were strict requirements for one to become a core disciple. Not only does one need to be a Divine Core warrior, one must also reach the Divine Core realm before a certain age. Therefore, the Black Sect only had a handful of core disciples. Most

of them were training outside the sect, and they would rarely be near the sect headquarters. This was why the Qi Province competition was only for outer circle and inner circle disciples.

The palace was built at the mountain's waist. Although it was just a single story building, it was still a solemn and grand building.

A black plaque was hanging on top of the palace. Two huge golden words were written on it, 'Palace Black'. The calligraphy was written so wonderfully that it made anyone who stared at it have a feeling of wanting to worship it.

Of course, the feeling of wanting to worship could only affect those ordinary warriors. There was nothing in the Saint Origin continent that could make Jiang Chen worship it, including the small Qi Province. All this time, Jiang Chen had been the one being worshipped by others.

“Palace Black is the Black Sect's iconic symbol, it is the noblest place. Junior disciple Jiang, later when you see the Sect Chief, don't forget to show your respect!”

Guan Yi Yun reminded.

“En.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

“Come in.”

While Jiang Chen and Guan Yi Yun were talking, a deep and resonant voice suddenly sounded out from within the palace. After that, the palace door opened by itself.

Guan Yi Yun tidied up his clothes, and with a dignified expression, he walked into Palace Black. As a genius of the Black Sect, Palace Black held a very important meaning in his heart. It was his honor to be able to walk through this door.

Compared to Guan Yi Yun’s anxiety, Jiang Chen on the other side was calm and relaxed. After all, Jiang Chen’s experiences were not something Guan Yi Yun could compare with.

Jiang Chen and Guan Yi Yun both walked into the palace’s main hall. In front of them, there was a big chair, and a man wearing a white robe sitting on it. He looked to be in his forties. Of course, his real age was definitely more than that.

Although the man was sitting on a chair, Jiang Chen could still tell that he was a tall man. His angular face had a majestic expression. This was one of the Qi Province’s big shots, Daoist Black.

He looked different from Jiang Chen’s expectations. He thought that Daoist Black would be an old man with white hair, but in fact, he was a handsome middle aged man.

“Disciple Guan Yi Yun greets Sect Chief.”

“Disciple Jiang Chen greets Sect Chief.”

Guan Yi Yun bowed deeply towards Daoist Black, but Jiang Chen only nodded his head.

“En.”

Daoist Black smiled. He threw an examining look at Guan Yi Yun first, then he stared at Jiang Chen and examined him in detail. However, Daoist Black’s expression immediately changed. This 15-16 year old youngster in front of him gave him a feeling that he couldn’t be seen through at all. With his peak Divine Core cultivation base, he could easily see through any junior disciple, but when he looked at Jiang Chen, he felt like he was looking at a bottomless hole.

With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen didn’t dodge Daoist Black’s vision. There wasn’t even a slight hint of nervousness on his face. On the other side, Guan Yi Yun was incredibly nervous.

Daoist Black nodded his head, then he looked at Guan Yi Yun again and said, “Yi Yun, you’re a precious talent of the Black Sect, are you really sure you want to enter the Inferno Hell? I don’t need to tell you how dangerous the Inferno Hell is. Even if I go there myself, I would encounter danger as well.”

“Yes, I’ve decided.”

Guan Yi Yun said with a firm expression. The decision of entering Inferno Hell was made with huge determination, and he wouldn't change his mind easily. He wanted to train himself using the dangers of Inferno Hell. Only with this could he become stronger.

“Fine, I admire your bravery. There have been many genius disciples from the Black Sect who have gone to Inferno Hell, but none of them have ever come back alive. I won't stop you from going there, I only wish that you can be the first disciple of the Black Sect to come out from Inferno Hell.”

Daoist Black said while looking at Guan Yi Yun with a pleasant expression.

“Yi Yun won't disappoint Sect Chief!”

Guan Yi Yun said as he cupped his fists. This was truly going to be a hellish training.

“Yi Yun, leave us alone, I have something to talk to Jiang Chen about.”

Daoist Black said.

“Yes.”

Guan Yi Yun again cupped his fists, then he left Palace Black.

Daoist Black looked at Jiang Chen. He nodded his head and said, “Not bad, with just your Mid Mortal Core strength you were able to kill Li Wu Ling, an Early Heavenly Core warrior. Although his foundation was unstable, ordinary men wouldn’t have been able to kill him. If my memory serves me well, you were still an Early Mortal Core warrior during the Qi Province competition.”

“That’s right.”

Jiang Chen didn’t deny that.

“Jiang Chen, you don’t seem to be afraid of me?”

Daoist Black asked with great interest.

Hearing the question, Jiang Chen smiled, “Why would I need to be afraid of Sect Chief? I am a disciple of the Black Sect, so obviously Sect Chief wouldn’t harm me, why would I need to be afraid?”

Jiang Chen’s reaction was calm and relaxed. There were no signs of nervousness at all.

‘This guy has a calm attitude and presence of mind, he doesn’t show any signs of unease. Besides, he has a dignified appearance and an innate aura of supremacy, I can foresee that he will have a limitless future. A genius such as this is the future hope of the

Black Sect. His talent and potential is not any weaker than Nan Bei Chao's.'

Daoist Black was shocked. He thought of Jiang Chen rather highly, he had never seen a Mortal Core youngster with such an attitude, Jiang Chen's reaction did not fit his age at all. He was just like a phantom who had lived for more than a thousand years, calm and relaxed.

He was the Black Sect's Sect Chief, and every single person of the Black Sect, from the novice disciples to the sect elders would behave respectfully when they met him. Even a Divine Core sect elder would feel hints of nervousness when in front of him. However, Jiang Chen only had an indifferent attitude.

"Good. Jiang Chen, I really appreciate your talent, and that's why I asked you to come here. I heard you have a fight with Nan Bei Chao one year from now... Do you have any confidence in this fight? Nan Bei Chao is a peerless genius, and he is unrivalled within the Heavenly Core realm, and he might break through to the Divine Core realm at any time. Although you have marvelous talent and potential, your cultivation base is still too weak. You only have one year, and you are still at the Mid Mortal Core realm, how are you going to deal with this?"

Daoist Black asked. He had a great interest in this one-year fight agreement between Jiang Chen and Nan Bei Chao. Also, because Jiang Chen had become a disciple of the Black Sect, his battle with Nan Bei Chao would directly affect the reputation of the Black Sect.

As for whether or not Jiang Chen was genuinely joining the Black Sect, Daoist Black wasn't worried about it. There were a total of four big sects in the Qi Province, and aside from the Valley of Happiness, Jiang Chen had offended the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect. The Black Sect was the only place he could go.

"I have my ways; one year is more than enough."

Jiang Chen shrugged with a confident look.

"Good! You just need to cultivate with all your effort. The Black Sect will never run out of resources, but, you'll need to compete for most of the resources. No matter how big of a genius you are, you will only be able to grow under constant competition."

Daoist Black said.

"Disciple understands."

Jiang Chen nodded.

"Alright, Jiang Chen, you can go back now. I'll give you a special privilege, from now on, Palace Black's doors will always be open for you. If you encounter any questions regarding cultivation, you can come here anytime and look for me."

Daoist Black said. This was the first time in the history of the Black Sect that a promise like this was made. Palace Black had

never opened its door for a disciple from the outer circle like this. Being able to receive guidance from the Sect Chief himself was a dream for many disciples.

If any of the Black Sect disciples knew about this, they would be extremely envious.

However, too bad, Jiang Chen could only laugh at Daoist Black's words. Does the previously greatest Saint need a little Divine Core warrior's guidance? Was this a joke?

Without being rude, Jiang Chen could simply give Daoist Black some advice, and he would benefit hugely from it. It could even make him break through to the Combat Soul realm in a short period of time. This was something incredibly simple for Jiang Chen to do.

Of course, Jiang Chen wouldn't give Daoist Black any guidance. His reincarnation was his biggest secret, he was not stupid enough to find himself some trouble. Besides, guidance from a Mortal Core disciple to a Divine Core Sect Chief; would Daoist Black really listen to him?

Jiang Chen cupped his fist and bowed towards Daoist Black, then he turned around and left Palace Black. Staring at Jiang Chen's back, Daoist Black squinted his eyes, and with an indifferent voice he said, "I hope you won't disappoint me."

Outside Palace Black, Guan Yi Yun was still waiting for Jiang Chen. When he saw Jiang Chen walking out, he hurriedly walked

up to him.

“Junior disciple Jiang, did Sect Chief give you something good?”

Guan Yi Yun asked. With his status within the Black Sect, amongst all disciples from the outer circle, only Jiang Chen could make him talk in such a polite manner.

“Do I look like I’ve gotten something good?”

Jiang Chen showed his hands, then he diverted the topic, “Senior disciple Guan, have you really decided to enter Inferno Hell tomorrow?”

“That’s right, I have made up my mind. I must act or perish; I will gamble my future within Inferno Hell!”

Guan Yi Yun said with a serious expression.

“Be careful.”

Jiang Chen reminded him. He had a pretty good impression of Guan Yi Yun, so he didn’t want to see anything bad happen to him.

“Alright, I’ll need to prepare myself. Junior disciple Jiang, you have wings, so you can just fly back on your own.”

After saying that, Guan Yi Yun flew up into the skies and soon disappeared from Jiang Chen's vision.

Chapter 114 – A Resentful Genius

Guan Yi Yun suffered a heavy mental impact from Nan Bei Chao during the Qi Province competition. As a highly acclaimed genius, this had left a dark cloud in his mind. Therefore, for his trip to Inferno Hell, Guan Yi Yun had to dance with death; he had to succeed or die.

Jiang Chen knew that. Although Guan Yi Yun was a rare genius, compared to the abnormal Nan Bei Chao who had received blessings from lady luck herself, there was just a huge gap. Perhaps the gap between them wasn't that wide at the moment, but soon, it would just become bigger and bigger.

In this world, there were people who were destined to live glorious lives, but there were also those who were destined to live without any achievements. It was like kings and beggars. This was destiny.

Jiang Chen didn't use his blood wings, he descended the mountain by feet. The Black Sect had a splendid scenery, and by walking, Jiang Chen would be able to appreciate the scenery while spending his time leisurely. It was rare for Jiang Chen to be in such a relaxed mood.

At the foot of the mountain there was a peaceful path. It was a windy path that ran across the Black Mountain ranges, and it resembled a hibernating snake.

Jiang Chen walked along the path relaxed and unhurriedly while

feeling the rich natural Yuan energy. The Dragon Transformation Skill started circulating.

After nearly an hour of walking, a faded aroma of herbs suddenly came from afar and surprised Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up, and he gazed into the direction where the aroma came from. He could see a medium sized mountain standing not too far away, and the aroma was coming right from the peak of that mountain. Looking at it from where he was standing, he saw a beautiful scenery at the mountain peak, a very lively place compared to the other peaks. On top of the peak, an old pine tree that was as thick as three adult men was deeply rooted; it was at least 200-300 years old.

The mountain peak was filled with liveliness, and it attracted anyone who saw it. Jiang Chen couldn't help but start walking towards the mountain peak.

When he arrived at the foot of the mountain, the aroma became stronger. Jiang Chen continued walking up towards the peak, then, once he had ascended halfway up the mountain, he began seeing a variety of herbs that had been planted all around. He even saw a 300-year old Blood Ginseng. An herb like this would be priceless within Red City, but here, it was just a plant that had been planted on the roadside.

“Looks like this is the place where all the herbs of the Black Sect are planted, no wonder it has such a strong aroma of herbs. Daoist Black has given me permission to enter Palace Black whenever I want, so there shouldn't be any places within the Black Sect where

I can't go."

Jiang Chen thought to himself as he continued ascending towards the mountain peak. Doesn't matter if it was his past or current life, everyone looked at him as if he was a domineering king with superior combat strength, but they had also forgotten that he was also a Saint level alchemist. Jiang Chen rarely concocted pills, and in his past life, he would only do so for himself.

His combat strength had overshadowed the fact that he was also an alchemist. Jiang Chen's concocting skills were unique, in Saint Origin, there was only a handful of people who could compare with him.

Soon, Jiang Chen silently arrived at the mountain peak, and what he saw was a completely different scenery. It was a luxuriously green and beautiful place; many rare flowers and grasses were growing everywhere. He could see that not in front of him, there was a plantation of herbs with a circumference of more than a mile; all sorts of ordinary and rare herbs were planted within.

A finely built building sat right in the middle of the peak. The scenery looked like a different world.

At this moment, there was an old man who had squatted down in the herb plantation. The old man was in his fifties, he was fat and beardless, he had an oily face, and he looked fresh.

However, the old man was frowning. He stared at two herbs that had been planted at a corner of the herb plantation. The herbs were only as big as the size of a palm, and they looked withered and lifeless.

“How can this be? Why won’t they grow?”

The old man let out a sigh, “Damn it, every single day I give you water, I transfer Yuan energy to you, and I’ve given you the best place to grow...However, not only are not growing, you even wither with each passing day, who can tell me why?”

The old man felt helpless and was getting angrier. He wanted to pull these two herbs out from the dirt, but he just couldn’t do it.

“Hmph! I don’t believe there’s an herb that I, Guo Shan can’t grow!”

The old man let out a cold snort. His name was Guo Shan, and he was a Divine Core warrior, as well as the best alchemist in the Black Sect; this entire mountain belonged to him. In the Black Sect, he was an important person. Many young alchemists were his students, and even Daoist Black would need to show respect towards him.

“Planting the Flaming Angel and the Glory Lotus together, it would take a miracle for them to grow. In my opinion, both of them will die within a month.”

A voice suddenly came from behind.

“Who’s there?”

Guo Shan stood up and turned around, then he saw a young man wearing white clothes standing behind him. Guo Shan previously had all his attention focused on these two herb plants, that was why he hadn’t been able to notice someone behind him. Besides, this mountain peak was not a place where any disciple could come.

Guo Shan threw an examining look at Jiang Chen and discovered that he was only at the Mortal Core realm. Guo Shan furrowed his brows and asked, “You’re just a disciple from the outer circle; do you have any idea what this place is?”

Guo Shan was mad; he was in a bad mood due to these two plants. The Flaming Angel and the Glory Lotus were both premium herbs, and he had gone through a lot of effort to get their seeds. But now, he was on a road heading towards failure, and the plants were going to die soon, that was why he was so mad.

“I came here because of the herbs’ aroma. Disciple Jiang Chen greets Elder.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist and greeted Guo Shan.

“Jiang Chen? So you are that Jiang Chen who got first place in the Qi Province competition, the newcomer?”

Guo Shan's eyes widened. Although he had never participated in the sect's management, he had still heard the big news regarding Jiang Chen.

"Yes, I am."

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

After confirming Jiang Chen's identity, Guo Shan's attitude towards Jiang Chen became better. If it was just another disciple from the outer circle, Guo Shan would have just slapped him for intruding his mountain without permission.

But Jiang Chen received different treatment. A genius would receive respect no matter where he went.

"Young man, so you can recognize the Flaming Angel and the Glory Lotus, not bad."

Guo Shan praised. In fact, the reason why he didn't slap Jiang Chen when he saw him was mostly because Jiang Chen had been able to recognize the two herbs. The Flaming Angel and the Glory Lotus were only in their seedling stage, and an ordinary alchemist wouldn't have been able to recognize them at all.

"I know a little bit about them."

Jiang Chen smiled, then he slowly walked towards the herb plantation. When he looked at the Flaming Angel and the Glory

Lotus, he shook his head.

Guo Shan was amazed by Jiang Chen, this young man was only at the Mortal Core realm, but he didn't show any signs of being nervous when facing a Divine Core Elder. Just from his calm attitude alone, he would be able to win the hearts of the people.

“Jiang Chen, why did you say that the Flaming Angel and the Glory Lotus can't be planted together? I want to know why, both of them are pure Yang herbs, why can't they be together?”

Guo Shan asked with great interest, he wanted to see how Jiang Chen was going to explain.

“Very simple, the Flaming Angel has a Hot Yang characteristic, so not matter which stage, seedling or mature, it is a pure Yang herb. On the other side, the Glory Lotus has a mild characteristic. When you planted them side by side, the Flaming Angel's pure Yang characteristic started repressing the Glory Lotus's growth.”

Jiang Chen explained.

Hearing this, Guo Shan's eyes lit up. He felt more respect towards Jiang Chen now. Being able to analyze the characteristics of the Flaming Angel and the Glory Lotus so thoroughly, this proved that Jiang Chen did have a certain level of knowledge towards herbs and medications.

“Even if what you said is correct, the Flaming Angel would

repress the growth of the Glory Lotus, but then, the Flaming Angel should still grow, so why is not only not growing, but dying as well?”

Guo Shan asked again, he really wanted to know the reason. If it wasn't because of this, with his status and position, there would be no way he would ever ask for advice from an outer circle disciple.

“The reason is even simpler. The Glory Lotus contains the characteristics of both the Glory Lotus King and the Snowy Lotus, and when the Glory Lotus reaches its mature stage, the characteristics of the Glory Lotus King will completely suppress the characteristics of the Snowy Lotus, and then it will become a pure Yang herb. However, while it's still in its seedling stage, both the Glory Lotus King and the Snowy Lotus's characteristics exist, and that's why this Glory Lotus is not only a pure Yang herb, it also has the cold characteristics of the Snowy Lotus. This is why it has repressed the Flaming Angel's growth. When you planted them together, you were basically killing them both.”

Jiang Chen said casually, but Guo Shan became startled when he heard what Jiang Chen said, with his mouth wide open. He stared at this young man in awe, as if he had just seen a ghost. Although he didn't want to admit this, but the young man in front of him was more knowledgeable than him about herbs and medication.

‘What kind of monster is this young man; how come he knows so much about herbs? I only know that when the Glory Lotus becomes mature, its characteristics will be pure Yang, but I never knew about its origin... and he even knew about the Glory Lotus King”

Guo Shan was shocked, but he didn't have any doubts about what Jiang Chen had just said. With that being said, this highly acclaimed alchemist of the Black Sect had just learned something from a young man, a very important lesson.

“Jiang Chen, where did you learn this?”

Guo Shan asked.

“Elder, don't you know that there exists geniuses in this world? I'm a genius.”

Jiang Chen shrugged.

“Fine, you're a really amazing genius, and you have impressed me. Tell me, can I save my Flaming Angel and Glory Lotus?”

Guo Shan eagerly asked.

“Of course, just plant them separately in different places within the herb plantation. The Flaming Angel and the Glory Lotus are top tier herbs with great vitality, and you don't need to help their growth; they will grow by themselves.

Jiang Chen said.

“Jiang Chen, let me ask you another question, how can I mix the

Barley Grass and the Yellow Stone Fruit so that they don't explode during concoction?"

Guo Shan ventured, trying to figure out whether or not Jiang Chen really know everything.

"Elder is trying to concoct the Yellow Soul Pill. The Barley Grass and the Yellow Stone Fruit have opposite characteristics, it's very difficult to mix them together. However, with the help of a first-rate Sand Crystal, they can easily be mixed together without exploding, and it will also help increase the overall quality of the Yellow Soul Pill."

When Jiang Chen finished his words, he could see Guo Shan standing there, staring at him blankly, completely startled.

Chapter 115 – Myriad Demon Mountain

Overwhelming, too shocking.

Jiang Chen's reply was like a strike of lightning onto Guo Shan's head. He had been trying to concoct the Yellow Soul Pill recently, but he couldn't get the Barley Grass and the Yellow Stone Fruit to mix together, which resulted in a few of his furnaces exploding. This had almost become the biggest obstacle in his mind. When Jiang Chen heard his question, not only did he come up with a solution, he could also tell the name of the pill he was trying to concoct.

Most importantly, when Jiang Chen replied to Guo Shan's question, it didn't even take him a split second to think, he had answered like the theories and solutions were deeply rooted in his mind.

“Heavens! Using a first-rate Sand Crystal to blend the Barley Grass and the Yellow Stone Fruit together, why couldn't I think of this earlier?”

It was now clear for Guo Shan, and he had a sudden feeling of enlightenment. He felt like a student who had been troubled by a question, and then suddenly his teacher told him the solution.

“How can I concoct a 100% effectiveness Heavenly Torrent Pill?”

Guo Shan asked again.

“The Heavenly Torrent isn’t a top-quality pill, but it can help cultivators concentrate their Divine Sense. Although it isn’t a top-quality pill, it is extremely difficult to concoct. The Divine Sense is the root of a human. It can’t suffer any damage, and therefore, only Heavenly Torrent Pills with 100% effectiveness can be used. If it’s less than 100%, then it’s basically useless.”

Jiang Chen continued with a smile, “In order to concoct the Heavenly Torrent Pill, the Immemorial Fruit is the main ingredient. A 80 year old fruit is the best. If it’s any older than this, the portion will be too big, and it will be difficult to control. Any younger than this, and it simply won’t meet the requirements for a Heavenly Torrent Pill. Therefore, in order to concoct a 100% effectiveness Heavenly Torrent Pill, besides concoction skills, the most important element is how old the Immemorial Fruit is.”

Guo Shan’s eyes widened more, the way he looked at Jiang Chen had completely changed. These questions he asked had troubled him for a long time, but this young man in front of him is simply a man who knows everything. With just a few words, he had solved his problems for him.

“Can the petals of the Hades Flower be used to concoct the Flaming Pill?”

Guo Shan asked again.

“Sure it can, the Hades Flower is a poisonous flower, and its strong poison needs to be mixed with the pistil of the Scarlet Crane

Flower, which is also a poisonous herb. Not only will this not affect the quality of the Flaming Pill, it will also increase its strength.”

Jiang Chen said.

‘Fuck, I didn’t know the Hades Flower and the pistil of the Scarlet Crane Flower could be used in such a manner!’

Guo Shan was amazed once again. Right now, he had completely forgotten that Jiang Chen was a disciple from the outer circle. The way he looked at Jiang Chen was filled with admiration.

“Jiang Chen, how does one solve the problem of soul energy becoming restless?”

Guo Shan asked again.

“The reason why a person’s soul energy becomes restless is because they are impulsive in trying to get quick results when cultivating soul skills. Just following the principle of gradual improvement will do.”

Jiang Chen answered.

“Let me ask you this...”

.....

Guo Shan continued asking dozens of questions. All of his questions were things that had troubled him for many years without him being able to get any answers to them. These questions were the main reason why his growth in alchemy had become so slow.

However, today, Jiang Chen had answered all of his questions. Guo Shan could feel the shadows cast over his mind completely disappear, and his pill concocting skill increasing at the same time.

“Hahaha, good, perfect! Brother Jiang, you really are a peerless genius! You have helped me solve all the problems that have troubled me for so many years! Accept mine, Guo Shan’s gratitude!”

Guo Shan was laughing loudly, then he bowed deeply towards Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen smiled and accepted the bow. It was Guo Shan’s honor to be able to receive guidance from Jiang Chen. Besides, Jiang Chen knew that Guo Shan had devoted all his energy into alchemy, his persistency was not something that ordinary people could understand. The answers given to him, none of them could be purchased with money. Guo Shan’s bow signified his gratitude.

“Don’t mention it, Elder Guo. I just happened to pass by.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Don’t address me as Elder, just big brother will do. Although my cultivation level is at a higher level than yours, when it comes to alchemy, you are my senior. I’m older than you, so in the future, just addressing me as big brother will do.”

Guo Shan patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder forcefully.

“Big brother Guo.”

Jiang Chen did it like Guo Shan had told him. He could tell that Guo Shan was a man with a true nature, and he would never limit himself to an old pattern. Jiang Chen liked this kind of personality. Besides, being able to become brother of the Black Sect’s best alchemist wouldn’t bring Jiang Chen any harm either.

In the Black Sect, only Jiang Chen could become brother to Guo Shan.

“Brother Jiang, luckily you happened to pass by, if not, I don’t know when my questions would be answered. However, what’s puzzling me is how you can be so knowledgeable. Alchemy isn’t like anything else, we need to explore along the way in order to accumulate our knowledge. Judging by what you know, I think you’d at least need to spend more than a hundred years to reach this level of knowledge. But, you’re only 15-16 years old, this is impossible.”

Guo Shan was really amazed; he couldn’t imagine how a 15-16 year old young man could be so knowledgeable in alchemy. If he hadn’t experienced all of this by himself, he wouldn’t believe that

someone like this truly existed.

“Didn’t I tell you? I’m a genius.”

Jiang Chen shrugged again.

“Damn it, a genius really can’t be judged by normal standards. Brother Jiang, I suppose you are an alchemist too. With your knowledge, if you focus all your effort onto alchemy, I’m sure you will become the greatest alchemist of the generation, with your name heard by many people from all over the world.

Guo Shan said.

“Big brother Guo, alchemy is just my hobby, I am not really too much into it. Compared to the excitement from fighting in battles, I prefer the latter.”

Jiang Chen raised his head and stared into the skies afar. Guo Shan would never understand his vision.

“Sigh... Too bad. However, with your abilities and knowledge, I’m sure you’ll become a great cultivation master, as well as an expert in pill concoction.”

Breathing out a sigh, Guo Shan said again, “I heard that you have a fight with Nan Bei Chao one year from now?”

“Yes, I do.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

“That Nan Bei Chao is a rare genius in the Qi Province who has received blessings from lady luck herself. His future achievements will be limitless... One year, it’s too little for you.”

Guo Shan said. The news about the one-year fight date between Jiang Chen and Nan Bei Chao had spread across the entire Qi Province, so of course Guo Shan had heard the news. Putting aside the question whether or not Jiang Chen would be able to fight Nan Bei Chao in one year, with just his bravery alone, he was far superior to anyone else.

“I have my ways, don’t worry, big brother Guo.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

On the same day, Jiang Chen and Guo Shan had a great chat. Guo Shan even treated Jiang Chen with some wine that took 18 herbs to brew. Rumors said that so far, only Daoist Black had tasted it, and now Jiang Chen was the second one.

When the evening came, Jiang Chen bid his farewell.

“Brother Jiang, if you ever need anything in the Black Sect, just come to me, Guo Shan!”

Guo Shan said as he slammed his chest.

“Definitely, I’ll come here frequently just because of this wine alone.”

Jiang Chen said with a mischievous laughter.

Hearing this, Guo Shan’s expression changed, “I think it’s better if you don’t come here anymore...”

When Jiang Chen mentioned his wine, Guo Shan immediately felt some pain in his heart. He took out his best wine to treat Jiang Chen, just wanting to show him his wine brewing skills. However, he never expected that this bastard would drink the wine like plain water. What a reckless waste.

Jiang Chen spread his blood wings and flew off from Guo Shan’s mountain, heading back towards his residence. Becoming friends with Guo Shan was a good thing for Jiang Chen. In the future, when he needs any pills, he won’t need to worry about the herb supply any more. Since he has a strong body, as well as intense blood and qi, his main focus was cultivation level, and not alchemy. The Dragon Transformation skill doesn’t require too many pills.

At Jiang Chen’s residence, there were 4 or 5 men waiting outside. The man in front was Wang Yun, and there were a few other outer circle Mortal Core disciple as well. When they saw Jiang Chen coming, their eyes lit up.

“Senior disciple Jiang is back!”

Someone said. When they saw the blood wings on Jiang Chen’s back, they couldn’t help but show envious expressions.

Jiang Chen retracted his blood wings and landed right next to those men.

“Wang Yun, you guys are looking for me?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“We wish to invite senior disciple Jiang to venture together with us, we’re going to the Myriad Demon Mountain!”

Wang Yun said.

“Myriad Demon Mountain?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, he had never heard of this place.

“I suppose senior disciple Jiang doesn’t know this place yet. The Myriad Demon Mountain is a mountain range, it’s a training ground for all of the Black Sect’s disciples. Within the mountain range, all sorts of demon beasts can be found, and there’s a lot of natural resources and treasures as well. We’re going to have venture into the Myriad Demon Mountain, and if senior disciple

Jiang could go with us; it would be our blessing!”

One of the disciples said.

“That’s right, with our strength, we can only venture into the first sector; but if senior disciple Jiang could go with us, perhaps we would be able to venture to the border of the second sector!”

Another disciple said.

“I see.”

Jiang Chen finally understood, their purpose was to look for his protection. With Jiang Chen’s strength, they would be safe if they ventured into the mountain together.

“Wang Yun, tell me more details about the Myriad Demon Mountain.”

Jiang Chen said. He showed great interest towards this Myriad Demon Mountain. There was only one year left before his fight with Nan Bei Chao, and time was running short with every single day. Therefore, he was thinking about how he could constantly increase his cultivation level. Depending on the Black Sect alone is far from enough, he was cultivating with the Dragon Transformation Skill, and he was able to absorb innate abilities of demon beasts; so hunting demon beasts is the most straightforward way to level up. If he was lucky, he might bump into some demon beasts with unique bloodlines, and then turn

their abilities into his own.

“The Myriad Demon Mountain is a primitive mountain range. The distance between here and the Myriad Demon Mountain is about a thousand miles. The Myriad Demon Mountain is divided into three sectors, and in the first sector there are mostly only Qi Hai and Mortal Core demon beasts, and sometimes, there are even some Heavenly Core demon beasts, but they rarely appear in the first sector. As for the second sector, most demon beasts are Heavenly Core demon beasts, and it’s a dangerous place for us. All this time, only those Heavenly Core disciples from the inner circle has dared train in there. Although senior disciple Jiang is just at the Mortal Core realm, but since you’ve killed Li Wu Ling who was a Heavenly Core warrior, I’m sure you can go to the border of the second sector safely. As for sector three, I’ve heard that there are some mighty Divine Core demon beasts dominating that area. It’s a terrifying place, and people rarely venture there.”

Wang Yun said.

Chapter 116 – Stepped On A Demon Lord

After listening to Wang Yun's words, Jiang Chen finally understood. The Myriad Demon Mountain is a training ground for the Black Sect's disciples. It was a dangerous place, however, its danger couldn't compare to Inferno Hell where Guan Yi Yun was about to go.

“Senior disciple Jiang, please go with us together!”

Someone said. With desperate looks, all of them stared at Jiang Chen.

“Wang Yun, the few of you are strong enough to be a group. As long as you don't get close to the second sector, there shouldn't be any danger. I had some insight during these last two days, so I am going to enter secluded cultivation, and I can't go with you this time.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face. Actually, he had decided to take a look at this Myriad Demon Mountain, but he didn't want to go with Wang Yun. To him, Wang Yun and the others were burdens, and the first sector didn't seem enough of a challenge to him. If he were to go, he would go to the second sector straight away, and if these men followed him there, it would be difficult and troublesome for him to handle the situation, as he still needed to take care of their safety.

Besides, the most ideal partner for Jiang Chen for this trip would be Big Yellow, who has a unique innate ability to sense treasure.

The treasures Big Yellow are able to find are always some priceless treasure, and this was the main reason why Jiang Chen didn't want to go with Wang Yun and the rest.

Wang Yun and the rest felt disappointed after hearing what Jiang Chen said, but they couldn't say anything to Jiang Chen's reaction. With Jiang Chen's status and position in the sect, they should be feeling grateful that he still talked to them so politely. If it was some other genius disciple, they would have become proud and arrogant after becoming so famous, and never even bother taking a second look at them.

"It's good news that senior disciple Jiang managed to comprehend something! We shouldn't get in the way of his secluded cultivation!"

Wang Yun spoke again, "Senior disciple Jiang, since that is the case, we'll leave for the Myriad Demon Mountain now."

"Alright, have a safe journey."

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

The group cupped their fists and bid goodbye to Jiang Chen. After that, they walked towards the exit of the Black Sect

"Myriad Demon Mountain."

Jiang Chen murmured, it seemed like he had to pay a visit to this

Myriad Demon Mountain. He had now formed 40 Dragon Marks, and the energy needed for another 20 Dragon Marks was huge. It simply couldn't be gained by just staying in the Black Sect and cultivating alone.

“Since I have decided to cultivate the Dragon Transformation skill, it is destined that I will walk a tough cultivation path. It will just get tougher and tougher to level up in the future; the energy needed is simply massive. I have to use whatever methods I can to level up so that I can fight Nan Bei Chao a year from now.”

Jiang Chen's face turned serious, he only had one year. He was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, and it was tougher for him to break through to higher realms compared to others. Therefore, he had decided, once Big Yellow woke up, he would immediately bring him with him to the Myriad Demon Mountain.

Jiang Chen went back to his courtyard. He scanned all rooms with his Divine Sense and found that in one room, Yan Chen Yu was still in her secluded cultivation, trying to absorb the Freezing Crystal. In the other room, when Jiang Chen saw what Big Yellow was doing, he became speechless. He found Big Yellow sleeping on a soft bed with all four legs in the air, drooling all over the bed.

But what really made Jiang Chen speechless wasn't the way Big Yellow was sleeping, but his current situation. Big Yellow was covered in a bright, golden light. This golden light became thicker and thicker, and it slowly formed into a huge cocoon, with Big Yellow inside. Then, a Divine aura belonging only to Divine Beasts slowly flowed out from his body. A dog with a Divine Aura, the heavens truly likes to have fun sometimes.

“The heir of a Dragon Horse can never be judged using ordinary standards. Breaking through while sleeping... I’m afraid that in this world, only this dog has this special ability.”

Jiang Chen shook his head with a bitter smile. If there was a competition of leveling up, Big Yellow would definitely be the champion.

“Xiao Yu has completely immersed herself in the absorption of the Freezing Crystal with her Nine Yin Meridians. This is a rare opportunity for her, and she won’t be waking up anytime soon. However, once she wakes up, I believe she will be at the Late Mortal Core realm.”

Jiang Chen looked at Yan Chen Yu and thought to himself. She possessed the Nine Yin Meridians, and that gave her a unique talent and lots of potential. It was also not something that ordinary people could compare with.

But in fact, the most abnormal person here was actually Jiang Chen. He was a Saint before he reincarnated, and although he looked only 15-16 years old, he was a genuine old monster who had the cultivation experience of a Saint. This made it so that no one in the world could compare with him. Also, the Dragon Transformation skill was a terrifying skill. It allowed him to absorb any bloodline in the world, and it was not hard to imagine that following the growth of the Dragon Transformation skill, Jiang Chen would keep absorbing different bloodlines and form his own unique bloodline, surpassing all other Divine Body characteristics in the whole universe.

Big Yellow had slept for two days, and during this period, Jiang Chen never disturbed him. He waited in the courtyard and spent some time cultivating his Six Solar Fingers and Clap of Thunder combat skill.

“This dog really does sleep for a long period of time. Two days, Wang Yun and the rest have already arrived at the Myriad Demon Mountain, and perhaps they will return in another two days... This damned dog, he is still sleeping!”

Jiang Chen was speechless and helpless, he was once the greatest Saint in the universe, and now he had to sit here all alone and wait for a dog to wake up.

Buzz.....

Suddenly, a buzzing sound sounded out from within Big Yellow's room. Jiang Chen scanned with his Divine Sense and found that the golden cocoon that covered Big Yellow's body had reached its maximum size, and the buzzing sound came right from it.

The next second, the golden cocoon retracted into Big Yellow's body like it was water. A powerful energy emerged from Big Yellow's body, but it immediately disappeared. Big Yellow had hidden it well.

“Damn this dog.”

Jiang Chen was speechless; Big Yellow had let him witness how easy it was for him to level up.

Swoosh!

The door to Big Yellow's room opened up, then he flew out like a golden bolt of lightning, landing right beside Jiang Chen.

“Hey, how long has your father been sleeping?”

Big Yellow asked.

“You've slept for three days. Damn it, you sure can sleep, huh.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Big Yellow.

“It's only been three days... Let me sleep a few more days then.”

After saying that, Big Yellow turned around and walked back towards his room. Some black lines appeared on Jiang Chen's forehead, he immediately grabbed Big Yellow's tail.”

“Ruff woof! Kid, let go!”

“Fuck, you have slept for three days, and you still want to sleep more?! Damn it, I, your father am going to the Myriad Demon Mountain to hunt some demon beasts, are you coming or not? If

not, then just stay here and continue your slumber!”

Jiang Chen said.

“Myriad Demon Mountain? Hunting demon beasts?”

Big Yellow stood up with glowing eyes.

“When are we going? Your father is about to die from boredom!”

Going out and having some fun is Big Yellow’s hobby. When he first arrived at the Black Sect, he wanted to find something fun to do, but was rejected. Now, hearing that Jiang Chen is going to the Myriad Demon Mountain, of course he would be interested in going.

“We’ll go right now, we should be able to arrive at the Myriad Demon Mountain before dark.”

Jiang Chen said.

“The Myriad Demon Mountain isn’t far from here, it’s only about a thousand miles. With our speed, we can arrive there very quickly.”

Big Yellow said. The time now was late afternoon, a distance of a thousand miles wasn’t really that big for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who could fly.

“You know about the Myriad Demon Mountain?”

Jiang Chen felt surprised.

“There’s nothing I don’t know about in this Qi Province. The Myriad Demon Mountain is the training ground for the disciples of the Black Sect. Lots of wild demon beasts hide inside, and it’s filled with danger and adventure.”

Big Yellow was enraptured.

“Then let’s not delay any longer, let’s go now.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen spread his blood wings and flew up into the sky. Big Yellow followed behind and spread his wings of light, dancing and gesticulating for joy.

The Black Sect was located in the northern region of the Qi Province, and the Myriad Demon Mountain was located north of the Black Sect. The mountain was at the border of the Qi Province, right next to the neighboring province.

The sky was getting darker, and the night fell down. The demon beasts in the Myriad Demon Mountain started roaring as a welcome for the night, scaring all those who were close by.

Two figures quietly appeared above the Myriad Demon

Mountain, they were Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Wang Yun told me that the first sector is mostly filled with Qi Hai and Mortal Core demon beasts. For me, it’s not challenging enough. Let’s go to the second sector straight away.”

Jiang Chen flapped his wings, then he flew towards the second sector straight away. Big Yellow followed behind while happily wagging his tail.

With Jiang Chen’s current strength, no one in the Mortal Core realm could resist a single attack from him, therefore, he didn’t find sector one to be enough of a challenge.

Big Yellow had broken through to the Late Mortal Core realm, and with his mighty strength and strong body as the heir of the Dragon Horse, he could even defeat ordinary Heavenly Core warriors.

The two of them teaming up together, they were one super insane duo. If anyone thought they were just some ordinary Mortal Core warriors and tried messing with them, the consequences would be miserable.

When the sky turned dark completely, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow Dog had ventured a thousand miles into the Mountain of Thousand Goblins. The area where they were now, was just tens of miles away from sector two.

“We are going to enter sector two, the demon beasts here should be powerful enough.”

Jiang Chen retracted his blood wings and descended onto the ground.

The place where Jiang Chen landed was a black colored hump. It looked like some dirt clump that no one would pay any attention to, even Jiang Chen and Big Yellow didn't notice anything unusual.

Crack~

When Jiang Chen's feet touched the dirt clump, it made a cracking sound. It didn't take long for Jiang Chen to notice that something was wrong, he felt the dirt clump was soft, like some living thing.

At this moment, a huge force exploded from underneath his feet, sending Jiang Chen far away.

“The fuck!”

Jiang Chen was shocked, he immediately leaped away and positioned himself dozens of feet away. Big Yellow also landed beside him. Both of them stares at the dirt clump in awe, then they saw that the hump suddenly jumped up from the ground.

Roar~

An angry roar chased away the silence of the dark forest. The dirt clump stood up and transformed into a huge, black massive being.

“Who is the bastard who dares disturb my sleep?!”

The dirt clump roared in extreme anger. A demon beast who can talk, with the exception of Big Yellow, who is a rare species, must be a Heavenly Core demon lord.

Finally, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow saw what this demon lord looked like. It was actually a huge black serpent with a body longer than 30 meters. By just raising its head, it had stood up high from the ground, looking down angrily at the man and dog below.

Chapter 117 – Five Dragon Marks

“Brat, did you step on some dog shit when leaving the Black Sect? Why are you so unlucky?”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes and felt speechless. Jiang Chen was so unlucky. He had randomly picked a spot to land on, and that spot was a demon lord. However, it could also be considered luck that the person who stepped on this demon lord was Jiang Chen, if it had been any other Mortal Core warrior, he would probably have been devoured by this demon lord and died in a miserable way.

“Didn’t expect to meet a Heavenly Core demon lord in sector one. Luckily, this serpent is only at the Early Heavenly Core realm, we can still handle it.”

Jiang Chen sighed. He was planning to hunt for some peak Late Mortal Core demon beasts at the border between sector one and sector two, then he would absorb their demon souls and at least condense a few more Dragon Marks, increasing his strength. With that, he would have more confidence in his adventure into sector two. However, destiny always acts in a reverse manner, and he had met a Heavenly Core demon lord immediately upon landing.

“Tiny human, how dare you step on me?! You’ve sought your own demise, you’ve committed suicide! You two, tiny human and dog, stand there. Let me devour you as punishment for stepping on me and disturbing my sleep!”

The black serpent spoke with a loud voice; it spat out a pungent

breath that made them feel awful.

“Fuck, this big guy really thinks he’s something mighty! Asking us to stand still and let him eat us, is he an idiot?”

Big Yellow laughed out angrily; this giant serpent sure did know how to joke. It was committing suicide by speaking to Big Yellow like that.

“This is a ‘Black Swamp Serpent’. It lays in slumber most of the time, and that’s the reason why it chose to sleep at the border of sector one and two; basically, it won’t be disturbed here. Nevertheless, a Black Swamp Serpent can be very strong, we can’t be careless in handling it.”

Jiang Chen said. Although this Black Swamp Serpent was just at the Early Heavenly Core realm, it wasn’t some trash like Li Wu Ling. Jiang Chen was able to kill Li Wu Ling with ease, but it would be impossible to kill this serpent in the same way.

Demon beasts were well known for their tough skin and powerful muscles, as well as their intense blood and qi, which was their advantage over normal human warriors. Under normal circumstances, when a human warrior fought a demon beast at the same level, it was rare for the human to win. This Black Swamp Serpent in front of them, if Yin Zhong Cheng were to fight it, he would probably lose.

“You two tiny little things, hurry up and walk into my mouth, and save me the effort of doing it myself.”

The Black Swamp Serpent spoke once again. Judging from what it said, Jiang Chen could imagine how lazy it was. It was so lazy that it even asked Jiang Chen and Big Yellow to walk into its mouth. Jiang Chen had finally found someone who could sleep more than Big Yellow.

“Fuck! Let’s kill it!”

Big Yellow couldn’t stand it any longer. He turned into a golden light and stabbed himself towards the Black Swamp Serpent.

“How dare a dog attack me?! You’re courting death! Now, let me eat you.”

The Black Swamp Serpent never took Big Yellow seriously. It opened its mouth wide, waiting for Big Yellow to enter its stomach by himself.

“Want to eat me? You didn’t even check how tough your teeth are!”

Big Yellow was laughing out loud. Powerful waves of energy suddenly burst out from his body. The Black Swamp Serpent’s expression finally changed upon sensing the massive unrivaled energy. It hurriedly closed its big mouth as it shot out a black energy beam towards Big Yellow from its head.

Bang!

Two vigorous beings clashed into each other and produced a sound resembling metal colliding. Fire sparks burst out from the center of the collision, and then, the Black Swamp Serpent cried out in pain. It felt a terrible dizziness, and stars filled its vision. Suddenly, the huge body of this serpent shrunk and transformed into a man wearing a black robe.

The man had a muscular and ripped body, he was nearly 8 feet tall, and he looked like someone in his forties. He had a pair of gloomy eyes that were shining with an insidious look.

The man's body was swaying. He kept shaking his head that was still filled with dizziness.

“Damn it! How come this dog's head is so hard, I can't even knock him down...”

The Black Swamp Serpent cursed. He was startled by Big Yellow, and he had started to look at him seriously.

Jiang Chen who was standing not too far away had been startled by what he had seen as well. After Big Yellow had broken through to the Late Mortal Core realm, he had become amazingly strong, and his combat strength had probably surpassed Jiang Chen's. Judging from the current situation, Big Yellow would be able to kill this Black Swamp Serpent alone without the help of Jiang Chen.

“You can't defeat me with that hard dog head alone, I'll eat both

of you no matter what!”

The Black Swamp Serpent raged. He waved his hand and unleashed a black colored airwave towards Big Yellow and Jiang Chen. The attack was not only powerful, it also brought an awful smell, making anyone who smelled it feel like wanting to vomit.

“This fucking stinks! Brat, this Black Swamp Serpent is strong, let’s do this together and kill him quickly!”

Big Yellow cursed. With a foot-thick golden light hovering above his body, he sped towards the serpent with great speed. Jiang Chen waved his hand and took out the Axe of Thunder, then he struck out with the Clap of Thunder. A shiny golden axe chopped towards the Black Swamp Serpent.

Bang!

Big Yellow’s energy attack, as well as Jiang Chen’s Axe of Thunder, both attacks combined and struck onto the Black Swamp Serpent. No matter how strong the Black Swamp Serpent was, it would never be able to defend itself from the attacks of these two vigorous beings.

From the center of the collision, black colored airwaves swept across and destroyed all the trees with a one mile circumference. The intense battle had caused all the nearby demon beasts to flee.

Bang!

The Big Swamp Serpent was knocked away by the impact. It broke three gigantic trees along the way and fell down onto the ground while continuously spitting out blood.

“Damn it, where did these two abnormal beings come from, and why are they so strong?!”

The Black Swamp Serpent cursed out again. The insidious and wild look in its eyes had been replaced with fear.

“Kaka! Let’s go kill him!”

Big Yellow dashed forwards with extreme speed, and like a golden bolt of lightning, he arrived in front of the Black Swamp Serpent in the blink of an eye.

Bang!

The Black Swamp Serpent didn’t have any time to react before it was knocked a few miles away.

Roar~

The Black Swamp Serpent kept roaring. It flew up and transformed back into a serpent, then it swung its thick tail towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, causing friction in the air along the way.

“An arrow at the end of its flight.”

With a sneer on his face, Jiang Chen swung his axe once again. On the other side, Big Yellow was stabbing himself towards the Black Swamp Serpent with his head up front.

Bang bang bang.....

Big Yellow was incredibly vigorous and fast, he kept shifting his position as he flew towards the Black Swamp Serpent. His powerful head finally collided with the Black Swamp Serpent's body, stunning it and making it spit out more blood.

Swoosh!

At this point of time, Jiang Chen's battle axe had fallen down from the sky. It was extremely fast, and it hit right onto the Black Swamp Serpent's head.

Crack!

The Axe of Thunder was a powerful high-ranked combat weapon. It cut the Black Swamp Serpent's in two. Then, a glowing demon soul flew out from its skull into Jiang Chen's hand.

Big Yellow was even more ferocious. He bit down at a part below the Black Swamp Serpent's neck, then he pulled out a huge snake

gall. And then, he swallowed it straight away.

“Kaka, this snake gall is some nourishing stuff, it belongs to your father!”

Big Yellow was very excited.

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow with a satisfied expression. He was happy with Big Yellow’s performance today. If it wasn’t for him, although Jiang Chen could still kill the Black Swamp Serpent, it would take him some time and effort. Because of Big Yellow, it had all become so easy.

“Kid, treat your father better in the future! Your father is an ultimate fighter, and besides, if you dare to neglect your father, you won’t get a share of the treasures your father will find in the future!”

Big Yellow showed his teeth and threatened Jiang Chen.

“The fuck? You get angry when I say you are plump, but when I praise you, you get arrogant?!”

Jiang Chen kicked Big Yellow’s head. He now finally understood, he couldn’t be nice to this dog, because if he did that, he would simply forget who he is.

“A Heavenly Core demon lord’s demon soul, it will be very useful to me. If I absorb it now, I can at least form another five Dragon

Marks.”

A happy expression emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. He had unique advantages when cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill. Just from the ability to absorb demon souls alone, no one could compare with him.

Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen swallowed the demon soul and started circulating the Dragon Transformation skill. Ten minutes later, the demon soul had been completely absorbed.

Buzzing.....

The Qi Sea within his Dantian started producing a buzzing sound. As Jiang Chen had expected, the Black Swamp Serpent’s demon soul had allowed him to form another 5 Dragon Marks. The newly born Dragon Marks were vibrating excitedly in his Qi Sea, and they soon merged into his Mortal Core.

“Every time I form a new Dragon Mark, my combat strength increases. Now I have managed to form 45 Dragon Marks, and I just need another 15 Dragon Marks before I’m able to break through to the Late Mortal Core realm.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were glowing. He was confident that this trip to the Myriad Demon Mountain would let him break through to the Late Mortal Core realm. And when he does break through to the Late Mortal Core realm, he would be able to easily kill an Early Heavenly Core warrior. And even if he was forced to fight a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, he would have the ability to defend

himself.

“But, too bad, if the Dragon Transformation skill could evolve some more, then my cultivation speed would be faster...”

Jiang Chen felt pity, then he started staring at Big Yellow with a smile on his face.

“The fuck? Kid, what’s on your mind? Your eyes tell me you’re up to something evil...”

Big Yellow was trembling, Jiang Chen’s eyes had scared him.

“Hehe, Big Yellow, let me ask you, are we brothers?”

Jiang Chen asked with an evil smile.

“Brothers your ass, I am not your brother!”

Big Yellow immediately denied and drew a line between himself and Jiang Chen.

“Big Yellow, let me ask you, can you give me another bowl of your blood?”

Jiang Chen asked while maintaining his friendly smile.

What? He wants blood again? A bowl?

“Fuck you!”

Big Yellow turned around and started walking towards sector two.

“So stingy, it’s just a bowl of blood...”

Jiang Chen murmured to himself. With an unsatisfied face, he followed behind Big Yellow and started walking towards the second sector.

Chapter 118 – Nine Phantom Wolves

Bang!

Aowuuuu!

Followed by a mournful scream, a huge body was slammed onto the ground, creating a huge crater. Then, a 30-foot-tall rhino struggled for a bit before dying. A deep hole could be seen on the rhino's head, and next to the rhino, a white clothed young man stood while holding a blinking demon soul.

The demon soul kept shrinking in the hand of this young man, and soon, it disappeared completely. It had been absorbed by the young man.

“A Late Mortal Core demon beast is just too weak, it can't provide me much benefits. I've absorbed three demon souls of Late Mortal Core demon beasts, and I've only managed to form one more Dragon Mark... Looks like I'll need to start looking for those Heavenly Core demon lords.”

Jiang Chen said. He was currently in sector two together with Big Yellow, but they hadn't ventured far enough, so they hadn't met any Heavenly Core demon lords. So far, they had only killed a few Late Mortal Core demon beasts.

“You're an abnormal monster! What kind of skill are you actually cultivating with? Why does it allow you to absorb demon souls without any limit? You're really an abnormal monster!”

Big Yellow couldn't help but ask, he had always been curious about what skill Jiang Chen was cultivating with. From Red City until now, Jiang Chen had absorbed many demon souls, and if he did so without the support of a truly advanced skill, as a human warrior, there would be no way for him to do it.

“Are you sure you want to know?”

“Yes!”

“Give me a bowl of your blood, then I'll tell you.”

“I'll give you a bowl of my urine.”

“Fuck off.”

.....

Bang.....

Fluctuations of an intense fight had shaken the mountain, and many demon beasts had long ago fled. In front of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, an Early Heavenly Core demon lord had died and had its demon soul dug out by Jiang Chen.

With the help of the Dragon Transformation skill, Jiang Chen absorbed the demon soul. However, this time, the demon soul was

only able to help Jiang Chen form another four Dragon Marks. Including the one gained previously, Jiang Chen now had a total of 50 Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea.

“It gets tougher and tougher to cultivate the Dragon Transformation skill, the energy required to break through becomes bigger and bigger. I’m afraid the remaining 10 Dragon Marks will be very difficult to condense.”

Jiang Chen sighed. The Dragon Transformation skill was truly an ancient mystical skill, a mighty cultivation skill. Aside from being incredibly powerful, the difficulty to cultivate the skill was far beyond any other skill. It was hard to imagine how much energy would be required for Jiang Chen to completely condense 100,000 Dragon Marks. If he could calculate it with some figures, it would be amounting astronomical figures.

“There are a lot of demon beasts in the Myriad Demon Mountain, and as long you have the ability, there won’t be any problems for you to continue training here. But, by absorbing demon souls repeatedly, trying to force yourself to break through in such hurried ways, won’t it affect your foundation?”

Big Yellow asked worriedly. The extreme way Jiang Chen was cultivating almost resembled the ways of those who cultivated some demonic skills. Although he could obtain a huge amount of energy and increase his cultivation level quickly, it could seriously affect his foundation. Once his foundation becomes unstable, he would have a hard time in his future cultivation.

“I know what I am doing. With my foundation right now, it is

way more than enough for me to absorb immense amounts of energy to reach the Heavenly Core realm, and it won't affect my potential in the future. But, when I break through to the Late Mortal Core realm, I'll stop all this and concoct a kind of pill that can strengthen my foundation."

Jiang Chen said. When talking about cultivation experience, he was a master amongst masters. Of course, he wouldn't allow himself to risk his foundation becoming unstable. Although it was his first time cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, he had a clear plan, and he knew every detail regarding his next steps.

"Anyhow, in this sector two, I've sensed something dangerous. There's something sinister here, I'm sure there are some powerful demon lords here. The two of us can't sense their existence, therefore, we need to be more careful in here; don't venture too deep."

Big Yellow showed a rarely seen serious expression.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. The Myriad Demon Mountain couldn't be compared with Origin Mountain. Although both he and Big Yellow were very strong, they were still only at the Mortal Core realm. They might have killed some Early Heavenly Core demon lords with ease, but if they encountered a Mid Heavenly Core demon lord, then their only option would be to run for their lives.

There was a saying that each stage was like a brand new world, therefore, even if it was just a difference of one stage, the difference was huge, and this went especially for those at the

Heavenly Core realm. Jiang Chen would need to breakthrough to the Late Mortal Core realm, and only then would he have the strength to defeat a Mid Heavenly Core warrior or demon lord.

“Oh right, Big Yellow, have you sensed any treasures nearby?”

Jiang Chen asked with anticipation.

“So far, nothing. But, an ancient mountain like this, there has to be some good stuff. Although danger always comes together with precious treasures, so you better not expect too much.”

Big Yellow said.

Half an hour later, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had ventured a hundred miles deeper into sector two. Right in front of them was a wolf with a body glowing in golden light. Its wild and ferocious eyes stared at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“The Bloody Combat Wolf, the king of all wolves... Be careful, this wolf is much stronger than the Black Swamp Serpent.”

Jiang Chen said in a dignified tone. At the same time, he felt some excitement. Jiang Chen knew about this Bloody Combat Wolf, it was the king amongst all wolves, and it possessed the authentic bloodline of the Wolf King.

“No matter how strong it is, it’s still just an Early Heavenly Core demon lord, we can kill it together without any problems.”

Big Yellow spat out his tongue and licked his lips. An intense fighting spirit burst out from his body. Indeed, the Bloody Combat Wolf was tougher to deal with than the Black Swamp Serpent, but Big Yellow was the heir of a Divine Beast, he wouldn't have any problems with fighting someone at a higher level than himself. Besides, Jiang Chen had become stronger compared to when they fought the Black Swamp Serpent. With 50 Dragon Marks, they were confident that they could kill this Bloody Combat Wolf.

“Let's go!”

After saying that, Jiang Chen immediately attacked with his Six Solar Fingers. Three huge golden fingers lit up the dark skies as it pierced towards the Bloody Combat Wolf in front of them. At the same time, Big Yellow spat out a huge golden energy orb. Jiang Chen didn't know the name of this attack, but the energy ball that Big Yellow spat out was capable of dealing lots of damage.

Roar~

The Bloody Combat Wolf roared out an angry cry. It retaliated with a bright golden light beam coming from its body. The beam was crashing towards the solar finger and the energy orb.

It was as if three volcanoes had erupted at the same time. The massive amounts of energy collided and caused a massive earthquake in the area. Fire appeared everywhere due to the intense friction between the energy and air, turning the entire place into a sea of flames that filled the entire surrounding area

with terrifying energy ripples.

Plop plop plop!

The Bloody Combat Wolf couldn't defend himself from the attack of his two enemies, and its strong body was forced back few steps before it could regain control.

“Both of you are just at the Mortal Core realm, and you have forced me, the Wolf King to step back... This is ridiculous! But now you have really pissed me off, I'll let you die in miserable ways!”

The Bloody Combat Wolf spoke and threatened them. When the pride of a Wolf King gets threatened, the consequences would be really serious.

Swoosh.....

In the blink of an eye, eight more Bloody Combat Wolves appeared. Nine identical Bloody Combat Wolves stood in a circle, surrounding Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Damn it, what kind of combat skill is this?”

Big Yellow's expression changed. Turning from one into nine, with his eyesight, he couldn't tell which the real Bloody Combat Wolf was and which was just a mimic figure.

“This is an innate ability of the Bloody Combat Wolf; it is called the Nine Phantom Wolves. This ability doesn’t cause any damage, but it’s still terrifying. It produces eight identical phantoms that can cause confusion to the enemy.”

Jiang Chen explained with a golden aura shining in his eyes. This innate ability was really terrifying, it could catch anyone off guard. All the phantoms would move together with their origin, and make the same attack movement. Once the enemy became unable to tell which one was real, the consequences would be nasty.

Swoosh!

Big Yellow transformed into a golden light and smashed into a Bloody Combat Wolf with his head, but the Bloody Combat Wolf turned into bubbles and burst apart. It was actually just a phantom.

“Fuck!!”

Big Yellow cursed. The feeling of missing an attack almost made him go crazy.

“Big Yellow, unleash your wings of light, you’ll defend against his attacks. Let me find out which one is the real Bloody Combat Wolf.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Fine.”

Big Yellow spread his wings of light, getting himself ready for battle. Then, Jiang Chen sent out his Divine Sense and scanned all the Bloody Combat Wolves. However, he couldn't tell which ones were phantoms, and which one was the real one.

“Haha, trying to figure out which one is the real me? Stop wasting your time!”

The Bloody Combat Wolf laughed out loud. All the phantoms were laughing at the same time. The phantom that had been destroyed by Big Yellow appeared once again, and then, all nine Bloody Combat Wolves attacked at the same time; they all dashed towards Big Yellow and Jiang Chen.

“Hmph!”

Big Yellow let out a cold snort. His wings of lights flapped, and he turned into a golden light. He flew around Jiang Chen, not giving the Bloody Combat Wolf any chance to hurt Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen sneered, the Nine Phantom Wolves was a terrifying innate ability. If it was any other ordinary man, he would already be dead by now. Even if a Mid Heavenly Core warrior was here, he would have been tortured by the Bloody Combat Wolf and gotten himself killed.

Unfortunately, the Bloody Combat Wolf had met Jiang Chen.

This encounter removed its destiny to do as it wished. Perhaps no one could figure out which the real Combat Wolf was, but not Jiang Chen. He started circulating the Great Soul Derivation skill, and threads of soul energy began flowing out from his body.

The Great Soul Derivation skill was a mighty skill, the ultimate soul cultivation skill. It allowed Jiang Chen to see through any sources, and with the help of the Great Soul Derivation skill, Jiang Chen immediately spotted the real Bloody Combat Wolf.

Bang!

“FUCK YOU!!!”

Big Yellow cursed in a frenzy of rage. Although he was incredibly fast, he was still disturbed by all the phantoms. While the attacks of the phantoms couldn't deal any damage to Big Yellow, they still gave the real Bloody Combat Wolf the opportunity to attack Big Yellow. The strong and powerful body of Big Yellow was knocked far away. If he were to be replaced by someone else, that person would have been dead by now.

After knocking Big Yellow away, the Bloody Combat Wolf turned around and prepared to attack Jiang Chen. Suddenly, Jiang Chen turned around, and with a pair of glowing eyes, he locked his gaze upon one of the Bloody Combat Wolves.

The Bloody Combat Wolf trembled. It had a bad feeling about this. Jiang Chen took out a golden battle axe; then he ignored every single attack from the other Combat Wolves as he chopped

his axe towards the Bloody Combat Wolf that his vision was locked onto.

“Big Yellow, this is the real Bloody Combat Wolf, attack it!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loud.

Chapter 119 – Hunting Down

The Great Soul Derivation skill was simply astonishing. The exquisite sensation of soul energy had pierced right through the source of the Bloody Combat Wolf, and identified its true self. Even Big Yellow had to praise Jiang Chen in his mind.

Roar!

Big Yellow let out a ferocious roar, then he adjusted his direction in midair. With his head shining brightly, he flew towards the Bloody Combat Wolf like a high-speed arrow. With this attack, he could instantly shatter a mountain.

Bang!

On the other side, Jiang Chen raised his battle axe up high. In the blink of an eye, he had gotten closer to the Bloody Combat Wolf's head. Big Yellow and Jiang Chen had locked down the real Bloody Combat Wolf, and ignored all attacks from the phantoms.

The Bloody Combat Wolf's expression changed dramatically, it had never expected something like this to happen. Jiang Chen found out his true self with just one look, and this had really startled him. The Bloody Combat Wolf was shocked by this, and its mind had gone completely blank for a split second.

In the middle of a battle, zoning out for even a fraction of time would be devastating. The Bloody Combat Wolf had the strength to continue fighting, but because it was too startled by the fact that

his Nine Phantom Wolves had been seen through by someone, he had become zoned out for a split second, and this brought an end to his life.

Bang! Clang!

Big Yellow's head and Jiang Chen's Axe of Thunder, both landed on the Bloody Combat Wolf's body. Then, it screamed out in extreme pain as it was chopped into two pieces by the battle axe. Its blood was splashing all over the place. At the same time, Big Yellow's head had caused havoc inside of its body which had shattered all of its internal organs.

The Bloody Combat Wolf hadn't died yet, but it was badly wounded, and not far away from being completely dead. Jiang Chen then sent him to hell with another swing of his battle axe. When the Bloody Combat Wolf died, all the 8 phantoms disappeared at the same time.

“Haha, you're really amazing, you can really find out which the real Bloody Combat Wolf is! I, your father, really admires you now!”

Big Yellow was laughing out excitedly.

“A big reason for why we were able to kill this Bloody Combat Wolf so easily is that lady luck was smiling at us.”

Jiang Chen smiled. The Bloody Combat Wolf was the king

amongst all other wolves, it would never be this easy to kill. Even if Jiang Chen was able to see through his Nine Phantom Wolves, without an intense fight, it would still have been impossible for them to kill it.

Jiang Chen's luck depended on the mentality of the Bloody Combat Wolf, if it hadn't been zoned out during the battle, losing its opportunity to dodge, it would still be alive now. Even if it couldn't defeat Jiang Chen and Big Yellow by the end of it all, it would still have the chance to run away.

In fact, the Bloody Combat Wolf zoning out wasn't all because of its bad mentality, it was also because it was just too confident in its own Nine Phantom Wolves. No one had ever figured out which his true self was amongst all nine phantoms, but this young Mortal Core warrior could tell which one was the real one with just a single glance, cracking its Nine Phantom Wolves. This was why it had become so startled and had lost its life before recovering from the shock.

"I don't care about lady luck, what I want to know is, after absorbing the Bloody Combat Wolf's demon soul, can you inherit its Nine Phantom Wolves innate ability?"

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen with anticipation, he could still remember that last time, when Jiang Chen absorbed the Blood Winged Hawk's demon soul, not only did he inherit a pair of blood wings, he also learned its innate ability, the Sonic Hawk Cry. Now, if Jiang Chen could inherit the Nine Phantom Wolves ability from the Bloody Combat Wolf, he would become even more powerful. The Nine Phantom Wolves was much better than the Sonic Hawk

Cry.

“Of course I can. If you were to give me your demon soul, I could completely inherit your entire bloodline. You can try if you don’t believe me.

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow.

“Get the fuck out of here!”

Big Yellow opened his mouth widely and bit onto Jiang Chen’s butt.

“Ouch! The fuck, damned dog, your father was just joking! Let go of me!”

Jiang Chen slapped Big Yellow away, then he rubbed his aching butt. This damned dog was too wild, and he hadn’t even shown any signs of wanting to bite him.

Jiang Chen extended his arm and grabbed the demon soul out from the Bloody Combat Wolf’s skull. When he felt the massive amount of pure energy contained within the demon soul, Jiang Chen couldn’t hold his excitement any longer, and his eyes lit up. The demon soul of those demon beasts with special bloodlines were far stronger than those of ordinary bloodlines. The Bloody Combat Wolf’s demon soul not only contained a massive amount of energy, it also had the powerful energy of bloodlines and innate abilities. For Jiang Chen, who was cultivating the Dragon

Transformation skill, this was a precious treasure. If he could absorb this demon soul that was rich in both energy and bloodline, Jiang Chen was confident he would be able to break through to the Late Mortal Core realm straight away.

Just as Jiang Chen was about to start absorbing the demon soul, a bright sword beam suddenly broke the dark night as it came towards Jiang Chen's head like a lightning bolt.

Sneak attack!

This was a sword beam unleashed from a human's combat weapon. Judging from its power, the man who attacked was at least a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, and as a Heavenly Core warrior, this man had actually tried to sneak attack Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's expression darkened. With a bad feeling and super fast reaction, he hurriedly stored the demon soul and jumped backwards, evading the attack with lightning like speed.

Slash!

Even with such great speed, Jiang Chen's shoulder still got cut by the sword beam. It left a deep wound, and blood kept flowing out from it.

“Who's there?!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. The sneak attack would have

killed an Early Heavenly Core warrior instantly, but Jiang Chen had luckily been able to react quickly. If he hadn't, he would have been dead by now.

Whoosh~

After the sound of the wind breaking, a ghostly black figure appeared in front of Jiang Chen. The man was wearing black clothes, and his face was covered with a black veil. Only his cruel eyes were showing.

The man in black looked at Jiang Chen who had been wounded with amazement. With a thick voice, he said, "Amazing, you actually evaded my attack."

It was obvious that the man made his voice thick on purpose, the man simply didn't want Jiang Chen to recognize his real identity.

"You're from Black Sect, why are you trying to kill me?"

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. This was the Myriad Demon Mountain, the training ground for the Black Sect disciples. The disciples of the other three big sects would never come here. Besides, the man in black was obviously well prepared, it had only been a few hours since Jiang Chen left the Black Sect and came to this mountain. Only those from the Black Sect could have information regarding his location.

And, because of this, Jiang Chen was puzzled. He arrived in the

Qi Province not long ago, the matters between him and Yin Zhong Cheng had been settled. What was left was the matters between himself, the Heavenly Sword Sect and the Burning Sky Pavilion. He really couldn't think of anyone in the Black Sect who would want to kill him. Besides, he was a disciple of the Black Sect, and he had even represented the Black Sect to take first place in the Qi Province competition, he had brought them glory.

What was more important was that Jiang Chen had never contacted any Heavenly Core warriors in the Black Sect, let alone offend any of them. But now, there was a man from the Black Sect trying to kill him. This was ridiculous.

“You won't have to opportunity to know why. My purpose for killing you today is to teach you a lesson. In your next life, stay low, and try not to be so arrogant; there is always someone whom you cannot afford to offend.”

The man in black said slowly.

After saying those words, the man raised the sword in his hand and swung it towards Jiang Chen once again. The bright sword beam had locked down Jiang Chen completely, making it impossible for Jiang Chen to run away. A Mid Heavenly Core warrior using a mid-ranked combat weapon to kill a Mortal Core warrior, this told Jiang Chen how determined this man was in his goal to kill Jiang Chen.

“Fuck!”

Jiang Chen cursed. He didn't have the time to guess whoever was the one that wanted to kill him. Right at this moment, the most important thing for him to do was run for his life. He held the Axe of Thunder in his hand, and he destroyed the sword beam's lock down, then he swung the axe once again at the man in black. At the same time, Big Yellow spat out a golden energy orb towards the enemy.

Bang!

The devastating energy began destroying everything across the area. The Mid Heavenly Core warrior in front of them was obviously one of the Black Sect's inner circle disciple, a genius from the younger generation. His combat strength couldn't be compared with that of those ordinary Mid Heavenly Core warriors.

Even if Jiang Chen and Big Yellow worked together, there would be no way for them to defeat this man in black. This impact had made Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's blood and qi start boiling, this feeling made them feel unwell.

“Run!”

Jiang Chen shouted again, by utilizing the force of impact, he spread his bloody wing, turned into two bright lights together with Big Yellow Dog, flying toward the deeper area of sector two.

“This guy is really strong, and the dog isn't bad either. However, in front of me, you guys won't even have the chance to escape!”

The man in black sneered, then he turned into black smoke and chased after them.

“Jiang Chen was using a high-ranked combat weapon, how can a tiny little Mortal Core warrior use such a good weapon? It’s so wasteful! If I could have that high-ranked combat weapon, my combat strength would increase to another level!”

A greedy look appeared in the eyes of this man. The attraction of a high-ranked combat weapon, to any Heavenly Core warrior, was very huge.

Bang~

Another loud explosion. The bright sword beam was chasing up to them from their backs once again, forcing Jiang Chen and Big Yellow to retaliate.

“Damn it, we can’t go on like this! A Mid Heavenly Core warrior, we have no chance at defeating him at all!”

Big Yellow said helplessly.

“Let’s head towards the center of sector two, he won’t dare to follow us there!”

A cruel expression emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. With his blood wings and Dimensional Shift skill, even if he was wounded, his speed would still increase by a lot. As for Big Yellow, after he had

broken through to the Late Mortal Core realm, his speed had become faster than lightning.

However, the man in black wasn't slow either, and he kept chasing.

“What?! Enter the center of sector two?! Are you nuts?! That's like suicide to me!”

Big Yellow glared at Jiang Chen.

“Then do you have any better solutions? This is our only chance, as long as I can absorb the Bloody Combat Wolf's demon soul and break through to the Late Mortal Core realm, we won't have to run anymore!”

Jiang Chen said. The man in black had come at the right time, if he was here half an hour late, when Jiang Chen had already absorbed the Bloody Combat Wolf's soul completely, this man in black wouldn't have been a threat to Jiang Chen. But, too bad, time wasn't on Jiang Chen's side.

“Jiang Chen, surrender now, if you go any further, you'll be entering the center of sector two, it's certain death for you in that area!”

The man in black threatened them. But, when he saw Jiang Chen still continuing going forwards, doubts started appearing on his face. Just like Jiang Chen had thought, the second sector center of

the Myriad Demon Mountain was extremely dangerous, even the man in black wouldn't dare enter.

“Catch me if you can, bitch!”

While running with great speed, Jiang Chen never forgot to say some taunting words. Trying to kill Jiang Chen was not a simple task.

Chapter 120 – The Silent Poisonous Needle

“Damn it, you’re a really crazy fellow! But your father likes exciting adventures, kaka.”

Big Yellow was flying crazily while laughing out loud. After he began following Jiang Chen, he had never run out of excitement and adventures. Just like their current situation, they were only at the Mortal Core realm, and they were running amok in the second sector. Perhaps only Jiang Chen would have this kind of courage.

Bang!

The man in black was chasing closely behind, and he kept attacking them from behind. However, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were too fast, so all of his attacks had missed their target.

“Damn it, how can this man and dog run so fast? I can’t let this continue, even I will be in great danger if I venture too deeply into sector two. Senior disciple Fan has given me a clear order that I must kill Jiang Chen this time... Looks like I’ll need to use the Silent Poisonous Needle given to me by senior disciple Fan.”

The man in black murmured. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were simply too fast, and he had never seen any man or demon beast at the Mortal Core realm who could move with such great speed, even he couldn’t catch up to them.

Initially, he had thought that the mission of killing Jiang Chen would be a simple task, but he had never expected it to become so

complicated.

However, the man in black didn't panic. He kept his distance with Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, then he slowly took out a needle. The narrow needle was glowing in a black light, and with just a single glance, anyone could tell that this was a poisonous needle. The needle had the length of a human palm, and it was obviously extremely poisonous. The man in black carefully covered the needle with his Yuan energy, he didn't dare touch it with his hand.

“This Silent Poisonous Needle has the poison of the Hell Flower, Black Orchid, and dozen of other poisons. There's no remedy for it, and once anyone below the Divine Core realm is impaled by it, he would become dead meat. Its poison can even corrode Yuan energy. Jiang Chen, getting killed by this poisonous needle is an honorable death for you. If you want to blame someone, just blame yourself for offending someone you shouldn't have offended.”

An insidious look appeared in the eyes of the man. The poisonous needle in his hand slowly started floating, then he pushed it with massive force and sent it towards Jiang Chen's direction, silently.

This poisonous needle was made from a very special material, and it wouldn't make any sound when moving. Therefore, once it was used to attack someone, it could approach the enemy without them knowing.

However, Jiang Chen could actually sense something. However, he was too busy escaping together with Big Yellow using all their strength to mind it. Besides, all this time, the man in black had been attacking using his combat weapon, Jiang Chen didn't expect

him to suddenly attack with a poisonous needle.

When the poisonous needle got closer, only then did Jiang Chen sense that something was wrong. He hurriedly twisted his body, but it was too late. The poisonous needle pierced into Jiang Chen's shoulder, and the poison immediately spread across his body, making Jiang Chen start wobbling.

“Big Yellow, I was poisoned, carry me.”

Jiang Chen said hastily.

“The fuck, don't you know how to defend yourself from poison? How could you be poisoned?”

Big Yellow said in a helpless manner. But because of the critical moment, he still immediately carried Jiang Chen on his back.

“The poison used on the needle from that man in black is far more lethal than the Green Hellish Python's poison. However, it's far from enough to kill me.”

Jiang Chen sneered, then he started circulating energy to his shoulder to eject the poisonous needle. He didn't really care about the poison in his body. He circulated the Dragon Transformation skill, then the Green Hellish Python's poison burst out and covered all poison in his body.

Because he had absorbed the Green Hellish Python's bloodline,

Jiang Chen's body could turn into a poisonous body whenever he wanted to. Although the needle's poison was very powerful, it was illogical to destroy a poisonous body with another poison. With help from the Dragon Transformation skill and the Green Hellish Python's poison, the poison from the needle would turn into a nourishing ingredient and be absorbed by Jiang Chen, helping him increase the strength of poison in his body.

Plop!

But Jiang Chen still pretended to fall down onto Big Yellow's back. He tried using this method to ditch the man in black chasing behind.

Indeed, when the man in black saw Jiang Chen falling down onto Big Yellow's back, he immediately stopped the chase.

“Haha, the Silent Poisonous Needle from senior disciple Fan is really powerful, Jiang Chen was only at the Mortal Core realm, so of course, he would be killed by it! I have accomplished my mission perfectly, I'm sure senior disciple Fan will reward me handsomely once I return!”

The man in black was laughing out loudly. He had witnessed the poison needle impaling Jiang Chen's body, and he had seen with his own eyes how Jiang Chen fell motionlessly onto Big Yellow's back. Underneath such circumstances, Jiang Chen would die for sure.

As for Big Yellow, he didn't really care about him, since his only

target was Jiang Chen.

“Carry on, once you reach the deeper area of sector two, the dangers will be greater! Even that big yellow dog will probably die in there, and if that really happens, then their bodies will get buried in there. Jiang Chen will disappear without anyone knowing what happened.”

Feeling proud of himself, the man in black turned around and left the Myriad Demon Mountain, soon disappearing from their sights.

Roar~

Big Yellow carried Jiang Chen on his back and continued running. Suddenly, a ground shaking roar came from in front. Big Yellow's expression turned awful, “It's a Mid Heavenly Core demon lord! Damn it, we're so unlucky...”

Big Yellow turned in another direction and continued running. They were at a place very close to the center area of sector two, and it was perfectly normal to bump into some Late Heavenly Core demon lords there. Let alone those Mid Heavenly Core demon lords, if Jiang Chen and Big Yellow really bumped into a Late Heavenly Core demon lord, then today would be their doomsday.

But luckily, Big Yellow's speed was really fast. If it wasn't, then there would be no way for them to escape from the second sector.

A short moment after Big Yellow left the place, a strong golden

lion appeared at the place where Big Yellow was previously at. It kept examining its surroundings, but it couldn't find anything special, then it just went back to where it came from.

It's worth mentioning that Big Yellow had great talent when it came to escaping. Very quickly, he had found a remote valley, and there was a desolate and hidden cave within.

Plop~

Big Yellow threw Jiang Chen forcefully from his back.

“Damn it, damned dog, can't you be any gentler?! Tell me earlier if you want to put me down!”

Jiang Chen cursed.

Big Yellow stared at Jiang Chen in awe. He had an oily face, and he looked decent, he didn't look like had been poisoned at all. Big Yellow immediately realized he had been cheated by Jiang Chen, and had carried him all the way for nothing.

He could tolerate many things, but not doing free labor. Big Yellow screamed and leaped towards Jiang Chen.

“The fuck, damned dog, I really was poisoned just now, and it's just that I managed to absorb the poison! Ouch! Bastard, you bit my ass again!”

Jiang Chen became furious as well. This damned dog had bitten the same side of his butt every single time, and it had become swollen.

Therefore, a man and a dog started fighting in the small cave. The scene looked so familiar, and it was like the first time they had met each other.

A few minutes later, the man and dog stopped their fight. However, they were staring at each other fiercely.

“Damn it, you’ve torn my clothes! Do you want I, your father, to run out from here naked?!”

When Jiang Chen saw a huge hole on his pants near his butt, he had a feeling of wanting to head-butt Big Yellow.

“Fuck you, then what am I, your father, going to do with my panda eyes? Damn it, you were too fierce! Now your father’s handsome image is all gone!”

Big Yellow’s left eye now resembled the eye of a panda.

“Fuck off, guard the perimeter for your father, I’m going to break through to the Late Mortal Core realm now.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Big Yellow, then he found a big rock and sat

down on it. He started adjusting his energy.

Big Yellow was mumbling to himself, but he knew that this was an important moment for Jiang Chen. Therefore, he went out to guard the entrance to the cave.

“Every time I have to guard.”

Big Yellow was unhappy about it.

Jiang Chen didn't bother with Big Yellow as he was busy adjusting his energy. After his fight with the Bloody Combat Wolf and the man in black, he had been wounded twice, and his energy was now a bit of a mess. Before he attempted to break through to the next stage, he needed to adjust himself to his best form.

Right now, within Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, the poison of the Green Hellish Python had changed color. Some black strips had mixed with the once greenish poison. Those black strips were the poison from the Silent Poisonous Needle.

This was the incredible benefit of the Dragon Transformation skill. With the poison of the Green Hellish Python as the foundation, Jiang Chen could absorb any types of poison and turn it into his own. After absorbing the poison from the needle, Jiang Chen's poison became even stronger. If any ordinary Heavenly Core warrior was hit by this poison, he would basically die in an instant.

Jiang Chen took out the Bloody Combat Wolf's demon soul. It kept emitting a bright, golden light, and a strong energy was flowing out from it.

“I'll depend on you.”

Jiang Chen opened his mouth and swallowed the demon soul.

Bang!

The massive energy contained within the demon soul exploded in Jiang Chen's body and swept across every single limb and bone in his body. Jiang Chen didn't dare neglect its energy, and he immediately started circulating the Dragon Transformation skill in order to absorb all the energy.

As time passed by, new Dragon Marks kept forming in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea.

Dawn, at the entrance of the Black Sect, a black figure suddenly appeared. It was the man in black who had gone to the Myriad Demon Mountain to kill Jiang Chen. The man removed all clothes and the veil covering his face. He was in his late twenties, and he had an ordinary face. He was one of those men whose faces couldn't be remembered. However, his cultivation realm wasn't weak, he was a Mid Heavenly Core warrior.

The man took out a Black Sect uniform, and after changing into it, he flew into the Black Sect.

Inside the Myriad Demon Mountain, when the bright sunlight chased away the darkness, the demon beasts within the mountain roared angrily and continuously. They unleashed their demonic auras, covering the mountain from the sunlight.

Sector two, within a remote valley. Big Yellow laid on the ground outside a cave with a bored expression. Inside the cave, Yuan energy was boiling around Jiang Chen, literally making it seem like he was in middle of a storm which might explode at any moment.

Right now, Jiang Chen needed to absorb the Bloody Combat Wolf's demon soul bit by bit. This kind of demon soul, which contained a special bloodline, was the most difficult to absorb. Not only did Jiang Chen want to absorb the energy within, he also wanted to inherit the Bloody Combat Wolf's Wolf King bloodline, and he wanted to form new Dragon Marks to increase his combat strength. The effectiveness of absorbing a special bloodline was always better than absorbing the energy alone.

It took much time to inherit the bloodline. After spending a night, Jiang Chen had only been able to form 5 new Dragon Marks. But he was very close to having a total of 60 Dragon Marks, which was so close to reaching the Late Mortal Core realm.

Chapter 121 – Late Mortal Core Realm, 65

Dragon Marks

Inside a delicate courtyard within the inner circle area of the Black Sect, a young man dressed in white clothes stood solemnly. This courtyard occupied an entire mountain peak, and it was one of the best locations within the inner circle. Aside from Guan Yi Yun, only a few other disciples could have a place similar to this one.

This young man seemed to be in his late twenties. With a sharp facial figure and a handsome look, he could easily stand out amongst the crowds.

Swoosh!

A man suddenly appeared in the courtyard and walked up to this young man. The man who had suddenly appeared cupped his fist and greeted the young man, “Senior disciple Fan.”

The man who came was the same man who had hunted Jiang Chen in the Myriad Demon Mountain.

“Jiang Wei, how is everything?”

The young man asked. His name was Fan Kun, one of the strongest inner circle disciples. With a cultivation base at the peak of the Heavenly Core realm, he’s second only to Guan Yi Yun.

“Rest assured senior disciple Fan, mission accomplished.”

A sneer appeared on Jiang Wei's face.

“Are you sure?”

A happy expression emerged on Fan Kun's face.

“I'm sure! Jiang Chen was very cunning and powerful, and he almost slipped away. However, thanks to senior disciple Fan giving me the Silent Poisonous Needle, I was able to shoot the needle into his body and watch him die with my own eyes.”

Jiang Wei described the scene to Fan Kun.

“Very good, Jiang Wei, you've done a good job! I'll reward you with something later.”

Fan Kun patted Jiang Wei's shoulders. With a flattered feeling, Jiang Wei said, “It's my honor to help senior disciple Fan!”

“We are all working for big brother Nan Bei. This Jiang Chen was courting death when he offended big brother Nan Bei. Not only this, he even challenged big brother Nan Bei to a fight in one year! Big brother Nan Bei couldn't kill him because of his status, but I won't let him get away with it!”

Fan Kun sneered.

“Senior disciple Fan, you should let big brother Nan Bei know that you’ve helped him kill Jiang Chen, that way, big brother Nan Bei will know that you were the one to help him out with this!”

Jiang Wei said.

“No need, big brother Nan Bei will look down on me if I seek credit for such a minor matter. He is now focusing on his cultivation, as his goal is to conquer this world. The Qi Province is just the beginning. Let’s perform our best and help big brother Nan Bei, I’m sure lots of benefits will await!”

Fan Kun said with a smile on his face. If the conversation between the two of them was heard by someone else, it would be enough to drop a bomb and frighten anyone. It was an unbelievable matter, Nan Bei Chao had set foot in the Black Sect, and it wasn’t difficult to imagine that he had men in the Heavenly Sword Sect and Valley of Happiness as well.

Nan Bei Chao was only 17-18 years old, but even Fan Kun addressed him as big brother. This went to show how much respect they had for Nan Bei Chao.

“Senior disciple Fan, right now, Guan Yi Yun has left the Black Sect and entered Inferno Hell. There’s no one else in the Black Sect who can suppress you! From now on, the inner and outer circle will all be in your hands, senior disciple Fan!”

Jiang Wei was kissing Fan Kun’s ass.

“Hmph! That idiot Guan Yi Yun, he is courting death by going to Inferno Hell!”

Fan Kun let out a cold snort, he was full of disdain towards Guan Yi Yun.

“Since Jiang Chen is now dead, I heard that the girl who followed Jiang Chen is a very pretty girl, a rare hot flower... Is senior disciple Fan interested in her?”

Jiang Wei squinted his eyes. His face carried an insidious smile.

“Is that so?”

An evil look appeared in Fan Kun’s eyes.

.....

Myriad Demon Mountain!

It has been a few hours since Jiang Chen started absorbing the Bloody Combat Wolf’s demon soul. He had absorbed all the energy contained within, and the Bloody Combat Wolf’s bloodline had completely merged with his as well.

Buzz.....

Around noon. An intense buzzing sound sounded out from within Jiang Chen's body, strong energy ripples hovered around his body, and the natural Yuan energies within the valley had turned into whirlpools, making all energy crazily flow into Jiang Chen's body.

Near the entrance, Big Yellow, who was bored, suddenly stood up. He stared at Jiang Chen who was covered in golden light.

“This abnormal monster is going to break through!”

Big Yellow felt surprised. The method and approach Jiang Chen used to break through was something he had never seen before.

Big Yellow moved out from the cave. He could guess that it was going to become a place of great havoc once Jiang Chen broke through to the Late Mortal Core realm, so he decided to keep some distance.

Jiang Chen's energy was getting stronger and stronger, the natural energies within a few miles radius had been completely depleted, amazing blood colored Dragon Marks were flying and hovering around him, as if they were real.

Right at this moment, there were sixty Dragon Marks in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, and he was approaching the borderline of the Late Mortal Core realm. Jiang Chen grabbed a huge amount of Mortal Restoration Pills from his storage ring, and without checking how many there were, he swallowed everything.

Finally, after his energy reached its absolute peak, Jiang Chen's cultivation realm stabled down at the Late Mortal Core realm. The impact and aid from the Bloody Combat Wolf's bloodline was much stronger than the energy itself, and it had given Jiang Chen benefits beyond comparison.

Now, Jiang Chen had completely condensed a total of 60 Dragon Marks. However, after he broke through to the Late Mortal Core realm, the progress had yet to stop. With help from the bloodline, Jiang Chen managed to form another five Dragon Marks, making him possess a total of 65 Dragon Marks.

Crack.....

Jiang Chen clenched his fist so tightly that it made a cracking sound. His eyes were glowing, he had a feeling that his strength was limitless.

“65 Dragon Marks, it feels so good to be this powerful! If I were to meet Li Wu Ling again in this form, I could kill him with just a single slap.”

Jiang Chen was very confident now. The strength of these 65 Dragon Marks had given him the ability to fight with a Mid Heavenly Core warrior. The genius type of Mid Heavenly Core warriors, that is. The ordinary Mid Heavenly Core warriors weren't Jiang Chen's match any longer.

If one were to take all of Jiang Chen's abilities into consideration,

it doesn't matter whether it was a genius Mid Heavenly Core warrior or an ordinary one, none of them would have any advantages over Jiang Chen. Just the poison and Nine Phantom Wolves alone were enough to cause them headaches.

Swoosh swoosh.....

Jiang Chen's body wobbled, and 8 illusions of his own image appeared. Each illusion looked completely identical to his real self.
9 Jiang Chen's moved and surrounded Big Yellow.

"Hehe, Big Yellow, can you find out which is the real me?"

All nine Jiang Chen's asked at the same time. Doesn't matter if it was their expressions, movements or tones, they were all completely identical. Big Yellow felt confused.

"Damn you, you're amazing! You really obtained the Bloody Combat Wolf's innate ability! Crazy, abnormally crazy! You're really a super abnormal monster!"

Big Yellow fell down onto the ground. He felt excited and speechless at the same time. He had witnessed another miracle today, all while feeling speechless because of Jiang Chen's insane ability. This method of breaking through was just crazy.

Jiang Chen would be able to absorb any innate abilities from any demon beasts, and turn it into his own ability. This abnormally terrifying ability, if anyone knew about it, they would probably die

from fright.

With a thought, all 8 illusions retracted back into Jiang Chen's body. With a bright smile on his face, Jiang Chen said, "Hehe, with the Nine Phantom Wolves, my overall combat strength have increased to another level; this illusion can surprise my opponent in a fight."

"Abnormal monster!"

Big Yellow begun having more interest towards the skill Jiang Chen was cultivating, but he forced himself to restrain it due to not wanting to give a bowl of his own blood.

"Oh right, who was the one who wanted to kill you last night?"

Big Yellow asked.

Hearing this, Jiang Chen's face darkened, "I'm sure he was someone from the Black Sect. If my guess is correct, he was from the inner circle."

"I don't think you have offended any inner circle disciples from the Black Sect? It seems like you haven't even met any inner circle disciple since you came to the Black Sect."

Big Yellow was puzzled.

“Yesterday, the man in black said something about me offending someone I shouldn’t have. I’ve never offended anyone from the Black Sect... Looks like the one who wanted to kill me didn’t want to kill me because of offending someone from the Black Sect... Do you think there’s any possibility it was related to Nan Bei Chao or Liang Xiao?”

Jiang Chen guessed.

“I don’t think so. The Heavenly Sword Sect and the Burning Sky Pavilion are enemies with the Black Sect, and no matter how powerful Nan Bei Chao and Liang Xiao are, it is impossible for them to ask someone in the Black Sect to kill you. Besides, that Nan Bei Chao is so proud of himself, he had agreed to the one-year fight date with you, someone like him wouldn’t use such a despicable approach to kill you. If this is wrong, then he would have killed you back in the Whirling Sun Square.”

Big Yellow said.

“Hmph! I don’t care who it was, but I won’t forget it! Those who tries to kill me will never have a good ending! Let’s go back to the Black Sect, I want to find the one who tried to kill me.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. After breaking through to the Late Mortal Core realm, he had achieved the goal he had when coming to the Myriad Demon Mountain. Now, he needed to go back and concoct a pill that could strengthen his foundation, and start preparing to break through to the Heavenly Core realm.

Whenever he broke through, Jiang Chen could precisely feel how many Dragon Marks he needed for him to break through to the next stage or realm. Thus, in order for him to break through to the Heavenly Core realm, he would need a total of 100 Dragon Marks. Now, Jiang Chen had 65 Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea, so he needed another 35 Dragon Marks in order to break through to the Heavenly Core realm.

35 Dragon Marks wasn't a small number. Besides, the Dragon Transformation skill consumed massive amounts of energy when breaking through, and whenever he broke through to a higher realm, it would become more difficult to progress further, therefore, it was a tough goal to break through to the Heavenly Core realm. However, on the other hand, Jiang Chen only needed a huge amount of energy to break through to the next realms and stages. For the once greatest saint in the world, there was no bottleneck when breaking through. He was only doing what he had basically done before, and whenever he reached a new realm, he would have perfect control over the natural Yuan energy, as he had already learned to control it once before.

Crack!

Just as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were about to leave the valley, they heard a cracking sound coming from the cave. Although the sound was weak, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could still clearly hear it.

“There's something in the cave.”

Both of their eyes were glowing, and they walked into the cave

together. They had examined the cave when they came here previously. It was just a 10 meter wide, old and ruined cave. Aside from the stone wall at the back of the cave, there were only some loose rocks on the floor.

Crack~

That was the sound of something cracking. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow both looked at the stone wall at the back of the cave, and then, they saw a crack appear on it. The sound was coming from the wall.

Chapter 122 – Crisis In The Outer Circle

More and more cracks appeared on the stone wall. The entire stone wall was filled with cracks that kept on extending, resembling a gigantic spider web.

“I never expected that there would be something else in this cave. Behind this stone wall, there is an empty space, it looked perfectly normal. Without detailed examination, there’s no way we could have found anything special about it. I also didn’t find anything special when we were here previously... It must be the energy waves that appeared during your breakthrough that caused the destruction of this stone wall’s structure.”

Big Yellow said.

“What good luck, perhaps there is some treasure hiding inside!”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. He loved treasures, and it was obvious that there was something special about this stone wall. Perhaps there was truly some treasure hidden within.

Big Yellow was even more straightforward, he spat out a golden beam towards the stone wall. With a loud bang, the stone wall which was filled with cracks shattered, and a dark passage appeared behind the stone wall, leading to an unknown place.

“There is really something hiding inside, come, let’s go check it out.”

Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen walked into the dark passage. A skillful warrior was never afraid of a challenge, and Jiang Chen was the perfect representation of that.

“Wait for me!”

Big Yellow followed and entered the passage behind Jiang Chen.

It was a narrow and dried passage. After Jiang Chen and Big Yellow walked for about 2-3 miles, they finally saw some light at the end of the passage.

They saw a cave at the end of the passage. Above the cave, there was a hole where the sunlight shone through. There was also water dripping down from the hole that fell into a big pool in the cave. A path made from dark green rocks was located in the middle of the cave.

“This is a natural water curtain cave, I never expected there would be such a beautiful place within the Myriad Demon Mountain!”

Jiang Chen said. This water curtain was incredibly beautiful, and it would be an ideal place to enter secluded cultivation.

“I sense some intense energies here, I’m sure there are some hidden treasures!”

Big Yellow sniffed around, he kept looking around and examining while his eyes were glowing brightly. After searching for some time, he stared at the center of the cave. There was a small pond made from some green crystal stones, and it was emitting a faded smoke.

“There really is treasure!”

Big Yellow immediately dashed out and came to the middle of the water curtain cave. He placed both of his paws on the side of the pool. At the same time, Jiang Chen came over and looked into the pool.

Both man's and dog's expressions changed, and they felt some difficulty when breathing.

“Energy Spring Water!”

Big Yellow and Jiang Chen shouted in surprise at the same time. They saw a meter wide pool fully filled with milky white Energy Spring Water.

“Damn! So much Energy Spring Water, it would be such of a waste to leave it here... Let your father drink a mouthful first!”

Without saying anything else, Big Yellow put his mouth into the pool and started drinking the Energy Spring Water.

“Fuck you, don't drink it all!”

Jiang Chen had seen how Big Yellow ate at the Silver Moon restaurant, so he didn't dare slow down for even a little bit. Although there was a lot of Energy Spring Water here, if he didn't act fast, Big Yellow would devour it all.

This was Energy Spring Water, the true essence of this world. A drop of this would cost a fortune outside of this cave, and yet, there was pool filled with it right here.

If an ordinary man drank this Energy Spring Water, it would help strengthen his health and prolong his life. The Energy Spring Water provided even greater help for cultivators, it contained the purest energy. A cultivator would feel elevated, their bodies and muscles would strengthen, and all impurities within their bodies would disappear. It was a rare and precious treasure.

Jiang Chen didn't care about his image anymore. Half his face was inside the pool, and he started drinking the Energy Spring Water. If the way this man and dog drank the Energy Spring Water. If this was known by anyone else, they would surely start screaming and start desiring to kill them. This was some fucking Energy Spring Water, not some plain water.

After drinking for some time, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow immediately stopped drinking. Big Yellow laid down on the side and fell asleep. Sleeping was his best method of digesting energy that he had just absorbed. Jiang Chen circulated the Dragon Transformation skill and begun digesting the energy. The reason why they stopped drinking was because they had drank too much of the energy, and if they didn't digest it in time, they wouldn't be

able to sustain all the energy, even with their strong bodies.

Buzz buzz.....

The Energy Spring Water was like a clear and refreshing stream that flowed around within Jiang Chen's body. With help from the Dragon Transformation skill, all the energy was digested and used to condense new Dragon Marks.

An hour later, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow opened their eyes up at the same time. Both of them moved the same way, they jumped back to the pool and started drinking again.

The Energy Spring Water was definitely a rare treasure, and these two abnormal prodigals had just created the most wasteful method of drinking it; drinking it like it was plain water.

The man and dog stopped drinking after filling themselves up, then they started digesting the energy. Then, they repeated the entire process again and again. It took two days for them to completely stop.

Now, both of them were filled with energy. Big Yellow was glowing in a golden light, and he looked mighty. Jiang Chen was even more terrifying, with the help of the Energy Spring Water, in just two days he had formed another 15 new Dragon Marks. Now, he had a total of 80 Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea. He really had a great harvest for the trip.

With Jiang Chen's current combat strength, he could kill any Mid Heavenly Core warrior. And, Late Heavenly Core warriors would have a hard time if they were to try and kill him.

"Damn it, enough, I don't want to drink anymore, my stomach is going to explode."

Big Yellow wagged his tail with a satisfied expression on his face. The Energy Spring Water had provided Big Yellow with huge benefits, and it had taken him one step closer to the Heavenly Core realm.

"Continuing drinking the Energy Spring Water won't provide us any help... But there's still half a pool of Energy Spring Water... Let's take it and turn it into wine in the future!"

Jiang Chen said. Using the Energy Spring Water to make wine, if anyone heard this then they would immediately cough out some blood, and that person would definitely slam Jiang Chen's face with his shoes.

He flipped his hand and took out a palm-size bottle from his storage ring. The bottle was also a storage item, and while it couldn't hold too much liquid, it was still more than enough to hold all of the remaining Energy Spring Water.

After storing every last drop of the remaining Energy Spring Water into the bottle, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow left the Water Curtain Cave with satisfied expressions, then they left the Myriad Demon Mountain.

It had been three days since Jiang Chen left the Black Sect, and he had met a great harvest during this period. Not only did Jiang Chen break through to the Late Mortal Core realm and completely stabilize it, he had also formed a total of 80 Dragon Marks which made him closer to the Heavenly Core realm.

The Black Sect!

Outside of Jiang Chen's courtyard, three disciples from the outer circle were walking back and forth with panicked expressions on their faces.

"What should we do? Is senior disciple Jiang really dead? If he really is dead, then who will help us?"

One of them said.

"Bullshit! Senior disciple Jiang is a man with great luck, I'm sure he is still alive now!"

"But senior disciple Jiang has disappeared for three days, the rumor about him dying in the Myriad Demon Mountain has been spread amongst all outer circle disciples! Guo Lei and his men have become so arrogant now, and they always pick fights with us! Even senior disciple Yan is in secluded cultivation now, there's no one who can help us now..."

The three of them were discussing while in extremely bad moods.

They were very close to Wang Yun and Huang Zheng before this, and they had vowed to follow Jiang Chen no matter what. But, since two days ago, a rumor saying that Jiang Chen had been killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain had started spreading, and after that, someone had started picking fights with them.

Right at this moment, two figures descended from the sky and landed in front of the entrance to the courtyard. They were Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

When these three disciple saw Jiang Chen appearing after having disappeared three days ago, they become startled. However, they immediately jumped up in excitement, and one of them even start crying out like they had just found their savior.

“Senior disciple Jiang, you’re still alive, you’re really alive, that’s great, that’s perfect!”

“I told you that senior disciple Jiang wouldn’t die so easily, see this? He is here, alive and kicking!”

These three disciples were very excited, and they couldn’t be blamed for it. To them, Jiang Chen was their savior.

“Dead? Who said I was dead?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. He had been away for only three days, and there was someone who had spread rumors saying he was dead. This made him think about the man in black who had tried

killing him back in the Myriad Demon Mountain.

“It was that bastard Guo Lei who said it! He told us that senior disciple Jiang had been killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain! Besides, this Guo is incredibly arrogant and despotic, he purposely picked those who followed you and forced them to give him 100 Mortal Restoration Pills every month! Wang Yun and Huang Zheng were seriously wounded because they refused to follow his orders, and the rest of us had no choice but to pay them 100 Mortal Restoration Pills. We won’t be able to cultivate anymore if he takes 100 Mortal Restoration Pills from us every single month!”

One of the disciples explained everything to Jiang Chen with a gloomy expression. Wang Yun and Huang Zheng went to the Myriad Demon Mountain 5 days ago and came back 2 days ago, and that’s when they were wounded by Guo Lei.

Hearing all of this, an angry expression emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. He asked, “Who is Guo Lei?”

“Senior disciple Jiang, Guo Lei is one of the geniuses amongst the outer circle disciples. He has a cultivation base at the peak of the Mortal Core realm, and he is also close with some of the disciples from the inner circle! That’s why no one has dared to offend him. And now that he heard that senior disciple Jiang had died, he started picking on us!”

The disciple said again.

“He only asked you to give him Mortal Restoration Pills?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Yes, there were around 80 disciples who followed senior disciple Wang Yun and vowed their loyalty to senior disciple Jiang, and all of us became targets of that bully Guo Lei. No other disciples were bullied by him.”

The disciple said again.

Hearing all of this, Jiang Chen’s face darkened. Obviously, this matter was not so simple. Guo Lei was just a small fish, and the one who wanted to do something to him was from the inner circle.

Guo Lei was just a small disciple from the outer circle; how could he have known that Jiang Chen went to the Myriad Demon Mountain? Also, how could he have known that Jiang Chen was killed in the mountain? It was obvious that he had been sent by someone else to spread the rumour and bully Wang Yun.

Chapter 123 – Burning The Courtyards To The Ground

He couldn't let go of the matter like that, Jiang Chen had to know who was the one behind it all.

“Where is Wang Yun and Huang Zheng now?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Senior disciple Wang and Huang Zheng are both healing their wounds at their courtyard. They were seriously wounded, and they can't get off their beds.”

One of the disciples said.

“Let's go, bring me to them.”

With a serious expression, Jiang Chen strode towards the residency area. This time, it didn't matter if it was Wang Yun, Huang Zheng, or those disciples who were forced to hand out Mortal Restoration Pills, they had encountered this problem all because of Jiang Chen. Therefore, Jiang Chen had to step in and bring them their justice. If he didn't, who would want to follow him in the future? Most importantly, he wanted to find out who was behind everything, and who was the man in black that tried to assassinate him in the Myriad Demon Mountain. And, Guo Lei was the first clue in finding the answers to these questions.

The residency for the outer circle disciples were rows of courtyards, and six disciples lived in each courtyard. Right now, Wang Yun and Huang Zheng were resting in the same room, and the courtyard was packed with people. Every one of them was angry.

“Damn it, this is ridiculous, we’ve been outer circle disciples for such a long time, and something like this has never happened before! Why is Guo Lei demanding us to give him our Mortal Restoration Pills?”

“Rumors said that senior disciple Jiang was killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain. It is obvious that Guo Lei purposely chose to pick on us, those who weren’t close to senior disciple Jiang aren’t targeted by him.”

“I don’t believe senior disciple Jiang has died, let’s wait for him to come back! I’m sure he will fight for our justice!”

Everyone was filled with righteous indignation, and when they looked at Wang Yun and Huang Zheng who were resting on the beds, they became even angrier. However, it was too bad that their strength wasn’t enough, and that was why they were being bullied.

“Look! It’s senior disciple Jiang! Senior disciple Jiang is back!”

Someone suddenly shouted with excitement. Then, everyone looked towards the entrance and saw a few men coming in. The young man who walked in front was wearing white clothes, and he bore an imposing aura. It was none other than Jiang Chen.

When all these disciples saw Jiang Chen, their bitter expressions immediately turned into surprised ones.

“Senior disciple Jiang is back! It really is senior disciple Jiang! Hahaha, I told you, he wouldn’t die so easily!”

“Senior disciple Jiang! It is so good to have you back! You must help us this time!”

.....

All these disciples gathered around Jiang Chen and started complaining and telling him about their ignominy and rage. Guo Lei was protected by some inner circle disciples, and they couldn’t offend him at all; they could only count on Jiang Chen to help them. Right now, in the Black Sect, only Jiang Chen could help them.

As for the Sect Elders, they never really cared about fights amongst disciples. There had always been fights amongst disciples in all sects. This was the world of cultivation; only fights could push things forwards.

“Everyone, enough, senior disciple Jiang is here to help us.”

A disciple who stood next to Jiang Chen said.

“How are Wang Yun and Huang Zhang now?”

Jiang Chen asked.

When mentioning Wang Yun and Huang Zheng, everyone stopped talking, then they made way for Jiang Chen to go through.

Jiang Chen walked into the bedroom, and he could see two beds inside the room where two men were lying on top. They were motionless, and they had extremely weak energies. Jiang Chen walked closer to the beds, then he saw Wang Yun and Huang Zheng who were covered in bruises; their faces could barely be recognized, and their breaths were weak.

Looking at them, an uncontrollable anger immediately exploded within Jiang Chen's body. From their wounds, he could easily tell what their opponents had done to them. It required some really cruel and brutal methods to make a Late Mortal Core warrior lose his ability to move.

Sensing someone there, Huang Zhen opened his eyes. When he saw it was Jiang Chen who was standing in front of him, an extremely happy look emerged in his eyes.

Huang Zheng struggled and tried to speak, but he couldn't even move his lips.

“Don't say anything, I know what's going on.”

Jiang Chen placed his hand on Huang Zheng and stopped him from trying to speak. Since Huang Zheng had awakened, that meant he would soon recover. Wang Yun's wounds were much more serious than Huang Zhen's, and he was still in a coma right now.

“Senior disciple Wang Yun and Huang Zhen were defeated by Guo Lei. He even went as far as breaking senior's legs and arms, that's why he is still in a coma now.”

One of the disciples said.

Jiang Chen grabbed Wang Yun's arms and checked his meridians. He found that although Wang Yun was seriously injured, his legs and arms still weren't completely disable, they were only fractured. The chances of a full recovery was still there.

Jiang Chen put down Wang Yun's arm, turned around and asked the disciple who was waiting at his residency, “What's your name?”

“Senior disciple Jiang, my name is Wang Da Niu.”

The disciple looked straight and upright, no wonder his name was Wang Da Niu.

“Da Niu, help me go find Sect Elder Guo Shan, ask him to give you two Revival Pills. Just tell him Jiang Chen asked for it.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? Sect Elder Guo Shan? Revival pill?”

Wang Da Niu was startled, the rest of the disciples almost had identical reactions. Everyone knew about Sect Elder Guo Shan, he was a highly respectable man in the Black Sect, and for these disciples from the outer circle, Guo Shan was someone from the top whom they could rarely meet. As for the Revival Pill, it was a rare healing pill that would cost a fortune. Although Wang Yun and Huang Zheng had such serious wounds, if they could get a Revival Pill, they would be fully recovered within 7 days.

However, Jiang Chen was asking him to go look for Sect Elder Guo Shan and ask for two Revival Pills. Was this a joke, or was Jiang Chen really an important person in Guo Shan’s mind?

“What are you waiting for?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“I’ll go right now.”

Without further delay, Wang Da Niu immediately left the courtyard and started walking towards Guo Shan’s mountain peak, his mind full of doubt and fear.

“Where is Guo Lei right now?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“We don’t know, but surely within Black Sect.”

Someone said.

“Fine, bring me to where he stays.”

With an indifferent expression on his face, Jiang Chen’s voice was so cold that it could send shivers down anyone’s spines. No one here was an idiot, therefore, all of them could tell that Jiang Chen was really furious right now, and the consequences would be devastating.

As for how devastating the consequences would be, these disciples didn’t know. However, Big Yellow knew very clearly, today, the outer circle would be in complete mess. Big Yellow was incredibly excited, and he simply walked in front of everyone. Together with all disciples, they marched towards the place where Guo Lei lived.

Lead by Jiang Chen, the group with more than dozens of people walked across the residency areas, attracting the attention of all outer circle disciples who saw them.

“Look! Isn’t that Jiang Chen?! Heavens, I thought he was dead? How is he still alive?”

“Look at them, I’m sure they’re going to find Guo Lei and settle the score! Jiang Chen is a fierce man, Guo Lei is doomed this time!”

“No way, Guo Lei knows someone from the inner circle, Jiang Chen won’t dare touch him!”

“Save your breath! Who is Jiang Chen? He’s someone who dares offend Nan Bei Chao! Guo Lei is nothing in his eyes!”

Everyone’s tongues were wagging, they couldn’t wait to see what was going to happen. Jiang Chen was famous for his brutal and fierce approaches, and the conflict between Guo Lei and Wang Yun was known by everyone here. Now, Jiang Chen had come back, completely alive. It looked like he was ready to wreak havoc in the outer circle.

Guo Lei’s courtyard was located in the center of the residency area. It was a very elegant courtyard, and just from the outside, it looked much better than all the other courtyards. Besides, Guo Lei had the privilege of staying alone within this courtyard, and this went to show that he had a certain status within the outer circle.

Right now, the door to Guo Lei’s courtyard was shut. It looked like he wasn’t inside the house. But, it was around noon, therefore, it was perfectly normal that he wasn’t there.

“Open the door!”

Right after Jiang Chen’s words left his mouth, Big Yellow dashed

forwards, and with a loud bang, he shattered the door to the courtyard.

There's no one in the courtyard, and the door to the house was closed.

“Senior disciple Jiang, Guo Lei is not here.”

A disciple said.

“Burn this courtyard.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

What? Burn the courtyard? This wasn't a joke, ever since the Black Sect had been established, although there had always been conflicts between disciples, no one had ever tried to burn a courtyard. After all, the courtyard was the property of the Black Sect; it had nothing to do with anyone.

However, Big Yellow never cared about stuff like that. He loved activities like these, killing someone and burning down houses. When he was at the Heavenly Sword Sect, he had burnt down all the female residencies.

Big Yellow spat out a fireball which landed on the roof of one of the rooms. In just a few breaths time, all buildings within the courtyard were caught in the fire. The fire Big Yellow had spat out was incredibly powerful, and even Jiang Chen was surprised by it.

Big Yellow had been with him for quite some time, but this was the first time he had seen that he was able to spit fire. This dog was a really competent fellow.

“Heavens, fire! Jiang Chen really set Guo Lei’s courtyard on fire! This is brutal!”

Someone shouted out loudly. It looked like the outer circle was going to be in a mess today.

“Aside from Guo Lei, who else bullied you all?”

Jiang Chen asked with an indifferent tone.

The disciples who had been bullied mentioned a few more names, they were so excited. Jiang Chen was a really domineering person, he had simply just burnt down the entire courtyard.

“Big Yellow, help me burn down the courtyards of those guys.”

Jiang Chen’s expression didn’t change. Burning down some courtyards was the same as burning some wood to him.

Swoosh swoosh.....

Big Yellow kept spitting fireballs out from his mouth, setting another courtyard on fire. Big Yellow controlled his fire precisely, and although the fire was raging, it never sparked a single fire to

another courtyard.

Soon, the flame was raging in the resident area, such a big turmoil had shaken the outer circle.

In the training grounds within the outer circle, many disciples saw the fires and were shocked. Amongst them, four disciples' expressions changed dramatically.

“Senior disciple Guo, it looks like our courtyards are on fire!”

One of the disciples said with a shocked expression.

“Damn it, who has the guts to burn my courtyard?! Come, let's go check it out!”

The young man scolded. He brought the three other disciples towards the residency areas. This young man was in his mid twenties. With a muscular body and a red scar on his forehead, he looked ferocious.

This guy was none other than Guo Lei. With his cultivation at the peak of the Mortal Core realm, after Han Yan had entered secluded meditation, and Jiang Chen had disappeared, no one in the outer circle dared offend him.

Chapter 124 – Let's Settle The Score

In Guo Lei's mind, Jiang Chen was dead. The disciple from the inner circle wouldn't fool him on this matter. Thus, since Jiang Chen wasn't here anymore, and Han Yan was in secluded cultivation, he, Guo Lei, would be the king in the outer circle, and no one could step on him. Now, someone had the guts to burn his courtyard in broad daylight, this was just ridiculous.

Guo Lei alone with the other three moved towards the courtyards with extremely fast speed and anger. After a while, they arrived at their destination. The flames had attracted other disciples in the outer circle as well, and they were all crowding towards the scene.

When Guo Lei brought his men and arrived at the courtyard, he found that a lot of disciples had gathered. When some of them saw Guo Lei, they tried telling him about Jiang Chen's presence, but when they saw the arrogant expression on his face, they gave up the idea of telling him.

Guo Lei was a bully, therefore, not many disciples liked him. It was just that they didn't dare voice their opinions on this. Besides, Jiang Chen had come back today, and since they didn't dare offend Guo Lei, then they would definitely not dare to offend Jiang Chen. What happened today was pretty clear, Jiang Chen had burnt the courtyards to signal that he was looking for Guo Lei, and so, the rest of the disciples just sat back and kept their hands away from the conflict.

“Fuck, which bastard set fire on father's courtyard?! Is he trying to court death?!”

The furious Guo Lei kept cursing. He looked like he was about to chop the culprit into a thousand pieces upon finding out who he was.

There was a mini square right in the middle of the residency area. When Guo Lei and his men angrily entered the square, they bumped into Jiang Chen who was coming from the opposite direction.

When the angry and arrogant Guo Lei and his men saw Jiang Chen, they almost tripped and fell down with faces filled with shock. It was as if they had seen a ghost.

Guo Lei's reaction was slightly better than that of the three other men. All of them knew about Jiang Chen's approaches very well, they too had witnessed how Jiang Chen had killed Li Wu Ling. Offending this demon was not a fun thing.

“Fuck! Wasn't he supposed to be dead?! Why is he still here, alive and kicking?!”

Guo Lei couldn't control his emotions and cursed. Although he was a pretty brave man, and didn't seem to care much when mentioning Jiang Chen, now that he was really standing face to face with Jiang Chen, the feeling was completely different. He was scared.

“What should we do, senior disciple Guo? Looks like the one who burnt down our courtyards was Jiang Chen! He isn't dead, and he

is here to find us...”

One of the disciples had a helpless expression on his face. When he thought about what they had done during the last two days, and how they had harmed Wang Yun and Huang Zheng, with their understanding towards Jiang Chen, he surely wouldn't let them go this time.

“Damn, there's no way we can run, don't tell me he is going to kill us...”

“Jiang Chen isn't dead... From now on, there's no place for us to stay within the outer circle anymore...”

The other two disciples were so scared they felt like they were about to die. When facing the ferocious Jiang Chen, there was no way for them to stay calm.

“Useless fools, why are you all so scared? No matter how strong Jiang Chen is, he is still an outer circle disciple, and we were ordered by a senior disciple from the inner circle to deal with Wang Yun and the rest! This is the Black Sect, not a place where Jiang Chen can decide everything! Besides, he is only an outer circle disciple, don't tell me he is going to act against the rules?”

Guo Lei said with a grin. He wasn't really scared like the other disciples, because he had the support of an inner circle disciple.

“Who is Guo Lei?”

With a sharp vision, Jiang Chen stared at the four men in front of him.

“I’m Guo Lei! Jiang Chen, how dare you burn down our sect’s courtyard? Are you really that undisciplined and out of control?”

Guo Lei took a step forwards. Right now, there was no way for him to get away, and he could only face this head on. However, when he really stood face to face with Jiang Chen, he found himself lacking self-confidence.

“So, you’re Guo Lei? Perfect! Looks like you’re a clever man, so I suppose you already know why I was looking for you. Let’s settle our score today.”

Jiang Chen said with a sneer.

“Senior disciple Jiang, these three men were the ones who beat up Huang Zheng!”

Someone jumped out and pointed at the men behind Guo Lei. The three of them had a change in expression, and they felt unnatural.

“The four of you, kneel down.”

Jiang Chen said coolly.

“What?!”

Guo Lei shouted out. With his eyes almost popping out, he stared at Jiang Chen and said, “Jiang Chen, who do you think you are? Why do you tell us to kneel down? Let me tell you this; they might be afraid of you, but I, your father am not! You’re just a newcomer, who gave you the audacity to instruct me?”

“Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen still carried a sneer. Big Yellow leapt forwards and pushed Guo Lei onto the ground. Guo Lei was at the peak of the Mortal Core realm, but when facing Big Yellow’s attack, he didn’t even have the chance to react and defend himself. Big Yellow was just like a mountain that sat on top of him; no matter how much he struggled, he just couldn’t get him off.

Guo Lei’s face had a terrified expression. However, Big Yellow didn’t care about that, he just opened his mouth and forcefully bit down on Guo Lei’s shoulder.

Crack!

Big Yellow was extremely ferocious. With his sharp teeth, he ripped out a huge chunk of muscles from Guo Lei’s shoulder, making him start bleeding unstoppably from the wound.

Ahhhh....

The scream coming from the extreme pain spread across the entire residency area, and it sent a shiver down the spines of all who heard this terrifying scream.

Gasp~

Those who witnessed what happened immediately gasped. This dog was too fierce, without saying anything, he immediately seriously wounded Guo Lei. They all knew that Guo Lei was doomed when Jiang Chen said he wanted to settle the score between them. Guo Lei was already dead meat.

“This dog is so horrifying, Guo Lei is at a peak Mortal Core warrior, but in front of that big yellow dog, he simply has no way to resist!”

“This is brutal! Jiang Chen is really someone he shouldn’t have offended!”

People were sighing. When they looked at the miserable Guo Lei, those who followed Jiang Chen had satisfied expressions on their faces.

Big Yellow had only ripped off a chunk of muscle from Guo Lei, he hadn’t killed him. For a peak Mortal Core warrior, a wound like this was not worth mentioning compared to what Wang Yun and Huang Zheng had suffered. However, it was enough to terrify everyone.

Big Yellow got off of Guo Lei, then he stared at the other three disciples who were trembling with a fierce look. The trio were so scared that they immediately kneeled down.

“Please spare us, senior disciple Jiang!”

The trio was incredibly frightened. Before standing face to face with Jiang Chen, they simply had no idea how fierce and terrifying Jiang Chen could be.

“Spare you?”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort, “Now, let me settle the score with you three. Guo Lei, tell me honestly, how much many Mortal Restoration Pills have you collected during the previous two days? If you dare be off by just one, I’ll cripple one of your arms.”

Jiang Chen’s gaze was fierce, and anyone who stared into his eyes felt a chill down their spine. Guo Lei’s arrogance and pride had disappeared. He pushed down on the shoulder wound with his hand and kneeled down like the other three disciples. He knew that Jiang Chen wasn’t joking or trying to scare him, if he didn’t give him the real number, he would meet a miserable end today.

“There’s a total of 8,000 Mortal Restoration Pills.”

Guo Lei said.

“Eight thousand. Good. Now, I want you to pay ten times that amount, give me 80,000 Mortal Restoration Pills now as a token of your apology. I won’t accept even one less.”

Hearing that Jiang Chen asked him to pay 80,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, Guo Lei and the other three disciples felt like they had been struck by thunder and almost fainted. Eighty thousand Mortal Restoration Pills was a huge amount of wealth, and none of the outer circle disciples would have such a massive amount of Mortal Restoration Pills.

“Senior disciple Jiang, these eighty... eighty thousand Mortal Restoration Pills... We really don’t have so many... We were wrong senior disciple Jiang, please forgive us!”

Guo Lei said in a begging manner.

“That’s right, senior disciple Jiang, 80,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, we really don’t have so many... Besides, we don’t even have all 8,000 Mortal Restoration Pills with us, most of them were given to the inner circle disciples...”

Another disciple said. He tried mentioning the inner circle disciples, hoping that Jiang Chen wouldn’t be rigid.

“So now you try to act pitifully in front of me.”

Jiang Chen said with a sneer. He had seen with his own eyes how Wang Yun and Huang Zheng had been wounded. If this place

wasn't the Black Sect, these four men in front of him would have already been killed by now.

“I want 80,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, the full amount! If you can't choke them out, then you can pay with your own lives. Big Yellow, kill them.”

Jiang Chen's words sent chills down their spines. Then, they saw Big Yellow walking towards them, his teeth showing. After recalling how brutal Big Yellow was, the faces of these four men immediately turned pale, and they were scared to the absolute limit.

“No, don't kill us! I'll find a way! I know what to do!”

Guo Lei was incredibly frightened. His shoulder was still bleeding, and the fear he felt towards Big Yellow couldn't be compared with anyone else's fear.

“Jiang... senior disciple Jiang, most of the Mortal Restoration Pills we collected were given to the disciples from the inner circle! If senior disciple Jiang really wants them back, I can go find senior disciple Cai in the inner circle!”

Guo Lei said. He had been planning in his mind, in his current situation, there would be no way for him to run away from Jiang Chen. Therefore, he could only get help from an inner circle disciple to deal with Jiang Chen.

“Who is this senior disciple Cai?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Senior disciple Cai Dong is from the inner circle, we were ordered by him to do all of this! The news about you dying in the Myriad Demon Mountain also came from his mouth!”

Guo Lei didn't dare hide anything, Cai Dong was the man backing him from the inner circle. Right at this moment, only Cai Dong could save him.

Jiang Chen's eyes turned cold, he didn't know if this Cai Dong was related to the man in black who tried assassinating him in the mountain, or if they were the same person. Jiang Chen turned around and told one of the disciples, “Go to the inner circle and find that Cai Dong, ask him to come here right now. I want him to settle the debt of 80,000 Mortal Restoration Pills.”

“Understood, senior disciple Jiang!”

The disciple's face was filled with excitement. Senior disciple Jiang was really dignified. It looked like he was about to play something big this time, and he even wanted to pick a fight with an inner circle disciple.

Guo Lei was startled, as he had never expected Jiang Chen to react this way. He thought that Jiang Chen would calm down after hearing that this was related to an inner circle disciple. However,

out of his expectations, Jiang Chen had really dared to challenge an inner circle disciple.

But, Guo Lei felt relief at the same time. Since Jiang Chen thought so greatly of himself, this would be Guo Lei's chance. When Cai Dong comes here, he would be saved and protected. However, things weren't as simple as he thought, Jiang Chen had yet to finish with him. What happened next would just make him feel regret.

“So now, even Cai Dong from the inner circle is going to be dragged into this mess.”

“Jiang Chen is going to settle the score with an inner circle disciple, this is so amazing!”

“Don't jump to conclusions, this matter is far from finished! I heard Wang Yun and Huang Zhen were seriously wounded!”

Chapter 125 – Hanged Up And Beaten

The conflict had actually dragged in an inner circle disciple, this surprised many people. However, what was even more surprising was Jiang Chen's reaction. Because, after hearing about Cai Dong, not only did he not show any signs of wanting the conflict to end, he actually wanted to settle the score with Cai Dong.

A Mortal Core outer circle disciple dared to act against a Heavenly Core inner circle disciple, this was the first time. And, amongst all the outer circle disciples, only Jiang Chen dared to do this.

“Senior disciple Jiang, we were told to do this, and we know we have made a big mistake! Please forgive us!”

Guo Lei tried asking for forgiveness. In his mind, he wished that Jiang Chen could be killed now. However, he was being held for ransom right now, therefore, he could only beg for forgiveness.

“A big mistake? With this, you are asking for forgiveness? What about Wang Yun and Huang Zhen who were badly wounded by you and are now laying on beds? I will ask Cai Dong to pay back the Mortal Restoration Pills, and as for you lot, I'll let you pay back for what you've done to Wang Yun and Huang Zheng now.”

Jiang Chen said in a stiff manner, “But, before we do this, hand over every single Mortal Restoration Pill you have now, they will serve as compensation.”

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, Guo Lei and the other three men who had just seen some hope immediately had their faces darken. It looked like Jiang Chen was not going to let this matter end easily. The four of them felt chills ran down their spines when they recalled how Wang Yun and Huang Zheng were wounded.

“Hurry, senior disciple Jiang is asking you to take out all your Mortal Restoration Pills, are you guys deaf?!”

A disciple shouted at them.

“That’s right, take out everything you got! Those Mortal Restoration Pills belong to us, take out everything you took from us!”

Those disciples who were bullied by Guo Lei had now found their backup, it was time for their revenge. They would not miss any opportunity to hit them back.

“Fine, we’ll take them out now, we’ll take them out now!”

These three disciples were completely scared, their lives were at risk now. Mortal Restoration Pills were not going to keep them safe. They reached for their storage bags and hurriedly took out all Mortal Restoration Pills.

“And you, Guo Lei, hand me everything you got. If you dare keep even a single pill with you, I’ll ask Big Yellow to give you some nice treatment!”

Jiang Chen said with a sneer. His words caused Guo Lei to tremble. Without any hesitation, he hurriedly took out all of his belongings.

“Senior disciple Jiang, here are 9,000 Mortal Restoration Pills.”

A disciple counted all the Mortal Restoration Pills and told Jiang Chen.

“Damn it, 9,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, this Guo Lei is filthy rich!”

Some of the outer circle disciple who were standing aside couldn't help but curse. Mortal Restoration Pills were their life, they all consumed a lot of them during cultivation, and therefore, most of them did not have a huge stockpile. However, these four guys had a total of 9,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, and Guo Lei himself contributed 5,000. It looked like all their wealth came from bullying other outer circle disciples.

“Share it with all our brothers.”

Jiang Chen said calmly, this amount of Mortal Restoration Pills meant nothing to him.

“Senior disciple Jiang, we have given all our Mortal Restoration Pills to you, please let us go!”

A disciple begged.

“Let you go? We’re just about to settle the score for Wang Yun and Huang Zheng. All four of you did beat them up, right?”

An insidious smile appeared on Jiang Chen’s face.

All four of them kept silent, they couldn’t deny that since there were so many disciple on the spot. That day, it was Guo Lei who had beaten Wang Yun, while the other three had assaulted Huang Zheng.

“So, I assume you admit to that. Today, let me teach you a lesson! I, and your father’s men, are not someone you can touch! Those who dares do so will have to pay back double!”

After speaking, Jiang Chen struck out forcefully with his leg.

Crack!

The leg landed right onto Guo Lei’s face. Jiang Chen barely held back, so the powerful kick sent Guo Lei flying more than ten meters. With a face full of blood and a broken nose, he screamed out in pain.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen moved again and came in front of Guo Lei. He bent

down and grabbed Guo Lei's shoulder, then he pulled him up like a chicken. The way Wang Yun and Huang Zheng had been wounded had pissed him off, he wanted to personally bring them justice.

“No, don't!”

Guo Lei was extremely scared. He was waiting for Cai Dong to come here and rescue him, he hadn't expected Jiang Chen to not even give him that chance, and started beating him up immediately.

Crack! Ahh.....

Guo Lei screamed even louder as Jiang Chen twisted one of his arms with a huge amount of force, breaking it and making it hang behind his back.

Ignoring all fearful eyes around, Jiang Chen grabbed another one of Guo Lei's arms and broke it. In just the blink of an eye, Jiang Chen had crippled the man. A ferocious and cruel approach.

“Heavens, this is brutal! This approach, it sends chills down my spine!”

“Compared to senior disciple Han, I think he is more deserving of the Little Devil King name! Guo Lei has offended someone he absolutely shouldn't have!”

“He is gone this time.”

.....

Everyone were immersed in deep shock, and their faces were filled with fear. Guo Lei with both arms broken and with blood dripping all over his face was absolutely terrifying to look at.

“Guys!”

Jiang Chen shouted toward the crowds.

“Yes!”

Three outer circle disciples respectfully stepped forward.

“Go get me a wooden pole, hang them up and beat them.”

Jiang Chen kicked Guo Lei once again, making him fall down onto the ground, then he stepped on his face in an extremely tyrannical manner. Jiang Chen never showed any mercy when dealing with his enemies, some mistakes required you to pay back seriously. Guo Lei had been acting together with those guys from the inner circle who wanted to kill him, and in Jiang Chen’s mind, he had already sentenced Guo Lei to death. If it wasn’t for the fact that they were currently in the Black Sect, Guo Lei would have been dead long ago.

“Understood.”

The three disciples turned around and left. Jiang Chen's wish was their order.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen turned his vision onto the other three guys. These three fellows immediately gasped and started kowtowing. They were scared to death, as they had never met anyone so ferocious and brutal.

“Senior disciple Jiang, please spare our lives, spare us!”

The trio kept asking for forgiveness, all of their arrogance was completely gone.

“Senior disciple Jiang, don't let them go, they are just three bastards! Not only did they bully us, they even seriously beat up senior disciple Huang!”

Someone shouted out in anger. Everyone wished to tear apart this trio when recalling their arrogant faces two days ago.

“Everyone, beat them until they die, I'll bear the responsibility!”

Jiang Chen was a fierce man. There was nothing in this world he was scared of, there was no one he didn't dare to kill. These few disciples were just like ants to him, and when they offended him,

there was no way he would forgive them.

“Beat them!”

“Let’s get revenge for Huang Zheng, beat them until they die!”

After receiving orders from Jiang Chen, dozens of disciples poured in and started beating the trio.

Bam bam bam.....

Ahh ahhh ahhhh.....

“Fuck, kill them!”

“Damn it, trying to be bossy and bully us, let’s kill them!”

“Senior disciple Jiang said he will bear the responsibility if they die!”

.....

The courtyard was burning on one side, and here was a messy one-sided fight. For Guo Lei and the other three disciples, today was the darkest day of their lives.

Miserable, this was really miserable.

Those outer circle disciples who were watching from the sidelines were all frightened. Finally, they had witnessed Jiang Chen's aggressiveness. Although they were scared, no one really felt sorry for these guys, some of them even felt satisfaction in their minds.

Not long after, the trio had been seriously beaten. Their faces were already swollen and wounded, and they were bleeding all over. They kept struggling and crying on the floor, but these injuries were nothing for a Mortal Core warrior.

Right at this moment, the three disciples who had left earlier came back. One of them carried a 7 meter tall wooden pole, another one carried a pike in his hand, and the last disciple carried some ropes in his hand. Then, they placed the wooden pole so that it stood straight up from the ground.

“Senior disciple Jiang, the wooden pole is here.”

The disciple said with a satisfied expression.

“Hang them up and beat them, don't stop until they are dead.”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. The ‘don't stop until they are dead’ part had completely scared Guo Lei and the others. Now, they felt extreme regret over what they had done. They knew that Jiang Chen was not a guy they could easily mess with, but they had never expected he would be so brutal. It looked like he really wanted to beat them until death took them away.

The other disciples didn't care so much. They had now become totally submissive to Jiang Chen. Whatever Jiang Chen asked, they would do. They tied up the four guys together and hung them high up on the wooden pole, as if they were some dead pigs. All four of them were bleeding all over, and they looked miserable.

“Give me that.”

Jiang Chen grabbed the long pike, then he started beating them like they were dead meat. It was a horrifying scene to watch.

“Beat them, and don't stop until they are dead.”

A few disciples took out some long pikes and started beating Guo Lei and the other three. As long as Jiang Chen was there, they would never fear things going out of control.

“Stop there!”

Right at this moment, an angry shout came from afar, and then, everyone saw an old man in his fifties flying over and landing in the square. When the old man saw the four men hanging from the wooden pole, and the burnt down courtyards, he immediately became extremely furious.

“It is Sect Elder Lee! Damn, this really went out of control; even Sect Elder Lee came.”

“Sect Elder Lee is an outer circle Sect Elder, but those elders rarely care about the conflicts amongst disciples, so why is he here today?”

Many disciples recognized the old man, as one of the Sect Elders in charge of the outer circle, he was known by everyone.

“Bastards, what are you all doing? Hurting and killing your own fellow disciples? Who set fire to the courtyard? Stand out right now!”

Sect Elder Lee scolded with a loud voice. When Guo Lei and the other three disciples saw him, they couldn't help but cry tears of joy. Finally, their savior was here, now they could escape from this hell. No matter how aggressive Jiang Chen was, he would not offend a Sect Elder.

“Senior disciple Jiang, his name is Li Hui, Sect Elder of the outer circle. He is a person of high status, we can't afford to offend him.”

A disciple walked up to Jiang Chen and whispered to him.

“So, an outer circle Sect Elder.”

Jiang Chen went blank for a second, then he said, “Don't stop, keep beating them.”

Jiang Chen's words almost made the people start fainting. How far could this guy really go? This was the Sect Elder, and he still

asked them to keep beating, even underneath the presence of a Sect Elder. He simply wouldn't give a damn about anyone, he was so brutal.

“You, so you are that Jiang Chen. Now, Sect Elder ordered you to immediately stop, explain what's going on here to me.”

Li Hui was boiling in anger. He had never seen such an arrogant disciple in the outer circle, not until today.

Chapter 126 – Hanging Up The Sect Elder

Everyone kept quiet as they saw how furious Li Hui was. Those disciples who followed Jiang Chen had stopped the beating as well. They all stared blankly at Jiang Chen and Li Hui. They had no idea what to do right now, after all, Li Hui was a Sect Elder, and he was also a Heavenly Core warrior, none of them could be his match. Besides, as a Sect Elder, he had a high position in the sect, these disciples couldn't offend him.

Many disciples who were just bystanders kept quiet and held their breaths. The conflict had now become even worse, even the Sect Elder was here. They were guessing that Jiang Chen would just calm down the conflict.

But, too bad, they simply didn't understand how far Jiang Chen could go.

“Keep beating.”

Jiang Chen gazed at the furious Li Hui, then he spoke with an indifferent tone. He showed no respect towards Li Hui.

“Nonsense! Who dares to start beating again?!”

Li Hui was boiling in anger. He took a step forwards, and was now standing directly in front of Jiang Chen. With his beard fluttering in the wind, he said, “Jiang Chen, how dare you, don't forget who you are! You are just an outer circle disciple! By disobeying the Sect Elder alone, I can cripple you right now!”

“Cripple me, hit me with your best shot!”

Jiang Chen sneered, there was no way he would stop what he was doing right now, even if that meant he had to turn the Black Sect upside down. He still wanted to find out who was behind all of this.

“You really think I won’t dare do it?”

Li Hui became even angrier, and Yuan energy could be seen hovering around his body, “Let me tell you this, Jiang Chen, you bullied and assaulted fellow disciples, burnt down a courtyard, and you offended an outer circle Sect Elder! Any of these offenses are more than enough to cripple you, I can even kill you right now!”

“Senior disciple Jiang, I think we should just stop here, after all, we have had our revenge.”

A disciple next to Jiang Chen whispered to him.

Jiang Chen gazed at this disciple, with just a single look, a chill ran down this disciple’s spine. The disciple shrugged and shut his mouth.

Jiang Chen raised his head and stared back into Li Hui’s eyes. It made him even angrier when Li Hui said that he had bullied fellow disciples.

“Sect Elder Li, since you mentioned me bullying fellow disciples, let me explain this to you. These four men forced each of their fellow disciples to pay them 100 Mortal Restoration Pills, is this considered bullying fellow disciples? And, these four men beat up and inflicted serious injuries to Wang Yun and Huang Zheng because they refused to hand over their Mortal Restoration Pills, and both of them are still laying in their beds. Can you give me an explanation to that?”

With an imposing manner, Jiang Chen unleashed the domineering aura of the once greatest Saint in the world. He pressed towards Li Hui and said, “Li Hui, where were you when Guo Lei and his gang bullied their fellow disciples? You, as the outer circle Sect Elder, why were you not stopping them from doing that? I, Jiang Chen, am a reasonable man, an eye for an eye is my motto. Guo Lei and his gang asked for all of this, I was just doing to them what they have done to my fellow disciples. However, you, Sect Elder Li, jumped out at this time to stop me. Who gave you the right to do this? Or, is it perhaps because you’ve accepted Mortal Restoration Pills from Guo Lei as a bribe?”

Jiang Chen’s words were like sharp knives, they tore away everything, leaving Li Hui dumbstruck and unable to reply.

“You! Nonsense! As the Sect Elder, I always treat everyone fairly, how could I accept bribes from anyone?!”

Li Hui seemed extremely furious, but at the same time, he looked a bit guilty. Anyone could tell that he might have really accepted some sort of bribe. If not, he wouldn’t have behaved like this.

In fact, since Li Hui was here, Jiang Chen had guessed that he must be part of this. Guo Lei might not be the one who bribed him, but someone from the inner circle could easily bribe an outer circle Sect Elder.

“Looks like you really accepted something from them. Someone like you will never be fit to be a Sect Elder, and you don’t have the right to stop us. I’ll settle my own score with them. Li Hui, get the hell out of here before I get mad.”

Jiang Chen shouted in a cold manner, then he turned around and told the men behind him, “Keep beating them.”

With that command, everyone’s expressions changed. No one expected Jiang Chen would go so far. After all, Li Hui was an outer circle Sect Elder. But, not only did Jiang Chen failed to show any respect towards him, he even asked him to get the hell out of here. This was so overbearing, in the few hundred years of history in the Black Sect, there hadn’t been a single outer circle disciple who was so domineering.

“Understood!”

Those disciples who held long pikes in their hands didn’t care too much anymore, they just did what Jiang Chen asked. They raised the long pikes high into the air and started beating those four men once again. If anything bad really happened, then they had Jiang Chen standing in front of them.

Ahhh.....

The four of them started screaming again. Guo Lei and his gang were completely stunned, the pain from their injuries had completely broken their spirits. They thought that when Sect Elder Li arrived, they would be safe, but they had never expected that they would still go through this terrifying torture.

“Good, good, this is good! Outrageous, Jiang Chen, don’t think that you can do whatever you want since you got first place in the Qi Province competition! You’re so unruly, and you never showed any respect towards me, the Sect Elder, and you have also violated the rules of the Black Sect! Let me, the outer circle Sect Elder, cripple you today!”

Li Hui was completely pissed off. With his Yuan energy floating around him, he clenched his fist and grabbed towards Jiang Chen with lightning like speed. Everyone knew how powerful an attack from a Heavenly Core warrior could be. Those bystanders felt nervous; no one had thought things would escalate like this.

“Hmph! Try to cripple me? Let me show you the difference between you and me!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort, then he extended his hand like lightning and grabbed Li Hui’s arm. With this grip, Li Hui’s Yuan energy was immediately dispersed.

It was a shocking scene. Everyone’s eyes widened, and their faces were filled with disbelief.

All they saw was Li Hui's arm being tightly gripped by Jiang Chen. No matter how Li Hui tried to shake him off, or how much energy he unleashed, there was nothing he could do to make Jiang Chen let go.

“What?”

Li Hui suddenly felt scared. He was an Early Heavenly Core warrior, but with just one strike, Jiang Chen had completely locked him down, making it so that he couldn't even strike back. This was too frightening. Although he knew that Jiang Chen had previously killed Li Wu Ling; Li Wu Ling had just entered the Heavenly Core realm, and his foundation was unstable, so there was no way the two of them could be compared. Besides, it wasn't easy for Jiang Chen to kill Li Wu Ling, so the only explanation was that Jiang Chen had become stronger than before.

“Old fool, you shouldn't have provoked me. All of those who provoke me have miserable endings.”

With a huge amount of force, Jiang Chen broke Li Hui's arm. When Li Hui felt the severe pain coming from his arm, he couldn't hold still anymore, and he screamed out in extreme pain.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you, I am the outer circle sect....”

Li Hui spoke sternly, but before he could finish his words, Jiang Chen had kicked him, making him fall down onto the ground. A Heavenly Core warrior couldn't even defend against a single attack from Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen stepped on Li Hui's face, and while towering above him, he said, "Outer circle Sect Elder means nothing to me. If you want to interfere, then make it fair. If not, then just get the hell out of here. When you provoked me, your luck became bad."

At this moment, everyone's expressions changed. They all stared at Jiang Chen, their eyes filled with fear.

"Heavens, he is really going to revolt, he just beat a Sect Elder!"

"He has become stronger, Sect Elder Li who is a Heavenly Core warrior couldn't even withstand a single attack from him! The Qi Province competition ended not long ago... With his speed of leveling up; can he still be considered a human?"

"After assaulting the outer circle Sect Elder, the conflict had gone completely out of control. I don't think this will end easily."

Everyone were shocked, the fierceness Jiang Chen displayed had left a shadow in their minds once again. They all reminded themselves; even if they couldn't become friends with him, they would never become his enemy. This was too frightening.

"Jiang Chen, how dare you step on my face?! I'll report this to the higher management! To go against your superiors and scold the Sect Elder, this is the greatest sin that can't be forgiven! You will just have to wait to receive punishment from the sect management!"

Li Hui kept struggling underneath Jiang Chen's feet. At the same time, he kept threatening him about the serious consequences he would face. However, no matter how hard he struggled, he just couldn't get away from Jiang Chen's feet.

“Someone!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly.

“Senior disciple Jiang.”

A disciple walked up to Jiang Chen.

“You, help me get one more wooden pole here. Hang this Li Hui up and beat him.”

An upward curve appeared on Jiang Chen's lip, a sneer.

What? Hang up the Sect Elder and beat him? Are you sure?

Many people were struck by Jiang Chen's words, and their mouth were widely opened. Even the disciple who stood next to Jiang Chen had the same expression, he was completely stunned. Hang a Sect Elder and beat him? This had gone too far.

“Jiang Chen, how dare.....”

Li Hui roared, and his face darkened. As an outer circle Sect Elder, and a Heavenly Core warrior, if he was hung up and beaten in front of so many people, there would be no way for him to continue staying in the Black Sect anymore.

“What are you waiting for?”

Jiang Chen shouted loudly.

“Understood!”

The disciple didn't dare show any neglect, he hurriedly turned around and left. After some time, the disciple came back with a big wooden pole and stuck it into the ground. There was even some rope in his hand, and it looked like he was well prepared.

“Jiang Chen, you can't tie me up, I'm the outer circle Sect Elder!”

Li Hui shouted and tried to stop them, but it was to no avail. Jiang Chen grabbed his shirt and dragged him up front the ground, then he pointed his finger at Li Hui's body and made a few restrictions, temporarily sealing Li Hui's Qi Sea. As the previously greatest Saint, pill concoction, sealing, defense mechanisms, laying formations... There was nothing he hadn't mastered. With his current cultivation base and abilities, temporarily sealing the Qi Sea of a Heavenly Core warrior was incredibly easy.

Li Hui was after all a Heavenly Core warrior, and his injuries

weren't serious. If his Qi Sea wasn't sealed, then the rope wouldn't be able to hold him at all. Jiang Chen wanted to hang Li Hui no matter what, and he wanted to make this matter become more complicated. The more serious, the better. He wanted to get the man behind everything to come out. As for the consequences, Jiang Chen didn't bother thinking about those. The more he showed off, the more attention he would get from the sect management.

No disciple dared to tie an outer circle Sect Elder up, and not all these disciples had Jiang Chen's courage.

Therefore, Jiang Chen didn't ask them to do it, he personally tied up Li Hui with the rope like a dumpling, then hung him up on the wooden pole

"Ahh..... Jiang Chen, you bastard, how dare you tie me up?! You have gone against your superior, the sect management for sure won't let you get away with this!"

Li Hui kept shouting and struggling, but his Qi Sea was sealed shut by Jiang Chen, so all his struggles were just a waste of effort.

Chapter 127 – Tied Up One After Another, Hang Them All!

Outer circle Sect Elder Li Hui was hung up, and this had never happened before in the history of the Black Sect. Everyone's eyes were opened wide as they looked at the screaming Li Hui.

Who was the most daring person in the world? Jiang Chen was the first one who came to their minds.

“Jiang Chen, let go of me, you're courting death.....”

Li Hui kept roaring angrily.

Bam!

However, before he could finish his words, Jiang Chen had smashed the pike in his hand into his face. The pike directly hit Li Hui's mouth, and with its powerful force, it knocked three teeth out. Li Hui's mouth was filled with blood, and he was unable to talk anymore.

“What a bullshit Sect Elder, how dare you show off in front of your father, and order your father?!”

Jiang Chen was not someone who could be easily messed with, and he was also a man like a dog with a bone. Jiang Chen kept hitting Li Hui with the pike, making it so that he could only

mumble in pain. In just a short period of time, Li Hui had become swollen like a fat man.

“What are you looking at? Keep beating them, beat them to death!”

Jiang Chen shouted at those disciples who were carrying long pikes in their hands. Then, these men immediately felt a rise in their spirits. They raised the pikes in their hands high up into the air, then they began beating Guo Lei and his gang. To them, this was the first time they had ever participated in such an exciting incident.

Bam bam bam.....

Ahh ahhh ahhhh.....

The square was filled with the sound of beating and screaming. The bystanders were all frightened, but at the same time, they felt their blood boiling. Guo Lei and his gang were indeed unlucky, but Li Hui had it even worse. What happened today would surely be recorded in the Black Sect's history.

This was defiance of everything. In the future, Jiang Chen's name would be synonymous to demonic.

A fierce, brutal man. Never in their lives had they seen someone who could be so fierce and brutal.

“Senior disciple Jiang, if we keep beating them like this, they might die soon.”

One of the disciples said, he seemed scared. The conflict had gone too far now, too far from what they could imagine.

“Scared of what? Keep beating, beat till they are dead!”

Jiang Chen didn't turn his head around, he just kept beating Li Hui with the pike in his hand. Li Hui and Guo Lei were strong warriors, they had strong physiques as well as protection from their Yuan energy. The way they were beaten wasn't enough to actually kill them, it would at most cause them some internal injuries. However, Jiang Chen needed to show his power today, so that those disciples from the inner circle would appear.

“Stop it now!”

Right at this moment, a loud shout came from above. Everyone raised their heads up, then they saw two young men dressed in white coming from the direction of the inner circle. Soon after, these two men landed in the square outside of the outer circle's residence area. Their expressions changed immediately when they saw who had been beaten, they recognized Guo Lei and Li Hui.

“Jiang Chen, what are you doing here?! How dare you assault the Sect Elder?!”

A young man with a huge body shouted out loudly. An angry

expression appeared on his face.

“They are Cai Dong and Wang Heng, the inner circle disciples are finally here! I wonder how this is all going to end today.”

“I’m sure they won’t let this matter get solved easily today. I just wonder if Jiang Chen has the courage to fight the inner circle disciples.”

“I’m sure he does! He even has the guts to beat a Sect Elder! I can’t think about anything he wouldn’t dare to do.”

.....

The arrival of these two men had caused some turmoil. Jiang Chen also stopped the beating. He turned around and looked at the both of them. When he noticed that both of these men were only Early Heavenly Core warriors, he silently let out a cold snort, “The culprit is still not here... Looks like I’ll need to continue the disturbance.”

The man Jiang Chen was looking for was definitely not one of these two men in front of him. The one he wanted to find was the man who had hunted him down in the Myriad Demon Mountain. Guo Lei was told by Cai Dong that Jiang Chen had been killed in the mountain, therefore, Cai Dong must be in touch with the man who hunted him down. This matter wasn’t that simple, there must be someone else behind everything, Jiang Chen had to continue the disturbance.

“This is an outer circle matter, we don’t need you from the inner circle. Do your father a favor and get the hell out of here.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand impatiently.

Both men’s expressions changed, they felt offended. They had met some arrogant guys before, but not to this extent.

“Bastard! Jiang Chen, who do you think you are, how dare you talk to us like that?”

Wang Heng shouted.

“Weren’t you killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain? How come you’re still alive and safe?”

Cai Doing stared at Jiang Chen with a hint of curiosity. The news about Jiang Chen’s death had been told by his senior disciple, and it shouldn’t have been wrong. But now, he could see Jiang Chen was alive and standing in front of him. The only explanation for this was that his senior disciple had failed to kill Jiang Chen.

“How did you know I was killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain?”

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes and stared at Cai Dong with his razor sharp vision.

“Hmph! I don’t need to tell you how I got the news. Now, let me ask you, what is all this about? Beating fellow disciples, the outer circle Sect Elder, and burning the courtyard... Are you trying to revolt here?”

Cai Dong let out a cold snort.

“Which one of you is Cai Dong?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“I am.”

Cai Dong replied. He and Wang Heng both portrayed an arrogant and aggressive image. They weren’t scared of Jiang Chen. They were both Heavenly Core warriors, and they were both geniuses. A genius couldn’t be compared with someone ordinary... at least, Li Hui couldn’t. Besides, as inner circle disciples, their status in the Black Sect were much higher and precious than that of these outer circle disciples. Therefore, although Jiang Chen got first place in the Qi Province competition, they didn’t really take him seriously. After all, this place was the Black Sect.

“So you are that Cai Dong, perfect! I was looking for you. Let’s settle our debt now. Eighty thousand Mortal Restoration Pills. Just now, Guo Lei and his men gave us nine thousand, so you owe us seventy-one thousand. Hand them all over now.”

Jiang Chen said in an aggressive manner.

What?

Cai Dong and Wang Heng were completely startled. Some outer circle disciples had gone to them not long ago and told them about Guo Lei being beaten by Jiang Chen, and how he was looking for Cai Dong. However, they never mentioned anything about Mortal Restoration Pills, much less this huge amount.

Seventy thousand Mortal Restoration Pills, even for an inner circle disciple, this was considered a huge amount of wealth. An ordinary disciple wouldn't even have that much at all.

And what really made Cai Dong and Wang Heng speechless was that Jiang Chen had really dared to ask them for Mortal Restoration Pills, and he even asked them for such a huge amount. This guy must be crazy about money.

“Jiang Chen, you are courting death by speaking those words! Before I become mad, hurry up and let Sect Elder Li and Guo Lei go!”

Cai Dong was starting to act aggressively.

Just as he finished his words, he received a slap. The slap contained so much force that it made Cai Dong trip on his feet and almost fall down.

“Damn you, try letting your father see you become mad!”

Jiang Chen slapped again. Although the way he slapped looked simple, it was an extremely fast slap. Even Cai Dong didn't have the time to react.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you slap me?!”

Cai Dong became really angry. He was an inner circle disciple, and that brought an honorable status, a status that should be respected by all outer circle disciples. In any normal day, these outer circle disciples would immediately show their respect when they saw him, but this Jiang Chen had just slapped his face in front of so many people. This was ridiculous!

“Hurry up, give me those Mortal Restoration Pills.”

Jiang Chen kept pushing him.

“Let's do it, kill him!”

Cai Dong was extremely furious, and Wang Heng finally reacted. Both of them shouted out loudly at the same time and unleashed their Yuan energies. The Yuan energy, together with the aura of two Heavenly Core warriors formed layers upon layers of energy waves that frightened everyone at the scene.

Bam! Bam!

However, before either of them could attack, Jiang Chen had moved. Nobody saw how Jiang Chen did it, and all they could see was Cai Dong and Wang Heng laying on the ground.

What?! This scene shocked everyone once again. This was amazing, the spectators couldn't believe this was real.

“Heavens, Cai Dong and Wang Heng were defeated by Jiang Chen with just a single strike! I couldn't even see how Jiang Chen did it, how could he be so fast?!”

“This is so frightening! I'm sure Jiang Chen has broken through to the Late Mortal Core realm, but even if he did reach that level, how is it possible for him to be so strong? These Heavenly Core warriors are simply not his match!”

“Abnormal! This is a monster! Jiang Chen's potential is not any weaker than Nan Bei Chao's, no wonder he had the courage to challenge Nan Bei Chao to a fight one year from now!”

.....

Everyone was shocked by what they had just witnessed. This was rare, an outer circle disciple beating a Sect Elder and some inner circle disciples. Let alone the Black Sect, even in the entire history of the Qi Province, this was the first time it had happened.

Now, not only had Jiang Chen broken through to the Late Mortal Core realm, he had even formed 80 Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea.

Combined, both of them gave him an incredible combat strength. Early Heavenly Core warriors was nothing much in front of him, he could kill them with a single strike without even wasting too much of his energy.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort, then he reached his hand out towards Cai Dong and Wang Heng. He grabbed two yellow storage bags, and then he threw them to a disciple behind him.

“Open it up and count how many Mortal Restoration Pills are in there. If it still isn’t enough, we’ll take their combat weapons as compensation.”

Jiang Chen said. As inner circle disciples, these two men must be rich so they might even have some precious herbs or items, and combat weapons. Now, everything had become compensation for what they had done.

“Jiang Chen, return our storage bags!”

Cai Dong was furious, that storage bag contained all the wealth he had gathered, it would make his heart start bleeding if they just took it all.

Ignoring Cai Dong’s anger, Jiang Chen pulled him closer. With a fierce voice, he asked, “Tell me, who told you that I have been killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain?”

Jiang Chen's eyes were like those of a demon from hell. With a single look, he had sent shivers down Cai Dong's spine. At this moment, Cai Dong had a feeling that he was not facing a human, but a demon that came from hell. Together with the aura of someone from the top that Jiang Chen was unconsciously emitting, and the effect of the Great Soul Derivation skill, Cai Dong simply couldn't avoid the question.

"It was... It was senior disciple Jiang Wei who told me about this! He was also the one who asked me to do something to those disciples who followed you!"

Cai Dong never hid anything, he had the same mentality as Guo Lei; pointing the blame to Jiang Wei. Jiang Wei was a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, and with his mighty strength, Jiang Chen would have to admit defeat if he was here.

"Jiang Wei? This is getting more interesting."

Jiang Chen sneered. He had no idea if this Jiang Wei was the man who hunted him down back in the mountain, but he had a feeling that there was someone else behind this Jiang Wei.

It looked like in order to lure the real culprit out, he needed to make this conflict reach greater heights today.

"Men, go grab some more wooden pillars, hang Cai Dong and Wang Heng up and beat them until they die!"

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly.

Chapter 128 – Make It Big, Wreak Havoc!

By the heavens! Hanging them up and beating them, again!

Many people had already become numb because of what was happening. They had completely witnessed how far a domineering person could go. Now, even if Jiang Chen said he would hang up the Sect Chief, these people would believe in him. They couldn't think about anything in this world that Jiang Chen didn't have the courage to do.

“Kaka, this guy is so domineering, I like it.”

Big Yellow had a grin on his face and he was jumping up and down excitedly. Jiang Chen was so cruel and brutal. He was also extremely domineering while cautious at the same time, and he was courageous and tactical. A man like this would have great achievements and limitless potential.

Not long after, two outer circle disciples brought two more wooden pillars. These pillars were supposed to be used as support for the drums during sect assessments, but now they were being used by Jiang Chen to hang up people.

Without saying too much, Jiang Chen immediately sealed Cai Dong and Wang Heng's Qi Sea, then he tied them up to the wooden pillars. Now, including Cai Dong and Wang Heng, there was a total of seven men hanging from the pillars. Each one of them was in a miserable state.

“Lift up these pillars and move them to the training grounds.”

Jiang Chen shouted to the disciples behind him, then he led the way to the training grounds.

Everyone’s expressions changed once again. Those disciples who had been following Jiang Chen looked at each other, they were wondering what Jiang Chen was about to do. The matters had reached a point where it was very difficult to end. Guo Lei was beaten, and they had gotten their Mortal Restoration Pills back. Even inner circle disciples Cai Dong and Wang Heng were hung up, their score could be considered settled, and now would be the right time to end it all. However, Jiang Chen didn’t seem to have any intentions of ending this, and he even wanted to hang these men up at the training grounds.

The training grounds was located in the center of the outer circle. By doing this, what happened would be known by everyone in the sect.

“What does he actually want to do? Isn’t this enough?”

“Does he really want to wreak havoc in the Black Sect? This has gone too far, I’m afraid the high class Sect Elders will know about this. But Jiang Chen seemed to show no intention of stopping, and he even wants to make things worse... I’m starting to wonder if he has gone nuts.”

“I don’t think Jiang Chen has gone nuts, it’s as if he’s trying to accomplish something by doing this. During the past two days,

rumors about him being killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain has been spreading, and the rumors came from the inner circle. I think Jiang Chen wants to continue in order to get the man behind everything to come out.”

Many people were discussing the event, but no one really knew what Jiang Chen was up to. However, everyone knew that Jiang Chen was going to wreak havoc today. Once these wooden pillars were moved to the training grounds, all outer circle Sect Elders would arrive, and there might even be some inner circle disciples who would come by to try and stop it as well. But, how the matters today would end, no one dared to guess.

“What should we do?”

Someone asked.

“What do you mean? Just listen to what senior disciple Jiang said, move these pillars to the training grounds.”

Some of the men carried the pillars and followed behind Jiang Chen. They walked with big steps towards the training grounds.

The outer circle was in a chaotic state. Not long before this, all the outer circle disciples had gathered at the training grounds. Those few meter tall pillars were reflecting the bright sunlight, and they looked very appealing. But, what was even more appealing was the men who had swollen faces and were crying miserably.

There were simply too many people gathered here. The crowds had surrounded the entire training ground, even some novice disciples were here. When these people saw the hanged up men and heard about what happened, each and every single one of them were shocked.

The crowds were getting bigger and bigger, and the disturbance was getting messier and messier. Jiang Chen simply didn't want to let this matter come to an easy end today.

The news spread really fast, and soon, the disciples in the inner circle heard about it. Some of them came to the training grounds to see what was happening. Most of them never had any problems with Jiang Chen, therefore, they didn't try stopping him.

“This is ridiculous, how dare a tiny little outer circle disciple do this to inner circle disciples? He even hung them up, this is ridiculous!”

One of the inner disciples who thought he was someone great said, “Jiang Chen, let the inner circle disciples go, who do you think you are?! How could you do this to inner circle disciples?!”

The disciple flew down to the training ground and spoke in an imposing manner.

There was a saying that the shot hits the bird that pokes its head out, and you would live long if you stayed low. There were so many people here, and they kept quiet. Just one person alone tried to be a hero, he was simply looking for trouble.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. With lightning speed, he attacked and hit the man's head. The inner circle disciples let out a deep groan and fainted immediately. Then, Jiang Chen grabbed another rope, tied him up and hung him on the pillar.

Hung another one.

The crowds became speechless. Looking at how Jiang Chen behaved, he was going to tie one after another, and hang them all up.

“Presumptuous!”

Right at this moment, another loud shout was heard. Three old men wearing the same uniform landed from above, and all of them looked extremely angry. They had been in charge of the outer circle for a long time, but they had never seen so chaotic happen before.

“All four outer circle Sect Elders! One of them are tied up, and here are the remaining three!”

“The matter is getting serious; do you think Jiang Chen will tie up these three Sect Elders as well?”

“No way, if all four outer circle Sect Elders are tied up, it will be the end of the world!”

“I think there is nothing Jiang Chen doesn’t dare to do.”

.....

The appearance of the other three outer circle Sect Elders had created another round of turmoil; everyone was guessing whether or not Jiang Chen would dare tie them up as well.

“Jiang Chen, what are you doing? Are you trying to revolt?”

One of the Sect Elders shouted out loudly. As the outer circle Sect Elders, the only needed to step in once something incredibly serious happened.

“You three, just stand aside and watch. My advice to you is; don’t get your feet wet in my business.”

Jiang Chen didn’t show them any respect. With his experience from living two lives, he knew that if he tried to be nice to them, he would get bullied. That was why, when there was a need for aggressiveness, he would supply that need.

“Jiang Chen, do you think you are the chief of the outer circle? We are the outer circle Sect Elders, how dare you not show any respect? We can report this to the Sect Chief and ask him to punish you!”

One of the Sect Elders was pissed off.

“Jiang Chen, hurry up and let these men go! Haven’t you had enough for one day?!”

Another Sect Elder shouted.

“Save your breath, let Jiang Wei from inner circle come here and see me.”

Jiang Chen had adopted a strong attitude; he would never give anyone face.

Inner circle!

“What’s wrong? I thought you told me you had killed him? Why is he still alive and here?”

In a courtyard, Fan Kun with an angry face was scolding Jiang Wei who stood in front of him.

“I’m sure I sent the Silent Poisonous Needle into his body, there’s no way he would survive!”

Jiang Wei felt wronged too, because he had clearly seen it that day. With his Mid Heavenly Core cultivation base, there was no way he could be wrong. He had witnessed the needle penetrating

Jiang Chen's body, and the scene where Jiang Chen was laying on Big Yellow's back. However, not only had Jiang Chen come back alive, he was kicking it in the outer circle right now.

“You incompetent bungler! Can't even finish off a tiny outer circle disciple, what's the point of having you?”

Fan Kun was very angry.

“Please don't get mad senior disciple Fan, I'll go to the outer circle now and have a look. The reason Jiang Chen is doing all of this is because he wants to lure me out. Let me find a way to have a death match with him, then I'll kill him in front of everyone.”

Jiang Wei said in an insidious manner.

“Remember, don't let him know that you were the one who hunted him down that day. Assassinating a fellow disciple is a crime punished by a death penalty. If you ruin big brother Nan Bei's planning, you should know the consequences!”

Fan Kun showed a cruel expression.

“Don't worry senior disciple Fan, even if I was exposed, I wouldn't tell anybody about you!”

After saying that, Jiang Wei walked out from the courtyard, and his killing intent was high.

In the outer circle training grounds.

Jiang Chen had tied up the other three Sect Elders and hung them up as well. Obviously, they hadn't backed off, and with Jiang Chen's temper; the only result would be for them to be tied up and hung on the pillar.

“Oh my dear heavens! All four outer circle Sect Elders were hung up! This is too exciting!”

“Jiang Chen sure got nerves! I am sure that today's events will soon be known by the Sect Chief!”

“This is disgraceful, but the scene is so astonishing! I don't think anyone has even seen anything like this before!”

Those who were at the training grounds felt their hearts rapidly beating. They were staring at those men who were hung up. These men were either arrogant, or they had high positions in the sect. But now, they were all hung up by Jiang Chen like dogs.

“Jiang Chen, you have acted against your superiors! The Sect Chief will punish you for sure!”

The Sect Elders that were being hung up didn't suffer any serious injuries, therefore they could still roar and threaten Jiang Chen.

“Hmph!”

Right at this moment, a cold snort sounded out from afar. A man flew from the inner circle with lightning like speed, and he soon landed on the training grounds. The man was tall and seemed ordinary, making it hard for people to recognize him if he were to stand in a crowd. But, the energy ripples that were being unleashed from his body told people that he was a powerful man.

Jiang Chen gazed at the man, then his cold eyes became even colder. It didn't matter if Jiang Chen judged him from his physique or energy ripples, this was the same man who had hunted him down that night. Although Jiang Wei had covered his real identity real good, it might have fooled others, but not Jiang Chen.

“It really is him!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort, he immediately sentenced Jiang Wei to death in his mind.

“Jiang Chen, you're just a tiny little outer circle disciple, how dare you insult the Sect Elders and the nobility of the inner circle disciples? You could die a million times for these crimes! Let these people go immediately!”

Jiang Wei stared at Jiang Chen angrily.

Jiang Chen simply ignored Jiang Wei's words, then he just asked in an indifferent tone, “It's a surprise to you that I am still alive,

right?”

“That’s right. I really want to know, why are you still alive?”

This was an answer Jiang Wei eagerly wanted to know, he couldn’t think of a reason why Jiang Chen could survive from the powerful poison on that needle. With his Mortal Core cultivation realm, there’s no way he could have survived.

“So now everyone has heard him clearly, this man spread the news about me being killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain, and that is because, when I was training there, he tried to assassinate me. However, fortunately, I am still alive.”

Jiang Chen spoke with a loud voice. Everyone could hear him clearly.

“What?! Assassinate a fellow disciple? This is a crime worthy of a million deaths!”

“Judging from what Jiang Wei said just now, it was him who spread the news about Jiang Chen’s death, and Cai Dong had helped him with this. But, how could he have known that Jiang Chen was killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain? Or perhaps, it’s just like Jiang Chen said, it was Jiang Wei who tried to assassinate him?”

“No wonder Jiang Chen was so angry and caused all these disturbances, it was all because of this! If this is true, then Jiang

Wei is the one who has violated the rules worthy of the death penalty!”

Chapter 129 – The Mighty Nine Phantom Wolves

“Jiang Chen, what nonsense are you talking about? When did I try to assassinate you?”

Jiang Wei immediately became furious. However, his expression was unnatural. Although he spoke loudly, he still couldn't cover his guilt.

Compared to Jiang Chen who was a cunning ancestor, Jiang Wei was just a newbie. It didn't matter if it was attitude or tactics, the disparity between the two of them was huge. If Jiang Wei didn't question Jiang Chen, he wouldn't have gotten himself trapped in Jiang Chen's question.

“Really? If you didn't try to assassinate me, how could you have known that I have died in the Myriad Demon Mountain?”

Jiang Chen sneered. He had now confirmed that Jiang Wei was the one who tried to kill him that day. Finally, he had lured this guy out using Cai Dong and Guo Lei. Next, he was going to kill this guy, and if possible, find out who was behind him.

Jiang Chen hated the feeling of having someone trying to harm him behind his back at all times, so Jiang Chen would do whatever he could to kill those who tried to kill him.

Jiang Wei didn't know how to answer Jiang Chen's question.

Finally, he realized Jiang Chen had trapped him with his questions. However, he wouldn't admit the fact that he was the one who tried assassinating his fellow disciple. If he did, he would be under attack from all sides, and he would receive serious punishment from the sect.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen, enough of your bullshit, you're alive and kicking in front of me, how could you say I was the one who tried to kill you? If I really wanted to kill you, would you still be alive right now? Today, you have gone against all your superiors, bullied your fellow disciples, and you even showed disrespect towards the inner circle. I'll represent the inner circle and give you a heavy punishment!”

Jiang Wei unleashed his energy, and his imposing aura and killing intent soared up.

The outer circle's training grounds was in a complete mess, and no one would have expected this to happen today. All four Sect Elders were hung up, and now even a Mid Heavenly Core inner circle disciple was going to attack and try to put Jiang Chen down. Yet, no one could have guessed what Jiang Chen's response would be.

“Haha, punish me? You're not fit to do that! Do you believe I won't hang you up as well?”

Jiang Chen was laughing out loudly. He didn't fear Jiang Wei now, he was different from that night when he was being hunted down. Back then, he was only at the Mid Mortal Core realm, and he was completely not a match for Jiang Wei. But now, with a total

of 80 Dragon Marks, not only did Jiang Chen have the ability to fight Jiang Wei, he might even be able to defeat him.

“Hang me up? I think you’re really nuts and courting death! Jiang Chen, since you are so lawless and arrogant, do you have the guts to fight me on the deathmatch stage?”

Jiang Wei said this out loudly. This was his true purpose for coming here, as long as Jiang Chen agreed to the deathmatch, Jiang Wei would have the chance to kill him in public.

“What? Are they going to have a deathmatch? This is so relentless!”

“It’s rare for a conflict between fellow disciples to be solved with a deathmatch, because once they entered the fighting stage, their lives won’t be in their own hands. Why does Jiang Wei have so much hatred towards Jiang Chen that they must resolve it with a deathmatch?”

“Jiang Wei is a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, and he is also a genius from the inner circle! He is much stronger than those Early Heavenly Core warriors... Although Jiang Chen can defeat Early Heavenly Core warriors with ease, I don’t think he’s able to defeat a Mid Heavenly Core warrior!”

.....

Many people were shocked by Jiang Wei’s decision as he

immediately asked for a deathmatch. Everyone looked at Jiang Chen, wondering what answer he would give. They all knew how terrifying a deathmatch could be, and no one could force anyone to participate in a deathmatch. Although Jiang Wei wanted to kill Jiang Chen, if Jiang Chen didn't agree to the request, there was nothing else he could do.

“Fine, I'll fight you until there's just one man standing.”

But, to everyone's surprise, Jiang Chen agreed without even taking a single second to consider it. Then, he jumped onto one of the highest fighting stages within the training ground; it was the fighting stage for deathmatches.

“Good, Jiang Chen, you are a lawless man, and you have offended your superiors! I'll kill you in the deathmatch today and help the Black Sect get rid of its slug!”

Jiang Wei said with a loud voice. Then, he flew onto the fighting stage. With a faint smile on his face, he stood opposite of Jiang Chen.

“Hmph! Although this guy is a genius, he is obviously a fool! How dare he agree to this deathmatch, he is just courting death! As long as I can kill him on this stage, I would have helped senior disciple Fan solve this problem once and for all.”

Jiang Wei thought to himself. He never took Jiang Chen seriously. He had hunted Jiang Chen down two days ago, and he knew Jiang Chen was a fast man, but his strength did not match

his speed. With only two days passing, no matter how hard he cultivated, there was no way for him to defend himself.

Therefore, in Jiang Wei's mind, Jiang Chen was already dead meat.

Standing face to face, Jiang Chen's face carried a sneer. He sent a message to Jiang Wei with his Divine Sense, "Jiang Wei, tell me who wants to kill me, then I'll allow you a quick death, a death without any torture."

"Haha, this is funny, this is the funniest joke I have ever heard! Jiang Chen, I can kill you with a single attack, and, when you are about to die, I'll tell you the truth and let you die in peace!"

Jiang Wei replied with his Divine Sense as he laughed out loud. What Jiang Chen said just now had ignited his laughter.

"If that's the case, hit me with your best shot."

With an indifferent expression, Jiang Chen stood on the fighting stage with both hands behind his back, his eyes resembled a king sitting on the top, looking down on everyone, and he emitted a golden aura around his body.

"They are going to fight each other, Jiang Chen really agreed to the deathmatch with Jiang Wei... He was too careless."

"Sigh... Jiang Wei is a Mid Heavenly Core warrior. He is amongst

the top disciples in the inner circle, and although Jiang Chen is mighty, I don't think he will be able to defeat Jiang Wei."

"Let's just wait and see, Jiang Chen has fierce and brutal approaches, and he is also a deep man. Since he has agreed to the deathmatch, I'm sure he will have a way to handle it."

.....

Everyone was discussing and staring at the fighting stage. Those disciples who followed Jiang Chen were all worried about him.

This was a fight that had taken everyone's attention. Many disciples were gathered around the stage to witness it all. An outer circle disciple and an inner circle disciple fighting in a deathmatch, this was the first time in the Black Sect's history something like this had happened. No matter what the result was, who the last man standing was, Jiang Chen had done something never before seen.

"Jiang Chen, face your death!"

Jiang Wei shouted out loudly. He waved his hand and produced a bright, shining beam. The beam stabbed towards Jiang Chen like a waterfall. This was a powerful combat skill, and although it didn't look magnificent, its power was devastating.

On the opposite side, Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He wouldn't be careless when fighting Jiang Wei face to face. He immediately

attacked with the Six Solar Fingers.

Bang.....

The Six Solar Fingers and Jiang Wei's light beam collided and produced a ground-shaking loud noise. The first collision had made both of them take a step back, it was a tie.

“What?!”

Jiang Wei was shocked. He looked at Jiang Chen with awe, he was really surprised by Jiang Chen. Two days ago, when he had hunted him down, he hadn't been as strong as he was now. In just two days, this guy had grown to this stage. This was really unbelievable.

“A draw! Heavens, is this guy a human? Is he really only a Mortal Core warrior?”

“This is terrifying, Jiang Chen can really fight Jiang Wei face to face without meeting defeat! If I hadn't witnessed this by myself, who would have believed it?”

“Haha, mighty senior disciple Jiang, kill him, kill him!”

The crowds were boiling, and the expected scene of Jiang Chen being defeated wasn't seen, instead, it was a fair fight on the stage.

At the border between the inner circle and outer circle, a man stood and watched the fight. This man was Fan Kun. When he saw the fight between Jiang Chen and Jiang Wei, his face immediately darkened.

“This guy has grown too fast, he can even fight a Mid Heavenly Core warrior with only his Late Mortal Core strength, even big brother Nan Bei can’t do this... I can’t let this guy live!”

Fan Kun thought to himself as an insidious look appeared in his eyes.

Bam bam bam.....

On the fighting stage, Jiang Wei kept unleashing his strongest and most powerful combat skill, and Jiang Chen retaliated with his Six Solar Fingers and Sonic Hawk Cry. The fight was getting more and more intense, but none of them could defeat each other. This fight was quite even.

Although it was an even fight, those who witnessed the fight were terrified. They were frightened by Jiang Chen’s aggression and strength. Guo Lei and the others who were tied up felt extremely regretful now; why had they offended this monster?

Jiang Wei became angrier and angrier with each passing moment, and his face had turned red. With his status and cultivation, it was disgraceful that he couldn’t defeat an outer circle disciple after such a long time.

On the opposite side, Jiang Chen's face darkened. After going at it for a few rounds, he knew that by continuing to fight like this, he would not be able to defeat Jiang Wei anytime soon.

“Enough playing with you.”

Jiang Chen sneered. He leapt forwards and shout out loudly, “Nine Phantom Wolves!”

Swoosh swoosh swoosh.....

Right after Jiang Chen shouted, nine identical Jiang Chen's suddenly appeared on the stage and surrounded Jiang Wei. The sudden change had sent a storm across the crowds, everyone were so shocked that their mouths were wide open. Even Fan Kun who was watching the fight from afar was shocked by what was happening. Because, with his experience, he couldn't tell which one of the nine Jiang Chen's was the real one.

“Heavens, there are nine Jiang Chen's! What kind of movement skill is this, this is awesomely rare!”

“So horrifying! This really goes against everything I knew! I can't describe this movement skill with any words!”

Everyone was shocked, but the most terrified one would be Jiang Wei. He had drawn out his combat weapon, but with nine Jiang Chens in front of him, he simply couldn't decide which one he wanted to attack.

“Jiang Wei, face your death!”

Nine Jiang Chen’s shouted at the same time.

“I’ll break this!”

Jiang Wei targeted one of the Jiang Chens, then he swung his sword forcefully towards him.

Pop!

The Jiang Chen who got hit popped and disappeared, it was just a phantom. With the attack missing, Jiang Wei immediately felt a danger from his back. He instantly turned around, then he found the real Jiang Chen had come very close to him.

Jiang Chen had waited for this moment for some time. He cried out a thunderous Sonic Hawk Cry, and with such a close distance, together with the lack of defense, Jiang Wei met everything head on. Layers upon layers of sound waves penetrated into Jiang Wei’s brain and attacked him all over.

Chapter 130 – Killing Jiang Wei

Ahhh.....

Jiang Wei screamed out in a horrifying manner as he spat out a mouthful of blood. The powerful sonic waves had not only hurt his body, they had also damaged his soul and his Divine Sense, causing him to instantly become much weaker.

Bam!

Jiang Chen didn't let Jiang Wei respond. He continued attacking by punching Jiang Wei's face. Everyone who was watching the fight could hear a loud sound of bones cracking; it was Jiang Wei's nose bridge which was broken by Jiang Chen. Jiang Wei had blood all over his face, and he looked incredibly miserable.

Plop!

Jiang Wei fell down with his face facing upwards, and he had completely lost his ability to fight. With the help of the Nine Phantom Wolves, Jiang Wei was unable to react, thus, he was defeated.

Swoosh!

With a thought in his mind, all of Jiang Chen's phantoms retracted into his real body. At the same time, Jiang Chen took a step forward and arrived in front of Jiang Wei. He stared at him

from up above with a sneer.

“How did it all happen? Jiang Wei was really defeated? He completely lost?”

“Jiang Chen’s movement skill is so terrifying! There were so many Jiang Chens, and Jiang Wei couldn’t figure out which one was the real one!”

“Damn, I wonder if Jiang Chen will kill that Jiang Wei.”

“I think Jiang Wei is in great danger this time. With Jiang Chen’s character and approach, I don’t think he can escape from death. Besides, this is a deathmatch, only the winner can stay alive, there is nothing wrong even if Jiang Chen really decided to kill him. Also, with Jiang Wei’s status and cultivation level, being defeated by an outer circle disciple is a big disgrace.”

Everyone was shocked by what they saw, who would have thought that the Mid Heavenly Core Jiang Wei would be defeated? And in such a sudden and quick manner as well. Just earlier, both of them were still fighting equally, then, in just the blink of an eye, Jiang Chen used an awesome movement skill and defeated Jiang Wei.

“Useless fool.”

Far away, Fan Kun with an insidious expression was silently scolding Jiang Wei. However, he had to admit that Jiang Chen was

really strong. If he was allowed to continue growing, even Fan Kun himself would find it difficult to defeat Jiang Chen in the future. Also, Fan Kun had confirmed that Jiang Chen's existence was a threat to Nan Bei Chao, a huge potential threat.

“Impossible, this can't be! In just two days, how could you become so strong?!”

Jiang Wei shook his head, he really couldn't accept the fact that he was defeated by Jiang Chen. Two days ago, he was still chasing him like a mad dog in the Myriad Demon Mountain, and Jiang Chen couldn't even resist a single attack from him. Two days had passed, now Jiang Chen had become much stronger, and he could even defeat him with ease... Was he really a human?

“Tell me, why did you want to kill me? There's no grudge between you and I, and I suppose someone else asked you to do all of this, right? Just tell me who it was, and I might spare your life.”

Jiang Chen said with a deep voice. He had never met Jiang Wei before, and there was nothing between them. There was no reason for him to kill Jiang Chen, therefore, the most obvious answer was that there was someone even stronger who wanted to kill him.

“Fine, I'll tell you.”

Jiang Wei said. However, with a ferocious look in his eyes, a black poison needle suddenly appeared in his hand.

“Go to hell!”

Jiang Wei clenched his teeth and waved his hand forcefully. The poisonous needle immediately flew out from his hand. With such short distance, he was confident that the needle would stab Jiang Chen. He wanted to see how Jiang Chen was able to resist the poison since he had witnessed Jiang Chen getting hit by the needle back in the Myriad Demon Mountain. But now, he was alive and kicking, and this had really puzzled him.

Clang!

Jiang Wei was fast, but Jiang Chen was faster. Although Jiang Wei had hidden his movement, there was no way he could hide from Jiang Chen's eagle eyes. With lightning fast speed, Jiang Chen grabbed the poison needle with two fingers.

“Hmph! Since you are courting death, I'll fulfill your wish! You don't want to tell me who the one behind everything is? Fine, I'll lure him out myself. So, you like to use poison? Fine, I'll let you taste it!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort, he had lost his patience. This Jiang Wei had even tried killing him with a poison needle; Jiang Chen wouldn't let someone like this stay alive.

With a high amount of killing intent, Jiang Chen flipped his palm and pointed the poison needle in his hand towards Jiang Wei's forehead.

“Stop!”

Right at this moment, someone shouted out loudly from the inner circle direction. Then, everyone saw Fan Kun flying out from the inner circle, it was he who had shouted just now.

But, Jiang Chen completely ignored Fan Kun. With extremely fast speed, he stabbed the poison needle into Jiang Wei's forehead.

Ahhh.....

An ear-piercing cry came from Jiang Wei's mouth. The cry was incredibly horrifying, and it hardly resembled a human's cry. Then, everyone saw some black threads starting to appear on his forehead, and it spread all over his body. The poison started corroding his body, it was melting his muscles, and it made his face start twisting. It even produced a sizzling sound from within his body. The scene was horrifying.

“Senior disciple Fan, save me, save me.....”

Jiang Wei looked at Fan Kun with terror, and his voice had become hoarse. He was a genius from the inner circle, and he had a bright future; he didn't want to die, and Fan Kun was his only hope, because the poison needle was given to him by Fan Kun, only he could provide an antidote to this poison.

Fan Kun shook his head and felt some pity for Jiang Wei, only he knew that there was no antidote for this poison. The poison was so

strong that there was simply no cure for it. Any Heavenly Core warrior who gets poisoned by the needle would die for sure.

Plop~

Jiang Wei's body fell down onto the ground and now laid there motionlessly. The poison was so intense that the moment it reached his heart, he died.

“An eye for an eye.”

Jiang Chen had an indifferent expression. The death of Jiang Wei hadn't affected his mind in the slightest. He would never feel pity for someone like this, especially when he had seen how strong the poison was. Jiang Chen felt that his decision was right, because if it wasn't for him cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill and absorbing the Green Hellish Python's bloodline, he would have died two days ago just like Jiang Wei.

“Jiang Wei is dead... What a horrifying way to die.”

“That poison needle is terrifying! I'm sure it was covered in some super strong poison, it could instantly kill a Heavenly Core warrior! Incredible!”

“Brutal! Jiang Chen is so fierce, the way Jiang Wei died was so horrifying!”

“Can anyone blame him? Didn't you guys see what happened? It

was Jiang Wei who took out the poison needle and tried killing Jiang Chen with it, Jiang Chen only gave him a taste of his own medicine! He deserved it!”

.....

Jiang Wei was dead, and everyone was shocked. But, no one really pitied him, because they had all seen what happened, it was Jiang Wei who took out the poison needle, and he was the wicked one.

“Jiang Chen, you are so cruel and brutal, how dare you use poison on your fellow disciple? This is something only evil men would do! You’re not on the right path, so I, Fan Kun, will enforce justice on behalf of the heavens by killing you today and completely removing you from this world!”

Fan Kun spoke with a stern voice. After speaking, he unleashed a huge shadow hand and attacked Jiang Chen. He had used all his strength with this attack, and with his cultivation level, there was no way Jiang Chen could be his match.

But luckily, Jiang Chen had prepared himself. Right as Fan Kun was about to strike, Jiang Chen spread his blood wings and evaded the attack. But, the ripples from Fan Kun’s attack had also made his blood start boiling.

“Heavens, senior disciple Fan Kun attacked! Jiang Chen is finished for sure!”

“Senior disciple Fan Kun is recognized openly as the number two within the inner circle, and aside from Guan Yi Yun, no one can actually suppress him! And, ordinary Late Heavenly Core warriors are nothing in front of him! I never expected him to actually try and personally kill Jiang Chen.”

“Why do I have this feeling that Fan Kun has a real grudge against Jiang Chen? Besides, Jiang Chen and Jiang Wei fought a deathmatch, it’s against the rules for Fan Kun to step in!”

The crowds exclaimed. Today’s conflict had become more serious. Up to now, it had gone completely out of control. Initially, it was just a small conflict between the outer circle disciples, but now, even the high profile and important disciple Fan Kun was getting himself involved. It looked like this conflict could only be settled by the high class Sect Elders.

“Fan Kun, are you blind? It was Jiang Wei who took out the poison needle first!”

Jiang Chen was angry, this Fan Kun tried killing him the moment he arrived, without even giving him the chance to explain. Besides, Jiang Chen could feel that Fan Kun really wanted to kill him, his determination was even greater than Jiang Wei’s. Also, from the way Jiang Wei had asked Fan Kun to save him before he died, Jiang Chen started thinking that Fan Kun was the man behind everything.

“Hmph! I only saw you using the poison needle to kill Jiang Wei. Jiang Chen, you bullied fellow disciples, you tortured fellow disciples, and you killed a senior disciple. Such a wicked and cruel

man, what you did is proof that you are a devil! Today, I'm going to kill you!"

In an imposing manner, Fan Kun stared at Jiang Chen with a razor sharp vision and intense killing intent. Today was his best chance to kill Jiang Chen, and he could blame it all on some crimes.

Bang.....

Fan Kun unleashed the energy of a peak Heavenly Core warrior. The strong and powerful energy waves collided with each other and produced loud explosive noises. His Yuan energy was like a tsunami that had completely locked down on Jiang Chen.

Bang.....

Another loud explosion, Fan Kun attacked again. He unleashed a huge shining golden palm, a combat skill. This palm flew towards Jiang Chen.

Everyone's expressions had changed, Fan Kun was a really powerful man, and since he had used his best attack to attack Jiang Chen, no matter how talented Jiang Chen was, he was only a Late Mortal Core warrior. The gap between them was huge, and he simply couldn't defend against this attack.

Right at this moment, something unexpected occurred. A bright beam descended from the sky, and like a sharp blade, it tore Fan

Kun's huge golden palm to pieces. Suffering from the counter attack, Fan Kun was forced to take a few steps back before regaining control over his body.

Swoosh!

A bright figure blinked a few times, then a plump old man walked down from the air. Soon, he arrived next to Jiang Chen. When the crowds saw who this man was, they immediately cried out in awe.

“Sect Elder Guo Shan, he is here too!”

“The alchemist Guo Shan is the noblest Sect Elder in the Black Sect, and he is a Divine Core warrior! But, he has been focusing on concocting pills, so he didn't bother about anything within the Black Sect. I never expected him to show up here today!”

“Doesn't matter if it was his status or position in the Black Sect, Sect Elder Guo Shan was above all other Sect Elders, and even Sect Chief Daoist Black would have to show respect when they meet each other.”

Chapter 131 – The Mighty Guo Shan

Something unexpected had happened once again. The arrival of Guo Shan had shut everyone's mouths. In the Black Sect, Sect Elder Guo Shan's influence was huge. His status, his position... it didn't matter where he went, he would become the center of attraction and would ultimately receive respect.

An outstanding alchemist would be respected no matter where he went, and he would have a bright future. This was the reason why even Daoist Black would need to show Guo Shan some respect as well.

Not only Daoist Black, even those high class Sect Elders would need to show respect towards Guo Shan. This was because most of the Black Sect's Divine Core Sect Elders were indebted to Guo Shan. Most of them had asked Guo Shan to concoct a pill for them before, so even if they didn't visit each other on normal days, they wouldn't go and offend a powerful alchemist.

Therefore, even though Guo Shan never bothered about the matters of the Black Sect, let alone conflicts between disciples, and was always staying at his own mountain, just standing here was already enough to shock everyone. No one dared to ignore his existence, even the arrogant Fan Kun had to be respectful towards Guo Shan.

However, no one would have thought that Sect Elder Guo Shan, who had never gotten himself involved in any of the Black Sect's matters, would come out today and stand next to Jiang Chen. By shattering Fan Kun's attack and standing next to Jiang Chen, Guo

Shan had clearly told everyone who he was siding with.

“Greetings, Sect Elder Guo Shan.”

Fan Kun cupped his fist and greeted Guo Shan. He looked polite, but at the same time, he didn't show much fear either.

“Fan Kun, what are you doing? Killing your fellow disciple? You are the leader of the inner circle disciples, how can you attack an outer circle disciple? Don't you feel disgraceful?”

Guo Shan let out a cold snort.

“Sect Elder Guo, you said I was trying to kill a fellow disciple? Jiang Chen just killed Jiang Wei with poison, don't tell me that doesn't count as killing a fellow disciple? Jiang Chen was wreaking havoc in the outer circle today, he burned a few courtyards, he seriously injured his fellow disciples, and he even dared to hang up all four outer circle Sect Elders! He is an evil man, shouldn't I kill him? I was just helping the Black Sect get rid of this rotten meat!”

Fan Kun still spoke in the same imposing manner. His killing intent was high, and he didn't want to give up on his decision to kill Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, he was still a little shocked. Let alone Guo Shan being an alchemist, just his Divine Core cultivation realm would be enough to scare anyone, but this Fan Kun actually dared to talk to him like this. Was he really not scared

of getting killed by Guo Shan? With Guo Shan's status, killing an inner circle disciple who didn't show him any respect wouldn't be a big deal.

Jiang Chen didn't know the reason, but others did. Because, everybody knew that Fan Kun was not only an inner circle disciple, he also had a status which made him very proud, and that was his grandfather.

“How can Fan Kun talk to Sect Elder Guo like that, isn't he offending Sect Elder Guo's dignity?”

“Fan Kun has a huge background, his grandfather Fan Zhong Tang is a senior Sect Elder in the Black Sect, and he has reached the Mid Divine Core realm, which is higher than Sect Elder Guo Shan. That's why he isn't afraid of Guo Shan.”

“That's right, he has a powerful background, and that's why he can be so arrogant. Looks like Fan Kun is determined to kill Jiang Chen today.”

.....

The crowds were discussing the happenings. Some knew that this matter was still far from ending, and now that even Sect Elder Guo Shan had appeared, there might be some other Divine Core Sect Elders on their way.

“Fan Kun, Jiang Chen and Jiang Wei fought a consensual

deathmatch, and it's a rule that they were allowed to kill their opponent. Since Jiang Wei was killed, it can only be blamed on the fact that he was weak, and it can't be blamed on Jiang Chen. As for the poison, I think you should know about it better than me, so I'll just save my breath."

Guo Shan said. He clearly wanted to protect Jiang Chen.

"Sect Elder Guo, this is a conflict between disciples! I hope Sect Elder Guo can stop interfering and let us settle this all by ourselves."

Fan Kun didn't show any signs of backing off. He had decided to kill Jiang Chen today, and if he couldn't do so, it would be very difficult to find such a good opportunity to kill him in the future. Besides, Jiang Chen had shown great potential today, so if he wasn't killed soon, once he gets more time to grow, he would become incredibly tough to deal with.

"Damn it, this Fan Kun is so despicable, what business does he have in someone else's deathmatch? He won't allow Sect Elder Guo Shan's interference in a conflict between disciples. But he, as the leader of the inner circle disciples, with his peak Heavenly Core cultivation, is attacking an outer circle disciple. Isn't that just disgraceful?"

"So despicable! I'm sure Sect Elder Guo Shan will protect senior disciple Jiang."

"This has gone too far, it has become incredibly difficult to

resolve! Fan Kun has a big background, and I'm sure he won't let go of this matter easily.”

Many outer circle disciples started cursing. Jiang Chen had indeed made the conflict huge today, he was being lawless by hanging up so many people, but that was his capabilities. When Fan Kun, a peak Heavenly Core warrior, tried killing a Mortal Core outer circle disciple, it was just disgraceful.

“Ridiculous! I'm the Sect Elder, and I can interfere with anything I want! How dare you, as a junior, be so rude in front me? Get the hell out of here!”

Guo Shan yelled out loudly as he unleashed his Divine Core aura. Fan Kun's face immediately turned pale when he felt the massive amount of energy. He frightfully thought to himself that a Divine Core warrior was indeed not someone he could fight unless he was at the same level. If he was a Divine Core warrior, then he would have the possibility to fight Guo Shan.

Even a clay doll would get angry, let alone Sect Elder Guo Shan. If it wasn't for him not wanting to mess with Fan Zhong Tang, if an inner circle disciple talked to him like that, he would have already slapped him.

“Who is the one so arrogant? How dare you ask my grandson to get the hell out of here?!”

Right at this moment, another lordly voice sounded out from afar. Then, an old man wearing a gray robe came descending from

mid-air. Soon, he arrived next to Fan Kun. The man was about as old as Guo Shan; he carried an imposing expression, and he portrayed a domineering image.

Jiang Chen was startled, he immediately understood why Fan Kun dared to be so rude to Guo Shan; it was all because he had a mighty grandfather behind him. Jiang Chen gazed at Fan Zhong Tang and found out he was a Mid Divine Core warrior, one stage higher than Guo Shan. Guo Shan was at the peak of the Early Divine Core realm, and he was just one step away from the Mid Divine Core realm.

“Grandfather!”

When Fan Kun saw Fan Zhong Tang, he bowed towards him and greeted.

“Heavens, now even Fan Zhong Tang is here! He is a real high class man in the Black Sect, his status and position is just one level below the Sect Chief’s!”

“I never expected this matter to become so huge! Now, with the arrival of two Divine Core warriors, this is going to become messy!”

“It think it’s going to be difficult to resolve this. If Fan Zhong Tang and Guo Shan fight, I think only the Sect Chief himself can resolve this.”

Too many shocking things had happened today, and it had made all the disciples numb. It had all begun with a small conflict between outer circle disciples, and dozens of disciples had been forced to hand over their Mortal Restoration Pills. However, this small conflict had escalated. Four outer circle disciples were hanging on pillars, a genius inner circle disciple had been killed on the deathmatch stage, and now there were even two Divine Core warriors.

“Fan Zhong Tang, now even you are here. So, you and your grandson are going to bully an outer circle disciple together? Let me tell you this, I, Guo Shan, will be the first one to fight you!”

Guo Shan showed a strong attitude towards this matter. Since he had come here today, he was determined to protect Jiang Chen. Perhaps in other people’s minds, Jiang Chen was just an outer circle disciple, a genius amongst all outer circle disciples, but in Guo Shan’s mind, Jiang Chen was a peerless genius. Besides, Jiang Chen had given him great help with alchemy, and both of them had become like brothers. When his brother was in trouble, Guo Shan, as his brother, couldn’t just sit back and watch.

Besides, others might be afraid of Fan Zhong Tang, but Guo Shan didn’t fear him. Although his cultivation level was lower than his, if they compared statuses within the Black Sect, Guo Shan’s was not any less than Fan Zhong Tang’s.

Jiang Chen’s face darkened, and he remained silent. He could now basically confirm that the one who wanted to kill him was Fan Kun. As for whether or not his grandfather was related to it, he wasn’t sure yet. This was his ultimate goal for wreaking havoc

today, Jiang Chen wanted to find out who the mastermind behind everything was. However, what he didn't understand was, why would Fan Kun want to kill him so badly? There was nothing wrong between him and Fan Kun. However, none of this mattered any longer.

“Kun'er, what's going on?”

Fan Zhong Tang turned his head and looked at his grandson, Fan Kun.

“Grandfather, it all began.....”

Fan Kun explained what happened today to Fan Zhong Tang through his Divine Sense. Then, Fan Zhong Tang immediately stared at Jiang Chen. In his seemingly calm eyes, a slight killing intent was hidden. Although he was hiding it pretty well, it couldn't be hidden from Jiang Chen.

“Even he wants to kill me.”

Jiang Chen felt incredibly angry right now. This hatred towards him came from nowhere, and although he had the intelligence and experience of a Saint, he couldn't guess why this grandfather and grandson duo wanted to kill him.

“Hmph! Guo Shan, take a look at the training grounds, this guy didn't show any respect to his seniors! He even hung up Sect Elders and beat them, and he killed his fellow disciple through a ruthless

approach! He is an evil man, a man like this should be killed immediately!”

Fan Zhong Tang snorted coldly. He used the same tone as Fan Kun and labeled Jiang Chen an evil man, trying to blame everything on him.

The disciples and Sect Elders who were hung up on the pillars and beaten were still screaming and yelling. When they heard Fan Zhong Tang’s words, they were so touched they felt like crying.

“Fan Zhong Tang, there are reasons for what Jiang Chen did today. Jiang Wei was killed because they fought in a deathmatch. A Mid Heavenly Core inner circle disciple was killed by an outer circle disciple on the fighting stage, I don’t think this needs much of an explanation.”

Guo Shan spoke with an indifferent expression.

“Guo Shan, you and I are both Divine Core Sect Elders, we shouldn’t interfere with conflicts between disciples. In my opinion, to avoid hurting our relationship, let’s just back off and let Fan Kun handle Jiang Chen, how about that?”

Fan Zhong Tang asked.

“Puh! Fan Zhong Tang, you’re so disgraceful! You really want to let your grandson fight an outer circle disciple, you’re so shameless by saying that! I, your father, will protect Jiang Chen at all costs

today! Those who dares try to touch him, I'll teach him a lesson!"

Guo Shan had a really strong attitude. Although this old man was normally a peaceful guy, once he became pissed off, he would surely do something great. Jiang Chen took a glimpse at Guo Shan who was giving his speech, and he felt warmth in his heart.

Chapter 132 – Daoist Black’s Decision

“Guo Shan, don’t yell at me just because you’re an alchemist! You want to protect this evil guy? Does that mean you want to walk the path of evil as well?”

Fan Zhong Tang was pissed off. With his status in the Black Sect, being scolded and disgraced in front of so many people would certainly make his anger boil. Besides, he had to help his own grandson get rid of Jiang Chen.

“Save your breath! Those who dares touch Jiang Chen today, I’ll be the first one to attack!”

Guo Shan took a step forward and stood in front of Jiang Chen. It looked like if Fan Zhong Tang really attacked, he would go all out and fight him.

Jiang Chen didn’t show any emotion on his face. Although what happened so far had exceeded his expectations, it hadn’t come to a stage where he couldn’t control himself. Because, if Guo Shan and Fan Zhong Tang couldn’t come to a conclusion, Daoist Black would definitely need to step out.

“Enough!”

Indeed, as Jiang Chen had expected, just as Guo Shan finished his words, a dignified shout came from the direction of Palace Black. After that, a golden light shot out from within Palace Black.

The golden light arrived at the outer circle's training grounds, and it swept across all pillars and shattered all of them together with the ropes, freeing those who were tied up. The golden light did not only shatter all pillars, it also unsealed the seals on the people's Qi Seas that had been previously sealed by Jiang Chen.

“Sect Chief.”

Fan Zhong Tang and Guo Shan bowed towards the direction of Palace Black at the same time. The shout just now and the golden light came from Daoist Black. As the Black Sect's chief, one of the four most powerful men in the Qi Province, no one dared to stand in the way of Daoist Black.

“Heavens! Even the Sect Chief is here! It was just a small conflict in the outer circle, but now even the Sect Chief has come!”

“This matter has gone too far! If the Sect Chief doesn't do something now, it will soon go completely out of control!”

“Jiang Chen has really wreaked havoc in the Black Sect today, he has created a storm!”

Everyone was shocked. In the eyes of all disciples, Daoist Black was a paramount, respected by many.

In the next second, a middle-aged man wearing a Daoist robe flew by. His hands were on his back, he stood in midair with a dignified

expression, and his black hair was fluttering in wind. He was Daoist Black, the Black Sect's ultimate emperor.

“Greetings, Sect Chief!”

All disciples on the training grounds bowed down to pay their respects. From Fan Zhong Tang to Guo Shan, down to the lowest ranked novice disciples, all of them showed respect towards Daoist Black. Daoist Black was the most mysterious man in the Black Sect, and he rarely showed himself anywhere within the Black Sect. Him showing up because of just a tiny little conflict between the outer circle disciples, Jiang Chen was the first one to make him do that.

“Explain, I'll give you all a chance to explain what happened.”

With a stern expression on his face, Daoist Black gazed at Fan Zhong Tang and Guo Shan. But more importantly, he looked at Jiang Chen and Fan Kun as well.

“Sect Chief, Jiang Chen bullied his fellow outer circle disciples, severely injured them, and even hung up four Sect Elders and beat them! He is a complete nutcase! This has never happened before in the history of the Black Sect! He is completely out of his mind, and he's lawless! He used a deadly poison to kill Jiang Wei! Such a cruel and ruthless thing can only be done by evil men! If we don't kill this man, it will jeopardize the Black Sect's reputation, and none of the disciples can stay here with hopes of peace!”

Fan Kun condemned justly and severely, conveying his reasons behind his actions, as well as making Jiang Chen look like a wicked

man.

Daoist Black didn't show any change of expression, he just stared at Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, what is your explanation then?”

Daoist Black asked.

“I don't want to explain, but I believe the Sect Chief can bring me justice.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist towards Daoist Black. It was actually pointless for him to try and explain what happened. In the end, it was all up to who the Sect Chief decided to blame. If he really wanted to punish Jiang Chen, no matter how good his explanation was, it would be useless. And, if Daoist Black didn't want to pursue these matters any further, it would only take some simple words.

Besides, Jiang Chen didn't need any explanation, because the explanation from the crowds weighed more than his alone.

“The fact is simple, there is nothing you can explain! Disciple requests Sect Chief to lay down punishment on Jiang Chen!”

Fan Kun spoke with a sneer.

“Sect Chief, senior disciple Jiang Chen is wrongly accused!”

Just as Fan Kun finished his words, an outer circle disciple voice out.

“That’s right! Sect Chief, two days ago, outer circle disciple Guo Lei spread fake news about Jiang Chen dying in the Myriad Demon Mountains! He did that on orders from inner circle disciple Cai Dong! And, he bullied all of us and asked us to hand over 100 Mortal Restoration Pills to him, and he also seriously injured Wang Yun and Huang Zheng! Many of us can testify to this, we are the victims!”

“Sect Chief, senior disciple Jiang was just trying to bring us justice! If he really violated the sect rules, it was Guo Lei and the others who violated them first!”

“Also, Jiang Wei is the one responsible for his own death! He challenged senior disciple Jiang Chen to a deathmatch, he can’t blame anyone for his own death! As for the poison, the needle belonged to Jiang Wei, it had nothing to do with senior disciple Jiang!”

.....

The outer circle disciples who followed Jiang Chen were all rushing to voice out their stance on the matter. They just couldn’t keep quiet any longer, because if they didn’t tell the truth, Jiang Chen would feel disappointed at them. No matter what, it was Jiang Chen who stood out and wreaked havoc for them, and if they were forced to choose between Jiang Chen and Fan Kun, they

would definitely jump to Jiang Chen's side, and they wouldn't even care about offending Fan Kun.

“Sect Chief, what these disciples said is correct. We can't blame Jiang Chen for this mess. In other words, Jiang Chen is a victim as well.”

With a smile on his face, Guo Shan cupped his fist and spoke to Daoist Black. He was thinking about how to help since Jiang Chen didn't want to explain, but he had never expected so many disciples would stand out and show their support for Jiang Chen. This was even better than if Jiang Chen was to explain himself. Looking at Jiang Chen's confident face, Guo Shan couldn't help but silently praise him. Although Jiang Chen was young, he had the strongest mind Guo Shan had ever seen. He could stay calm no matter what situation he was in. Besides, Jiang Chen had a brave heart, and there was nothing he wouldn't dare to do. If there was, there would be no way for things to escalate like this.

“Sect Chief, we can't judge this situation just by listening to these few disciples! Even if what they said was true, it's also a fact that Jiang Chen has brutally beaten the Sect Elders, and even hung them up! These Sect Elders represents the Black Sect's face, and what Jiang Chen has done is slap the Black Sect's face!”

Fan Kun still didn't want to give up.

“Fan Kun, do I need you to teach me how to settle matters?”

Daoist Black's face darkened.

“I didn’t mean it, please forgive me, Sect Chief.”

Seeing that his words had made the Sect Chief angry, Fan Kun’s expression immediately changed.

“That’s enough. I know more or less what happened today, just let it all end here, and don’t let it be repeated.”

After finishing his words, Daoist Black disappeared from where he was standing. It was like he had never been here. It was actually just because his speed was extremely fast. Daoist Black was just one step away from the Combat Soul realm, his mightiness could never be imagined by ordinary people.

However, Daoist Black’s words had startled many of the people.

What just happened? The Sect Chief came here personally, but in the end, this was his decision.

An awful expression emerged on Fan Kun’s face, he was not happy with this decision. He didn’t know why Daoist Black favored Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen had caused such a huge disturbance today, and even though it wasn’t him who started everything, he should still get some relevant punishments. But now, because of Daoist Black’s decision, everything had come to an end.

Not only only Fan Kun was puzzled, everyone who had witnessed what happened today was shocked and had their mouths wide

open.

“What? It ended just like this? The Sect Chief settled this matter in a really unique way.”

“I agree with you, initially, I thought that Sect Chief would become angry and punish those who had done wrong, but he just said something simple, and the matter reached a conclusion.”

“Don’t you guys get it? The Sect Chief favors Jiang Chen! With what Jiang Chen has done today, even though he wasn’t the one who started everything, but by brutally beating the Sect Elders alone, he should have received serious punishment. But now, no punishment! The Sect Chief obviously doesn’t want to punish him.”

“There must be a reason behind the Sect Chief’s decision. Jiang Chen has been growing extremely quickly, his talent and potential is peerless within the Qi Province, and he can even compare with Nan Bei Chao from the Burning Sky Pavilion! And soon, he will be suppressing Fan Kun! A genius like him won’t easily be punished, this is the benefit of being a true genius!”

.....

Many people were shocked by the decision, but at the same time, they could understand the reasoning behind it. After all, Jiang Chen had proven himself with his outstanding performance, a genius like him won’t be easily punished by the sect.

Besides, the decision was made by the Sect Chief himself, who would dare to object? As for whether or not the decision was fair, in this world where the strongest gets all the respect, fairness was actually a luxurious thing. In the Black Sect, Daoist Black's words were justice.

The Sect Elders and disciples who were hung up and brutally beaten could only swallow their tears. They thought the Sect Chief would bring them justice, but now, they couldn't even think about it anymore. Besides, the Sect Chief's decision had sent everyone a message; he was favoring Jiang Chen. After what happened today, many people would remember this, and they wouldn't mess with Jiang Chen easily. Because if they did that, the consequences would be really nasty.

With an insidious expression, Fan Kun stared at Jiang Chen like a poisonous snake, "Jiang Chen, one day, I will kill you."

"Fan Kun, I don't care why you want to kill me, but let me warn you; you better not mess with me. If you do, the consequences will be something you never want to experience."

Jiang Chen said faintly. He never showed any mercy to his enemies.

History had proven that those who were Jiang Chen's enemies would never receive any happy endings.

"Hmph!"

Fan Kun let out a cold snort, then he turned around and left. At the same time, Fan Zhong Tang also disappeared in the blink of an eye.

Initially, Fan Kun wanted to kill Jiang Chen no matter what. However, when the Sect Chief personally came, he was forced to abort the mission, because, if he ignored everything and continued assaulting Jiang Chen, he would be bathing in the flames of anger from Daoist Black, and that was not something he could really face.

A major incident that shook the Black Sect had been concluded with a light touch from Daoist Black. What happened today would definitely be recorded in the Black Sect's history book. Jiang Chen's name had once again become the center of attraction.

From today onwards, not only the outer circle disciples, even the Sect Elders and some inner circle disciples would think twice before looking for any trouble with Jiang Chen.

Chapter 133 – Let's Cook This Dog

In the outer circle's residency area, Wang Yun and Huang Zheng's courtyard was filled with people. Wang Da Niu had brought back two Revival Pills from Guo Shan and handed them over to Jiang Chen carefully. He looked at Jiang Chen respectfully.

He couldn't help but feel a strong amount of respect towards Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen's actions today had made him seem like a god in the minds of these disciples.

Besides, Wang Da Niu wasn't really sure if Sect Elder Guo Shan would really give him the Revival Pills, but once he mentioned Jiang Chen's name, Guo Shan immediately gave him two Revival Pills without any hesitation. Also, after learning about what happened from Wang Da Niu, Guo Shan even came personally to help Jiang Chen.

Senior disciple Jiang Chen was a man who treated others with kindness and justice. He had brought them all justice, and everyone were thankful to have him. Also, Jiang Chen had come to the Black Sect a few days ago, and not only had he become friends with Sect Elder Guo Shan, even the Sect Chief was favoring him. No one could really accomplish what he had done, therefore, all the disciples in the courtyard decided to follow Jiang Chen no matter what.

Besides, Jiang Chen didn't take a single Mortal Restoration Pill, he had given them all away.

“After feeding Wang Yun and Huang Zheng the Revival Pills, they will recover soon. All of you should stop gathering here, go back to where you came from. In the future, if anyone dares to bully you within the Black Sect, just mention my name. However, let me first say this, I can help you guys, but don’t get me into any unnecessary troubles.”

Jiang Chen’s voice wasn’t loud, but it was dignified. Everyone could clearly hear him, and no one dared to show any neglect towards his words.

“Don’t worry senior disciple Jiang, we will put all our effort towards cultivation, we won’t disappoint you!”

“That’s right, we’ll follow senior disciple Jiang! From today onwards, if no one looks for trouble with us, we won’t be looking for trouble ourselves! But if someone tries to mess with us, we won’t be scared of them either!”

“That’s right! We won’t bully anyone, and we won’t allow anyone to bully us either!”

.....

Everyone agreed to this. Jiang Chen’s domineering behavior today had deeply motivated all of them. Every single word spoken or action performed by Jiang Chen would make their blood start boiling. Unconsciously, Jiang Chen had become their idol. His mighty image had been printed in their minds, and it would never go away.

In other words, their mindsets had changed. Subconsciously, they had become stronger, and this was all because of Jiang Chen. In the world of cultivation, one couldn't be too cowardly. If you failed to show your courage, you would be the one to lose.

Too many people gathering around would affect Wang Yun and Huang Zheng's recovery process, therefore, Jiang Chen chased away all disciples and asked only Wang Da Niu and a few other disciples to stay behind.

"I've fed them Revival Pills. Wang Da Niu, and you two, stay here and take care of them. You know where to find me if something urgent happens."

Jiang Chen said.

"Senior disciple Jiang, just carry on with your things, leave everything here to us!"

Wang Da Niu promised with a serious expression.

Jiang Chen nodded his head, then he brought Big Yellow with him and left. He walked out from the residency area and didn't fly. Along the way, he met quite a number of disciples. All of them had friendly expressions as they greeted Jiang Chen.

"Greetings, senior disciple Jiang."

“Greetings, senior disciple Jiang.”

.....

All those disciples who met Jiang Chen greeted him with proper manners. Nervous expressions could be seen on their faces, and no one dared to show any disrespect towards Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen shook his head. He increased his pace, and soon, he arrived at his courtyard.

“Brat, you were so domineering today, kaka.....”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly as he danced around in joy. Following Jiang Chen was an exciting and blood boiling journey.

Crack.....

Right at this moment, a cracking sound came from within the house on the left side of the courtyard. In the next second, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow felt a cold breeze being emitted from the house. They turned around and looked at it, then they saw the entire house was covered in frost. The frost soon turned into solid ice, and it made the entire courtyard, even the entire mountain peak’s temperature, drop significantly.

“Xiao Yu has broken through!”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up.

“The Nine Yin Meridians are abnormally insane; the house is gone!”

Right as Big Yellow finished his words, a loud crashing noise sounded out. The house had collapsed, and it had filled the courtyard with solid ice. A teenage girl wearing white clothes walked out from the collapsed house, her natural beauty could make any man want to praise her parents for giving birth to such a lovely beauty.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen!”

When Yan Chen Yu saw Jiang Chen, her face blossomed with a bright smile, then she started hopping and skipping towards Jiang Chen happily.

“Xiao Yu, you've broken through to the Late Mortal Core realm!”

Jiang Chen felt happy. With his experience, he could easily tell that although Yan Chen Yu was only a Late Mortal Core warrior, with help from the powerful Nine Yin Meridians, she could easily defeat an Early Heavenly Core warrior.

“That's right, I have absorbed half of the Freezing Crystal, and I'll try to absorb the remaining half some time in the future. Once I have completely absorbed it, I'll be able to break through to the Heavenly Core realm!”

Yan Chen Yu said with a smile on her face.

“Mm, very good! Xiao Yu is getting more powerful with each passing day!”

Jiang Chen pampered Yan Chen Yu by patting her head.

“But Big Bro Jiang Chen, I just destroyed another house.”

Yan Chen Yu stared at the messy courtyard with a pouting expression.

“Don’t worry about that, you tried your best to control your power. If you haven’t controlled it like you just did, you could have destroyed the entire courtyard. I’ll ask someone to rebuild the house for you later.”

Jiang Chen wasn’t bothered by it. Compared to the great news of Yan Chen Yu’s breakthrough, a house was nothing. Even if the entire courtyard was destroyed, Jiang Chen wouldn’t even frown.

“The timing is just right for Xiao Yu to come out from her secluded cultivation. Let’s go find Sect Elder Guo Shan together.”

Jiang Chen said.

“You’re going to thank that old guy, aren’t you?”

Big Yellow asked. Guo Shan had been a great help today, therefore, they had to pay him a visit to show their gratitude.

“Thanking him is just one of the reasons, I have something more important that I need his help with. My cultivation realm has reached the Late Mortal Core realm, and before I break through to the Heavenly Core realm, I need to concoct a pill that can strengthen my foundation. Once my foundation is stable and solid, I’ll be able to break through to the Heavenly Core realm with full force, without having to worry about foundation and potential problems.”

Jiang Chen answered with a smile.

“Fuck, so this is your real motive.”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen, who is this Guo Shan? Oh right, you’ve already reached the Late Mortal Core realm so quickly?”

Yan Chen Yu was shocked by what she heard. It looked like during her secluded cultivation, a lot of things had happened.

“Xiao Yu, your Big Bro Jiang Chen has become a truly famous man in the Black Sect. Today, he almost brought down the entire sect!”

Big Yellow said while shaking his head.

“What? Puppy dog, hurry up and tell me, what’s going on?”

Yan Chen Yu was very anxious. Any major incidents related to Jiang Chen would make her worry.

Along the way, Big Yellow explained what happened during these last few days to Yan Chen Yu, including the incident where they almost got killed in the Myriad Demon Mountain. After listening to the entire story, Yan Chen Yu was very angry.

“This pisses me off! How does that guy dare try to kill Big Bro Jiang Chen? Serves him right that he got himself killed!”

Yan Chen Yu spoke with an angry voice. Listening to her words, Big Yellow became speechless. Was this the same innocent and naïve girl? Was this the same girl that had become scared when she heard about killing people? If she followed Jiang Chen for a few more years, would she become someone as fierce and brutal as Jiang Chen?

Soon, Jiang Chen, Yan Chen Yu and Big Yellow arrived at the foot of Guo Shan’s mountain. The air was filled with the fragrance from all sorts of herbs. When Big Yellow saw these herbs, his eyes lit up.

Swoosh!

Big Yellow sprinted forwards and arrived in front of a Blood Ginseng that had aged for at least a few hundred years. Without hesitation, he swallowed it with just two bites.

“What the fuck!”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes helplessly. He immediately regretted bringing Big Yellow along. If he allowed this damned to freely roam in this mountain, Guo Shan would end up crying his lungs out.

“Damned dog, stop there!”

Jiang Chen hurriedly sprinted forwards, because, in just the blink of an eye, Big Yellow had eaten three herbs.

Jiang Chen pulled Big Yellow’s ear and scolded, “Damn it, can’t you just behave a little nicely for your father? All these herbs belong to Sect Elder Guo Shan, you can’t just eat them like this!”

“Damn you, move your hands away from your father! There are so many herbs here, I just ate a few of them; what are you so mad about?”

Big Yellow’s eyes turned green. There were so many herbs in front of him, and if he wasn’t allowed to eat them, it would be more torturous than killing him.

“Eat my legs! You are not allowed to touch a single herb here! I

still need to ask Guo Shan to give me some herbs that I need! If you eat them all, how can I have the audacity to ask?”

Jiang Chen grabbed Big Yellow’s ear and wouldn’t let go.

“Brat, these herbs don’t belong to you! Why do you care if your father wants to eat them? I’ll stop when I am full!”

Big Yellow tried arguing.

What? Full?

Damn it!

Without saying anything else, Jiang Chen slapped Big Yellow’s big head. He knew how much this damned dog could eat. Even if he ate all herbs on this mountain, he would still be hungry.

“Who is causing all the nuisance down there?”

A voice sounded out from the mountain peak, it was Guo Shan’s voice.

“Brother Guo, it’s me.”

While replying to Guo Shan, Jiang Chen dragged Big Yellow beside him and walked towards the peak.

Hearing that it was Jiang Chen, Guo Shan descended from the peak. From above, he had seen a man and a dog fighting each other.

“Brother Jiang, where did this dog come from?”

Guo Shan was surprised by what he saw.

“Brother Guo, this dog was behaving sneakily and tried eat your herbs. I, your brother, helped you capture him. Let’s cook this dog as a side dish for our drinking session!”

Jiang Chen said.

“Damn you, kid, do you really want to be that mean?”

Big Yellow immediately jumped up from the ground.

“What?! He ate my herbs? Let me skin him alive!”

Guo Shan’s eyes widened. Each and every single herb on this mountain was a rare one, and this dog had just eaten them? How could he control his temper? Looking at his face, it really seemed like he wanted to skin him alive.

“The fuck?!”

Big Yellow's expression changed. This old man was a Divine Core warrior, and if he really wanted to catch him, there would be no way he could escape.

“Alright, your father won't eat them anymore! Kid, don't let this old man get me!”

Big Yellow hurriedly surrendered. Jiang Chen's words had hit his weak spot, he immediately swore that he wouldn't eat any herbs on this mountain anymore.

“Alright, since this dog has admitted his mistake, brother Guo, let's just forgive him.”

Jiang Chen let go of Big Yellow's ear. Together with Guo Shan, they walked up to the peak of the mountain. After getting to know about Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's relationship, Guo Shan couldn't help but burst out in laughter. As for those few herbs eaten by Big Yellow, he just forgot about them. His relationship with Jiang Chen couldn't be compared with a few herbs.

Chapter 134 – Prodigal Beings

Guo Shan's mountain peak had a magnificent scenery, and the air was filled with the rich fragrance of herbs which made anyone who smelled it feel relaxed and refreshed at mind. Cultivating here for just one day was almost equal to ten days of cultivation outside.

A table made entirely from crystals was placed next to the herbal plantation fields. Three people and a dog was sitting on each side. Big Yellow's eyes were wide as he stared at the herb plantation field in front of him, he was constantly drooling and wetting the table surface. Jiang Chen placed his palm on his forehead and shook his head. This dog was really here to disgrace him.

If it wasn't for Big Yellow being so scared of Guo Shan's Divine Core pressure, he would have already dived into the plantation field and begun his feast.

“Brother Jiang, I suppose this young lady is Yan Chen Yu?”

Guo Shan looked at Yan Chen Yu. Even someone like him couldn't help but give Yan Chen Yu a big thumbs up. She was such a stunning beauty, and only a girl like this could be matched with the peerless genius Jiang Chen.

“That's right, she is my fiancée, Yan Chen Yu. Xiao Yu, you should greet Sect Elder Guo.”

Jiang Chen said.

A bright smile appeared on Yan Chen Yu's face. She nodded her head towards Guo Shan and greeted, "Xiao Yu greets Sect Elder Guo."

"No need to be so polite, Xiao Yu. Since you are brother Jiang's fiancée, you can just address me as older brother like Jiang Chen does."

Guo Shan burst out in a fit of laughter. He was a bright and straightforward man, similar to Jiang Chen. That was the reason why he and Jiang Chen could become friends regardless of their age difference. If it was only because of Jiang Chen's alchemy skills, their relationship wouldn't be this good.

"Thank you older brother for helping, Jiang Chen is really grateful for that."

Jiang Chen cupped his fist towards Guo Shan. What he just said had come from the bottom of his heart. If Guo Shan hadn't helped today, the matter could have gone worse. Let alone Fan Zhong Tang, he wouldn't even have been able to fight Fan Kun with his current abilities.

"Don't mention it. We are brothers, and when my brother is in trouble, as the older brother, I can't just sit back and watch."

Guo Shan waved his hand and asked Jiang Chen to not be so courteous, then he said, "No matter what, it was all because of the Sect Chief that this matter could be resolved so easily. But, I can

understand why he did it. A peerless genius like you has never appeared in the history of the Black Sect. The Burning Sky Pavilion has Nan Bei Chao, his strong appearance has shaken the grounds of the Qi Province, and if he is given a few more years to become a super strong man, the balance between the four big sects might be broken. The other three sects would be facing the threat of the Burning Sky Pavilion, and they might even be completely annihilated. Now that you have shown potential not any weaker than Nan Bei Chao's, frankly speaking, you are the hope of the Black Sect's future. If I was the Sect Chief, I would be siding with you and protect you as well."

Although Guo Shan didn't bother much about the matters of the Black Sect, he did pay attention to the big matters within the Qi Province. For a long time, the four big sects of the Qi Province had always been in conflict with each other, but they had maintained a balanced state. However, the appearance of Nan Bei Chao had told everyone that this balance was soon going to be broken. Therefore, for the Black Sect, the appearance of Jiang Chen meant a chance.

"Nan Bei Chao is a really talented and strong guy, he is destined for greatness, and he has enough potential to conquer the world. He is not a simple guy, if a man like him is allowed to grow to a certain stage, the tiny Qi Province won't even be enough to qualify as his playground."

Jiang Chen nodded his head in agreement. He had better judgment than Guo Shan. The first time he had seen Nan Bei Chao, he already knew that he wasn't an ordinary genius. Nan Bei Chao was born with a tremendous destiny. Combined with his incredible talent, he could possibly be compared with those exceptional geniuses of the Divine Continent. Besides, Nan Bei Chao was a man

with wild ambitions. Someone like that, not only the Qi Province, even the Eastern Continent won't be able to hold him for long.

“I didn't know your opinion of Nan Bei Chao was so good.”

Guo Shan was pretty surprised by Jiang Chen's opinion. Although he and Jiang Chen had just known each other for a short period of time, he knew Jiang Chen's temper quite well. All geniuses had their pride, and the pride of a genius like Jiang Chen was even greater than anyone else's. Now that even Jiang Chen thought so highly of Nan Bei Chao, this told Guo Shan that Nan Bei Chao was really not a simple guy.

With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen stopped his comment. Nan Bei Chao was really somebody, but Jiang Chen was not scared of him. When Nan Bei Chao chose to become Jiang Chen's enemy, his destiny had changed, and he would certainly receive a miserable ending.

“Brother, you actually go too far today, you set a bad example of what lawfulness is. Also, because the Sect Chief sided with you, I'm afraid there will be some complaints from the high class Sect Elders.”

Guo Shan said.

“Does older brother know why I wanted to wreak havoc today?”

Jiang Chen sneered.

“I don’t know, why?”

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, Guo Shan became startled. It looked like there really were some reasons behind everything that he didn’t know of. What Jiang Chen had done today was definitely not something as simple as bringing justice back to his fellow disciples.

“A few days ago, I ventured into the Myriad Demon Mountains and had some adventures. Someone tried hunting me down in sector two, and the one who tried to kill me was Jiang Wei, the one who was killed by me on the deathmatch stage. The reason I wreaked havoc today was to find out the mastermind behind everything.”

Jiang Chen didn’t hide anything from Guo Shan. Besides, telling him everything wasn’t a bad thing either.

“What? Jiang Wei was trying to hunt you down? Are there any grudges between you two?”

Guo Shan was shocked; he never expected this to happen.

“I never met him before that, so how could there be any grudges? When Jiang Wei chased me that night, he told me I had offended someone I shouldn’t, and had challenged the authority of someone I shouldn’t have. Then, that Fan Kun jumped out today after all the disturbances, and you could see how determined he was to kill me. What I’m guessing is, Jiang Wei was sent by Fan Kun to hunt

me down, because when Jiang Wei was hurt by the Silent Poisonous Needle, he asked Fan Kun for help. It's pretty obvious that he thought Fan Kun had the antidote."

Jiang Chen explained everything to Guo Shan. He was extremely brilliant and he had a clear mind, with even the smallest piece of evidence, he could find the roots of the whole thing.

"According to your analysis, this Fan Kun is trying to kill you, but that doesn't make any sense. You have just come to the Black Sect a few days ago, and you have never offended this Fan Kun... There is no way you could have challenged his authority."

Guo Shan furrowed his brows.

"Let me make a wild guess, Fan Kun was working for Nan Bei Chao, and even Fan Zhong Tang might be working for him."

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up.

"What? Brother, don't simply make wild guesses. Fan Zhong Tang is an old man from the Black Sect's high class Sect Elders, a Mid Divine Core warrior, and he has pledged his loyalty to the Black Sect!"

Guo Shan shouted out in disbelief.

"Don't get overexcited, older brother. I was just throwing some wild guesses. In fact, I have only been in the Black Sect for a few

days, and Nan Bei Chao is the only person I have offended since I came to the Qi Province. That's why I made this guess. If it isn't this, then I can't really think of a reason why Fan Kun would want to kill me."

Jiang Chen said.

"This, I don't think it's possible?"

Guo Shan kept furrowing his brows. Although Nan Bei Chao had outstanding abilities, he didn't think it was possible for him to put his hands in the Black Sect.

"That's all for today, older brother. Jiang Wei has been killed by me. As for Fan Kun, it's not an easy task for him to kill me. Oh right, in exchange for drinking older brother's fine wine last time, I brought some good wine with me here today for older brother."

Jiang Chen said.

"Haha, brother, I'm not bluffing, but I don't think you can bring any wine that is better than mine!"

Guo Shan burst out in laughter. He was very confident in the herbal wine brewed by himself.

Jiang Chen didn't say a word. He waved his hands, and four jade wine glasses emerged on the crystal table in front of everyone. As if Big Yellow knew what was going to happen, he retracted his eyes

from the herbal plantation fields and showed an excited expression.

Jiang Chen flipped his palm, then a jade pot appeared right in his hand. He pointed at the jade pot with one finger, and in an instant, four streams of clear liquid shot out from the jade pot and fell right into the four jade glasses.

Guo Shan had an indifferent expression, but when he smelled the intense energy flowing out from the jade glasses, the self satisfied look on his face immediately disappeared.

Guo Shan hurriedly looked at his wine glass, he could see that it had been filled up with a milky white liquid, and it kept emitting threads of energy mist. When he took a deep breath containing the air filled with the energy mist, it immediately made his blood boil, as well as increasing his total Yuan energy.

“This is? Energy Spring Water?”

Guo Shan’s expression drastically changed. The glass full of liquid in front of him contained the rare and precious Energy Spring Water! This huge amount of Energy Spring Water must cost a lot of money, and if it could be used for pill concoction, it could help produce a lot of premium quality pills!

“Cheers, older brother.”

Jiang Chen raised up his wine glass and proposed a toast to Guo

Shan. Big Yellow had finished his portion and was now staring at the jade pot held by Jiang Chen with his big, watery eyes. After that, Jiang Chen drank the Energy Spring Water with just one gulp.

Watching how these two fellows drank the Energy Spring Water, Guo Shan felt like spitting out blood. People, this was Energy Spring Water, but you're drinking it like wine?! This could no longer be described as reckless waste of grain, they were both simply prodigal men!

However, what made Guo Shan feel even worse was, after Jiang Chen and Big Yellow drank the first glass, they had another two glasses filled with it. They were drinking the Energy Spring Water like it was milk! Also, watching a dog drinking Energy Spring Water like that made him feel like the world had gone crazy.

This was a huge blow to Guo Shan's mind. He suddenly felt like his life couldn't even be compared to a dog.

If Guo Shan knew that these two had drunk half a pond of Energy Spring Water in the cave, he might end up coughing out half his blood instantly and die on the spot.

"Hmm? Why are you not drinking, older brother? Do you not like the wine your brother brought here? Never mind, since you don't like it, I'll just give it to Big Yellow."

Jiang Chen said while shaking his head. Big Yellow didn't know what being shameless was, he immediately extended his hand and

tried grabbing onto Guo Shan's wine glass.

Swoosh!

Guo Shan's reaction was extremely fast. With the speed of light, he grabbed the wine glass and drank up all the Energy Spring Water in an instant, he couldn't resist any longer.

When the Energy Spring Water entered his body, it immediately turned into powerful energy and started flowing uncontrollably in his body. With his face turning red, Guo Shan immediately circulated his cultivation skill to guide the energy. He turned them into tiny threads of energy and absorbed it into every part of his body.

The intense amount of energy contained within the Energy Spring Water made Guo Shan take a second look at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. He looked at them like he was looking at some ghosts. With Guo Shan's cultivation level, even just one glass of Energy Spring Water would take him some time to absorb, but these two fellows had drunk three glasses continuously, and they didn't even show any reaction. It was like plain water for them. This not only pissed him off, but it was also wastage under broad daylight.

What he didn't know was, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had drunk half a pond of Energy Spring Water, and therefore, they had sort of become immune to it.

Yan Chen Yu had also finished her portion. Her face was apple red, and she looked really alluring.

Chapter 135 – Five Elemental Pill

“Older brother, how does my wine taste?”

Jiang Chen asked with a smile on his face.

What? How's the taste? Damn it, this is Energy Spring Water, can it be tasted? So, he really considers it to be wine!

“You're doing this on purpose! You're doing this to purposely piss your father off!”

Guo Shan really wished to slap Jiang Chen's face with his shoe.

“Why does older brother say that? I brought the wine here specifically for older brother, but not only did you not appreciate it, you even said I was trying to piss you off... this is so sad. Since older brother doesn't like our wine, Big Yellow, Xiao Yu, let the three of us finish this wine, older brother can just enjoy his own herbal wine.”

Jiang Chen raised up the jade pot and poured another full glass of Energy Spring Water for Big Yellow and Xiao Yu, and he purposely skipped Guo Shan's glass.

“The fuck!”

Guo Shan couldn't hold himself any longer. He took the wine pot

from Jiang Chen's hands and poured himself another glass.

But too bad, although Guo Shan was a Divine Core warrior, if one were to compare the potential of their bodies, he was far from Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, and Yan Chen Yu. Guo Shan couldn't stand anymore after drinking three glasses of Energy Spring Water as the energy contained within was too powerful. He wasn't cultivating some advanced skill, therefore, he couldn't absorb the energy in a short period of time. Besides, Guo Shan's constitution was just an ordinary one, he just couldn't be compared to the three sitting beside him.

"I can't drink any more. The way you guys are drinking this is just too wasteful. Brother, did you know that a single drop of Energy Spring Water can sell for more than 10,000 gold coins? And yet, we are drinking it like water here."

Guo Shan felt like slapping himself a few times. This was incredibly wasteful, a reckless waste of grain! When he saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow drinking glass after glass, he was both mad and pissed off. At the same time, a strong feeling of defeat struck him. He was a Divine Core warrior, but his endurance was so weak compared to these three abnormal monsters in front of him.

"Brother, how did you get so much Energy Spring Water?"

Guo Shan asked with a hint of curiosity. He had drunk three glasses of Energy Spring Water today, and that had given him a lot of benefits. His cultivation level had reached the peak of the Early Divine Core realm, and he was just one step away from the Mid Divine Core realm. With the help of these three glasses, he could

break through to the Mid Divine Core realm in just a month, or perhaps even less.

“I got some by accident when I was in the Myriad Demon Mountain. I knew this Energy Spring Water could help older brother, therefore, I prepared a full pot for you.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen took out another jade pot from his storage ring and handed it over to Guo Shan.

Guo Shan's eyes widened and lit up. A pot filled with Energy Spring Water, this was a priceless gift from Jiang Chen. What Jiang Chen said was correct, this pot with Energy Spring Water was really useful for Guo Shan. Not only would it help his cultivation, it would also provide great help for his pill concoction. He could just add a few drops of the spring water as part of the ingredient, then the finished pill would have a great increment on its effectiveness. This was one of the rarest properties the Energy Spring Water could provide.

“Brother, this Energy Spring Water is too precious! I just drank three glasses of it, so how could I accept this pot?”

Although Guo Shan spoke like he was rejecting the gift, he stared at the pot while rubbing his hands, and he didn't even blink once. He looked like he couldn't wait to put his hands on the pot.

Looking at how Guo Shan behaved, Jiang Chen couldn't hold himself any longer, then he let out a laugh, “Since older brother feels bad accepting my gift... Big Yellow, let's drink this pot as

well!”

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, Guo Shan immediately responded. No one could see how he did it, but the jade pot on the table had disappeared. After that, Guo Shan gazed back at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, “Both of you are animals! Don’t drink the Energy Spring Water in front of your father from now on, prodigal beasts!”

“Hey old man, since we had a great drinking session, and we established some sort of relationship, we can be considered friends now, right? Can you just bring a few dozens of herbs from your plantation and let me taste them?”

Big Yellow stared at Guo Shan and shamelessly spoke. This dog still had his eyes on the herbs.

“Get the hell out of here, damned dog! If you ever touch a single one of your father’s herbs, your father will skin you alive!”

Guo Shan berated.

Big Yellow spat his tongue out, but he didn’t say anything else. This old fatty didn’t look like someone who could be easily fooled with.

“Older brother, I got something to discuss with you. The reason why I came here today was to ask for a few of older brother’s herbs.”

Jiang Chen said in a serious tone.

“I knew you were up to something, no wonder you gave me a pot of Energy Spring Water! Tell me, what kind of herbs are you looking for? As long as I got them within this mountain, your older brother won’t be stingy with them!”

Guo Shan said in a generous manner.

“If you say so, I’ll get straight to the point.”

Jiang Chen said, “I need five different types of herbs. Golden Mushroom, Profound Black Wood, Water Lotus Flower, Flaming Grass and Loess Sand.”

Jiang Chen mentioned five herbs at once, and they were the main ingredients he needed to concoct a pill that could strengthen his foundation.

Guo Shan’s previously casual and relaxed expression turned serious, then he asked, “Golden Mushroom, Profound Black Wood, Water Lotus Flower, Flaming Grass, and Loess Sand. They are herbs of five different elements... Don’t tell me brother is going to concoct the Five Elemental Pill?”

“That’s right, I’m going to concoct the Five Elemental Pill. It is used to strengthen one’s foundation, and not only can it quench the internal organs, it can also help increase the potential of those

who consume it. Before I break through to the Heavenly Core realm, I'll need to quench and strengthen my foundation.”

Jiang Chen explained.

“The five internal organs of humans corresponds to the five different elements, therefore, the Five Elemental Pill is an extremely rare pill. By rare, it also means that it is incredibly difficult to concoct. The five elements are restricting each other, and trying to mix five different types of herbs that corresponds to five different elements, and then making it into the Five Elemental Pill is extremely difficult. Ordinary grandmasters of alchemy will find it near impossible to concoct a pill like that. I have been in the alchemy field for more than a dozen decades, and even I wouldn't dare try this.”

[TL: Five organs are heart, liver, spleen, lungs and kidneys.]

Guo Shan spoke with a dignified tone. The Five Elemental Pill was different from other pills that were used to strengthen one's foundation, it was a rare pill that ordinary alchemists could never concoct. Even Guo Shan himself couldn't make it.

“Older brother, just prepare these herbs for me. As for the pill concoction itself, I'll do it myself.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“What? You're going to concoct the Five Elemental Pill yourself?”

Guo Shan stared at Jiang Chen with astonishment and said, “Brother, the lowest quality Five Elemental Pill is an Earth level pill. With my current skills and abilities, I can at most only concoct a low-grade Earth pills. Although you have a powerful cultivation skill, you are not a Heavenly Core warrior yet, it is unrealistic for you to try and concoct the Five Elemental Pill.”

Guo Shan couldn't help but be astonished. He had no doubt in Jiang Chen's alchemy abilities, he had even experienced Jiang Chen's vast knowledge some days ago. However, pill concoction was directly related to one's cultivation realm. Trying to concoct the Five Elemental Pill with just a Late Mortal Core cultivation base, this could never happen.

“Older brother, I am not joking. You do have these five herbs, don't you?”

Jiang Chen asked again seriously. Although these five herbs were precious, they weren't really difficult to find. The Black Sect was one of the biggest sects in the Qi Province, and Guo Shan was the chief alchemist of the Black Sect. It would suck if he didn't have these herbs.

“Yes, I do have them. Brother, when you concoct the pill, can I watch from the side?”

Guo Shan asked. He eagerly wanted to witness whether or not Jiang Chen could really concoct the Five Elemental Pill. He had always been curious about Jiang Chen's pill concoction skills.

“No problem, I’ll do it here.”

Jiang Chen nodded in agreement with a smile on his face. To him, pill concoction was an easy job. Although it was tough to concoct the Five Elemental Pill because ordinary alchemists couldn’t control the restriction between the five elements, to Jiang Chen, it was a piece of cake.

“Alright.”

Guo Shan turned around and walked into the plantation field, then he gathered the Golden Mushroom, Water Lotus Flower and Loess Sand. Then, he returned to his own courtyard and took out the two other herbs. Not long after that, he prepared all five herbs and placed them on the table.

“Brother, these five herbs have been growing for quite some time. They are more than enough to concoct a low Earth rank Five Elemental Pill.”

Guo Shan said.

“Perfect! Thank you, older brother!”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist towards Guo Shan. This was the benefit of becoming friends with Guo Shan. If he hadn’t formed this relationship, it would take Jiang Chen countless amounts of effort to obtain these five herbs by himself.

“Older brother, I’m going to start now. You should pay attention, it might help increase your pill concoction skills.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen waved his hand, and all five herbs on the table flew towards him. At the same time, a massive force of soul energy was unleashed from his body. A shocked expression immediately emerged on Guo Shan’s face when he felt this strong soul energy.

“He’s only a Late Mortal Core warrior, so how come his soul energy is so powerful? It is at least comparable to a Late Heavenly Core warrior!”

Guo Shan was shocked, but it was just the beginning.

Two balls of flame shot out from Jiang Chen’s palms and turned into a flame sea. Underneath Jiang Chen’s control, all ingredients were thrown into the flame sea at the same time.

Guo Shan was stunned by Jiang Chen’s actions. These five herbs of different elements were restricting each other, and it would be extremely hard to merge them together, even if they had been purified separately. Jiang Chen had the audacity to purify them all together, this was unbelievable! It required precise control from the alchemist himself, any neglect would turn all ingredients into ashes.

“Older brother, although the five elements are restricting each other, they are also engendering one another. As long as you can

find the turning point within, it is actually pretty simple to concoct the Five Elemental Pill. Purifying all five herbs together is actually much simpler than doing it one by one.”

Jiang Chen explained.

Guo Shan became even more astonished. Pill concoction required complete concentration from the alchemist, but Jiang Chen could actually talk to him while concocting a pill, and more importantly, he could still maintain the stability of these herbs. He wouldn't have believed this if he hadn't witnessed it himself.

Besides, what Jiang Chen said had struck Guo Shan. Everyone knew the theory of restricting and engendering one another, but few knew the true meaning behind it. Jiang Chen had showed him the answer with his actions. So, it was actually easier to purify all five elements together than doing it separately. It was actually a trap that many alchemists were unaware of, and it had caused them all difficulty with concocting the Five Elemental Pill.

Guo Shan held his breath as he stared at Jiang Chen's hands. Jiang Chen kept forming different mysterious seals with his fingers as he controlled the fire. Underneath the scorching flame, all five herbs had begun their purifying process. They were tumbling and rolling within the flame sea, and underneath Jiang Chen's precise control, they never showed any signs of turmoil because of restricting and engendering one another.

Chapter 136 – Task? Punishment!

The whole pill concoction process went smooth as sailing. Jiang Chen had a relaxed smile on his face the entire time, and no one could even find the slightest hint of nervousness on his face. He had found the balance point of these five elemental herbs in an instant.

Guo Shan was shocked to the maximum. He had never seen such a skillful method of pill concoction. The question of the five elements restricting and engendering one another that had troubled countless alchemists had been solved by Jiang Chen in such an easy and relaxed way. He had completely ignored the restriction problem, and had only used the engendering characteristic to merge all five ingredients together. By doing this, not only would the effectiveness of these ingredients be fully utilized because of the engendering characteristics, the effectiveness of the finished pill would also experience a significant improvement.

Guo Shan was trembling. He kept staring at Jiang Chen without moving a bit. Compared to Jiang Chen, he had a feeling that he had been wasting all these years of his life. A pill could actually be concocted this easily.

If it wasn't for him not wanting to disturb Jiang Chen, Guo Shan would have been cheering and clapping from what he was witnessing.

Pop!

A faded ‘pop’ sounded out from within the flame sea. Jiang Chen let out a deep shout; then a pill covered in five different colors jumped out from the flames. Jiang Chen retracted his soul energy and flames, then he extended his hand and grabbed the pill.

Five Elemental Pill, it had been successfully concocted.

Guo Shan stared at the pill in Jiang Chen’s hand with extreme disbelief. His eyes were attracted to the Five Elemental Pill. In just half an hour, Jiang Chen had actually managed to successfully concoct the Five Elemental Pill.

“The pill is in a perfect sphere shape, it’s crystal clear, and it contains no impurities. All five elements have merged together; it is a 100% effectiveness Five Elemental Pill!”

Guo Shan murmured to himself. If he hadn’t witnessed it himself, he wouldn’t believe it if anyone told him that this had just happened. The Five Elemental Pill, that had given countless alchemists headaches, had actually been concocted by Jiang Chen in such an easy way.

Guo Shan asked himself in his mind. If it was he himself who was concocting the Five Elemental Pill, even if he could successfully make it, it would be, at most, reach 80-90% effectiveness, and he could never concoct it to 100% effectiveness. Besides, he’d need at least half a day to accomplish this, but it only took Jiang Chen half an hour, and he managed to concoct a 100% effectiveness Five Elemental Pill.

“Older brother, what do you think about this Five Elemental Pill?”

Jiang Chen asked with a smile.

“My brother, you, you.....”

Guo Shan just couldn't say a complete sentence. Then, he just hugged Jiang Chen and started crying, his tears dripping all over Jiang Chen's shoulder. He just couldn't hold his sadness inside himself.

“Brother, you came here to purposely deliver a huge blow to my face!”

Guo Shan felt depressed. In the Qi Province, he had never been convinced with any other alchemist's skills. Never in his wildest dreams had he dreamt that one day, he would be completely convinced by an alchemist who was only at the Mortal Core realm.

“Older brother, I have a skill that can help with soul cultivation. I wonder if you are interested.”

While saying that, Jiang Chen started transmitting the Great Soul Derivation skill over to Guo Shan through his Divine Sense.

The Great Soul Derivation Skill was the most important foundation for Jiang Chen. By teaching Guo Shan this skill, he had some motives behind it. No doubt, Guo Shan was someone who

could become his true friend. Jiang Chen would need to build his own team for the future, and an alchemist was a vital person within any team. Jiang Chen didn't want to spend too much time and energy on concocting pills, therefore, he needed to cultivate some alchemists that could work with him, and Guo Shan was the perfect candidate.

The Great Soul Derivation skill was divided into two parts, and Jiang Chen had given the first part to Guo Shan. He wanted to see if Guo Shan would be able to comprehend it. The Great Soul Derivation skill was an advanced and complicated skill, and it was not something that anyone could cultivate. If Guo Shan could master the first part alone, he would be able to concoct Heaven rank pills and become a Heavenly alchemist.

Guo Shan's expression turned into one of disbelief in an instant. The Great Soul Derivation scripture in his Divine Sense was like a refreshing stream of water. The mysterious script had immediately made him submerge into deep thoughts, and he had completely lost himself within the skill.

Guo Shan was trembling and frowning. Clearly, he couldn't understand the complicated scripture of this skill in an instant.

“Older brother, this soul cultivation skill is called the Great Soul Derivation skill. I passed to you the first portion of it, and once you master it, I will teach you the second part. If you can master this skill, you will definitely become one of the greatest alchemists in the world.”

Jiang Chen said.

Finally, Guo Shan stopped himself from studying the scripture. In just two or three minutes, his forehead had been filled with sweat. Right at this moment, the way he looked at Jiang Chen had completely changed. Shock, respect, gratefulness, all sorts of mixed feeling. He was puzzled by who Jiang Chen really was, and why he could possess such an advanced and complicated soul cultivation skill.

“Brother, this gift is too much for me.”

Guo Shan rarely became so serious. As an alchemist himself, he knew very well how important a soul cultivation skill was to an alchemist. A skill like the Great Soul Derivation was something every alchemist would dream of.

From the decision of giving him the Great Soul Derivation skill, Jiang Chen had really treated Guo Shan as his own brother. This really touched Guo Shan.

“Let’s drop the sentimental part, I don’t like it. Since I now have the Five Elemental Pill, I’ll need to go back and start cultivating. I’ll see you again in the future.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist towards Guo Shan, then he led both Yan Chen Yu and Big Yellow and left the mountain peak.

Staring at Jiang Chen’s back, Guo Shan had a puzzled look in his eyes. He thought to himself, “My brother, what kind of person are you really?”

.....

Same day, afternoon. Jiang Chen had asked a few outer circle disciples to build another house within his courtyard. After that, he entered secluded cultivation at night.

Low Earth rank Five Elemental Pill, it would provide Jiang Chen with the absolute limit of benefits at his current level. With the help of the Dragon Transformation skill, he could absorb all the energy contained within. If the pill's level was too high, he wouldn't be able to completely absorb it, and it would be a waste.

In fact, with Jiang Chen's potential right now, he could break through to the Heavenly Core realm without worrying about anything. It was much easier for him to break through compared to others. When ordinary people wanted to break through from the Mortal Core realm to the Heavenly Core realm, they would need to break through a huge gap, and they would need to control the natural energies.

However, since Jiang Chen had the cultivation experience of a Saint, he just needed to gather energy, and there was no bottleneck whatsoever along the way. As long as he accumulated enough energy, and had the required number of Dragon Marks formed as stated in the Dragon Transformation scripture, he would be able to break through straight away. This unique advantage was something no one else had.

But, in order to strengthen his potential and foundation, Jiang

Chen decided to consume the Five Elemental Pill first before breaking through to the Heavenly Core realm. With this, he wouldn't have to worry about his foundation becoming unstable later on.

The Five Elemental Pill was the best pill that could help strengthen one's core foundations. The pill contained five different elemental energies that could be directly absorbed by the five internal organs and strengthen one's foundation.

Jiang Chen took out the pill and swallowed it straight away. With the circulation of the Dragon Transformation skill, the energy contained within the Five Elemental Pill had started flowing into every single part of his body, his soul, and all his internal organs.

Shhh~

A pleasing sensation made Jiang Chen start trembling. The feeling was like rain beginning to drip after a long drought. What a magnificent feeling.

Jiang Chen took his sweet time to absorb the Five Elemental Pill. The process of strengthening one's foundation was a slow process, and Jiang Chen wouldn't rush it. Therefore, it took him nearly 24 hours to completely absorb the pill.

Once Jiang Chen awakened from his cultivation, there was a blood red dragon shadow hovering around his body. Once the Dragon Transformation skill became stronger, his qi and blood would become stronger and thicker at the same time.

After absorbing the Five Elemental Pill, not only did his foundation become stronger, it also helped Jiang Chen form another five Dragon Marks. After all, there was a huge amount of energy contained within the pill. A low Earth rank pill was almost equal to a Mid Heavenly Core demon soul.

Right now, there was a total of 85 Dragon Marks in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, and he was one step closer to 100 Dragon Marks. Once he managed to form 100 Dragon Marks, he would be able to break through to the Heavenly Core realm. At that time, he would possess strength of more than a million Jin, incredibly strong.

“Listen to this command, Jiang Chen.”

Right as Jiang Chen had finished his cultivating session and walked out from his room, a deep voice sounded out from the skies. The sound was so loud that every single disciple within the Black Sect could hear it.

“Listen to this command... This is the Sect Chief's voice!”

“Is he going to assign a task for Jiang Chen?”

“Quiet! Let's listen to what it's about!”

Many disciple were surprised when they heard the voice. This was the first time something like this had happened within the Black Sect. Normally, assigning tasks to a disciple was done in

secret, it would never be done openly like this.

“Listen to this, Jiang Chen. You caused a great disturbance in the outer circle yesterday, you offended your seniors, and you showed no respect to the Sect Elders. I, as the Sect Chief, will now announce your punishment. Recently, a Blood Devil has been seen around the Yellowstone area, and he has been massacring innocents. I command you to kill this Blood Devil alone. You shall leave at once and delay no more.”

Daoist Black’s voice was loud and clear. It sounded out within the skies of Black Mountain like roaring thunder. It displayed the mighty power of a peak Divine Core warrior, and it made everyone feel respect and admiration.

After saying that, the voice of Daoist Black disappeared, but the Black Sect started boiling.

“What? Kill the Blood Devil? Isn’t this a suicide mission for Jiang Chen? Didn’t Sect Chief yesterday say that the incident had come to an end? Why does he suddenly want to punish Jiang Chen?”

“Damn it, weren’t these Blood Devils wiped out a few decades ago? Remember the incident with Blood Moon Shaman? He killed countless of innocents and wreaked havoc within the Qi Province, and in the end, all Sect Chief’s of the Four Big Sects attacked together and finally killed him. I never expected there would be another Blood Devil after so many years.”

“It’s true that there is a Blood Devil in Yellowstone area.

Someone told me today he called himself Lord Blood Moon, and he is a very strong man! Besides, these Blood Devils live their lives by drinking other people's' blood. They're cruel and brutal, and asking Jiang Chen to kill these Blood Devils alone is no different from asking him to commit suicide. Is the Sect Chief going to push Jiang Chen into hell?"

"Perhaps because Fan Zhong Tang and his grandson Fan Kun doesn't want to spare Jiang Chen's life, they pressured the Sect Chief into assigning Jiang Chen to a suicide mission?"

.....

Everyone was shocked. The incident regarding the Blood Devils killing thousands of lives some decades ago had made everyone know just what kind of demon Jiang Chen was going to deal with. However, sending him alone to kill this demon was no different than a suicide mission.

Chapter 137 – Blood Devil

“Big Bro Jiang Chen, who is that Blood Devil?”

Yan Chen Yu walked up to Jiang Chen and asked with a worried expression. Since the Sect Chief said that this was a punishment for Jiang Chen; that meant this task was not an easy one. Blood Devil, just by the name itself, one could tell that it was not something that could be easily dealt with.

Jiang Chen shook his head. Blood Devil, he also did not know what that was.

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, a figure landed in Jiang Chen’s courtyard from above. It was Guo Shan who came with a panicked expression.

“Brother Jiang, you can’t take this task! I’ll go to the Sect Chief now and ask him to cancel the assignment! If not, I’ll go together with you.”

Guo Shan said. From his words, Jiang Chen could tell he was quite scared of this Blood Devil.

“Older brother, what is this Blood Devil? Does a devil race truly exist in the Qi Province?”

Jiang Chen asked. There were actually real devils existing in the Divine Continent. In his past life, Jiang Chen had fought lots of powerful devil kings, therefore, he knew how terrifying the devil race was.

“No, the Blood Devil isn’t a real devil. However, they are a hundred times crueler and more brutal than real devils. These Blood Devils are actually human, but they cultivate the Blood Devil cultivation skill which make them cruel and ruthless. They’ve lost all their humanity, and their minds only know how to kill without mercy. That’s why they’re called Blood Devils.”

Guo Shan said.

“Looks like older brother knows about these Blood Devils pretty well.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“Decades ago, a Blood Devil who called himself Blood Moon Shaman made his debut in the Qi Province. This man was brutal, and not only did he drink the blood of innocents, he also established a sect called the Blood Moon Sect. He taught and brought out a lot of new Blood Devils, causing huge terror for the Qi Province. In the end, he was killed by the cooperation of all Sect Chiefs of the four big sects. And against all expectation, a new Blood Devil who calls himself Lord Blood Moon has appeared.”

Guo Shan said.

After listening to Guo Shan's explanation, Jiang Chen nodded his head. With a stern expression, he said, "They are just good for nothing. Their actions brings no benefits, they only harm. They shouldn't even be allowed to exist in this world. I'll accept this task. I want to see this Lord Blood Moon with my own eyes."

"Brother, Yellowstone is within the Black Sect's territory, that's why killing this Blood Devil is not only your responsibility. All disciples of the Black Sect have the same responsibility. If you go alone, I'm afraid you won't be able to handle it by yourself. Besides, Lord Blood Moon could cause such a huge disturbance, I'm sure he's someone pretty powerful, and he won't be easy to deal with!"

Guo Shan still objected to Jiang Chen accepting the task.

"I have to accept this task no matter what, this is a test and a training opportunity given to me by the Sect Chief himself. There is only one year left before the fight between me and Nan Bei Chao, and you have told me this before, the Sect Chief has placed his hopes on me. That's why he won't give me a task that could get me killed, but at the same time, he wishes I can become stronger within a shorter period of time. The task regarding me killing this Blood Devil is actually a perfect opportunity for me to train."

Jiang Chen said. He could understand Daoist Black's thinking. With Jiang Chen's potential and talent, there was no way Daoist Black would push him into a burning hell. The task looked almost impossible to accomplish, but it actually gave Jiang Chen an opportunity to grow. Once Jiang Chen became stronger during the mission, he would be able to accomplish the task.

Secondly, Daoist Black was using this as an excuse to punish Jiang Chen. After all, Jiang Chen had caused a really big disturbance yesterday, and if nothing was done by the Sect Chief, the Black Sect would become a place with no rules and laws.

“It is good that you’re able to understand the Sect Chief’s reasoning behind assigning you to this task. However, it is a really dangerous mission, are you sure you want to go alone, brother?”

Guo Shan showed a delighted expression towards Jiang Chen, because Jiang Chen could always see things clearer than others.

“That’s right. I have decided to accept this task.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. In fact, this mission really came at the perfect time. He had just completely absorbed the Five Elemental Pill, and the most important thing for him to do right now was break through to the Heavenly Core realm, and there was no way he could do that in the Black Sect. Jiang Chen had actually prepared to do it in the Myriad Demon Mountain, but before he could leave, Daoist Black had assigned him a task. Although the Blood Devils were cruel and brutal, the risk involved was actually lower than the risk deep within the Myriad Demon Mountain.

Jiang Chen was once the greatest Saint in the world, how could he be scared by a bunch of Blood Devils?

“Alright, since you had made up your mind, I won’t stop you from going anymore, with your abilities and skill, I believe

ordinary Blood Sucking Demons won't be your match at all, you just have to be extra careful with the Lord Blood Moon, this guy must be as cunning as the Blood Moon Shaman, and shouldn't be someone who is easy to deal with."

Guo Shan patted Jiang Chen's shoulder.

"Older brother, before I leave, I have something I need your help with."

Jiang Chen said.

"Please tell me, brother. As long as older brother can do it, I will do it no matter what."

Guo Shan's expression became serious.

"Big Yellow and I will begin our journey to Yellowstone tonight, and Xiao Yu will stay behind. Older brother, please help me take good care of her, I'm afraid Fan Kun might harm her."

When Jiang Chen decided to leave, the one he worried about the most was actually Yan Chen Yu. Although her Nine Yin Meridians were very powerful, the energy of their enemies was even stronger. If Fan Kun wanted to find trouble with her, Yan Chen Yu wouldn't be able to defend herself alone.

"Big Bro Jiang Chen, I want to go with you!"

Yan Chen Yu immediately said.

“Xiao Yu, right now, I still don’t have too many details regarding this task. If you follow us, I won’t be able to focus on the mission. You should just stay here and spend some time on your cultivation. Once I kill that Blood Devil, I’ll immediately return.”

Jiang Chen placed his arms around Yan Chen Yu and spoke to her gently.

“Alright. But, Big Bro Jiang Chen, you must promise me to take good care of yourself!”

Yan Chen Yu nodded her head. Although she couldn’t bear to be separated from Jiang Chen, she could still understand his decision. Not only was she unable to provide them with much help, she might even become a burden.

“Rest assured, brother. No one dares to mess around in the Black Sect. If Fan Kun wants to harm Xiao Yu, not only I, even the Sect Chief won’t allow that to happen.”

Guo Shan promised Jiang Chen.

“Good. Then, we’ll leave now.”

Jiang Chen spread his blood wings and flew high up into the sky,

and soon he disappeared from the Black Sect. Big Yellow also flapped his wings of light and followed next to Jiang Chen. When the disciples saw Jiang Chen depart, all of them were astonished by his decision.

“So, Jiang Chen really accepted the task and is now leaving towards Yellowstone? Doesn’t he know the risk behind this task?”

“This is a task assigned to him by the Sect Chief himself, there is no way he could reject. I wonder if it was because of Fan Kun and his grandfather doing something behind the scene that caused Jiang Chen to receive this punishment.”

“This task is like a suicide mission; I wonder if Jiang Chen will come back alive.”

.....

A lot of disciples were sighing, especially those outer circle disciples who had become followers of Jiang Chen. All of them carried worried expressions.

In the depths of the Black Mountain, Fan Zhong Tang and his grandson Fan Kun were gathered together in a secret chamber, both of them looked happy.

“Haha, I never expected that the Sect Chief would assign such a mission for Jiang Chen! He is dead meat for sure!”

Fan Kun laughed out loud.

“Hmph! The Sect Chief’s true motive isn’t to punish, but to give an opportunity for Jiang Chen to train himself. He is cultivating Jiang Chen to become Nan Bei Chao’s biggest rival.”

Fan Zhong Tang let out a cold snort.

“Grandfather, I have gathered all information regarding this mission. Lord Blood Moon has a cultivation base at the peak of the Heavenly Core realm, and combined with his terrifying Blood Devil skills, even I wouldn’t be his match! If Jiang Chen meets Lord Blood Moon, the only ending for him would be death.”

Fan Kun sneered.

“We can’t underestimate Jiang Chen, he will certainly become someone great. Since we are working for Nan Bei Chao, we will need to help him kill Jiang Chen, and this is a good opportunity.”

A fierce look appeared in Fan Zhong Tang’s eyes. Even with his Mid Divine Core cultivation base, he was working for Nan Bei Chao. No one would believe this. Nan Bei Chao’s approaches was truly incredible.

“Grandfather, you mean to kill Jiang Chen secretly?”

Fan Kun asked.

“No, you can’t go anywhere now. The Sect Chief is a brilliant man, and if you leave now, even an idiot would be able to tell that you are heading to kill Jiang Chen.”

Fan Zhong Tang said.

“That’s true. But, I think there’s no need to worry so much. Jiang Chen always thinks highly of himself, and he never takes others seriously. This time he was sent to get rid of that Blood Devil, this is indeed a suicide mission.”

Fan Kun had a joyful expression.

“Send someone to pay attention to Yellowstone’s area, if the Blood Devils can’t kill Jiang Chen, ask these men to inform the Heavenly Sword Sect about Jiang Chen’s whereabouts.”

Fan Zhong Tang said with a sneer on his face.

“That’s right, Liang Xiao’s determination to kill Jiang Chen is even stronger than ours!”

Fan Kun said with a loud laugh.

.....

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were flying quickly. Around

midnight, they had nearly arrived at Yellowstone.

“The mission of killing the Blood Devil is actually a good way for you to train, it is a big opportunity as well.”

Big Yellow said.

“That’s right. I am cultivating a unique skill, and it gives me rich qi and intense blood. Both of these are the best weapons against all devils. Also, you are a descendant of the Dragon Horse, those devils are afraid of you as well. Although the Blood Devils are humans, they have somewhat transformed into devils, and there will be devil cores formed in their bodies. The benefits we can get from absorbing devil cores is much better than the benefits we can get from absorbing demon souls from demon beasts. After absorbing the Five Elemental Pill and strengthening my foundation, I can use this opportunity to break through to the Heavenly Core realm.”

Jiang Chen said.

Yellowstone was a stretched area of more than ten thousand miles in circumference. Right in the center of Yellowstone, Yellowstone City was located. There were also two more cities in the area, however, because Yellowstone wasn’t located in a strategic location, there weren’t any powerful clans in the area. Of course, even the weakest clans of the Qi Province were much stronger than Red City.

Right in front of them was a desolate mountain range. Even though it was midnight, they could see a faded mist covering the

mountain. Jiang Chen could smell blood from within the mountain range.

“There are Blood Devils in this mountain range.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up.

“How do you know that?”

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen and asked.

“There is something called perception. Big Yellow, there’s still a lot more you need to learn.”

Jiang Chen burst out in laughter.

“Brat, your father’s perception towards treasure is something you will never have!”

Big Yellow snorted at Jiang Chen’s words and made him speechless. If someone was being compared with the ability to find treasure, there wouldn’t be anyone in the world who could come close to Big Yellow.

Ahhh.....

Suddenly, a horrifying cry sounded out from within a valley and

broke the silence of the dark night. The cry was so terrifying that it sent shivers down the spine of anyone who heard it. It was as if the person who cried out had encountered something that had scared him to his limits.

“Brat, you’re right! I sense an intense amount of devil’s energy in front of me!”

Big Yellow’s expression turned serious.

“Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen flapped his blood wings and started flying towards the valley with extremely fast speed. The Blood Devils had appeared less than two days ago, but they had spread to countless places within Yellowstone. This meant that the amount of Blood Devils was huge.

Chapter 138 - Lunatic

Dense clouds darkened the skies, and the horrifying scream was completely gone. The valley in front was portraying a scary feeling at midnight. However, what was happening within the valley was even scarier.

Three Blood Devils, with a pair of blood red eyes, were dressed in black clothes and were showing their sharp fangs as they stared at the prey in front of them. The way they looked was scary, as if they were some real devils from hell.

Two men were laying on the ground in front of them, and both of them had died in a horrifying way. Each of them had two small holes on their necks, but no blood was coming out from the wounds, because, their blood had already been sucked dry by these Blood Devils.

“Jiejie, human blood is so tasty.”

One of the Blood Devils let out a weird laugh. His voice was hoarse and awful, and it was enough to send a chill down the spines of anyone listening. He stuck out his red tongue and licked his fangs, his movements were enough to stop a baby from crying.

Four people were standing opposite of the Blood Devils. They were three teenage guys and one girl with just an ordinary cultivation level. One of them was an Early Mortal Core warrior, the other two were at the peak Qi Hai realm. The teenage girl wore blue clothes, and she seemed to be 14-15 years old. She was so

scared that she couldn't stop trembling and her face had turned pale.

“Jiejie, let's wait no more! We'll suck all blood out of these three men! As for the girl, bring her as a sacrifice for leader!”

The other Blood Devil was laughing out loudly.

“Gone, we're dead this time!”

The four people were extremely frightened. These Blood Devils in front of them were all at the Mortal Core realm, and with their cruelty and brutal approaches combined, there was no way they could deal with them.

The three Blood Devils wore cruel smiles on their faces. Their blood red eyes were glowing with a strange aura. They slowly moved towards their preys, and while doing that, they were licking their pair of fangs, trying to make their preys more frightened. When they saw their prey become even more scared, the cruel smiles on their faces became even thicker. It looked like they weren't in a hurry to kill their prey, and they wanted to make their preys feel extreme horror before drinking their blood, because that would make their blood even tastier.

“These Blood Devils are cruel and inhuman, they have cruelly tortured and killed the people of our town! Let's fight them to the death!”

The Mortal Core teenager had an obnoxious expression on his face. That was his instinct to stay alive. When a human knew he was going to die no matter what, even at the last second, he would still try his best to stay alive.

“Jiejie.....”

These Blood Devils kept laughing. Right as they opened up their mouths to bite down on the humans with their fangs, two golden lights suddenly descended from the sky.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Following two swooshing sounds, two Blood Devil who were standing in front of the teenagers had their blood spilled everywhere. The golden lights had cut both of them in half. Four chunks of dead meat was thrown onto the ground, and it kept twisting and struggling.

“Ah!”

Obviously, the girl had never seen such a bloody scene before. She was so scared she couldn't even remain standing, she immediately fell down with a trembling body. She was already on the border of collapsing when her friends had been killed by these Blood Devils. Now, after witnessing two Blood Devils getting slashed into two pieces, with their internal organs falling out and filling the air with a pungent smell, she just couldn't hold herself up any longer.

The other three young men's faces had turned pale as well. They tried their best not to vomit, but at the same time, they felt grateful and happy in their minds. The two golden lights that had just killed the Blood Devils were emitting pure Yang auras, and they were obviously from the bright side. The three of them weren't fools, they knew someone had saved them.

“Who?”

The last Blood Devil's expression changed. He immediately shouted out and raised his head. In the next second, he saw two figures descending from the skies and landing in front of him.

Although Blood Devils were cruel and inhuman, they weren't idiots. They were similar to demon beasts that had intelligence. Besides, before they became Blood Devils, they were actually human.

This Blood Devil could sense how powerful this human and dog in front of him was. Just the energy they were unconsciously unleashing was enough to make him feel extreme fear. If this young man in front of him wanted to kill him, he wouldn't even have the guts to fight back.

“Blood Devil? What a disgusting existence.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. His words were full of hatred towards the Blood Devils. The way these Blood Devils looked were much more disgusting than the real devils.

“You, who are you?”

The Blood Devil had a trembling voice. He just couldn't show his cruel and brutal side in front of Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything, he just took a glimpse at the two corpses that had been mummified due to all their blood being sucked out of their bodies. In just an instant, an extreme anger emerged in his eyes. After witnessing the cruelty and brutality of these Blood Devils, Jiang Chen had made up his mind. He wanted to kill every single one of these disgusting beings, and leave no survivor.

“Big Yellow, torture him a bit, but don't kill him.”

Jiang Chen said in a cruel manner. Since these Blood Devils always used cruel and brutal approaches, Jiang Chen wanted Big Yellow to teach them what true cruelty and brutality was.

Right after Jiang Chen finished speaking, Big Yellow immediately leapt forwards and pushed the Blood Devil down with his strong and heavy body.

Crack~ ah.....

A horrifyingly loud scream sounded out within the valley. Big Yellow had bitten off one of the Blood Devil's arms. His bones were exposed, and blood was shooting out like a fountain. The dark night was painted with a cruel color.

Big Yellow showed a ferocious expression. With another bite, the Blood Devil's last arm disappeared. He kept screaming and struggling, but compared to Big Yellow, he was simply too weak. He couldn't even move a bit underneath the suppression of Big Yellow's energy.

Big Yellow used his razor sharp claws and left two deep wounds on the Blood Devil's chest. The wounds almost exposed everything underneath, and it was very scary.

Big Yellow unleashed his primitive cruelty, showing the hidden brutality of being a demon beast. By using both claws, he kept scratching the Blood Devil's body. In just a few seconds, the Blood Devil's body had been badly mutilated.

“Damn you. So, you like to drink blood? I'll break your fangs!”

Big Yellow cursed. He opened his mouth and spat out a golden light. The golden light collided with the Blood Devil's pair of long fangs, and in just an instant, the fangs broke. Blood flowed out from the Blood Devil's mouth, and it even stopped him from being able to scream.

Puh....

The three young men who had just escaped death couldn't endure the bloody scene any longer, and they started vomiting. The young girl had also finally reacted; her face was pale because she too had vomited. The Mortal Core teenager had a better

reaction than the others, but his awful expression betrayed his true feelings.

“That’s enough, don’t get him killed.”

With an indifferent tone, Jiang Chen asked Big Yellow to stop. Of course, Big Yellow didn’t forget to spit in the Blood Devil before completely stopping.

Jiang Chen turned around and looked at the four people, then he asked with a smile on his face, “Where did you guys come from? How long has it been since the Blood Devils appeared?”

When staring at this handsome young man with a delicate face, the four people’s fear had finally lessened.

“Benefactor, we are all from the Redsun Town. These Blood Devils have been witnessed by many around Yellowstone’s area during the last two days, and we have no idea how many of them exist. Many people in our town has become their prey, and we’re actually heading towards Yellowstone City to get some help. We never expected to bump into these devils on our way, and we almost got ourselves killed. Thank you for saving our lives!”

The young man said.

“What is your name?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Benefactor, my name is Zhang Wei.”

The young man called Zhang Wei said. He portrayed a respectful manner towards Jiang Chen. In his mind, Jiang Chen must be someone extraordinary. The powerful Blood Devils were like puppets in his hand, and they couldn't even withstand a single strike.

“I'm Jiang Chen from the Black Sect. The reason why I'm here is to kill these Blood Devils. I'll follow you to Redsun Town and get rid of those bastards.”

Jiang Chen explained to Zhang Wei. Since the Blood Devils had appeared just two days ago, no matter how great their number was, they shouldn't have reached every single part of Yellowstone. Jiang Chen wanted to make Redsun Town the first battlefield between himself and the Blood Devils. Besides, he couldn't just ignore the danger that the Redsun Town was facing now.

“What? You're from the Black Sect?”

Zhang Wei shouted with a surprised expression. When the other three heard he was from the Black Sect, their faces were immediately filled with extreme joy, and after they heard Jiang Chen say he was here to help them, they became even happier. Right now, the entire Redsun Town was in great danger, and the reason why they left the town was to get some help from Yellowstone City, but they never expected to bump into a disciple of the Black Sect along their way.

In their minds, everyone from the Black Sect was a superior being. Help from a disciple of the Black Sect was way better than getting help from any clans within Yellowstone City.

“Benefactor, there were a few teenage girls that went missing yesterday in our town, and just now, that Blood Devil said they would kill us first, then bring Xiao Ling to some sort of leader as a sacrifice. I’m guessing those missing girls has something to do with this sacrifice.”

Zhang Wei seemed pretty smart. The teenage girl named Xiao Ling besides him still looked blurred. Obviously, she had yet to recover from her shock.

“En.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head, then he extended his arm and pulled over the Blood Devil, then he asked, “Tell me what this sacrifice is, and where those missing girls are. If you don’t say anything, I’ll slice off your meat piece by piece.”

Jiang Chen said calmly, but in an unquestionable manner.

“It was the leader! Our leader is cultivating a skill called Blood Sacrifice, and he needs teenage girls who are still virgins to commence the sacrifice ceremony! They are right in the depth of this mountain”

The Blood Devil dared not to hide anything, he immediately told Jiang Chen everything he knew.

“Bring me there.”

Jiang Chen grabbed the Blood Devil and flew up into the sky. Before he left, he turned around and told Big Yellow, “Big Yellow, you stay here and protect them I’ll be back soon.”

A few hundred miles away from Jiang Chen, there was a valley that was very quiet. There was a huge rock blocking the top of the valley, it was much more hidden than the valley Jiang Chen was currently at.

Within the valley, a 3 meter tall black altar had been built. On top of the altar, there stood a huge statue of a Blood Devil, and black mists kept emitting from it.

A Blood Devil was sitting right in the middle of the altar. His skin was filled with thick blood and qi which spread like spider webs. Underneath his body, there laid a teenage girl with a trembling body. Her pupils had lost all focus and liveliness, her blood was sucked out bit by bit.

Outside the altar, tens of Blood Devils wearing black clothes were standing solemnly. Next to them were 7-8 weak teenage girls. When these girls witnessed what was happening on the altar, the fear in their minds reached its limit. They couldn’t help but cry and scream. They had completely lost all hope of being rescued, and they were just praying they weren’t the next ones.

Chapter 139 – Crucial Moment

This was a horrifying scene, it was enough to make anyone who watched feel their nerves tensing up. These desperate teenage girls had completely lost all of their strength, and they couldn't even struggle. Underneath the Blood Devils' close watch, they didn't even have the courage to commit suicide. They could only wait for their turn to be sacrificed.

Bam!

After sucking out the last drop of blood, the Blood Devil leader simply threw the teenage girl's mummified body away from the altar.

“Next.”

The leader opened up his blood red eyes and spoke with a hoarse voice.

Bam!

Right at this moment, something dropped right onto the altar from the skies above, and it fell right in front of the leader. When the leader lowered his head and took a glimpse at what it was, he immediately roared out in anger.

The object that fell down from the sky was the head of a Blood Devil. The expression on this dead Blood Devil's face was

horrifying. Not only was his face covered with blood, the pair of fangs that identified them as Blood Devils were gone as well.

“Who?!”

The leader stood up from the altar immediately, and unleashed a strong force of devil energy. The leader had reached the Early Heavenly Core realm. Amongst all Blood Devils, one could only become a leader when their cultivation base reached the Heavenly Core realm. They would then also be able to practice the Blood Sacrifice skill and use the blood of teenage girls to increase their energy.

The reason why this leader had captured so many teenage girls was to use them for his Blood Sacrifice skill. After all these girls had been sacrificed, he would be able to break through to the Mid Heavenly Core realm. However, what pissed him off was that just right after he completely sacrificed the first girl, something like this happened.

“Hmph! What an evil and demonic skill! Plunging people into an abyss of misery, this is not allowed by the laws of this universe, damn you all!”

A cold snort sounded out from the skies above. All the Blood Devils raised their heads, and all they could see was a young man dressed in white with a pair of blood wings on his back. The young man was glowing in a golden light while holding a headless corpse. The corpse belonged to a Blood Devil.

Bam!

A powerful force emerged from Jiang Chen's palm and shattered the corpse. It turned into a bloody mist, then it disappeared into the dark night.

“How dare you!”

The Blood Devil shouted out angrily. The carefully planned and prepared Blood Sacrifice ceremony had been disturbed, and this really pissed him off. In his mind, the young man who came out of nowhere was simply here to court his own death.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen's blood wings flapped, and he descended from the skies. Tens of Mortal Core Blood Devils immediately surrounded him. They showed their fangs and tried tearing him apart.

“We can defy the Dao of this universe, but we cannot plunge people into an abyss of misery. We, as the cultivators, we can defy the Dao, we can break the rules of the universe, but we cannot lose our roots; the mere mortals! All you Blood Devils do not deserve to exist in this world!”

Jiang Chen said out loudly. He had his own dao, his own set of principles. Although he was cruel and brutal, and used ferocious approaches towards his enemies; he was a man that could clearly distinguish kindness and hatred. In this world, there was no cause

if there was no reason. These teenage girls in front of him were so weak and innocent, and these Blood Devils had violated the most basic human rules; they had to be killed.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh.....

In an instant, dozens of golden lights were unleashed from Jiang Chen's body. Each of the golden lights was like a razor sharp sword. With extreme speed, they pierced through each and every single Blood Devil except the leader.

Bam bam bam.....

Soon, underneath the attack of these golden lights, all Blood Devils turned into bloody mist and died in a horrifying way on the spot. This was how Jiang Chen treated these Blood Devils. No mercy.

“Bastard, how dare you kill us, the noble Blood Devils?! You're courting your own death!”

The leader immediately became extremely angry. He never expected this young man who came out of nowhere to be so strong. In an instant, he killed all Blood Devils with ease.

Bang.....

The Blood Devil leader initiated an attack. He unleashed a huge blood red palm and a grabbing motion towards Jiang Chen.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. An invisible force shot out from his body, and the powerful blood red palm was instantly destroyed. After that, Jiang Chen forcefully pointed his fingers like a sword, and three bright and huge golden fingers suddenly appeared and pierced towards the black altar.

Bam!

The Six Solar Fingers was an extremely powerful skill. The altar that had been built with some solid hard stones immediately shattered and was turned into ruins underneath the impact.

The Blood Devil leader was shocked by what he saw. Now, he could only feel how terrifying the young man in front of him was. He knew he wasn't a match for this young man, and therefore, he didn't waste any time. He immediately flew high up into the skies and started fleeing.

“You can't escape from me.”

Jiang Chen flapped his blood wings, and with extremely fast speed, he caught up to the leader. He slashed at the leader with his huge wings, and followed by a painful scream, the leader was cut into half by Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen extended his hand and made a grabbing gesture. A

red devil core immediately flew out from the leader's corpse. It was emitting an evil aura, but at the same time, it also contained a lot more energy, qi and blood compared to ordinary demon souls.

Jiang Chen forcefully squeezed with his palm and broke the fist-sized devil core, turning it into bits of red lights that flew into Jiang Chen's body.

“Dragon Transformation skill!”

Jiang Chen shouted. With the help of the Dragon Transformation skill, the devil core was completely absorbed within a few seconds. The evil spirit contained within had been purified by the Dragon Transformation skill, and what was left was the purest energy, qi, and blood. The devil core had helped Jiang Chen form two more Dragon Marks, making the total number of Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea 87.

This Blood Devil leader was pretty strong, he was actually a few times stronger than an ordinary human at the same level. But still, he was no match for Jiang Chen. With Jiang Chen's current strength, he could easily kill any Early Heavenly Core warrior in seconds.

Jiang Chen retracted his blood wings and landed back in the valley. The frightened teenage girls just stared at him blankly. They were still shocked by what had happened.

“So, all of you are from the Redsun Town?”

Jiang Chen asked, but all the girls had frightened expressions, and none of them spoke. With a smile on his face, Jiang Chen said, “Don’t be afraid, I’m a disciple of the Black Sect. The reason why I’m here is to kill these Blood Devils. Now, all of you are safe.”

Although these teenage girls’ minds were filled with fear, they could still hear the words ‘Black Sect’ and ‘Safe’. Besides, this young man in front of them gave them a better impression compared to those cruel devils. They knew this young man had just killed those Blood Devils and saved their lives.

“We’re from the Redsun Town! A few of us aren’t, but we are all victims of these devils! Thank you, benefactor, for saving our lives!”

A teenage girl bowed towards Jiang Chen. The rest followed her action and did the same.

Jiang Chen let out a long sigh. If he had arrived minutes later, these girls would have been killed. The Redsun Town was just an ordinary town within Yellowstone’s area, and it was ruled by Yellowstone City, so it was pretty easy to imagine how vulnerable the town was. If these Blood Devils were to strike the town with full force, it would be a devastating disaster for the small town.

Jiang Chen unleashed his Yuan energy and formed it into a giant net, then he covered these girls with the giant net and flew high up into the sky and returned to where he came from.

In the valley a few hundred miles away, Big Yellow was wagging

his tail calmly, but Zhang Wei and the other men were walking back and forth in panic.

“Stop walking around, you guys are making your father dizzy! When that guy attacks, you can expect nothing but success.”

Big Yellow said as he looked at them hopelessly.

Zhang Wei and the others immediately apologized to Big Yellow. After all, they did witness how cruel and ferocious this dog was. How could they dare to show any disrespect?

“Brother Zhang Wei, look, young master Jiang is back!”

“Look, that’s sister Xiu and the others, they are alive!”

Two of the young men saw Jiang Chen flying towards them with a few girls next to him, and they recognized a few of these girls from the Redsun Town.

When these girls met with their own friends, they couldn’t hold it in any longer, and started crying their lungs out. They cried so badly, as if they wanted to cry out all the bad things they had experienced.

“Young master Jiang Chen, you’re our savior, please accept our gratitude!”

Zhang Wei and his friends bowed deeply towards Jiang Chen. They were really grateful for what Jiang Chen had done. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, none of them would be able to stand there anymore, they would have all become mummified.

“That's enough. How far away is Redsun Town from here?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Not far, it is three hundred miles from here. The Blood Devils first appearance was in the Redsun Town.”

Zhang Wei explained.

“Three hundred miles, not far indeed.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. A distance of three hundred miles took him just an instant to travel.

“We hope young master Jiang can help Redsun Town and save us from this disaster! I heard that Lord Blood Moon is behind all these Blood Devils! The powerful clans within Yellowstone City are too busy looking for ways to solve this problem, so they can't help us.”

Zhang Wei said in a begging manner. Right now, Jiang Chen was the Redsun Town's only hope.

“Don't worry. The reason why I'm here is to kill that Lord Blood

Moon. Zhang Wei, lead the way to Redsun Town.”

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, an expression of extreme joy immediately filled Zhang Wei and the other people’s faces. They had witnessed Jiang Chen’s skill just now, and since Jiang Chen was from the Black Sect, it gave them tremendous confidence in his abilities. They believed, with Jiang Chen’s help, that Redsun Town would definitely escape from this threat.

With help from Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, Zhang Wei and the others had finally experienced the feeling of flying. They were now rushing towards the direction of the Redsun Town.

“Zhang Wei, who is the strongest man in Redsun Town?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Benefactor, Redsun Town is just a small town within the Qi Province. Only the town marshal has reached the Early Heavenly Core realm. However, the town marshal is pretty old now, and there’s no way he can defeat the powerful Blood Devils.”

Zhang Wei said.

Jiang Chen silently nodded his head. Redsun Town was indeed a small town, but compared to Red City and Fragrant Sky City, it was actually stronger. This was the difference caused by territory.

There was only one Heavenly Core warrior in the Redsun Town,

and if these Blood Devils were to decide to attack the town, by just sending a leader alone the town would fall in no time. But luckily, the Blood Devils hadn't been here for a long time, and it wasn't too late for Jiang Chen to help.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's speed was incredible. They soon arrived outside of Red Stun Town. Looking from afar, they found there was fire burning everywhere within the town, and a dark cloud hovering above.

“Damn, something bad is happening, those devils have started slaughtering the town folk!”

Zhang Wei's expression immediately changed. What he had worried about the most had begun happening.

Chapter 140 – Violence Must Be Met By Violence

An intense mist of blood was hovering about the skies of Redsun Town. With Jiang Chen's ability, even though it was still far away, he could see the chaotic and horrifying scene within Redsun Town.

Zhang Wei and his friends had unsightly expressions. Although Redsun Town was only a small town, it was their home, a place where they had been born and grown up in. Their feelings towards this town couldn't be replaced by anything else. Right now, when they witnessed their hometown in flames and the town folk being slaughtered, it was hard for others to understand their feelings.

It was still night time, but the fire was soaring into the skies within Redsun Town, making it bright like it was daytime. Rows of houses and buildings were caught in the fire. This was only a small town with a few dozen miles in circumference, the density of the population was high here.

Within the town, numerous black figures were running around while letting out evil laughs. These were the cruel Blood Devils.

Ahhh.....

Terrifying screams and cries could be heard everywhere. A man had his neck bitten by a Blood Devil, and in an instant, he became mummified. Similar scenes were playing out all over the town.

“Hurry, let’s gather at where the Town Marshal is!”

“Everyone, hurry, we’ll be safe next to the Town Mars... Ahhh!

All the Mortal Core warriors in Redsun Town were shouting and yelling. Some kept swinging their swords and fought these Blood Devils, but they were too weak compared to these Blood Devils, so many of them died in horrifying ways.

Right now, in the center of Redsun Town, there was a square that was packed with people, and all of them carried panicked and solemn expressions. There were a few warriors with weapons in their hands surrounding and guarding the crowd, most of them were Mortal Core warriors, and there were even some Qi Hai warriors.

The panicked people kept running towards the square.

“Hurry, go inside!”

Some Mortal Core warriors hurriedly pulled the town folks into the square and prepared themselves to defend them with their bodies. Right in front of all the people in the square there stood a few old men with dignified expression. All of them were holding combat weapons in their hands. Amongst these old men, then was one old man in his sixties, and his cultivation level was the highest amongst all here. An Early Heavenly Core warrior. He was the Town Marshal.

Bang.....

Jiejiejie.....

Ah.....

Houses were destroyed and burnt down in the fires, and the laughter of the Blood Devils was getting closer. More of these devils were coming in their direction, and the screams of the town folks were like needles piercing everyone's hearts, making them all feel angrier and angrier. Their hatred and fear grew larger, but they mostly felt helplessness.

“Town Marshal, let us go out and fight these Blood Devils!”

“Town Marshal, we would rather die fighting these bastards!”

Some of the people were vigorous, they tightly clenched onto their weapons as their faces turned extremely red.

“No way!”

The Town Marshal shouted out loudly, “No one is allowed to leave here, our town strength is too weak, we need to be united, only then can we defend against these Blood Devils. I'm afraid, this time there are a few dozens Blood Devils, and it's highly possible that there is Heavenly Core leader behind them. We can only gather everyone here and have all our Mortal Core and peak Qi Hai warriors protect our people. All warriors have to stand guard at

the square's outer perimeter!"

The Town Marshal's voice was loud and clear, it made sure everyone could hear him. Now, the majority of the townspeople had gathered in the square. As for the rest of them, they would have to depend on their luck on whether or not they could make it.

The Town Marshal had no choice but to be an autocrat, as he had to consider the safety of the majority. Gathering all the people together was the only way for them to fight the Blood Devils. If they chose to fight the Blood Devils separately, the casualties would be higher. Besides, all the townspeople would become weak sheep waiting to be slaughtered.

Sigh!

Many people were sighing. They were so helpless and hateful towards these Blood Devils. But, this was the difficult moment in life that everyone might have to face once in awhile. During a crucial moment, they were forced to make a hard decision. A leader's decision would affect everyone's lives and safeties in the town. The Town Marshal had made the right decision in Redsun Town's most crucial moment. Although he had no idea whether or not the Redsun Town would escape this disaster, this was the only thing he could do.

The old men, those Mid Mortal Core and Late Mortal Core warriors, none of them escaped from the town by themselves, they were all standing at the front of all townspeople, ready to defend everyone. Even until their last drop of blood was spilt, they would still remain standing to protect their people's safety.

“Jiejie.....”

Right at this moment, an insidious laugh sounded out from the skies above. Two tall Blood Devils suddenly appeared, and they stared at the townspeople from above.

“Two Heavenly Core Blood Devils!”

The Town Marshal’s pupils shrank, and the faces of everyone in the square turned pale. They were showing in desperate emotions, the arrival of two Heavenly Core Blood Devil had basically made them give up all their hope. There was only one Heavenly Core warrior in Redsun Town, and that was the Town Marshal himself. He would have a hard time fighting just one Heavenly Core Blood Devil, let alone two of them.

“Gone, we’re doomed! Two Heavenly Core Blood Devils, how are we going to defend ourselves?”

“We are destined to die this time!”

All the old folks in the square started crying. When they thought about all the townspeople that would be killed by these Blood Devils, and have their blood sucked out of their bodies, they couldn’t help but feel extreme pain in their hearts. These old folks were like the Town Marshal, they weren’t afraid of death, but they didn’t just want to die for nothing.

“So much fresh meat, haha! If we drink all their blood, our cultivation levels will see a big jump! This really is a great feast!”

One of the Blood Devil leaders laughed out loudly.

“We are destined to die this time!”

Town Marshal raised his head up and yelled as tears started dripping down from the corner of his eyes.

Bang.....

Right at this moment, a huge explosion sounded out from behind the Blood Devils. The explosion was so loud that it simply shook the ground. Bright golden lights smeared the sky and brightened the entire Redsun Town. All the townspeople, as well as the two Blood Devil leaders turned around and looked in the direction of the source. What they saw was a young man with a pair of blood red wings on his back. He was holding a golden battle axe in his hand, and with a single swing of the axe, five Blood Devils were cut, and exploded into ashes.

At the same time, a big yellow dog who was glowing in a golden light was coming towards the square, and he was bringing tens of people next to him.

“Look, its Zhang Wei and the others, they are back!”

“Xiu’er is with them too, those girls are still alive!”

Many people were starting to get excited.

“This is Jiang Chen from the Black Sect! You rotten Blood Devils, come here and face your death!”

Jiang Chen’s voice was loud and clear, and it sounded out within every part of Redsun Town. He kept striking with his battle axe, and each strike would take away the lives of a few Blood Devils. They were all shattered into ashes by Jiang Chen’s attack.

“He is from the Black Sect! Town Marshal, that young man is a disciple of the Black Sect, and he is very powerful!”

“Haha, the people from the Black Sect are here, we’re saved!”

The desperate townspeople rejoiced. In the Qi Province, the Black Sect had a great reputation, and since a disciple of the Black Sect was here, they were sure they would be saved from this disaster.

Ahhh.....

Horrificed screams filled the dark night within Redsun Town once again. But this time, it wasn’t the townspeople who were screaming, it was those cruel Blood Devils. Jiang Chen was too strong, those Mortal Core Blood Devils would get turned into ashes just by bumping into Jiang Chen.

“Hmph! You are courting death, even if you’re from the Black Sect!”

One of the Blood Devil leaders who was about to start massacring the townspeople in the square let out a cold snort. His body swayed, then he pierced towards Jiang Chen. The other leader was about to follow him, but his path was blocked by Big Yellow.

“Kaka, idiot, kneel down and kowtow in front of your grandpa! If you don’t, I’ll bite your head off!”

Big Yellow was swaying his head with pride.

“Where did this damned dog come from?! Face your death!”

The Blood Devil leader unleashed an imposing killing intent. He struck out with a huge blood red palm towards Big Yellow. But, Big Yellow didn’t show any signs of fear. With his body glowing in a golden light, Big Yellow extended his big head and rammed towards the blood red palm.

Bam.....

Big Yellow’s head was incredibly tough, the huge blood red palm was immediately shattered upon colliding with Big Yellow’s head.

With great speed, Big Yellow didn’t show any mercy. After shattering the blood red palm, he didn’t slow down, but he continued ramming towards the Blood Devil leader.

Bam!

When the Blood Devil leader finally reacted from the shock, Big Yellow's head collided right onto the Blood Devil's chest with a powerful force.

Crack!

The Blood Devil leader's chest caved in underneath the great impact, and a huge amount of blood was forced out from his mouth. These Blood Devils had strong bodies that could be compared to some demon beasts, but he had never expected this dog's head to be so strong, as if it was some incredible weapon.

Roar!

Big Yellow was too fast. With his mouth wide open, he bit off the Blood Devil Leader's head. With Big Yellow's current strength, killing an Early Heavenly Core warrior wouldn't take him too much time.

“Heavens!”

“What did I just see? This dog is so terrifying! He just killed one of the Blood Devil leaders!”

“What an extraordinary dog, I can't believe what I just saw!”

.....

The townspeople of Redsun Town were all stunned, they all carried astonished expressions. Even Zhang Wei and the few others who had witnessed Big Yellow's brutality were still shocked by what they had just seen. After all, it was a Blood Devil leader!"

"Let's attack!"

The Town Marshal raised the sword in his hand high up into the air and shouted out loudly. He became the first one to dash out from the square and attack. All the Mortal Core warriors had transformed into ferocious tigers who were hunting their prey. They ran out from the square and initiated their attack.

"Kill all the Blood Devils, avenge our fallen people!"

"Slay them all, make them die in the most painful ways!"

The townspeople acted like they had been injected with some sort of stimulant, and they started charging crazily.

On the other side, the Blood Devil leader had arrived in front of Jiang Chen. Upon his arrival, he immediately unleashed a layer of red lights towards Jiang Chen.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. With a powerful swing of his battle axe, he had completely locked down the leader.

Jiang Chen's battle axe was fierce and brutal, and the leader was chopped into half before he could even make a sound; he died horribly in an instant. Jiang Chen extended his hand and grabbed the devil core. At the same time, Big Yellow threw him the other Heavenly Core devil core. Jiang Chen instantly absorbed both devil cores with his Dragon Transformation skill.

“Big Yellow, kill all the Blood Devils, leave no survivors!”

While absorbing the devil orbs, Jiang Chen shouted at Big Yellow. Hearing what Jiang Chen said, Big Yellow begun massacring while wagging his tail. His head was his best weapon, and none of the Blood Devils could withstanding a single strike from him, they all died horribly.

When the rest of the nearly thirty Blood Devils saw their leaders killed, they immediately became panicked and started fleeing in every direction, trying to escape from Redsun Town. However, underneath Big Yellow's attacks and the furious townspeople, all of them were killed, and no survivors remained.

Leave no survivors, this was Jiang Chen's approach towards these evil Blood Devils. Violence must be met with violence.

Chapter 141 – Underground Energy Vein

The flames within Redsun Town had finally died out in the next morning. Almost half the houses and buildings had burned down, and mummified corpses could be seen everywhere. The townspeople had begun cleaning the place. Some of them who had lost their families and friends were crying their lungs out, and some of them couldn't help but curse at the Blood Devils' bodies and torture their already dead bodies, stabbing them with their swords to release their hatred. Even so, they were still filled with misery.

This was the hatred that came after seeing their families slaughtered and their homes destroyed, nothing could help resolve this.

Although they were sad and angry about what had happened to them, most of them felt grateful as most of the people had been saved. A great warrior had arrived just before the disaster had turned worse, and he killed all the Blood Devils and saved them from the slaughter.

At dawn, dozens of mummified corpses were placed in the center of the square. All of them had two holes in their necks, and none of them had a single drop of blood remaining in their body.

Underneath these corpses there was a huge pile of firewood. The Town Marshal and the remaining townspeople gathered around it, their faces filled with grief and hatred. Zhang Wei was holding a fire torch with a trembling hand.

“Town Marshal.”

Zhang Wei looked at the Town Marshal and asked for permission with a trembling voice. Redsun Town was a small, peaceful town, and never in history had something horrible like this happened before.

“Set it on fire.”

The Town Marshal closed his eyes in pain. Zhang Wei got permission, then he immediately threw the fire torch onto the firewood, igniting the piles of wood. In an instant, all the corpses were covered in flames. Popping sounds came from the flames, and the bright fire shone on the faces of the hateful and grieving townspeople. Some of them were crying and screaming, this was a sad moment. Jiang Chen who stood aside was also having some mixed emotions regarding this scene.

In the world of cultivation, the weak are prey to the strong, dog eats dog and devil take the hindmost. It was rare for him to witness a scene so full of humanity.

“Town Marshal, this is young master Jiang Chen from the Black Sect, it was he who saved us by killing those Blood Devils. He had promised to come to our town and help us, it’s all because of him that our town was saved.”

Zhang Wei looked at Jiang Chen and said.

Everyone had recovered from the grieving moment. They all stared at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, their expressions filled with respect and gratefulness. They had seen how strong this man and dog were, and they were truly shocked by their might.

Besides, what Zhang Wei said was correct. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, there wouldn't just be a dozen of mummified corpses right now, the entire town might have gone down in hell's flames, and become a ghost town by now.

It was Jiang Chen who had saved their lives. Without Jiang Chen, there would be no tomorrow for them, and this was an unrepayable favor for all of them.

“Thank you for saving us, young master Jiang.”

The Town Marshal bowed deeply towards Jiang Chen, and so did the remaining few thousand townspeople. Jiang Chen had done them a great deed, and there was no way to repay it. They could only admire him like a savior.

“There's no need to thank me for this, the reason I came here was to kill these Blood Devils.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand and said.

“No, young master Jiang has really done a great deed for all of us! There is no way we can repay such great help! My name is Zhang Zhen, and I'll do whatever young master asks me to do from now!”

Town Marshal Zhang Zhen said with a serious expression.

“Old man, why are you just thanking him, can’t you show some gratitude to your lord dog?”

Big Yellow couldn’t help but tease a bit.

Lord dog? Zhang Zhen was startled by Big Yellow’s words. Although he was grateful towards Big Yellow, asking him to address a dog as lord, that was really tough for him.

“That’s enough. What’s more important now is to let all townspeople settle down. Now that these Blood Devil have been killed, there will be even more coming, the threat is still great.”

Jiang Chen said.

Hearing this, the townspeople became nervous once again. What Jiang Chen said was right, these Blood Devils were cruel and brutal, and now that they had suffered a great loss in Redsun Town, they would definitely come back for revenge, and they would surely bring more forces for their next visit.

“The remaining houses in Redsun Town are more than enough to let our people rest, but, how can we defend ourselves when those Blood Devils strike again?”

Zhang Zhen furrowed his brows and asked.

“Don’t worry, I’ll stay here for now.”

Initially, Jiang Chen had planned to go straight to Yellowstone City, but judging from what had happened, it wasn’t necessary any longer. Since these Blood Devil had appeared around Redstone Area, the Redsun Town had become their first target. Also, it had become their first major defeat, therefore, the town had become the primary target for the Blood Devil leaders. This had made Redsun Town potentially become the main battlefield in the war with the Blood Devils. This was what Jiang Chen wanted, having all Blood Devils coming to him was much easier than for him to search for them everywhere within Yellowstone.

Besides, once these Blood Devil decided that Redsun Town would be their target, the rest of the places in Yellowstone area would be much safer. Also, with those powerful clans residing in Yellowstone City, there was no need for him to worry about their safety.

The news that Jiang Chen was going to stay behind had made all townspeople happy. They had seen how mighty Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were last night. As long as this man and dog were here, they would be safe.

“Young master has done a great deed to our town. From now on, all Mortal Core warriors will fight alongside young master Jiang! We will fight these Blood Devils till the last drop of our blood, and we’ll obey all of young master Jiang’s commands!”

Zhang Zhen strengthened his spirit.

“We will fight alongside young master Jiang till the last drop of our blood!”

All the Mortal Core warriors in Redsun Town shouted at the same time, expressing their determination. All of them had just escaped death, and now, death wasn't as scary as it previously was.

Under the lead of Zhang Wei and a few others, all the townspeople had settled down. Jiang Chen then followed Zhang Zhen and a few other old men from Redsun Town to the meeting hall.

Within the meeting hall, Jiang Chen sat in front of everyone. He looked calm, and his energy had become even stronger than previously. After absorbing two Early Heavenly Core devil orbs, he had managed to form another three Dragon Marks. Right now, there was a total of 90 Dragon Marks within his Qi Sea, and he was one step closer to the Heavenly Core realm.

“Zhang Zhen, please enlighten me regarding Yellowstone's situation.”

Jiang Chen said.

“In the center of Yellowstone there is the Yellowstone City, which is ruled by the Yu family. The chief of the Yu family is a Mid

Heavenly Core warrior. There are dozens of big and small towns surrounding Yellowstone City, and Redsun Town is a rather small and vulnerable town. We never expected that we would become the Blood Devils' first target."

Zhang Zhen said.

"Since I am here, I will protect Yellowstone's safety."

Jiang Chen thought to himself. Right now, attracting the Blood Devils' attention onto Redsun Town was a brilliant move for him, this had saved him a lot of trouble with fighting them.

Jiang Chen knew what he was doing, and he could imagine that in coming days, Redsun Town would become the target of the Blood Devils. Compared to Redsun Town, the other towns would only suffer minor attacks, therefore, Jiang Chen decided to stay in Redsun Town to fight the coming Blood Devils.

But at the same time, Jiang Chen wouldn't just leave the other towns at risk, he wanted to accomplish this task perfectly. He wanted to remove every single Blood Devil in the Yellowstone area and prevent them from harming anyone in the future.

In order to bring peace back to Yellowstone, Jiang Chen alone was definitely not enough. After all, he was only one person, and he couldn't be in many towns at the same time. Therefore, he had to get help from the Yu family.

“Zhang Zhen, send someone to Yellowstone City immediately, get the chief of the Yu family here to meet me. Just tell him I’m a disciple from the Black Sect, don’t mention my name.”

Right now, the people of Redsun Town were nervous and panicking. The Blood Devils might come at any time, and there was no way he could leave now. Initially, he asked Big Yellow to make the trip to Yellowstone City, but Big Yellow had told him he didn’t want to go, and had proposed the idea of asking Chief Yu to come here.

“Will do! Zhang Quan, you will go to the Yellowstone City’s Yu family, send them young master Jiang’s message!”

Zhang Zhen didn’t ask why Jiang Chen wanted the chief of the Yu family to come here, he just turned around and instructed an old man. This old man’s name was Zhang Quan, and he was a peak Mortal Core warrior. With his cultivation level, it would just take him two to three hours to reach Yellowstone City. Besides, Blood Devils only strike at night, and they wouldn’t come out during daytime. And even if he did bump into some, with his peak Mortal Core cultivation base, he could easily escape from them.

“I’ll leave right now.”

Zhang Quan cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen, then he turned around and left with big steps.

“Zhang Zhen, send your men and watch the perimeter of Redsun Town. The rest of you, just carry on with your own tasks.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand and signaled for everyone to leave.

“Young master Jiang, please have some rest here. We won’t disturb you unless those Blood Devils show up.”

After saying that, Zhang Zhen led all the other people and left. Redsun Town was still in a panicked state, and as the Town Marshal, there were a lot of things that he needed to attend to.

After everyone left, Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow and asked, “Big Yellow, why didn’t you want to go to Yellowstone City, and instead asked me to get the chief of the Yu family here?”

Jiang Chen asked curiously.

“You are Yellowstone’s savior, they should come to you, not the other way around. We are men with status!”

Big Yellow said while wagging his head. Jiang Chen couldn’t help but place his palm on his forehead while thinking to himself that only Big Yellow could come up with such reason. But, it was true that Jiang Chen wanted to meet the chief of the Yu family. The task of killing all Blood Devils would really require help from the Yu family.

“Why didn’t you want to go to Yellowstone City yourself?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Because, I found a treasure in Redsun Town.”

Big Yellow whispered to Jiang Chen, his eyes were glowing.

When Jiang Chen heard the word ‘treasure’, his eyes instantly lit up. This dog’s ability to sense treasure had no comparison. Besides, the treasures he found were definitely something precious. No wonder he didn’t want to leave this place, he had found a treasure!

“What treasure? Where is it?”

Jiang Chen eagerly asked.

“Look at your dumb face. Let me tell you, it is huge this time! If my senses aren’t lying to me, right underneath this town, there is an underground energy vein!”

Big Yellow Dog threw out explosive information.

“What? Energy vein?!”

Jiang Chen was shocked, no one else knew better than him what an energy vein meant. Only four energy veins had been found in the entire Qi Province, and they had created the four big sects.

Chapter 142 – Yu Zi Han

Energy vein, it was formed by rich natural energies. Aside from containing a massive amount of energy, it also had the ability to gather natural energies. It was because of the four big sects each occupying one vein each that they were able to grow to their current state.

Also, an energy vein represented luck. By possessing an energy vein, it also meant possessing great luck. One of the reason why all four big sects were so powerful was because of this luck.

If Jiang Chen could own an energy vein, he would be able to establish a clan by himself. Or worse case, he could just absorb the energy contained within and make his cultivation level skyrocket.

“Big Yellow, are you sure?”

Jiang Chen asked doubtfully. Because, with his senses, he was unable to find anything underneath Redsun Town. Of course, he still had high confidence in Big Yellow’s treasure sense ability.

“Of course, who do you think your father is? In treasure hunting, if your father said he was the second best, no one would dare say he was the best! Brat, you are so knowledgeable, you should know that before any energy vein was dug out, there will be a natural barrier covering it, restricting all energy from flowing out, making it so that no one can sense its existence. As long as we can find the exact location of this energy vein, we can break apart its barrier and truly benefit from it. The energy vein underneath Redsun

Town is still in its virgin state, and no one has ever touched it. If they had, the average cultivation level here wouldn't be so weak, and Yellowstone wouldn't be occupied by this Yu family. Of course, if the energy vein was activated, it would already be occupied by some big clan."

Big Yellow explained.

"Perfect, we really didn't waste any effort by staying here, this is such a huge harvest! Big Yellow, are you able to identify the exact location of this energy vein?"

Jiang Chen asked. An energy vein was definitely a huge reward. Just from this finding alone was worth all the effort of coming here.

"I haven't confirmed it, but I'm sure it is underneath this town. I'll scout around in the town now, and once I find its exact location, we'll get to work at night."

Big Yellow's face carried an evil smile.

"Brilliant!"

Jiang Chen gave Big Yellow a big thumbs up and praised him. This dog had done something awesome once again.

Yellowstone City, the biggest city in the area, was huge and magnificent. A small town like Redsun Town could never be

compared with it. Even Silver Moon City was weaker compared to it.

After traveling with full speed, Zhang Quan finally came to Yellowstone City and arrived in front of the Yu family's front door.

“Stop right there, do you know what this place is?”

A strong man with an imposing aura blocked Zhang Quan from going further.

“I'm from Redsun Town, I want to see your Chief.”

Zhang Quan identified himself. He had a disciple from the Black Sect backing him; of course he would be so straightforward.

“Redsun Town? It's just a small town, you're not fit to meet our Chief.”

The guard treated Zhang Quan like he was beneath him.

“Hmph! I wonder if the Blood Devils can make Chief Yu worry. Redsun Town was attacked by Blood Devils last night, and it suffered great losses. Luckily, we got help from a Black Sect disciple, and today, the Black Sect disciple sent me here to meet with Chief Yu. We got business to talk about, and you are just a low-ranked guard, can you afford to neglect the important matters of a Black Sect disciple?!”

Zhang Quan let out a cold snort. He pointed at the guard's nose and snapped.

When the guard heard it was about Blood Devils and a disciple from the Black Sect, his arrogant expression vanished instantly. A few Blood Devils had appeared outside Yellowstone City during the last few days, and everyone was scared of them, including this guard. Besides, he couldn't afford to neglect someone sent by a disciple of the Black Sect.

“Please come with me.”

After some consideration, the guard led Zhang Quan through the Yu family's front door.

Within the Yu family's meeting hall, there were 5 men sitting around. All of them were Heavenly Core warriors, and the person who sat in the Chief's spot looked like he was in his late forties. He had a bright spirit and strong energy, and he was a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, and the chief of the Yu family, Yu Tian Long.

There were another three old men in the hall, and all of them were Early Heavenly Core warriors, they were honorable guests of the Yu family. Next to Yu Tian Long there saw a young man in his twenties, and his cultivation had reached the Early Heavenly Core realm as well. The energy he was unintentionally unleashing was much stronger than that of the other three old men.

These few men were discussing the matters regarding the Blood

Devils when the guard brought Zhang Quan into the hall.

“How can you be so rude, can’t you see we are in the middle of a discussion?”

Yu Tian Long scolded the guard.

“Chief, this man is from Redsun Town, and he said he was sent by a disciple of the Black Sect to meet with Chief.”

The guard said as he cupped his fist.

When they heard about the disciple of the Black Sect, all of them turned their gaze towards Zhang Quan. They didn’t care about Redsun Town, and even less about a peak Mortal Core old man. But, they couldn’t ignore the Black Sect.

“You’re from Redsun Town?”

Yu Tian Long looked at Zhang Quan.

“Zhang Quan from Redsun Town greets Chief Yu! Last night, our town was assaulted by Blood Devils, but we were lucky enough to receive help from a disciple of the Black Sect, and now the threat has been resolved. Since the Blood Devils have caused a disturbance here, the young master from the Black Sect sent me here to invite Chief Yu to pay him a visit in Redsun Town, and discuss how to deal with these Blood Devils.”

Zhang Quan said.

“Ridiculous! He is just a disciple from the Black Sect, how dare he ask our Chief to pay him a visit? Don’t you think he is too arrogant?”

“Hmph! Those Blood Devils haven’t only caused disturbance in Redsun Town, we are currently discussing how to deal with them. Our Chief is a man of honor; he won’t visit your tiny Redsun Town personally.”

“Don’t you think too highly of this disciple from the Black Sect? Our young master is also a disciple of the Black Sect, and he is an inner circle disciple!”

The three old men immediately became angry. Looking at the way they reacted, they were getting ready to chase Zhang Quan out.

Right at this moment, the young man who was doing all the talking waved his hand. He was a handsome man dressed in clean white clothes. He stood up slowly and walked next to Zhang Quan, “Tell me, who is the disciple from the Black Sect who dares be so arrogant? I, Yu Zi Han am an inner circle disciple of the Black Sect, there is no one I don’t know in the Black Sect.”

Yu Zi Han was a genius from the Yu family, he had reached the Heavenly Core realm at a very young age and became an inner circle disciple. He was the pride of the Yu family.

“I don’t know the name of that young master, but it was young master who kill the Heavenly Core Blood Devil Leaders, and didn’t spare a single one of the Blood Devils who assaulted Redsun Town, he is the savior of Redsun Town! My purpose for coming here today is to deliver the message from young master.”

Zhang Quan said.

“Hmph! What an arrogant fool! If he wants to talk with me, ask him to come here personally.”

Yu Tian Long let out a cold snort. He was someone with a noble status, and his son was an inner circle disciple of the Black Sect. Of course he would have his own pride.

“Chief Yu, those Blood Devils suffered a great defeat at Redsun Town yesterday, and they surely won’t give up their attack. That young master has to stay in the town to protect our safety, I hope Chief Yu can understand this.”

Zhang Quan tried to explain.

“Hmph! The reason he wants our Chief to visit him is because he wants the Yu family to help him deal with those Blood Devils. From this, I can tell that ‘young master’ is just an ordinary man, and I don’t think he is stronger than our young master. Since he needs our help, he could come here personally.”

An old man let out a cold snort.

Yu Zi Han furrowed his brows. Just listening to Zhang Quan, he was unable to find out who the disciple in Redsun Town was. There were quite a lot of disciples in the Black Sect who had the abilities to kill Blood Devil leaders, Yu Zi Han himself could do it as well.

“Dad, I’ll follow him to Redsun Town and meet with this disciple of the Black Sect.”

Yu Zi Han said. He knew much more than anyone here about the Black Sect, there were many geniuses in the Black Sect, and all of them had their own pride. Before knowing the identity of the person, he would rather not offend this man.

Of course, Yu Zi Han also had to take care of his father’s dignity. Therefore, he decided to pay a visit to Redsun Town himself.

“This man came here to kill Blood Devils, and if he isn’t too arrogant, we might be able to work together.”

Yu Tian Long nodded his head.

.....

Redsun Town! Zhang Zhen walked in and bowed towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, “Young master Jiang, the young master of Yellowstone City’s Yu family, Yu Zi Han is here. He is also a

disciple of the Black Sect.”

“Oh? A disciple of Black Sect? Send him in.”

Jiang Chen said.

Outside the meeting hall, Yu Zi Han and Zhang Quan were standing side by side. He looked handsome and delicate, and his face carried an unconcealed pride. The pride of a genius.

“Young master Yu, the young master invites you to come in.”

Zhang Zhen walked in front of Yu Zi Han and said.

“Hmph! What an arrogant guy, let me see who this arrogant guy from Black Sect is.”

Yu Zi Han coldly snorted. From his words, one could tell that he had become angry. As an inner circle disciple of the Black Sect, Yu Zi Han was getting along quite well in the Black Sect, and he knew a number of people within. Also, he was the young master of Yellowstone City’s Yu family, and he had put aside his pride by personally coming to Redsun Town. But, this young master had the audacity to not personally greet him.

Yu Zi Han waved his sleeves and walked into the meeting hall. When he saw the young man sitting in the hall, his expression immediately changed.

Jiang Chen!

Yu Zi Han was shocked by what he saw, everyone in the Black Sect knew who Jiang Chen was. He had brutally beaten the Sect Elders, cruelly killed Jiang Wei, wreaked havoc in the Black Sect, and still escaped from any punishments. Jiang Chen was the only person to have ever done this.

If it was any other person, Yu Zi Han would be scolding that person by now, but when he saw it was Jiang Chen, all his anger instantly disappeared.

Yesterday, when Jiang Chen was wreaking havoc in the Black Sect, Yu Zi Han had been at the scene, he had witnessed everything. When Daoist Black came and calmed everything down, Yu Zi Han had received news about Blood Devils appearing in Yellowstone area, and he had immediately left the Black Sect and returned to his family. Therefore, he didn't know that Daoist Black had assigned a task to Jiang Chen.

“You are Yu Zi Han, also from the Black Sect, right?”

Jiang Chen asked, because he had never met Yu Zi Han in the Black Sect before.

Chapter 143 – Travel Underground? Piece Of Cake!

“That’s right, I’m Yu Zi Han, inner circle disciple of the Black Sect. I wondered who was arrogant enough to want my dad to come here personally, but it was actually brother Jiang! Brother Jiang is a peerless genius of the Qi Province, why have you come to Yellowstone’s area?”

Yu Zi Han cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen, he didn’t dare show any disrespect from both his attitude and words. Although he was an inner circle disciple, and Jiang Chen was only an outer circle disciple, and he was Early Heavenly Core warrior while Jiang Chen was only a peak Mortal Core warrior, after witnessing how Jiang Chen had wreaked havoc in the Black Sect, Yu Zi Han couldn’t just treat Jiang Chen as an ordinary outer circle disciple.

Although Jiang Chen’s cultivation was only at the peak of the Mortal Core realm, his combat strength was incredible. Even Jiang Wei who was a Mid Heavenly Core warrior had been killed by him. With Yu Zi Han’s strength, if he were to fight Jiang Chen, he would be defeated with just a single strike.

After witnessing how Jiang Chen had wreaked havoc in the Black Sect, Yu Zi Han had told himself that even if he didn’t have a chance to become friends with Jiang Chen, he would never become his enemy. Jiang Chen was extremely fierce and merciless, Nan Bei Chao and Fan Kun were nobody in his eyes. Even the Sect Elders were hung and brutally beaten by him. A person like this was not someone Yu Zi Han, or even his own family could afford to offend.

“So brother Yu didn’t know about this, the Sect Chief gave me the task of coming to Yellowstone to kill all the Blood Devils, and my primary target is that Lord Blood Moon.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? Brother Jiang, the Sect Chief only sent you alone? These Blood Devils are brutal and cruel, and I’ve heard that Lord Blood Moon has reached the peak Heavenly Core realm. His cultivation level is no weaker than Guan Yi Yun’s or Liang Xiao’s! It’s a suicide mission for brother Jiang!”

Yu Zi Han was shocked. He wasn’t just worried about Jiang Chen, but the safety of Yellowstone and the Yu family as well. Since the war with the Blood Devils had begun, Lord Blood Moon hadn’t come out yet, and now, the Black Sect had sent Jiang Chen alone for this mission. Once he was defeated by Lord Blood Moon, it would be a catastrophic disaster for Yellowstone.

“Brother Yu, you’re looking down on me.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

Yu Zi Han’s expression changed slightly. He immediately cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen and said, “No, I dare not!”

“You are worried that if I fail to defeat that mysterious Lord Blood Moon, not only will my life be at risk, people in Yellowstone will be slaughtered by those Blood Devils, correct?”

Jiang Chen stared at Yu Zi Han with a smile. Yu Zi Han remained silent and admitted to what Jiang Chen said.

“I don’t mind telling you this. Since the Sect Chief sent me here, it simply means that I have the abilities to deal with Lord Blood Moon. Last night, those Blood Devils attacked Redsun Town, and if I was late, this town would be a ghost town right now. These Blood Devils are merciless and cruel, and it’s not my duty alone to deal with them. We have to work together.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Of course! I wonder, does brother Jiang have any plans? The Yu family will be your strongest allies!”

It was a fact that the Yu family could escape from the duty of fighting these Blood Devils. Besides, Jiang Chen had been sent here to kill all the Blood Devils, and Yu Zi Han believed that the Sect Chief wouldn’t risk all the lives in Yellowstone for a joke. Since he had sent Jiang Chen here, it just meant that Jiang Chen had the abilities to handle the situation. Also, when he entered the room just now, all he saw was a confident and calm look on Jiang Chen’s face. There wasn’t even any change when he mentioned the Blood Devils, as if he wasn’t really bothered by these Blood Devils.

Besides, Yu Zi Han didn’t dare look down on Jiang Chen. Ever since he had heard Jiang Chen’s name, he had caused too many miracles, and been involved in many major events that had shaken the Qi Province. He even dared to challenge Nan Bei Chao. Perhaps

he really did have the ability to deal with Lord Blood Moon.

Yu Zi Han was a clever man, he had a feeling that Jiang Chen would become someone great in the future, and a man like this couldn't be compared to Fan Kun. If he could become friends with Jiang Chen, it would be an incredibly good thing for both himself and the Yu family.

“Actually, it's very simple. After what happened last night, Redsun Town will become the Blood Devils' primary target. I'll just stay here and wait for them to attack, and I'll make sure not one survives. As long as they continue to suffer defeat here, I believe all Blood Devils will gather around Redsun Town. For us, it will be much easier to fight like this, rather than searching for them everywhere.”

Jiang Chen paused for a while, then he continued, “Everyone knows how cruel and merciless these Blood Devils are, and none of us know their total number. If they separate themselves everywhere within Yellowstone, that would be a real disaster. Therefore, by luring all Blood Devils here, we can lighten the burden of other places. Now, brother Yu understands why I did all this?”

“Brother Jiang has really given this careful thought. Indeed, with this plan, the casualties and damages done to other places will be greatly reduced. However, at the same time, Redsun Town will become the place that will suffer the most damage. Brother Jiang, if you need anything, just let me know, the Yu family will do whatever we can, not to be shirked without dishonor!”

Yu Zi Han said with a serious tone. Jiang Chen's decision was actually the best option judging from Yellowstone's current situation.

“My request is simple, although those Blood Devils will focus their attack on Redsun Town, that doesn't mean they won't attack other places. I need the Yu family to send some men to all cities and towns in Yellowstone. Firstly, this can protect the people, secondly, your men can gather information about these Blood Devils, especially the whereabouts of that Lord Blood Moon. I don't think this should be a problem for the Yu family, right?”

If Jiang Chen wanted to guarantee the safety of the people in Yellowstone, he would need help from the Yu family. As long as the Yu family could guarantee the safety of the other areas, he would be able to focus his attention on Redsun Town while waiting for the final battle with the Blood Devils.

Those cruel Blood Devils were a disaster for others, but their devil cores were great for Jiang Chen. Therefore, Jiang Chen was actually the disaster for these Blood Devils.

“This is what the Yu family is supposed to do. But, I wouldn't feel good if I let brother Jiang stay here alone to fight them. Yu Zi Han wants to stay at Redsun Town together with brother Jiang, I'll fight alongside brother Jiang!”

Yu Zi Han said with a serious expression.

“Good. It's nice of brother Yu to do this. Besides me, the rest of

the men in Redsun Town are just too weak.”

This was the first time Jiang Chen had met Yu Zi Han, and he had a pretty good impression of him. This man was not a poser, he was sincere and passionate, and Jiang Chen felt he could take this man as his friend.

“If that is the case, I’ll return to Yellowstone City now. Once I have arranged everything there, I’ll come back here and fight together with brother Jiang.”

Yu Zi Han cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen, then he turned around and left.

“That guy is quite a helpful man.”

After Yu Zi Han left, Big Yellow commented.

“At least he wasn’t annoying.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. Yu Zi Han was a talented man, a genius from the inner circle of the Black Sect, and it was rare for him to find someone at his level who could be his match. He could easily defeat a Blood Devil leader, and since the final battle with the Blood Devils was approaching, with the help of Yu Zi Han, the safety of the people in Redsun Town would be guaranteed.

The sky was getting darker. Jiang Chen had instructed Zhang Zhen and the few others what they needed to do at night. Since

Blood Devils usually attacked during the night, the people of Redsun Town would need to be on alert for any possible attack from them.

All townspeople of Redsun Town had settled down, and there were only Mortal Core warriors staying guard near the town's perimeter. Right at this moment, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow secretly arrived at the north side of Redsun Town.

The north side of Redsun Town was a desolated land. Although it was in a better condition compared to the desolate area of Fragrant Sky City, people rarely came to this place during normal days.

“Big Yellow, are you sure the energy vein is here?”

Jiang Chen asked. With the natural barrier around the energy vein, ordinary people would have a hard time sensing it. If this was Jiang Chen in his past life, he would have been able to find it in an instant, but he was no longer a Saint. Although he still had sharp senses and a vast amount of knowledge, his cultivation level limited him from doing lots of things.

“It should be here.”

While wagging his tail, Big Yellow kept walking back and forth in the area. At the same time, Jiang Chen used his Great Soul Derivation skill to unleash his senses to their limits. Soon, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow laid their vision of a small dirt hump at the same time.

“It’s right under there.”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow spoke at the same time. Big Yellow was shocked, he could sense the exact location of the energy vein thanks to his innate ability, but Jiang Chen was able to sense it at the same time. That made Big Yellow really surprised. But, he soon forgot about it, because, along his journey with Jiang Chen, he had seen too many miraculous things from Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen couldn’t sense there was an energy vein underneath Redsun Town, but once the rough location of it was found, with his senses maximized by the Great Soul Derivation skill, it was a piece of cake for him to identify its exact location.

“The energy vein is located at least 3,000 meters underground. In order to get to it, we need to venture deep underground. Buddy, I wonder if you have the ability to travel underground.”

Big Yellow proudly raised his head. Obviously, he had the ability, and he wanted to take this opportunity to make fun of Jiang Chen.

Although ordinary warriors had the ability to break through hard stones and dig holes with bare hands, few of them actually had the ability to travel underground, let alone travel 3,000 meters underground, that was just too difficult.

“Damned dog, don’t try to show off in front of me. In this world, there is nothing that can stop your father! Widen your eyes and watch carefully!”

After saying that, a yellow light suddenly started glowing from Jiang Chen's body. With a stomp of his feet, half his body submerged into the ground. Because of the yellow barrier field around him, Jiang Chen had practically merged with the ground.

“The fuck! Damn you! Buddy, what skill is that?”

Big Yellow almost tripped himself. He was trying to make fun of Jiang Chen, but he never expected that Jiang Chen could actually travel underground, this really pissed him off. In his mind, he had completely labeled Jiang Chen as an abnormal monster.

“Shit, this guy was only fifteen when we left Fragrant Sky City, and now he is only sixteen. I have never seen him with any teacher, but, fuck, why does it seem like he has mastered everything?! This is crazy!”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes. Jiang Chen had taught him one thing, in this world, there really were some things and some people that couldn't be judged by normal standards.

Chapter 144 - Dark Night Slaughter

“Listen, this isn’t a cultivation skill, it’s a movement skill.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Movement skill? There is a movement skill that allows you to travel underground?”

Big Yellow became startled, this was the first time he had heard about this.

“The name of this skill is Dimensional Shift. Once I practice it to the highest level, I will be able to travel in different spaces, shift myself across the skies, ground, or even cosmos. Underground shifting is just one of the usages of the Dimensional Shift. Although I can’t use it perfectly, and can’t shift myself 3,000 meters at once, I can still use it to travel underground.”

Jiang Chen explained. He found the Dimensional Shift in his previous life amongst a treasure hiding spot. He had no idea what level this skill was, but he was sure it wasn’t a useless skill. Jiang Chen had used this skill in his previous life and travelled across the world. Too bad, his current cultivation level was too weak, he couldn’t unleash the Dimensional Shift’s true power. If he could, he would be able to reach the energy vein underground with just a single shift.

“Dimensional Shift? Buddy, where did you get this advanced movement skill?”

Big Yellow had a feeling that Jiang Chen wasn't a sixteen year old teenager, but an old cunning fox who had lived for more than a thousand years.

“Enough nonsense, let's get there quickly, we have to settle everything before those Blood Devils attack.”

Jiang Chen paused for a moment, then he said, “Can you do it or not? If you can't, I'll go myself. Your father can't bring any humans along, not even a dog.”

“Fuck off, your father isn't a dog!”

After saying that, Big Yellow unleashed a layer of yellow light from his body as well. With this yellow barrier, he was able to submerge into the ground just like Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen felt pretty amazed by Big Yellow's ability as well. But, no matter what incredible things this dog did, Jiang Chen wouldn't feel surprised. After all, Big Yellow was a descendant of the Dragon Horse, and he possessed the complete bloodline of a Divine Beast, that was why he had all sorts of innate abilities.

They travelled underground, both of them were completely merged with the dirt. They didn't even cause any movements to the surrounding dirt they passed.

3,000 meters wasn't a long distance, but when it became vertical,

it was a completely different story. Even with the ability to travel underground, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow couldn't travel like they usually did.

After nearly twenty minutes, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow finally arrived 3,000 meters below the surface. They immediately saw a shining energy vein that was twisted and entangled deep under, it looked like a giant snake resting.

The energy vein had a crystal-like transparent look, and it was nearly 300 meters long, and it was as thick as an adult's arm. It was covered by a foggy mist, the mist was a natural barrier field, and it stopped the energy from overflowing. That was the reason why nobody had noticed it until now.

“What a magnificent energy vein, this is a priceless energy vein! With such rich energy within, if I could absorb all the energy essence, my cultivation level will skyrocket! I would have no problem breaking through to the Heavenly Core realm!”

Jiang Chen was extremely happy.

“Buddy, what are you going to do with this energy vein?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Energy veins have the ability to gather natural Yuan energy. If we break the barrier now, Redsun Town will become a land of rich energy, but it will also attract those powerful clans. I think, we

don't break it now, we just cut away a part of it for our own cultivation."

Jiang Chen expressed his opinion. This was a huge energy vein, and it was unrealistic to move it away.

"Buddy, in my opinion, we can put this energy vein into some good use."

Big Yellow said.

"What is your plan?"

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow.

"Buddy, your opponent is the powerful Nan Bei Chao, he is someone that won't be bound to this small place. One day, he will leave the Burning Sky Pavilion for sure, and I think you have similar thoughts, you won't stay in the small Black Sect forever. Why don't you create a foundation around this energy vein, with this vein you can establish your own power in the future."

Big Yellow said.

"You're right, I'm Jiang Chen, and I'll have my mighty reputation left behind everywhere I go. There's a saying that a sly individual has more than one plan to fall back on. Right now, I have won the hearts of all Redsun Town people, and with this energy vein, I can make this place my foundation. It might provide

me great benefits in the future. Besides, owning an energy vein is equal to owning great luck.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. Those who wanted to achieve great things had deep plans and distant thoughts.

“But we still need to use this energy vein now. I’ll just make a hole in the barrier somewhere, then I’ll use a formation to gather the energy together and make it flow to the surface, then I’ll get someone to build me a mansion Redsun Town. I’ll have a temporary cultivation place then.”

Jiang Chen said.

“That’s right. With this, you’ll be able to absorb the source essence of this energy vein, and it will be much stronger than cultivation in the Black Sect. The energy vein underneath the Black Sect has been distributed to so many places, the energy you get there is definitely weaker than here.”

Big Yellow showed a bright smile

“However, it is very difficult to create a formation like this.”

Big Yellow said again.

“It’s merely a formation, no problem for me.”

A confident smile filled Jiang Chen's face. The approaches of the once greatest Saint in the world was not something ordinary people could imagine.

Jiang Chen pointed his finger and unleashed a bright light towards the center of the energy vein. With a 'pop' sound, a hole instantly appeared in the foggy mist that was hovering around the energy vein. The natural barrier was easy to break, it only took a powerful force.

In an instant, intense amount of energy began flowing out from the hole, and it produced a buzzing sound that could be heard around them. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow took a deep breath, they immediately felt refreshed, and their spirit were raised. With help of the Dragon Transformation skill, the energy turned into pure energy that flowed into Jiang Chen's Qi Sea.

This was the essence from the source of the energy vein, it couldn't be compared with the natural energy gathered by the energy vein in Jiang Chen's courtyard within the Black Sect.

"Seal it up quickly, if the energy leaks onto the surface, we'll attract some unwanted attention."

Big Yellow hurriedly reminded Jiang Chen. At the same time, he spat out a golden colored restriction seal towards the small hole. On the other side, Jiang Chen also made a restriction seals with his fingers, then followed by countless seals, all seals merged together and formed into an invisible formation which completely sealed the small hole on the energy vein.

After that, Jiang Chen moved his body upwards while unleashing restriction seals one after another, connecting the formation together in a perfect way. Big Yellow who was watching kept jumping around, he felt so unmotivated he had a feeling of wanting to vomit blood.

“Damn you, is there anything you don’t know?”

Big Yellow was watching how Jiang Chen made the formation, and the more he watched, the more insane he felt. Jiang Chen had a skillful technique, and each restriction seal he unleashed would perfectly merge with the formation, attracting the energy upwards bit by bit. No matter how he looked at Jiang Chen, he had a feeling that he was watching a Grandmaster of formations.

A sixteen year old teenager, and he knew everything. That would be fine, but, not only did he know everything, he had also mastered everything. No matter what it was, Jiang Chen could always do it like he was a Grandmaster.

At last, Big Yellow let out a long sigh. From now onwards, no matter what kind of incredible things happened around Jiang Chen, he wouldn’t be surprised anymore.

Half an hour later, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow finally reached the surface. Jiang Chen was still forming complicated restriction seals with his fingers. On his fingertips, there were threads of bright light dancing around. It was the purest kind of energy, and anyone who stared at it would feel like their souls had been lost.

Suddenly, the dark night became creepier. A demonic breeze suddenly blew by in this silent night. A massive amount of devil energy could be felt coming from afar, a creepy and ferocious laughter could be heard, and it was coming closer and closer.

“The Blood Devils are here.”

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up.

“Looks like there’s more of them tonight compared to last night. Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen sneered. He flipped his palm and unleashed another restriction seal, temporarily sealing the energy completely. After that, he and Big Yellow turned into two bright golden lights and flew towards Redsun Town.

“Hurry, those Blood Devils are here, go get young master Jiang, quickly!”

“Look, young master Jiang is here! The amount of Blood Devils is twice as much as last night, I think there are nearly one hundred of them... I’m worried whether or not young master Jiang can really defeat all of them.”

“Of course he can, young master Jiang has great abilities! He can kill all these Blood Devils in an instant! Don’t be scared people, let’s fight these Blood Devils!”

.....

All the warriors in Redsun Town held weapons in their hands, they were high spirited and determined to fight until the last drop of their blood.

Outside of Redsun Town, a large group of tall and muscular Blood Devils were hastily marching forwards, and they were howling and jumping towards Redsun Town.

These Blood Devils had lost their humanity, their blood red eyes were glowing with blood thirsty looks, and they unleashed utterly ferocious auras.

Four Blood Devil leaders were flying above the sky, one of them was 3 meters tall. Tall and strong like a steel pagoda. He was unleashing a brutal aura around him and carrying a sinister devil weapon, and his cultivation was at the Mid Heavenly Core realm.

“Kill every single living thing in this town, and leave behind all teenage girls for young master’s sacrifice!”

The leading Blood Devil leader gave out a cruel order. He wanted to turn Redsun Town into a ghost town, and leave no survivors.

Aoooooooo.....

Right after the leader gave out his order, the ferocious Blood Devil begun to crazily howl. They stormed towards Redsun Town and destroyed everything along their way.

“Big Yellow, I’ll handle the leaders. The rest of the Blood Devils are yours, kill them all and leave no survivors.”

Jiang Chen told Big Yellow with an unparalleled grandeur.

“Mission will be accomplished.”

Big Yellow let out a loud laugh, then he began sprinting forward while his body was glowing in a golden light. He then began his road of merciless slaughter.

Bam bam bam.....

Big Yellow was too powerful, his body was extraordinarily strong, just like some iron wall. Especially his head, no one could imagine why it was so tough.

Big Yellow pushed his way through by ramming into every single Blood Devil along his way. He was like a mountain tumbling around, and those unfortunate Blood Devils who got hit by Big Yellow all had their bodies break apart, they died horrible deaths. The scene was ultra bloody and brutal.

“Kill! Kill them all!”

The Town Marshal raised his weapon high up and led the warriors of Redsun Town behind him as he followed Big Yellow. Zhang Zhen was a Heavenly Core warrior, and when faced with these Blood Devils, he was like a fierce tiger jumping into a group of sheep. It was a one-sided slaughter.

Such a massive scale of slaughter, these Blood Devils instantly suffered great losses and felt their spirit weaken.

Above the skies, Jiang Chen spread his blood wings widely and blocked the way of the four Blood Devil leaders.

“So, it was you who killed all my men last night?”

The tall like pagoda leader asked with a ferocious look in his eyes.

Chapter 145 – The Mighty Jiang Chen

“That’s correct. Today, all of you, just like those who came here last night, will be buried.”

Jiang Chen spoke with a voice like a great bell while portraying an incredibly imposing manner. His words had been heard by everyone in Redsun Town, and they made everyone become excited. Since Jiang Chen was here, these Blood Devils would definitely die.

“Hmph! You’re just a small Mortal Core warrior, you haven’t even reached the Heavenly Core realm, so how dare you brag in front of me? You’re simply courting death! Three of you, go kill all those townspeople, I’ll handle this guy; I will drink all his blood.”

The Blood Devil leader let out a cruel snort. While giving orders to the other leaders, he stared at Jiang Chen with a blood thirsty look. Once he finished speaking, he stuck his tongue out of his mouth and licked his sharp fangs.

“Understood!”

The other three Blood Devil leaders flew down at the same time. Their speed wasn’t slow, but Jiang Chen was even faster. Without any warning, Jiang Chen blocked the way in front of one leader, then he smashed his skull with just a single palm strike. At the same time, he dug the devil core out from his body.

After brutally and quickly killing the first person, Jiang Chen

didn't slow down. His blood wings swung like a sharp blade and slashed another leader into half, he also dug out his devil core. These devil cores were a great supplement for Jiang Chen.

“What?”

The Mid Heavenly Core leader shouted out in disbelief, he could finally react from the shock. He never expected that this young man whom he looked down upon could have such a ferocious approach and kill two leaders in an instant, making them suffer a great loss.

“You're going die!”

The Blood Devil leader became furious. He raised his devil weapon high up into the air, then he forcefully slashed towards Jiang Chen. With this action, he had just saved the life of the remaining Early Heavenly Core Blood Devil leader, since Jiang Chen was distracted.

Jiang Chen waved his arm and struck with his Axe of Thunder towards the coming devil weapon.

Clang!

Sparks flew off in all directions. The devil weapon produced a buzzing sound after the impact, and the Mid Heavenly Core Blood Devil leader was forced back dozens of meters before he was able to regain his balance. The terrified expression on his face became

thicker.

The Mid Heavenly Core Blood Devil leader was not Jiang Chen's match. Although he was much stronger than Mid Heavenly Core warriors, compared to those inner circle geniuses of the Black Sect, he was still weak. Even Jiang Wei could have defeated this leader, or perhaps even killed him.

When Jiang Chen killed Jiang Wei, he only had 80 Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea, but now he had a total of 90 Dragon Marks, and his combat strength was much higher than before. This Blood Devil leader couldn't withstand even a single blow.

Four Blood Devil leaders, two were instantly killed by Jiang Chen, and another Early Heavenly Core leader had flown down, his target was the townspeople of Redsun Town. But, right at this moment, a white beam came extremely fast from afar. In an instant, it had blocked the way of the leader. It was none other than Yu Zi Han who had rushed over here from Yellowstone City.

“Brother Jiang, I'll handle this Blood Devil.”

Yu Zi Han told Jiang Chen. After that, he immediately struck out with a shining huge palm. The palm flew towards the Blood Devil leader.

Roar!

The Blood Devil leader let out an angry roar, then he unleashed a

huge blood red palm as his counter attack.

Bam.....

Two powerful attacks clashed into each other. The center of collision exploded and ignited a brightness that illuminated the dark skies. The Blood Devil leader was not Yu Zi Han's match, and he was sent dozens of meters away from the impact while coughing blood out from his mouth.

“Hmph! Can't even withstand a single blow!”

Yu Zi Han let out a cold snort, then he struck the hammer while it was still hot. He unleashed a bright that covered his body, then he sprinted towards the Blood Devil leader.

On the other side, Jiang Chen kept striking with his battle axe, crazily attacking the Mid Heavenly Core Blood Devil leader.

Bam bam bam.....

With every strike of the battle axe, a loud explosion like sound would follow. The Blood Devil leader kept blocking the attacks with his devil weapon, but, under Jiang Chen's suppressing attacks, the devil weapon kept being forced back, and his hand was tearing apart. With each one of Jiang Chen's strikes, the Blood Devil leader would spit out a mouthful of blood.

“Damn it, where did this abnormal monster come from, and why

is he so strong?”

The leader couldn't help but curse. Today, he had personally decided to attack, and he had also brought three Heavenly Core leaders with him. In his mind, with this strong force, he would be able to kill everyone in Redsun Town. But, he had never expected he would suffer such great losses. He didn't even have the chance to counterattack.

“Clap of Thunder, face your death!”

Jiang Chen let out a thunderous roar. He unleashed a bright, shining beam from his battle axe, and at the same time, he descended from the skies above. In an instant, he came face to face with the Blood Devil leader.

“Not good!”

The Blood Devil leader became frantic, he could sense a great amount of danger from this attack. But, Jiang Chen's speed was way too fast, it was so fast that the leader couldn't escape at all. He could only move with instincts and raise his devil weapon high up to block the attack.

Clang! Slash!

The devil weapon in the leader's hand couldn't withstand such a heavy blow, it was broken in half. After that, the leader let out a horrifying cry. He was like the devil weapon, chopped in half by

Jiang Chen's battle axe. His blood splashed across the dark skies.

Jiang Chen extended his hand and pulled out the devil core.

Ah!

At the same time, another horrifying cry sounded out from the other direction. The last leader was brutally killed by Yu Zi Han, and died in a horrifying way. Yu Zi Han never showed any mercy towards his opponents, he even destroyed the leader's devil core.

It had only been three minutes since the Blood Devils started their attack and all four leaders were killed. With the attack of Big Yellow and Zhang Zhen, more than half of the Blood Devils on the ground were killed as well. When the rest of the Blood Devils saw that all their leaders had been killed, they instantly lost their wills to fight, then they fled in every direction.

“Hmph! I said it before, leave no survivors! Kill them all!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He landed from the skies and held his battle axe horizontally, he looked like a god of war who had just descended from the skies, and he blocked all the possible retreating routes for the Blood Devils.

With massive force, Jiang Chen swung his battle axe and unleashed a bright axe beam. The axe instantly killed tens of Blood Devils who were coming his way, and they all exploded into blood mist. In an instant, Jiang Chen swung again, and killed another

dozen Blood Devils. For him, these Mortal Core Blood Devils were like ants, he could kill them all day without wasting too much of his energy.

Yu Zi Han looked at the mighty Jiang Chen. He couldn't hide his shock as he thought to himself, "He has become stronger."

That's right, compared to when he killed Jiang Wei, Jiang Chen had obviously become stronger. This could be easily told from how he killed the Blood Devil leader just now. It had only been two days since Jiang Chen killed Jiang Wei, and that meant that Jiang Chen was growing stronger with every single day. This really frightened Yu Zi Han.

Ahh.....

Under Big Yellow and Jiang Chen's cruel slaughter, the rest of the Blood Devils were all killed. Redsun Town's perimeter was filled with dead corpses and the limbs of the Blood Devils. All Blood Devils who had come and attacked today, including four of their Heavenly Core leaders, none of them had survived.

"Mighty Jiang Chen!"

Town Marshal Zhang Zhen raised both hands high up towards the skies and shouted aloud.

"Mighty Jiang Chen!"

“Mighty Jiang Chen!”

.....

Every single one of the Redsun Townspeople were cheering together. Their eyes were glowing as they stared at Jiang Chen, it was as if they were looking at a real god of war savior. This young sixteen year old man, he was the savior of the entire Redsun Town, a true hero for all townspeople.

Jiang Chen’s brutal approaches, his imposing image, it had all been deeply carved into the hearts of every single townspeople. Right now, his heroic image had become bigger and bigger in their minds.

The battle tonight was a pleasant one for the townspeople of Redsun Town, they were on a killing spree. All of them had stained their hands with the blood of the Blood Devils. They were all fighting with their best in order to avenge those who were killed. More importantly, no one was hurt or killed in the battle.

Four Heavenly Core leaders, hundreds of cruel Blood Devils, they were all killed in just a few minutes. Such an incredible outcome wasn’t possible even in the dreams of the townspeople.

Jiang Chen waved his hand, then the cheering immediately quieted down. All of them looked at Jiang Chen, awaiting his next command.

“The battle with the Blood Devils has just begun, it is far from ending. Therefore, all of us have to be extra cautious.”

Jiang Chen said with a loud voice, then he looked at Zhang Zhen and said, “Town Marshal, make a fire and burn all the dead corpses. Keep watching the perimeter tightly, the time to be relaxed is not yet.”

“Understood, young master Jiang!”

Zhang Zhen cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen. He had been completely conquered by Jiang Chen’s might, and he was really grateful as well. Right now, if Jiang Chen asked him to jump into a fire, he would do it without even frowning.

“Brother Jiang, what an incredible tactic! You have my admiration!”

Yu Zi Han cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen. His admiration towards Jiang Chen was sincere.

“Brother Yu is a talented man as well, I’m sure you’ll have a limitless future.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“In front of brother Jiang, I’m just nothing.”

Yu Zi Han shook his head. After today's battle, he had made up his mind. From now on, he would follow Jiang Chen and fight alongside him.

“Brother Yu, did your Yu family make any decisions?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“We have done as Jiang suggested, my dad sent out our men to all cities and towns equally. Also, my dad has long ago heard brother Jiang's name, he hopes he'll have a chance to meet with you in the future.”

Yu Zi Han said.

“Sure, once we get rid of these Blood Devils completely, I'll pay him a visit personally.”

Jiang Chen smiled and said, “Alright, I'll need to take a rest now. Brother Yu, please help me take care of Redsun Town.”

“Rest assured brother Jiang, I won't slack off.”

Yu Zi Han said with a serious expression. When dealing with Blood Devils, there was no room for neglect.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. With the presence of Yu Zi Han, he would be able to cut down a lot of trouble. He turned around and

looked at Zhang Zhen, “Town Marshal, please get someone and help me build a house in the desolate area north of Redsun Town, I’ll need to cultivate there in the future. Later, I’ll let Big Yellow lead your men to the exact location.”

The energy vein was that a secret that Jiang Chen needed to keep. As for these townspeople, once he had killed all Blood Devils and established his authority here, he would consider opening up the energy vein and letting them cultivate. The energy vein had a huge temptation to anyone after all, and once the news spread out, with his current cultivation level and combat strength, he had no confidence he could keep it to himself, and it would also bring huge amounts of trouble for these people.

Chapter 146 – Fan Kun's Lust

When hearing that Jiang Chen wanted to build a house in a desolate area, Zhang Zhen was startled. For Redsun Town, building Jiang Chen a house was pretty simple. These townspeople were more than welcome for Jiang Chen staying here, but what puzzled Zhang Zhen was why Jiang Chen would want to build it in a desolate area.

“Young master Jiang, that area is desolate and has nothing around, let me pick you an excellent spot to build a house that will match young master Jiang's status.”

Zhang Zhen said.

“That's right, young master Jiang, you are the hero of Redsun Town, all of us are grateful for what you have done, we will all be your people from now on! Building you a mansion is what we have to do, but we must have it built at an excellent place.”

Zhang Quan also voiced out his opinion. The desolate area was so remote, and there was nobody around. Building a mansion for Jiang Chen at that place wasn't really a good idea.

“Just do as I said, make the mansion simple. I don't have much to request about it.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen just walked away. Only he himself knew why he wanted to build a mansion in the desolate area.

“Young master Jiang is kind of a weird man, why doesn’t he want a better place, and insists on building the mansion in a desolate area?”

Zhang Quan said.

“Brother Jiang only wants to focus on his cultivation, he isn’t picky about the environment. You guys just do as he told.”

Yu Zi Han said.

“Understood, young master Yu.”

Zhang Zhen and the other men bowed towards Yu Zi Han. This young man was not only an inner circle disciple of the Black Sect, he was also the young master of the Yu family. They didn’t dare show any neglect towards his words.

After Jiang Chen returned to his place of stay, he immediately began absorbing three devil cores. Two Early Heavenly Core and one Mid Heavenly Core. It was a great harvest.

When the Dragon Transformation skill became stronger, the speed of which Jiang Chen could absorb demon souls and devil core had become faster. Three devil cores were completely absorbed by him in a very short amount of time. Although it got tougher and tougher to form new Dragon Marks, with these three Devil Core, Jiang Chen still managed to form six new Dragon

Marks.

“I have 96 Dragon Marks in my Qi Sea now, only four more are needed to reach 100. Even if I stop killing those Blood Devils, once the mansion is built, I can still break through to the Heavenly Core realm using the energy vein.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. After a long journey of killing and slaughter, he had finally approached the Heavenly Core realm. As long as he reached the Heavenly Core realm, his combat strength would increase exponentially. At that time, even Late Heavenly Core warriors wouldn't be his match.

The same night, those Blood Devils had ceased their attacks. All Mortal Core warriors in Redsun Town were closely watching the town's perimeter. At the North side of the town, the once quiet and desolate area had become busy tonight. The townspeople who were being protect from the attacks heard that Jiang Chen wanted a house, so they all came out and willingly offered their help.

The next day, Black Sect outer circle!

At Jiang Chen's courtyard, Yan Chen Yu was standing at the peak of the mountain. Her clothes were fluttering with the mountain breeze, and her vision was thrown afar. Her beautiful and delicate face was filled with worries.

“It's been two days since Big Bro Jiang Chen left, I wonder if he is facing some danger... No, Big Bro Jiang Chen had great abilities, those Blood Devils won't be his match.”

Yan Chen Yu murmured to herself.

Right at this moment, a human figure flew past the skies above, but he immediately turned around and landed not far away from Yan Chen Yu. The man had a handsome face and a tall body, he was Fan Kun.

The reason Fan Kun turned back and landed here was because he saw Yan Chen Yu's face. A few days ago, he had been told by Jiang Wei that Yan Chen Yu was a fairy-like beautiful girl, but he had never had a chance to meet her. When he accidentally saw her face today, he was stunned by her beauty. Even with Fan Kun's pride, he was defeated by Yan Chen Yu's gorgeous appearance.

“Who are you?”

Yan Chen Yu stared at Fan Kun. When she sensed Fan Kun's evil gaze, she couldn't help but furrow her brows.

“My name is Fan Kun, and I think you must be junior disciple Yan Chen Yu. I've adored junior disciple Yan for a long time! Your beauty is really out of this world, it is so rare to see such a beautiful girl.”

Fan Kun kept throwing examining looks at Yan Chen Yu. Even with his strong will, he couldn't help but have lustful feelings. Besides, he and Jiang Chen were enemies.

“You are the Fan Kun who wants to kill Big Bro Jiang Chen?”

When hearing the name Fan Kun, Yan Chen Yu’s expression immediately changed, a disgusted look appeared on her face instantly.

Yan Chen Yu addressing Jiang Chen as ‘Big Bro Jiang Chen’ made Fan Kun jealous. In his mind, a beautiful girl like this should belong to him, Fan Kun. Jiang Chen didn’t deserve this girl.

“Junior disciple Yan, there is nothing you can get if you follow Jiang Chen, why don’t you just follow me? I am the leader of the inner circle, and soon I’ll break through to the Divine Core realm and become a true core disciple! Besides, my grandfather is a Sect Elder. Once you become my girl, you can enjoy all the resources in the Black Sect as you wish!”

Fan Kun tried convinced her with an evil smile.

“Get lost!”

Yan Chen Yu rejected him without any hesitation, then she turned around without even taking a second look at Fan Kun.

Seeing this, Fan Kun’s expression turned stern. Yan Chen Yu’s reaction had deeply hurt his pride. In the entire Qi Province, with Fan Kun’s cultivation level and potential, he could get all the girls he wanted, let alone the Black Sect where he was always surrounded by girls. He had lowered his pride and talked nicely to

Yan Chen Yu, but not only had she rejected him, she had also offended his pride.

“Hmph! Yan Chen Yu, let me tell you this, your Big Bro Jiang Chen was sent to kill those Blood Devils, and I’m sure that is a one-way trip, becoming my girl is your best option!”

Fan Kun let out a cold snort.

“Big Bro Jiang Chen will never die! Who do you think you are? You can’t even be compared with my Big Bro Jiang Chen!”

Yan Chen Yu kept confronting Fan Kun. In her heart, there was no one who could replace Jiang Chen, and this Fan Kun had the audacity to curse Jiang Chen to death in front of her. This was like stepping right onto Yan Chen Yu’s feet. Her hatred towards Fan Kun had reached its limits.

“You better not reject me and provoke me, I have been polite to you!”

Fan Fun was pissed off.

Right at this moment, a figure came from with great speed, and soon landed next to Yan Chen Yu. It was Sect Elder Guo Shan.

“Fan Kun, what are you doing here?”

Guo Shan stared at Fan Kun and asked him with a stern tone.

“Sect Elder Guo, I was just passing by and tried saying hello to junior disciple Yan.”

Fan Kun cupped his fist towards Guo Shan. Guo Shan was after all the chief alchemist of the Black Sect, and he had a status that was not any weaker than Fan Kun’s grandfather. He couldn’t offend him.

“You are not welcome here, get lost, and don’t come here anymore.”

Guo Shan waved his sleeves and spoke without considering Fan Kun’s feelings. If it wasn’t for him not wanting to provoke Fan Kun’s grandfather, Guo Shan would have just slapped him and sent him far away.

“Understood.”

With a smile on his face, Fan Kun turned around and left. Right as he turned his back, an insidious expression immediately appeared.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen is definitely going to die in Yellowstone, and this bitch still wants to act like a loyal girl who dares to reject and provoke me? I will soon show you some colors!”

Fan Kun’s face was filled with evil intentions.

An enemy that struck once wasn't horrible, but an enemy hiding in the dark and kept planning evil things was one that people should be afraid of. Now, Yan Chen Yu had been targeted by Fan Kun, and there would just be more problems coming soon.

Redsun Town!

The townspeople spent an entire day before Jiang Chen's mansion was finished. They even decorated the house and filled it with all sorts of furniture.

Jiang Chen came to the mansion, and he couldn't help but nod his head. The mansion wasn't huge, but it wasn't small either. It was beautifully decorated, and it portrayed a domineering image. It was a perfect match for Jiang Chen.

There was a total of six finely built rooms within the mansion, and right in the middle there was a glorious meeting hall. From all of this, one could easily tell how grateful these townspeople were towards Jiang Chen.

"Young master Jiang, are you satisfied with your mansion?"

Zhang Zhen asked with a smile.

"En, very good, Town Marshal, thank you all for the hard work."

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“I’m so glad young master Jiang likes it! If you have anything you need in the future, young master Jiang should just let me know, and we’ll do our best to provide it to you.”

Zhang Zhen said.

The same night, Jiang Chen placed a cushion in a room within his mansion and connected it to the formation and the energy vein. With this, he could just sit on it and absorb the energy from the vein.

This night, all the townspeople were much panicked. They knew the Blood Devils’ third strike would be much larger than the previous two. There might even be even more powerful Blood Devil leaders coming.

But, what puzzled everyone was that the night passed peacefully, and there was no sight of any Blood Devils.

“Brother Jiang, those Blood Devils have suddenly become quiet, I’m sure they are planning something big.”

Yu Zi Han said.

“That’s right, this doesn’t seem to be their approach. I guess, they are planning and preparing a bigger assault, they want to destroy Redsun Town in on go. There might even be a Late

Heavenly Core leader in the next attack, or perhaps even Lord Blood Moon himself.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“I was worried about that too. If that is the case, I don’t think we can defend ourselves.”

Yu Zi Han said worriedly.

“Zi Han, continue the surveillance, we must make sure the safety of the townspeople is taken well care of. I’ll enter secluded cultivation to break through to the Heavenly Core realm now, and once I manage to break through, even if a Late Heavenly Core leader comes, I’ll be able to handle them.”

Jiang Chen said in a serious manner. The battle with the Blood Devils would become more intense, and Jiang Chen had to break through to the Heavenly Core realm as soon as possible. Only then could he handle the upcoming battle.

“What? You’re going to break through to the Heavenly Core realm?!”

Yu Zi Han shouted out as he stared at Jiang Chen with disbelief. Jiang Chen’s cultivation progress never stopped, he had come to the Black Sect not long ago, and now he was going to break through to the Heavenly Core realm.

“That’s correct.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Brother Jiang is really a cultivation monster, I can only envy your talent. I wish brother Jiang all the best in breaking through to the Heavenly Core realm, then we’ll kill all those Blood Devils together!”

After saying that, Yu Zi Han turned around and left. Jiang Chen was going to enter secluded cultivation, therefore, all the matters in Redsun Town would need his attention.

After Yu Zi Han left, Jiang Chen closed the door and prepared himself to break through to the Heavenly Core realm with the help of the energy vein.

“Big Yellow, I’m going to break through to the Heavenly Core realm now, please help me guard the surrounding area.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Damn you, I am tired, I’m going to sleep now.”

Big Yellow let out a big yawn, then he turned around and entered another room.

Jiang Chen was startled. When this dog was tired and wanted to

sleep, it was actually a sign that he was going to break through.

“Fuck, didn’t this dog just break through a few days ago?”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes, he felt somewhat depressed. He had put all his effort into cultivating, he had plundered and stolen energy and resources everywhere, breaking through was tougher than eating shit. But, if compared to this dog, it was like..... Never mind, it was just a waste of time to compare with this dog.

Chapter 147 – Invincible

Jiang Chen walked into his room and shut the door behind him, then he sat down on a cushion with his legs crossed. Big Yellow went to sleep, but in fact, he was about to break through to the next realm. If nothing wrong happened, once Big Yellow woke up, he would reach the Heavenly Core realm.

The cushion Jiang Chen sat on was connected directly to the underground energy vein. The energy vein's barrier had been broken a little, and that meant Jiang Chen could use the cushion to absorb as much energy as he wanted.

Having a matured energy vein was the same as having a huge treasure, and Jiang Chen was now occupying it alone. The speed in which you could cultivate by using the energy vein was extremely fast, and now, he already had 96 Dragon Marks, and he just needed another four to reach the Heavenly Core realm.

Jiang Chen had no issue using the essence of the energy vein to form another 4 Dragon Marks. Since he came to Redsun Town, he had fought two battles with the Blood Devils, and both times he had killed every single one of them. The third time, the Blood Devils might send even stronger forces. Having been defeated in two battles, there was no doubt that there would be a Late Heavenly Core Blood Devil in the third one. With Jiang Chen's current cultivation level and combat strength, he could kill Mid Heavenly Core Blood Devils with ease, but he would have a difficult time fighting Late Heavenly Core Blood Devils.

Therefore, Jiang Chen had to break through to the Heavenly

Core realm as soon as he could. As long as he broke through to the Early Heavenly Core realm, he would be able to kill those Late Heavenly Core Blood Devils, and he would have the strength to fight Lord Blood Moon.

“Unlock the seal, I’ll absorb all I can now.”

Jiang Chen unlocked the seal, and underneath the control of the formation, a huge amount of energy started rushing into Jiang Chen’s body like a tsunami.

Shhh~~

Because of the powerful impact of energy, Jiang Chen couldn’t help but let out a pleased sigh. He hurriedly started circulating the Dragon Transformation skill and started converting the energy into the purest energy, then he had it all flow into his Qi Sea.

Within his Qi Sea, the blood colored Dragon Marks started flowing out from his Mortal Core and started swimming around as if they were real dragons, it looked miraculous and magnificent. At the same time, some Dragon Marks turned into shadowy figured and hovered around Jiang Chen’s body, making him look like a Dragon Emperor.

Buzz... buzz....

The impact of the energy was intense, and a buzzing sounded out from within Jiang Chen’s body. Followed by the appearance of the

buzzing sound, a 97th Dragon Mark started condensing.

A complete and mature energy vein was incredibly powerful, the benefits of its pure energies were much greater than that of those demon souls and devil cores. When Jiang Chen absorbed the energy essence, not only would it help him form new Dragon Marks and increase his cultivation, it would also help strengthen his body. With the help of the Dragon Transformation skill, his body became stronger and stronger.

Buzz.....

The buzzing sound seemed to never end, and Jiang Chen was surrounded by flying dragon shadows. Two hours later, he had finally formed a total of 100 Dragon Marks. At this moment, a deep and subtle dragon roar sounded out from within his body, making Jiang Chen look like an ancient beast that was about to awaken.

The Dragon Transformation skill was too powerful, and it would be even more powerful in the future. Sooner or later, Jiang Chen would transform into a real dragon and soar through the skies.

“Finally, I have managed to form 100 Dragon Marks! Haha, it’s time for me to break through to the Heavenly Core realm!”

Jiang Chen was laughing out loudly. If it was some ordinary peak Mortal Core warrior that wanted to break through to the Heavenly Core realm, there would be no way for them to do it, even with the sufficient energy. Because, in order to do so, that person would need to learn how to control the natural energies. From the Mortal Core realm to the Heavenly Core realm, it was a huge bottleneck

for all cultivators.

But this bottleneck didn't exist for Jiang Chen, he had the cultivation experience of a Saint. All bottlenecks were nothing but jokes to him. Because he cultivated the Dragon Transformation skill, what he needed was only energy. As long as he had sufficient energy, he would be able to break through all the way, there simply was no bottleneck for him.

Jiang Chen took out a huge amount of Mortal Restoration Pills and put them into his mouth, he absorbed them like it was something worthless.

Roar~

Jiang Chen raised his head up and let out a loud roar, like a dragon that had just awakened, howling to notify everyone of his presence. Everyone in Redsun Town could hear this loud roar, and they could feel sky piercing energy coming out from Jiang Chen's mansion, and a mighty pressure spread across the entire town, shocking everybody.

“He broke through so quickly...”

Yu Zi Han looked at the sky piercing energy waves and murmured to himself. He couldn't find any suitable words to describe the abnormal monster Jiang Chen anymore.

“Look, such powerful energy! It is young master Jiang, he is

breaking through to the Heavenly Core realm!”

“Haha, great, this is great! Young master Jiang really is a peerless genius, he was able to kill Heavenly Core Blood Devils while at the peak of the Mortal Core realm, and after he breaks through to the Heavenly Core realm, those Blood Devils will not be his match!”

“Great, after young master Jiang breaks through to the Heavenly Core realm, his combat strength will become even greater! This is great news for all of us in Redsun Town!”

.....

All townspeople in Redsun Town were very excited, especially Zhang Zhen and a few other elders. Right now, Redsun Town had become the Blood Devils’ primary target, and these people’s biggest help, as well as their only help, was actually Jiang Chen. Therefore, the stronger Jiang Chen became, the more excited they became.

Within the mansion, the golden colored Mortal Core in Jiang Chen’s Qi Sea forcefully pulsed. It was surrounded by numerous blood colored Dragon Marks, and the Mortal Core kept changing. Right now, it had grown to twice its previous size, and it had become more rounded and shiny.

Right at this moment, the Mortal Core had evolved into a Heavenly Core.

Jiang Chen casually waved both his hands, and in an instant, the surrounding natural Yuan energies flowed into his body like a tsunami. Lifted by the natural Yuan energies, Jiang Chen's body slowly floated upwards, but this time, he didn't use his blood wings to fly, he instead did it by controlling the natural Yuan energies.

“Haha.....”

Jiang Chen let out a happy laugh. He had finally broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, and once again he had gotten back the feeling of controlling the natural Yuan energies. A dragon figure formed by his qi and blood was flying around above his head while portraying a pure yang energy.

The successful forming of 100 Dragon Marks had given Jiang Chen's combat strength an incredible boost. He had no idea how much strength he had gained right now, a Mortal Core and a Heavenly Core, they were completely different and couldn't be compared at all.

Jiang Chen clenched his fist tightly, making a cracking sound from his fingers joints, and his eyes were glowing with confidence. With his current combat strength, he could easily defeat any ordinary Late Heavenly Core warriors.

“I've finally broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, but it gets tougher and tougher to cultivate the Dragon Transformation skill... According to the scripture, from the Early realm to the Mid realm, I will need a total of 200 Dragon Marks, and if I want to reach the Late Heavenly Core realm, the number would double

again, a total of 400 Dragon Marks... This is giving me a headache...”

Jiang Chen let out a long sigh. Although the Dragon Transformation skill was really strong, it was really tough to cultivate as well. Let alone the far future, just by looking at the current situation, if he wanted to break through to the Mid Heavenly Core realm, he would need to form another 100 Dragon Marks, and that would require a massive amount of energy.

But soon after, a determined expression emerged on his face, “By cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, I’ve begun walking down a path destined to be filled with killing and slaughter. The road to 100,000 Dragon Marks, I’ll kill all who dares get in my way.”

Settling down his energy, Jiang Chen didn’t leave his room straightaway, but continued sitting on the cushion and absorbing energy. It was now late at night, and those Blood Devils weren’t here yet, and it looked like they wouldn’t come either.

Before Jiang Chen came here, he had eaten the Five Elemental Pill in the Black Sect, strengthening and stabilizing his foundation, and in a short period of time, he wouldn’t have to worry about problems arising when breaking through. Therefore, Jiang Chen was going to utilize the energy vein and continued forming new Dragon Marks, and make his cultivation base at the Early Heavenly Core realm completely stabilize.

Time flew by, and soon, one day had passed. In one day, Jiang Chen had formed another 8 new Dragon Marks, making it a total of

108 Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea. His combat strength had increased yet again.

Jiang Chen finally stopped absorbing energies. The effectiveness of the energy impact had come to a limit, he needed to stop and let his newly formed Dragon Marks settle down.

This night, there was still no sight of the Blood Devils. The time reached dawn, but still no Blood Devils came by.

For three consecutive days, it almost seemed like the Blood Devils had disappeared. Although some of them had appeared in other cities within Yellowstone, under the Yu family's control, these Blood Devils couldn't cause much damage.

“Young master Jiang, something isn't right with those Blood Devils, it has been three days but they still aren't here.”

Zhang Zhen said worriedly.

“I don't know what those Blood Devils are planning to do, but guys, don't worry, brother Jiang has now broken through to the Heavenly Core realm! Even if there are some powerful Blood Devil leaders, he will be able to defeat them!”

Yu Zi Han had a very high amount of confidence towards Jiang Chen.

Bam.....

Right after Yu Zi Han finished his words, a huge explosion sounded out from afar. After that, a demonic breeze blew by, and following after was a massive group of Blood Devils. They were coming towards Redsun Town with extreme speed.

“They are here.”

Zhang Zhen’s expression changed. The time was now dawn, and it was out of everyone’s expectations that these Blood Devils would actually pick this time to strike.

“Looks like there are more than two hundred Blood Devils. Everyone, get ready, it is going to be a tough battle!”

Yu Zi Han strengthened his spirit.

Jiejie.....

The evil laugh of the Blood Devils came from afar. Above the skies, six Blood Devil leaders came by. Yu Zi Han threw a look towards these leaders, then he found out that the leading Blood Devil was at the Late Heavenly Core realm. Next to him, there were two Mid Heavenly Core Blood Devils and three Early Heavenly Core Blood Devils, a total of six Heavenly Core Blood Devils. They really came with strong forces.

Yu Zi Han’s face darkened, the enemy was too strong. Even though Jiang Chen had the ability to handle the Late Heavenly

Core leader, who would be the one to handle the other two Mid Heavenly Core leaders? With Yu Zi Han's combat strength, he just might be able to fight one if he used all his strength, but he would probably eventually be defeated.

Yu Zi Han and all the townspeople became worried and panicked. But, there was someone who wasn't worried at all. Jiang Chen leapt out from his mansion, and at the same time, a golden figured also came out from a room and caught up to Jiang Chen, it was Big Yellow.

“Buddy, you broke through?”

Big Yellow asked while wagging his tail.

“Fuck, you damned dog, how come you also broke through to the Heavenly Core realm?! You were only sleeping! Damn, do you want me to envy you? Don't tell anyone that I know you!”

Jiang Chen almost coughed out some blood, this dog was actually the real abnormal monster!

Chapter 148 – The Blood Devils Bane

Although he was slightly depressed, Jiang Chen was still excited that Big Yellow had broken through to the Heavenly Core realm at this point of time. No one knew better than Jiang Chen about Big Yellow's combat strength. Since those Blood Devils were attacking once again, with the help of Big Yellow, killing all these Blood Devils would just become easier.

“Buddy, looks like those Blood Devils are coming with even more forces, I can sense the energy of a Late Heavenly Core Blood Devil.”

Big Yellow said.

“Hmph! No matter how many of them come, I'll leave them no return. Big Yellow, follow me and attack, let's kill all Blood Devils and leave no survivors.”

Jiang Chen snorted. With extremely fast speed, he arrived outside of Redsun Town in an instant, and Big Yellow followed behind closely with an excited expression. All demon beasts were fierce and wild by nature, not the mention this Dragon Horse who possessed the bloodline of a Divine Beast, he was even more brutal, and he excelled in slaughter. A battle with the Blood Devils, Big Yellow simply loved it.

“Congratulations for breaking through to the Heavenly Core realm, brother Jiang.”

Yu Zi Han said with a smile.

“Young master Jiang, those Blood Devils are here.”

Zhang Zhen held his combat weapon and seemed nervous.

“Don’t worry, I’ll make sure they all end up like the previous groups. No matter how many of them are here, I’ll kill them all. Follow my command and kill them all, don’t let a single Blood Devil step into town.”

Jiang Chen unleashed a golden glow that covered body, he looked like a peerless god of war giving out his orders.

All the people of Redsun Town were staying within the town itself, therefore they needed to fight those Blood Devils outside the town.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow flew up into the skies immediately, blocking the way of the six Blood Devil leaders. Just as Yu Zi Han was about to follow them, Jiang Chen stopped him and said, “Zi Han, you stay together with Town Marshal and kill those Blood Devils on the ground, don’t show any mercy, kill all you can. Let me and Big Yellow handle these leaders.”

Jiang Chen made Yu Zi Han stay below. There were nearly 200 Blood Devils this time, and there were only 30 Mortal Core warriors in Redsun Town, and they were outnumbered. Zhang

Zhen would have a difficult time killing all of them, and if Yu Zi Han didn't help him, with the huge amount of Blood Devils, the warriors of Redsun Town would certainly suffer, and this was not something Jiang Chen wanted to see.

“Alright.”

Yu Zi Han nodded his head, turned around and flew back down. Before he reached the ground, he unleashed a huge golden palm towards the main group of Blood Devils.

Bam..... Ah.....

Followed by some horrified screams, Yu Zi Han's attack had killed about 6 Mortal Core Blood Devils in an instant.

“Kill them all, leave no survivors!”

Yu Zi Han shouted out loudly as he took the lead and sprinted towards the group of Blood Devils.

“Attack!”

The yells and screams were so loud that the sky simply shook. At dawn, outside Redsun Town, a raw and cruel slaughter had begun.

Above the skies, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were blocking the path of 6 Blood Devil leaders standing opposite of them. The Late

Heavenly Core warrior had a stern expression as he stared at the man and dog in front of him with a bloodthirsty look in his eyes.

“Kill them!”

The leader cruelly gave out his order. Just as his words left his mouth, the other five leaders immediately surrounded Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, then begun attacking.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow looked at each other, and with a smile, they struck at the same time.

Big Yellow targeted an Early Heavenly Core leader with his head, he rammed towards him with lightning speed.

Fast, it was incredibly fast. The leader didn't even have the time to react, and he instantly exploded into a bloody mist, he had died a horrifying death.

On the other side, Jiang Chen made the head of an Early Heavenly Core leader exploded with a powerful punch. It was so fast he didn't even have the chance to scream.

It all happened so fast, these leaders never expected their opponents to be so strong. Due to no survivors being left from their previous two attacks, none of these Blood Devils actually knew what happened. They thought their leaders fought tough battles before they were killed, but in fact, they were actually killed by Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in an instant. The lack of

information made two of their leaders die instantly.

When the other three leaders were stunned by what happened, Big Yellow rammed his head into the last Early Heavenly Core leader, making him scream out in pain and die on the spot.

Jiang Chen was even faster, a golden axe appeared in his hand, and in the next second he slashed the Mid Heavenly Core leader into half, and he even picked up his devil core. As for the other three Early Heavenly Core devil cores, Jiang Chen didn't waste his time collecting them, as demon souls and devil cores at his own level was useless to him. The energy required when cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill was incredible, he needed to absorb demon souls and devil cores that were at a higher level than himself.

“What?!”

The Mid Heavenly Core leader who was just about to attack shouted out in disbelief, he was frightened by what he saw and immediately flew backwards to save his own life. Right now, even the Late Heavenly Core leader couldn't remain calm any more. His eye widened as he stared at the scene in front of him, he couldn't believe what he had just witnessed.

The battle hadn't even started yet, and four of the Blood Devils who attacked with him had been killed in an instant. They were Heavenly Core Blood Devils, an incredible powerful force. Was this man and dog in front of him some monsters? They just killed 4 Heavenly Core leaders in an instant, how could he fight with them?

“Let me handle them!”

The Blood Devil leader took a step forwards, he had locked down Jiang Chen and Big Yellow with his powerful energy. Although the intrepid behavior of the duo in front of him had surprised him, but since he had a strong cultivation base, he didn't really care. He had enough confidence in himself that he could kill them both.

“Come!”

Jiang Chen provoked him and swung his battle axe towards the leader at the same time.

Bam~

Clap of Thunder, it was a mighty attack with a devastating force, the attack approached the leader in an instant. The massive amount of energy was like a huge mountain pressing towards him, and it made his expression change dramatically. The attack of the young man in front of him had put him under a lot of pressure, and he was extremely shocked by the attack.

“Die now!”

The Late Heavenly Core leader shouted out loudly. At the same time, a devil blade that was formed entirely from his devil energy appeared in his hand, and it forcefully pierced towards Jiang Chen.

Bam!

A loud explosion sounded out and shook the ground, the leader's devil energy blade was shattered in an instant, and he was forced back dozens of meters by the impact. He could only feel that his qi and blood was in a mess, and it made him feel terrible.

Haha.....

Jiang Chen was laughing out loudly in an imposing manner. His combat strength was so powerful that even a Late Heavenly Core Blood Devil was unable to match him.

This was Jiang Chen's current combat strength, and those ordinary Late Heavenly Core warriors were not his match at all. Perhaps only a genius like Fan Kun might be able to withstand Jiang Chen's mighty strength, or maybe Guan Yi Yun or Liang Xiao.

“Young master Jiang is really strong!”

“Haha, these Blood Devils can't do us any harm! Young master Jiang alone is enough to kill all of them! Also, that big yellow dog is also a terrifying being! Kill those Blood Devils!”

.....

When the townspeople of Redsun Town saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's magnificent performance, all of them were excited like

they just swallowed some kind of stimulant, and their spirits had reached the maximum. This was the influence brought forth by Jiang Chen. If the battle with these Blood Devils was a war, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow would be the generals leading the army. A general could really influence the spirit of the entire army.

“This is terrifying! The one-year fight agreement, he might really be able to defeat Nan Bei Chao!”

Yu Zi Han couldn't calm himself down. Jiang Chen was definitely the biggest genius he had ever met.

Kaka.....

Big Yellow was laughing out in joy. He pointed his head towards the stunned Mid Heavenly Core leader and started ramming towards him. Right now, Big Yellow had broken through to the Heavenly Core realm as well, so for him, handling a Mid Heavenly Core Blood Devil was just a piece of cake.

When Big Yellow prepared to attack, Jiang Chen moved again. In an instant, he appeared in front of the Late Heavenly Core warrior, and with a stern voice he said, “One strike.”

After saying that, nine identical Jiang Chen's suddenly appeared and surrounded the Late Heavenly Core leader. Actually, if Jiang Chen wanted to kill him, there was no need for him to use the Nine Phantom Wolves, but Jiang Chen did so because he didn't want to waste any more time on him.

“What?”

The leader shouted out with a shocked expression. The appearance of nine Jiang Chen's confused him, he couldn't tell which the real Jiang Chen was.

But Jiang Chen didn't give him any time to guess. Under Jiang Chen's control, the nine Jiang Chen's raised their battle axes and chopped towards the Blood Devil leader at the same time. The leader knew that only one of the attacks was real, and the other eight were fake, they couldn't harm him at all.

But too bad, this leader couldn't tell which Jiang Chen was the real one. Also, because of Jiang Chen's extreme speed, he was forced to immediately defend himself. This was the horrifying part of the Nine Phantom Wolves skill.

Ahh.....

The Blood Devil leader could only shout out loudly and leap towards one of the Jiang Chen's. Right now, he could only depend on his luck.

Pop~

The Jiang Chen he attacked shattered instantly, it was only a feeling. The leader had a bad feeling, but he just didn't have the time to defend himself anymore. Jiang Chen's battle axe had reached his head and chopped him into half. Jiang Chen

immediately grabbed the devil core after splitting the leader.

Ah!

At the same time, the last Mid Heavenly Core Blood Devil couldn't defend himself from Big Yellow's powerful attack. He was killed by Big Yellow's head smash. It was a painful and miserable way of dying.

The Blood Devils had spent a few days preparing this assault, they were determined to kill every single one in Redsun Town, but they never expected that just a few minutes after their attack had begun, all their leaders would be killed. The remaining Blood Devils became panicked and clueless in an instant, they could only howl and scream right now.

“Kill them all, leave no survivor!”

Jiang Chen was a cruel man. He and Big Yellow flew down from the skies and went straight into the group of Blood Devils. These Blood Devils were like ants in front of the two of them, killing them was like cutting vegetables.

Finally, every single Blood Devil had been killed, none of them had survived the slaughter. When they picked Redsun Town as their first target, the Blood Devils had no idea that they had actually just picked their own burial grounds.

With Jiang Chen staying in Redsun Town, no matter how many

Blood Devils came, they would all die. After killing so many Blood Devils, Jiang Chen really wished to meet with Lord Blood Moon.

Chapter 149 – Yan Chen Yu's Crisis

The undefeatable and feared Blood Devils, they had become so vulnerable in the people's minds. The existence of Jiang Chen had brought the Blood Devils unimaginable destruction and losses.

The outstanding result of complete annihilation three times in a row had made Jiang Chen's reputation reach a great high. In the hearts of the Redsun Town people, Jiang Chen was like a noble and mighty immortal.

Jiang Chen was in high spirits. The reason why he could cause the Blood Devils such heavy losses in such a short period of time was mainly because of Redsun Town. Jiang Chen had made the town become the primary target of the Blood Devils, and this was actually a wise move. Not only had it saved the other cities from a huge amount of trouble within their areas, it had also saved him a lot of effort, because he didn't need to look for Blood Devils everywhere.

After having gone through three battles, the hatred between the Blood Devils and Redsun Town had come to an unresolved stage. Although Jiang Chen had yet to meet Lord Blood Moon, he could imagine someone like him would definitely organize another round of a fiercer attack until Redsun Town became ruined.

In the next two days, out of Jiang Chen's expectations, Lord Blood Moon had yet to show himself. But, his Blood Devils had organized another two rounds of major attacks, and the results were the same as the previous battles. No matter how strong or powerful leaders they sent, all of them eventually died miserably

in Redsun Town, and there were no survivors.

By continuously battling, Jiang Chen was the one who got the most benefits. While utilizing the energy vein, as well as absorbing the devil cores he got from killing those Blood Devils, his combat strength had skyrocketed, and he now had a total of 120 Dragon Marks.

Also, the news about the battles in Redsun Town had spread across every corner of Yellowstone in the last few days. Jiang Chen's outstanding and mighty performance was known by every single person in Yellowstone. When Jiang Chen's name was mentioned, everyone could admire him to the limits.

Everyone in Yellowstone, including the Yu family, knew very well that while it seemed like Jiang Chen had saved Redsun Town, in fact, he had actually save all of Yellowstone. Without Jiang Chen, the huge amount of Blood Devil would have already wreaked havoc in Yellowstone.

Therefore, Jiang Chen was the savior of every single person in Yellowstone, and all of them were grateful for what he had done.

“Brother Jiang, you are a true hero! By continuously killing those Blood Devils, everyone in Yellowstone are grateful for what you have done.”

Yu Zi Han was happy. After fighting the Blood Devils alongside Jiang Chen, he had tasted the feeling of a blood boiling battle. This was the first time he had met someone that could be so mighty,

and after a few battles, he had completely submitted to Jiang Chen.

“The battle with the Blood Devils is far from ending. Lord Blood Moon has yet to make his appearance, and this doesn’t look like his style. I think he will be here for their next attack. Therefore, it’s not yet time for us to relax.”

Jiang Chen said.

“That’s right. Although Lord Blood Moon hasn’t made his appearance yet, everyone knows how cruel and brutal Blood Moon Shaman was. Everyone can still remember the huge disturbance he created decades ago, and I think this Lord Blood Moon has the same characteristics as him.”

Yu Zi Han’s expression changed into a serious one.

“Watch closely for any possible movements from this Lord Blood Moon.”

Jiang Chen said.

However, things didn’t happen like Jiang Chen expected them to. Lord Blood Moon still did not come. For the next three days, the situation had calmed down a bit, and no Blood Devils were seen anywhere near Redsun Town. This calm situation had made every in Redsun Town panicked.

It seemed like there was a huge thunderstorm hiding underneath the calm surface, and this didn't resemble how the Blood Devils usually behaved.

Early morning on the fourth day, Yu Zi Han ran into Jiang Chen's mansion with a panicked expression.

“Brother Jiang, please save my younger sister!”

When Yu Zi Han saw Jiang Chen, he immediately cupped his fist and spoke in a dignified tone. He looked panicked, and his face was filled with worry.

“Zi Han, what has happened? Tell me slowly.”

After spending a few days together, Yu Zi Han had given Jiang Chen a very good impression. Therefore, Jiang Chen started treating him like his own man.

“Brother Jiang, my dad has found the whereabouts of Lord Blood Moon! My young sister, Yu Zi Yan was captured by him! Brother Jiang, please help me save my younger sister!”

Yu Zi Han was really worried, his younger sister had been captured by Lord Blood Moon, and she was in a really dangerous situation.

“What's going on, tell me slowly.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent voice. His mind had been trained to stay calm no matter what situation he was facing.

“My younger sister went missing a few days ago, so my dad sent someone to search for her, and then they finally received the bad news. Lord Blood Moon has been secretly capturing teenage girls these last few days, and he is going to have a blood sacrifice tonight in the Valley of Yin Spirits! He is going to break through to the Divine Core realm with this opportunity, and once he makes it, all lives in Yellowstone will be in great danger, we will be completely doomed!”

Yu Zi Han explained.

“No wonder why that Lord Blood Moon hasn’t shown himself yet.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up, this was not good news. But for Jiang Chen, receiving news about Lord Blood Moon was better than receiving no news at all.

“Brother Jiang, my younger sister is amongst those captured teenage girls, my dad has brought a few Heavenly Core warriors from the Yu family and is preparing to save my sister in the Valley of Yin Spirits, I hope brother Jiang can give us a hand too.”

Yu Zi Han cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen, they had to save Yu Zi Yan no matter what, but Yu Zi Han understood that with the strength of the Yu family, it would be impossible for them to save

Yu Zi Yan from Lord Blood Moon. With the few Heavenly Core warriors from the Yu family, they would be defeated instantly upon their arrival in the Valley of Yin Spirits. Therefore, in order for the rescue to be successful, they would need help from Jiang Chen.

“Where is the Valley of Yin Spirits located?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“It’s located in a remote place within Yellowstone, and Blood Moon Shaman was killed by the four Sect Chiefs in that valley. Before he died, he used some evil method to turn the place into a valley filled with evil spirits, and no one has gone there since then.”

Yu Zi Han explained again.

“Inform your father, tell him not to go there himself, wait until the evening, then I’ll go together with them. Let’s see what we can do then. Tonight, we’ll reach a conclusion with that Lord Blood Moon.”

Jiang Chen had left the Black Sect many days ago, and it was about time for him to meet with this Lord Blood Moon.

“Good! Brother Jiang’s great deed towards the Yu family, we will never forget it!”

Yu Zi Han cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen once again, then he turned around and left. With help from Jiang Che, the Yu family would have the chance to fight those Blood Devils and rescue Yu Zi Yan from torture. Without Jiang Chen's help, even if the Yu family sent all their men into the Valley of Yin Spirits, let alone rescuing Yu Zi Yan, the place might become their burial ground.

At the same time, the Black Sect!

Fan Kun walked out from the inner circle area with a sneer on his face. When he walked past Guo Shan's mountain, he stop for a while and thought to himself, "Hmph! Guo Shan, you have finally entered secluded cultivation! I was waiting for this day to come! Now that Sect Chief has entered secluded cultivation, and Guo Shan also shut his doors to study pill concoction, Yan Chen Yu, let me see who can save you today, you won't be able to escape from me!"

Fan Kun let out an evil laugh, then he continued his way towards Jiang Chen's courtyard.

Within the courtyard, Yan Chen Yu was in secluded cultivation, but she could suddenly hear some footsteps outside her room. When she checked it out with her Divine Sense, she found out that it was Fan Kun. Her expression immediately changed.

Swoosh!

Yan Chen Yu came out from her room, and she immediately

scolded, “Fan Kun, why are you here again? I thought Sect Elder Guo Shan asked you not to come here anymore?”

“Hehe, don’t get mad, junior disciple Yan. I wonder, has junior disciple Yan considered my proposal during these last few days?”

A lustful smile appeared on Fan Kun’s face.

“What proposal?”

Yan Chen Yu couldn’t hold herself from showing a disgusted expression.

“Junior disciple Yan, do you still not understand me? I was asking you to be my girl! Let me tell you, I’m sure Jiang Chen will get himself killed by Lord Blood Moon in Yellowstone. If you be my girl and serve me comfortably, I guarantee you will become one of the top disciples in the Black Sect.”

Fan Kun spoke with a lustful smile on his face.

“Get lost!”

Yan Chen Yu’s voice was cold, as cold as the freezing breeze that was being unleashed from her body.

“Hmph! Yan Chen Yu, I’m losing my patience. You better take my offer, if you reject me today, don’t blame me for using force.”

Fan Kun's expression changed. It looked like if Yan Chen Yu didn't agree to his proposal, he would force her.

“How dare you?”

Yan Chen Yu became furious, she unleashed a thick freezing breeze from her body.

“Are you still waiting for that old fool Guo Shan to come and save you? Don't even think about that anymore! Today, Sect Chief has entered secluded cultivation, and so has Guo Shan! Right now, my grandfather is the acting Sect Chief, and no one in the Black Sect would dare disobey me now!”

Fan Kun had a proud expression. Indeed, he had the capability to be proud in the Black Sect. In his mind, no matter how much of a genius Jiang Chen was, he would get himself killed by Lord Blood Moon. After he raped Yan Chen Yu, with the help of his grandfather, he would be free from any punishment. Besides, the Sect Chief wouldn't punish him for a dead person.

“Bastard!”

Yan Chen Yu was incredibly furious, she immediately unleashed an ice arrow towards Fan Kun. When she attacked, the temperature in the courtyard immediately lowered. Even the air was almost frozen.

“Such a powerful cold! I never thought you would have a unique Divine Body! But too bad, you’re too weak, when facing me, your only option is to admit defeat!”

Fan Kun waved his hand and unleashed a layer of golden light, shattering Yan Chen Yu’s icy arrow. After that, with a movement of his hand, a powerful wave immediately swept towards her.

Yan Chen Yu did not want to admit defeat. She counter-attacked with an ice curtain. But, too bad, the gap between their cultivation levels was just too huge, Yan Chen Yu was not Fan Kun’s match. Under Fan Kun’s huge pressure, Yan Chen Yu spat out a mouthful of blood, and her face turned pale.

“Jiejie, junior disciple Yan, your look is really seductive!”

Fan Kun couldn’t control his lust any longer, he walked step by step towards Yan Chen Yu like an animal.

Right at this moment, in the outer circle area, a man came out from his secluded cultivation. He was wearing blue clothes, and he looked handsome. It was the Little Devil King, Han Yan. He had taken quite some time in his secluded cultivation, and he had finally gained control of the awakened ancient divine devil’s bloodline and broken through to the Heavenly Core realm. The energy unintentionally unleashed from his body was really frightening.

Chapter 150 - Rampage

Han Yan's energy was incredibly powerful. When he walked out from his room, the entire outer circle shook. The time was early in the morning, and a lot of disciples were doing their regular morning training in the training grounds. Someone witnessed Han Yan walk out from his room.

“What powerful energy! Senior disciple Han has finally broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, he is going to be an inner circle disciple now!”

“Can you guys feel it? Senior disciple Han has an energy that can pierce the skies! Looks like the bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil in his body has awakened, the Black Sect has another abnormal monster now!”

“That's right, the title Little Devil King wasn't given for fun, I heard that the bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil is incredibly powerful, and although senior disciple Han has just broken through to the Early Heavenly Core realm, I think those ordinary Mid Heavenly Core warrior won't be his match at all!”

.....

Many people stared at Han Yan who was in high spirits, they couldn't help but show a massive amount of respect when they talked about him. In this world, people only admired those who possessed strong abilities, and amongst all disciples of the Black Sect, Han Yan was definitely one of the disciples who possessed

strong and mighty abilities.

Han Yan spread his arms and stretched himself, he raised his head up and looked into the morning sun and thought to himself, “Finally I’m out! Little Chen must have arrived at the Black Sect by now, I wonder what he is doing right now... I should go find him for some drinks.”

Han Yan’s face carried a faded smile. Right at this moment, Wang Yun and Huang Zheng came up to him.

“Congratulations for breaking through to the Heavenly Core realm, senior disciple Han!”

Wang Yun and Huang Zheng expressed their respect.

“En. Let me ask you, is Jiang Chen here in the Black Sect? Where is he now?”

Ever since the Qi Province competition, Han Yan had been in secluded cultivation, that was why he had no idea what had happened during this period.

“While senior disciple Han was in secluded cultivation, senior disciple Jiang was punished by the Sect Chief and was sent to kill all Blood Devils in Yellowstone.”

Wang Yun said.

“What? The Blood Devils are here again? Wait, just now, you said Little Chen was punished by the Sect Chief? What happened?”

Han Yan’s expression changed, and his good mood immediately turned bad when he heard that Jiang Chen was being punished. Jiang Chen had saved his life, and both of them had hit off extremely well, they even became brothers. Therefore, anything related to Jiang Chen would naturally demand Han Yan’s attention.

“It happened like this...”

Wang Yun quickly explained all recent events in the Black Sect through his Divine Sense.

“What?!”

Han Yan shouted out loudly. Even with his strong mind, he couldn’t believe in just this short period of time, so many major incidents had happened in the Black Sect.

“Little Chen, you’re such an overbearing man, I really wonder if there is anything you wouldn’t dare to do.”

Han Yan shook his head with a bitter smile. Hanging up the Sect Elder and inner circle disciples, killed a Mid Heavenly Core inner circle disciple, acting cocky even when facing Fan Kun and his grandfather... All of this could only be done by someone with an

incredibly brave soul, and Han Yan would be unable to do this.

“Senior disciple Han, the Sect Chief only sent Jiang Chen alone to Yellowstone to get rid of those Blood Devils... Do you think there is any danger for him?”

Wang Yun worriedly asked. He and Huang Zheng knew that the reason why Jiang Chen had wreaked havoc in the Black Sect was all because he wanted to bring them justice. After they had woken up from their comas, Wang Da Niu and a few other outer circle disciples had told them about everything. Jiang Chen even requested Revival Pills for them. Both of them were incredibly grateful towards him, and that was why when Jiang Chen was punished with a suicide mission, they felt extremely bad about it.

“En, those Blood Devils are indeed cruel and brutal. Since I have broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, I’ll go to Yellowstone and give Little Chen a hand.”

Han Yan nodded his head. Although it was the Sect Chief himself who sent Jiang Chen to Yellowstone, Han Yan didn’t care about that, he only cared about his own brother. To heck with those rules.

“Perfect, with the help of senior disciple Han Yan, I’m sure senior disciple Jiang will be safe!”

Wang Yun and Huang Zheng were happy to hear that.

Bam.....

Right at this moment, a loud explosion sounded out from a mountain peak behind the residency area. Han Yan turned towards the direction and saw the place was covered with a thick cold breeze and a layer of faded golden light. Two separate energies could be sensed from it, and it was obviously two separate attacks.

“Cold, its Yan Chen Yu’s energy ripples! She is in an intense fight!”

Han Yan’s expression changed.

“Oh no, senior disciple Yan is fighting with someone!”

Wang Yun was shocked as well.

Swoosh!

Han Yan jumped up and turned into a bright light, then he started flying towards the direction of Jiang Chen’s courtyard. Wang Yun and Huang Zheng couldn’t fly yet, but they followed behind with extremely fast speed.

When Han Yan arrived at the place, he saw Yan Chen Yu lying motionlessly on the floor. Her face was pale, and her pure white clothes were stained with her own blood. She looked so miserable.

“Hmph! Bitch, how dare you reject my offer? Even if I kill you now, no one in the Black Sect would blame me!”

Fan Kun snorted coldly. He walked step by step towards Yan Chen Yu who was laying on the floor. She had suffered severe injuries, and her life force had become really weak. Fan Kun had a lustful look in his eyes, and it seemed like even though Yan Chen Yu was in such a critical condition, he would still rape her.

“Stop it!”

Han Yan shouted out loudly, then he unleashed a sky-piercing devil energy and blocked Fan Kun’s path towards Yan Chen Yu. His eyes were filled with extreme anger.

“Fan Kun, what are you doing?!”

Han Yan shouted again. At the same time, the energy of the ancient Divine Devil was hovering around his body. He had been told by Wang Yun and Huang Zheng about the hatred between Jiang Chen and Fan Kun, and this had given him a bad impression towards Fan Kun. What was even worse was that he saw Fan Kun trying to harm Yan Chen Yu. Right now, she had been badly wounded, and he didn’t even know if she was dead or alive. Han Yan would never allow Fan Kun to get any closer to Yan Chen Yu. Han Yan knew how important Yan Chen Yu was to Jiang Chen, and with Jiang Chen’s character, if anything happened to Yan Chen Yu while she was inside the Black Sect, the trouble would be huge, and he might even pierce a hole in the skies above the Black Sect.

“You are that Little Devil King Han Yan, right? Didn’t expect you would break through to the Heavenly Core realm so quickly. But, I advise you to get the hell out of here, now! You cannot afford to get in my way.”

Fan Kun glared at Han Yan with an arrogant expression. With his grandfather being the acting Sect Chief now, he could go on a rampage in the Black Sect, and nobody could do anything to him.

“Fan Kun, if you are a man, then fight Jiang Chen face to face! What’s the point of bullying a girl? Let me tell you, with me, Han Yan here today, don’t even think about touching Yan Chen Yu!”

Han Yan was furious, he unleashed a frightening devil flame all around his body and covered himself with the energy of the Ancient Divine Devil. It was an ancient and brutal energy, and it made anyone who got close to him feel frightened.

Han Yan’s voice was loud, and a lot of outer circle disciples heard him. Also, by unleashing a massive amount of energy, everyone had their attention pointed towards this place.

“What? Fan Kun was trying to do something to Yan Chen Yu? He is so shameless!”

“That’s right, he’s shameless! Han Yan stepped in and is trying to stop him, but he has just broken through to the Heavenly Core realm. I’m afraid he isn’t Fan Kun’s match.”

“Come, let’s go have a look! Jiang Chen isn’t in the Black Sect right now, so this Fan Kun took the opportunity to try and do something bad to Yan Chen Yu, this is just a shameless tactic!”

.....

The disturbance was getting bigger and bigger, and many people had started running towards the scene, trying to find out what was happening.

Within the courtyard, Wang Yun and Huang Zheng had arrived as well, but when faced with the powerful Fan Kun, they could only stand aside and watch.

Fan Kun squinted his eyes, the Ancient Divine Devil energy unleashed by Han Yan had frightened him a bit. The pressure from the Ancient Divine Devil was no joke.

“This guy possesses the bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil, and it has awakened. If I allow him to continue growing, he will just become another monster, and since he is a good friend of Jiang Chen, that means he is my enemy. I can use this opportunity to kill him, if I don’t, he might become one of my biggest enemies in the future.”

Fan Kun thought to himself. He had decided to kill Han Yan.

“Hmph! Han Yan, since you have the bloodline of the Ancient

Divine Devil in your body, then you are considered a man walking an evil path! We, the Black Sect, are a sect with a great reputation, we can't allow an evil man to stay here! I'll kill you today and get rid of the Black Sect's black sheep!"

Fan Kun unleashed a cold killing intent from his body, and used the same excuse he used on Jiang Chen to justify his killing.

"Look, Fan Kun is going to kill Han Yan! Also, Yan Chen Yu was severely wounded, and is laying on the floor! Things have gone really bad!"

"What should we do? Senior disciple Yan is senior disciple Jiang's fiancée, if something bad happens to her, when senior disciple Jiang comes back to the Black Sect, he will definitely wreak more havoc!"

"Damn it, that Fan Kun can go on a rampage because of his grandfather! Senior disciple Han Yan has just broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, and he is definitely not Fan Kun's match! If he forces himself to fight, he might lose his life! Huang Zheng, hurry and go get Sect Elder Guo Shan here!"

Wang Yun couldn't stop himself from cursing.

"I heard Sect Elder Guo Shan shut his doors to study alchemy."

Huang Zhen's face darkened.

“No matter what, you have to get him here! Aside from Sect Elder Guo Shan, there is no one else who can handle this Fan Kun.”

Wang Yun said.

“Okay!”

Huang Zheng turned around and left with haste, he sprinted at full speed towards Sect Elder Guo Shan’s mountain.

Hearing that Fan Kun was going to kill him, Han Yan’s expression turned into a dignified one. They were in the Black Sect, but he never expected that Fan Kun would really dare try to kill his fellow disciple.

Bam!

An energy wave emerged from Han Yan’s body, and a huge shadow of an Ancient Divine Devil appeared behind his back. It was about 3 meters tall, and it had a blurry facial figure. But it was still enough to send of a ferocious aura.

“You’re really an evil man, face your death!”

Fan Kun shouted out loudly. With his bare hands, he unleashed a huge golden palm and attacked Han Yan.

“Hmph!”

Han Yan let out a cold snort. The shadow of the Ancient Divine Devil sprinted forwards and clashed with Fan Kun's huge palm strike.

Bam.....

Two incredible energies collided, the ripples of the energy swept across the courtyard and destroyed every single building within.

Although the Ancient Divine Devil was really powerful, Han Yan had after all just broken through to the Heavenly Core realm. He was no match for Fan Kun who was at the peak Heavenly Core realm. The shadow of the Ancient Divine Devil was instantly shattered, and Han Yan suffered a huge impact and was forced to cough out a mouthful of blood. He kept stepping backwards because of the massive amount of force. Even with all that, Han Yan still unleashed a force that pushed Yan Chen Yu towards someplace safe. Wang Yun and a few other of Jiang Chen's loyal followers quickly carried her up and put her somewhere safer.

After Fan Kun forced Han Yan back with just a single strike, the sneer on his face became even thicker. But at the same time, Fan Kun felt a shock in his mind as well, "This Han Yan was really powerful, his combat strength is so strong that even though he just broke through to the Heavenly Core realm, I think those ordinary Mid Heavenly Core disciples from the inner circle wouldn't be his match. But, since his opponent is me, there is only one thing awaiting him; death!"

Chapter 151 – Dragon’s Reverse Scale

The mightier Han Yan behaved, the more determined Fan Kun became towards killing him. In order to help Nan Bei Chao achieve his ambitious dreams and goals, he needed to help get rid of what might get in his way. More importantly, with Fan Kun’s status in the Black Sect now, no one really dared to offend him. He liked the feeling of being superb and peerless. He could put anyone down as he wished, if he wanted someone to die, that person would die. He felt like someone above all, dominating everyone’s lives was really marvellous, and it provided him with an enjoyable sensation.

On the other side, Wang Yun placed his palm on Yan Chen Yu’s arm and tried to sense her condition. The surrounding people had heavy hearts, and Wang Yun’s expression was even darker.

Han Yan wiped some blood off his lips, then he turned his head and looked at Wang Yun.

“How is she?”

Han Yan asked.

“Senior disciple Yan’s pulse is extremely weak, she is in a deep coma right now. Her life force is incredibly weak, and it keeps fading away... Her condition is critical.”

Wang Yun replied with a shook on his head.

Roar~

Right after Wang Yun's words left his mouth, Han Yan raised his head and let out a loud roar which sounded out in every place within the Black Mountain. His anger had turned visible, and the shadow of the Ancient Divine Devil behind his back reappeared, covered in flames.

“Fan Kun, if something bad happens to Yan Chen Yu, I promise you, I will kill you with a thousand cuts!”

Han Yan's voice became hoarse.

“Haha, what a joke! I doubt Jiang Chen will ever come back! Han Yan, both you and Jiang Chen are men who walks an evil path, I'll kill you today and help the Black Sect get rid of its black sheep!”

Fan Kun laughed out loudly, he didn't really care about Han Yan's threats.

Han Yan unleashed an intrepid demonic dragon which pierced towards Fan Kun.

“You're courting death! Jail of One!”

Fan Kun had a sneer on his face. He formed a seal with his fingers and drew the character 'one' in front of him. In an instant, the word turned into a golden cage. Not only did the cage destroy Han Yan's demonic dragon, it also covered Han Yan and imprisoned

him within.

[TL: Character for one looks like this —]

Fan Kun struck with full power and unleashed waves of Yuan energy, causing the cage to become even stronger. Han Yan on the other side kept roaring, but he could not break the cage.

This was a powerful combat skill, it could temporarily imprison a person, causing him to become a sheep waiting to be slaughtered.

“Han Yan, don’t waste your effort, the Jail of One is not something you can break. Today, I’ll kill an evil man like you in front of everybody!”

With an imposing manner, Fan Kun forcefully struck out with his palm. The palm hit right onto Han Yan’s check, and it produced a cracking sound that anyone nearby could hear. It was the sound of bones breaking. Han Yan’s chest caved in from the attack.

Puh!

Blood shot out from Han Yan’s mouth, together with some tiny pieces of broken internal organs. Since Fan Kun’s force was so powerful, the broken house behind Fan Kun completely shattered, and turned into ruins.

“Senior disciple Han!”

Wang Yun shouted out in shock. Fan Kun's attack was too powerful. If it was some ordinary Mid Heavenly Core warrior, combined with the Jail of One and a palm attack, he would be dead by now.

Roar!

But Han Yan hadn't died yet, he roared out loudly once again and stood up from the ruins. His eyes had turned completely dark, and on his body, layers of ancient demonic scales had emerged. On top of these scales there were some ancient symbols.

"Indeed an evil man, killing you is a right thing to do."

Fan Kun's body swayed and he darted forwards like a snake. With extreme speed, he hit Han Yan's chest with his palm once again. With the attack, the demonic flames on Han Yan's body instantly disappeared, and he turned back to how he looked like before and fell down onto the ground. His condition was now the same as Yan Chen Yu's.

Swoosh!

A razor sharp longsword appeared in Fan Kun's hand, and it shone in a cruel light. He walked step by step towards Han Yan.

"Evil man, you shall perish in hell!"

With killing intent big enough to pierce through the skies, it

looked like Fan Kun was going to chop Han Yan's head off with his sword.

Looking at this, Wang Yun and the other disciple couldn't help but have panicked expressions on their faces. The way they looked at Fan Kun was filled with hatred. As one of the inner circle disciple representatives, Fan Kun had the audacity to kill his fellow disciple. He didn't care about the sect's rules.

Although he kept saying Han Yan was an evil man, everyone knew that this was just an excuse. The bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil in his body was under his control, and that meant he possesses the Ancient Divine Devil's energy, but his mind wasn't demonic. From how he risked his life to save Yan Chen Yu, one could already tell that he was a man with deep emotions.

Wang Yun and the other disciples dared not try to stop what was going on. They didn't even have the courage to say a word, because they knew if they really stood out and said something, the sword in Fan Kun's hand would chop their heads off immediately. With their statuses in the Black Sect, Fan Kun killing them meant nothing, they wouldn't even have a place to complain about it.

Now, Wang Yun could only hope Sect Elder Guo Shan came here as soon as possible. If not, Han Yan would be doomed for sure.

“Stop right now!”

Right at this moment, a loud shout sounded out from afar. In the next second, a ghostly figure came with extreme speed. In an

instant, he blocked the path in front of Fan Kun and prevented him from going further. It was Guo Shan.

When Guo Shan arrived at the scene, he immediately looked at Yan Chen Yu. As an alchemist himself, he could tell how critical Yan Chen Yu's current condition was. Then he looked at Han Yan's condition, which seemed no better than Yan Chen Yu's.

Seeing this, Guo Shan's anger immediately erupted. His eyes turned red, and he stared at Fan Kun like a hungry wolf. When Fan Kun sensed the killing intent emerging from Guo Shan, his expression changed dramatically. In the Black Sect, Guo Shan was the only person he was scared off.

"Damn it, I thought this old fool was in secluded cultivation? Why did he come here so quickly? Someone must have informed him about this!"

Fan Kun cursed in his mind.

"Fan Kun, what have you done?!"

Guo Shan shouted out furiously. He felt extremely regretful now, he had promised Jiang Chen he would protect Yan Chen Yu's safety as he left, but now Yan Chen Yu was hurt by this evil man and was in a critical condition. Even Jiang Chen's friend, Han Yan had suffered from serious injuries as well. How was Guo Shan going to explain that to Jiang Chen when he came back? How could he face him?

When thinking about this, Guo Shan became even more enraged.

“Fan Kun, you were trying to kill your fellow disciples! I, as the Sect Elder, will kill you right now!”

Guo Shan unleashed the energy of a Divine Core warrior. He moved his hand and unleashed a huge palm formed by his Yuan energy, which flew towards Fan Kun. Under the pressure of a Divine Core warrior, Fan Kun couldn't even move his finger.

“Save me, grandfather!”

Fan Kun shouted out loudly. Immediately, a golden beam shot out from afar. It was like a sharp blade that collided with Guo Shan's attack, and it immediately shattered it into pieces.

“Guo Shan, as a Sect Elder yourself, how could you assault a disciple, this doesn't fit your status in the Black Sect!”

Fan Zhong Tang appeared, he stood in front of his grandson to protect him from Guo Shan.

“Fan Zhong Tang, I need a conclusion for what happened today.”

Guo Shan was pissed off, he had never been so angry before. He wished he could just leap forwards and tear Fan Kun into pieces. If it wasn't for Fan Zhong Tang, he would just kill Fan Kun immediately without even thinking about any consequences.

“I know what happened today, it was just a conflict between disciples. We, as the Sect Elders, it’s better if we don’t out our hands on their matters. The way Fan Kun handled the matter was inappropriate, I’ll punish him when we return.”

After saying that, Fan Zhong Tang brought Fan Kun with him and flew up into the sky towards the inner circle area.

“Stop right there!”

Guo Shan flew forwards and blocked their way, “Fan Zhong Tang, Fan Kun was trying to kill his fellow disciple; I need to punish him!”

“Hmph! Guo Shan, watch your words, even if Fan Kun has done something wrong, it wouldn’t be you who would punish him! I’m the acting Sect Chief now, so I’ll have him punished myself, it is not your business!”

Fan Zhong Tang let out a cold snort, then he brought Fan Kun and left.

“Good, perfect! Fan Kun, Jiang Chen will never let you go, both you and your grandfather, you will perish in Jiang Chen’s fury, the entire Black Sect will be showered with his fury, hahaha.....”

Guo Shan suddenly let out a loud laugh. He knew Jiang Chen very well, Jiang Chen was a man born to be a king, and he

possessed an attitude of a true king. He was like a dragon, and a dragon had his reverse scales, and those who touched those would be killed. Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan were both Jiang Chen's reverse scales.

Guo Shan knew that something major was going to happen in the Black Sect, the current peaceful time wouldn't last for long. Once Jiang Chen returned, the heavens and the earth in the Black Sect would be turned upside down.

Guo Shan didn't continue fighting Fan Zhong Tang, because he knew there wouldn't be any results even if he kept fighting with him. Fan Zhong Tang was the acting Sect Chief now, and his cultivation level was stronger than his as well, there was no way he could do anything to both him and his grandson. Besides, what worried Guo Shan the most now was the condition of Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan, his priority now was to try his best to save their lives.

Guo Shan carried Yan Chen Yu with one hand, and Han Yan with the other hand, then he flew up into the skies and returned to his mountain peak. Next, he was going to use all his strength to find a way to save their lives.

Guo Shan's heart was filled with regret now. He had let Jiang Chen down, and he didn't know how to face Jiang Chen once he returned. He hated himself for entering secluded cultivation during this period of time, it was all because of the huge attraction of the Great Soul Derivation skill. Guo Shan had all his attention focused on the Great Soul Derivation skill, and he didn't expect that Fan Kun would be so courageous as to try and harm Yan Chen

Yu.

“Brother, it was all older brother’s fault... I’ll try my best now, I hope I can save their lives... When you return, older brother will let you punish as you please.”

Guo Shan stared blankly towards north. He couldn’t imagine what would happen once Jiang Chen returned.

The incident had caused a true disturbance in the outer circle, especially for those who had witnessed how Jiang Chen had wreaked havoc last time. In their minds, Jiang Chen was a man not bound by law, what happened today would definitely be the cause for another chaotic incident.

What Guo Shan said before he left was still resounding within the minds of the disciples. The current peacefulness wouldn’t last for long.

At the same time in Redsun Town, while preparing himself for the final battle with Lord Blood Moon, Jiang Chen suddenly had an uneasy feeling.

Chapter 152 – Valley Of Yin Spirits

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, this was not a good feeling. He had lived two lives, and in his past life he was the greatest Saint in the world. His mind was strong as a rock, and it couldn't be compared with anything. Even when he was facing life-threatening danger, he would be able to handle it with a calm mind. It was almost impossible for him to be disturbed.

But just now, Jiang Chen's calm mind felt a sudden moment of unease. This kind of emotion had long ago disappeared from Jiang Chen's mind.

“I hate this feeling.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up coldly. He had prepared to find Lord Blood Moon during tonight's trip, but his mood became extremely bad right now. The restless uneasiness had made him wonder if something bad had happened, or if it was happening.

“Buddy, what happened to you?”

Big Yellow sensed Jiang Chen's change in emotion. After following Jiang Chen for so long, he had never seen Jiang Chen behave like he did now. In his mind, Jiang Chen was like an old fox that remained calm no matter what. No matter how huge the danger was, he would still handle it calmly. But out of a sudden, his emotions became so fierce, and this really puzzled him.

“Nothing, I just suddenly felt some unease in my mind.”

Jiang Chen shook his head.

“Are you worried about that Lord Blood Moon? I am sure that Lord Blood Moon won’t be easy to deal with, also, the Valley of Yin Spirits was left behind by Blood Moon Shaman. If my guess is correct, Lord Blood Moon must have inherited he skills from Blood Moon Shaman. Therefore, the Valley of Yin Spirits to him is like water to a fish. It’s going to be a tough fight.”

Big Yellow said.

“No matter what, we’ll meet this Lord Blood Moon tonight, or else, we might not have the chance anymore.”

Jiang Chen said with a stern voice. For the last few days, Lord Blood Moon hadn’t shown himself anywhere. He had obviously been preparing for tonight’s blood sacrifice. If he was allowed to succeed, he might break through to the Divine Core realm, and if that was the case, Jiang Chen would not be able to defeat him, and Yellowstone would become Lord Blood Moon’s slaughterhouse. Tonight was Jiang Chen’s only chance.

However, Jiang Chen’s mind was still in a mess right now, making it difficult for him to calm down. This was definitely not because of Lord Blood Moon, Jiang Chen had never been scared because his enemy was stronger.

The restless feeling in his mind just wouldn’t go away.

“I have been able to move unhindered in all land underneath the heavens, there is nothing I fear, and there’s no exception this time either.”

Jiang Chen had a fierce look in his eyes. By using the Great Soul Derivation skill, he was able to force the uneasiness in his mind away, and focus all his attention on the matters regarding dealing with Lord Blood Moon tonight.

Jiang Chen could never have expected that something really bad had happened back in the Black Sect. The uneasiness in his mind was because of Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan who were in critical conditions.

Late afternoon, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow followed Yu Zi Han and flew towards the direction of Yellowstone City. With their speed, it only took them 15 minutes to travel from Redsun Town to Yellowstone City.

In the Yu family of Yellowstone City, Yu Tian Long was walking around restlessly in the main hall with a gloomy face. He was waiting anxiously for something. Next to him were two old Heavenly Core warriors who also seemed restless.

“Chief, young master is back, and he brought a man with him.”

At this point of time, a guard came in and said.

“That must be young master Jiang! Hurry, invite them in!”

Yu Tian Long’s eyes lit up, and he didn’t dare show any neglect. During this period of time, Jiang Chen’s name had spread across all of Yellowstone, and the Yu family would need help from Jiang Chen if they wanted to save Yu Zi Yan.

A moment later, Yu Zi Han brought Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in. Yu Tian Long and the other two old men hurriedly stood up and greeted them.

“Dad, this is Jiang Chen, and this is Big Yellow.”

Yu Zi Han introduced them to his father.

“I’ve long ago heard the names of you two. Yu Tian Long greets young master Jiang.”

Yu Tian Long cupped his fist and bowed towards Jiang Chen. With his status, it was rare for him to be so polite towards a young man, but Yu Tian Long knew what Jiang Chen was capable. In the world of cultivation, age or status didn’t matter at all compared to real strength. Yu Zi Han had told Yu Tian Long everything about Jiang Chen and what he had done so far regarding the Blood Devils, including how he had wreaked havoc in the Black Sect.

Besides, after Jiang Chen had taken first place in the Qi Province competition, and agreed on a one-year fight date with Nan Bei Chao, his name had spread across the Qi Province. Yu Tian Long

had long since heard about him.

As for the dog next to Jiang Chen, it was a being that couldn't be underestimated either. Within the information delivered to him by Yu Zi Han regarding the battles with the Blood Devils in Redsun Town, he had specifically mentioned this dog. Therefore, Yu Tian Long dared not neglect him at all.

“Greetings, Chief Yu. Regarding the whereabouts of Lord Blood Moon, can the Yu family confirm it is real?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Yes, Lord Blood Moon is going to have a blood sacrifice ceremony in the Valley of Yin Spirits tonight. My daughter, Yu Zi Yan is amongst those teenage girls that he is going to use for the ceremony. I hope young master Jiang can help us rescue her! If she can be saved from this dangerous situation, all of us from the Yu family will be incredibly grateful to young master Jiang, and we'll do whatever young master Jiang requests of us in the future!”

Yu Tian Long carried a solemn expression. He was worried about his daughter, and couldn't wait to leave for the Valley of Yin Spirits immediately. He had no idea if Jiang Chen could handle Lord Blood Moon, but judging from the current situation, Jiang Chen was their only hope.

“I estimate there won't be many Blood Devils left, I killed quite a lot of them back in Redsun Town. The rest of them should be gathering in the Valley of Yin Spirits. Let's go to the valley now, I

want to meet that Lord Blood Moon and kill every single one of them today.”

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirit. At the same time, Yu Tian Long and the two old men beside him could feel a faint aura of a king unleashed from his body. This really shocked them, as they had no idea why a young man like him could have such an aura.

“Alright, we’ll listen to young master Jiang’s commands. Let’s go now.”

Yu Tian Long had been waiting for this moment. The skies had turned dark, and it would already be late at evening when they arrived at the Valley of Yin Spirits. No one knew when the blood sacrifice ceremony would begin, and Yu Zi Yan’s life was at risk as long as she was help captive by Lord Blood Moon.

Yu Tian Long was very familiar with Yellowstone. Under his lead, the group had begun traveling towards the valley.

Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, Yu Zi Han, Yu Tian Long, and two honourable guests of the Yu family. Six Heavenly Core warriors. Going to the Valley of Yin Spirits with just these people was basically the same as going to commit suicide. But, since Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were in the group, it would be a different story.

The Valley of Yin Spirits was located close to the border of Yellowstone, and it covered nearly a hundred miles in circumference. The terrain around the valley was rough, and the

valley was covered by Yin spirits during all days. No animal could stay within, it had become a no mans land. No one could withstand the corrosion of the Yin Spirits within the valley.

When Jiang Chen and the few others arrived at the valley, the darkness had dominated the night. The Yin Spirits in the valley became thicker as time passed. One could easily feel an eerie feeling within the valley, even from afar.

This was a land of dead, no grass or trees could grow, no animals or birds could stay. The shivering Yin Spirits were the only symbol of this place.

“Young master Jiang, this place is filled with Yin Spirits. The deeper we go, the thicker it becomes. I heard that at the end of this valley, the Yin Spirits are so intense that even a Late Heavenly Core warrior can’t withstand it at all.”

Yu Tian Long explained with words filled with fear towards the Valley of Yin Spirits.

Jiang Chen looked into the distance and found out this was indeed a dangerous place. Killing intent could be seen with naked eyes, and if any ordinary warrior ventured deeply into the valley, the Yin Spirits would instantly corrode him, and all his internal organs would vanish.

But Jiang Chen was not fear about these Yin Spirits, he was cultivating with Dragon Transformation Skill, his Qi and blood were as strong as a dragon, every muscle and breathes of him were

the representative of pure Yang, in another word, Jiang Chen is the natural rival for these Yin Spirits.

“Big Yellow, go inside and check on the situation.”

Jiang Chen asked Big Yellow for help. Today was Lord Blood Moon’s big day, therefore, the Valley of Yin Spirits must be packed with Blood Devils. This place was the heard of the Blood Devils, and with Big Yellow’s abilities, he was the best candidate to scout for what was happening without getting discovered.

Swoosh!

Right after Jiang Chen’s words left his mouth, Big Yellow turned into a light beam and disappeared into the valley. The second after that, Yu Tian Long and the other widened their eyes. They saw that when Big Yellow entered the Valley of Yin Spirits, he didn’t unleash his Yuan energy to protect himself. It was as if those frightening Yin Spirits meant nothing to him.

“He really is mysterious.”

Yu Tian Long couldn’t help but let out a sigh. There were some existences in this world that simply couldn’t be judged by ordinary standards. Big Yellow possessed the bloodline of a Divine Beast, therefore he was just like Jiang Chen, an existence of pure Yang, the natural rival of Yin Spirits.

After half an hour, Big Yellow came back from the valley.

“How is it? What’s the situation inside like?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“There is a black altar right in the middle of the valley. Lord Blood Moon is on that altar by himself, and there are at least a thousand Blood Devils surrounding and praying towards the altar. There are 99 teenage girls tied up on one side of the altar, the blood sacrifice ceremony has yet to begin.”

Although Big Yellow had only spent half an hour in the valley, he had explored and found out every single detail within. What’s more impressive was that no Blood Devils had ever discovered his intrusion. With this ability alone, he had won the hearts of everyone present.

“Are there any Blood Devils guarding the perimeter?”

Jiang Chen asked again.

“There was, but I bit them to death! You guys just follow me, I can bring you all to the altar directly.”

Big Yellow said.

“Perfect, nice work, let’s go!”

A sneer appeared on Jiang Chen's face. Under Big Yellow's lead, everybody started running towards the Valley of Yin Spirits.

“Chief, the Yin Spirits are getting more and more powerful, we can't hold on any longer.”

“That's right, if it gets worse, I'm afraid we will be down on our knees before reaching the center of the valley. Besides, if we meet any Blood Devils in such conditions, that's sure death for us.”

After traveling for nearly thirty miles, the honourable guests of the Yu family found it extremely difficult to resist the Yin Spirits. If they forced themselves to travel further, they might just fall down before even reaching the altar.

Chapter 153 – Helpless Decision

Falling down before even meeting any enemies, this was a sad thing.

The Valley of Yin Spirits' reputation was well deserved. By coming this far, even Yu Tian Long and Yu Zi Han were having some difficulty with resisting the Yin Spirits. If they continued to the center of the valley, even they would fall down.

“I’ve always heard rumors about how terrifying these Yin Spirits are, and I finally get a chance to see it for myself. Rumors even said that Late Heavenly Core warriors are unable to resist the Yin Spirits in the center of the valley. I’m afraid we won’t be able to make it to the altar.”

Yu Tian Long had a bitter smile on his face. When they looked at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who were calm and relaxed, they became even more depressed. This was ridiculous, the gap between them was just too huge.

“Brother Jiang, what should we do now? It looks like we have become your burdens.”

Yu Zi Han looked at Jiang Chen and asked. In their minds, Jiang Chen had become the center of this group.

Jiang Chen was calm and didn’t show any signs of panicking. He flipped his palm and retrieved a jade pot from his storage ring.

“The Energy Spring Water within this can help you guys resist the Yin Spirits. Take it, just take a sip when you feel like you can’t go on any longer.”

Jiang Chen passed the jade pot to Yu Zi Han.

“Energy Spring Water?!”

Yu Zi Han and Yu Tian Long shouted in disbelief at the same time as they stared at the jade pot. There was so much Energy Spring Water contained within, this really was an eye-opener. Energy Spring Water was of pure Yang, it could really help them resist these Yin Spirits, as well as provide them with great benefits.

“I’ve added a drop of my blood in this Energy Spring Water. My blood is of the purest Yang existence in this world, it is the rival of all Yin Spirits. After you drink it, you won’t need to fear these Yin Spirits for a period of time.”

Jiang Chen said.

The shocked expression on Yu Tian Long and the others’ faces became even thicker. In their minds, Jiang Chen had become a peerless monster.

“Young master Jiang, this Energy Sprint Water is too expensive, but we won’t reject it. If I, Yu Tian Long am able to walk out from this valley today, alive, I’ll have every single person in the Yu

family take young master Jiang as our master, and will do whatever you ask us to do!”

Yu Tian Long said in a serious manner. Such an expensive gift, if it was given at any normal time, he might have just rejected it. But since the time was so crucial right now, he accepted it.

Yu Zi Han opened up the jade pot and drank a sip of the Energy Spring Water, after that, Yu Tian Long and the others did the same.

Once the Energy Spring Water entered their bodies, the four of them immediately felt a hot airflow spreading within. With the help of this hot airflow, the Yin Spirits were repelled from their bodies, and they felt extremely comfortable. The bad feelings caused by the Yin Spirits disappeared immediately.

The four of them were astonished by this, because just the Energy Spring Water alone wouldn't provide this kind of effectiveness. This was incredible.

The Energy Spring Water was of pure Yang, and after adding in Jiang Chen's blood, its quality simply increased a lot, making it possible to resist the Yin Spirits.

The group continued journeying forth. The path Big Yellow had chosen had no guarding Blood Devils, as they had all been killed by him previously. Therefore, the group had a quiet and smooth journey as they came to the center of the Valley of Yin Spirits.

“You guys see that? There is a small hill in front, and behind the hill is a valley. The altar is within that valley.”

Big Yellow said.

“So quiet, I think the blood sacrifice ceremony has yet to start.”

Yu Zi Han said.

“The Yin Spirits will become their strongest when time reaches midnight. If my guess is correct, this Lord Blood Moon will be the blood sacrifice ceremony at midnight.”

Jiang Chen said.

The men retracted their energy and kept it from leaking, then they walked step by step towards the hill. When they reached the top of the small hill, they extended their heads and looked into the valley in front of them.

What they saw was a huge crowd of Blood Devils, all kneeling on the ground according to their cultivation levels. No one dared raise their heads. In front of them there was a black altar made entirely from human skulls, it looked both deadly and frightening.

On the altar, a young man in red clothes was sitting cross legged with eyes closed. His face looked evil. With black lips and a black aura hovering around his body, together with a mysterious symbol on his forehead, he looked just like someone who came from hell.

Next to the altar there was 99 teenage girls lined up. All of them looked as if their minds were absent, as if they had gone through a great shock. A faded black mist was hovering around them, blocking the Yin Spirits from corroding their bodies. That's why none of them were affected by it.

“Zi Yan!”

“Sister!”

Yu Tian Long and Yu Zi Han saw the first girl in the line, it was a girl wearing a long blue skirt. With her slim body and beautiful face, she immediately stood out amongst all other girls. Her big beautiful eyes had become mindless, making people feel sorry when they stared into her eyes.

Her condition made Yu Zi Han and Yu Tian Long's emotions become volatile. But luckily, they weren't some ordinary people, they could still hold themselves, and didn't behave recklessly.

“Young master Jiang, when are we going to strike?”

Yu Tian Long kept staring at Yu Zi Han, he felt like there was a knife stabbing his heart right now as he watched his daughter suffering such torture.

Jiang Chen was looking at Lord Blood Moon. With his judgment and the help of the Great Soul Derivation skill, he could

immediately tell Lord Blood Moon's cultivation level. He had a strong energy, and his cultivation level had reached the peak of the Heavenly Core realm. Besides, it was obvious that Lord Blood Moon had inherited Blood Moon Shaman's skill, he had mastered the skill of the Blood Devils. Lord Blood Moon may not be up to par with Nan Bei Chao, but he was definitely the same level as Guan Yi Yun and Liang Xiao. Even Fan Kun was weaker than this Lord Blood Moon. A person like this was not someone Jiang Chen could deal with.

“Lord Blood Moon isn't easy to handle. Besides, I don't know what kind of skill he has inherited from Blood Moon Shaman. If we strike now without knowing much about him, even I won't be his match. Therefore, we will have to wait.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He had a total of 120 Dragon Marks now. With his current combat strength, he could easily kill ordinary Late Heavenly Core warriors, he would even be able to handle a genius like Fan Kun. But, if he were to face someone like Guan Yi Yun, he would still need more strength.

Besides, this place was the Valley of Yin Spirits, it was the heart of Lord Blood Moon. Jiang Chen didn't believe that aside from Lord Blood Moon's own skill, there weren't any hidden traps around.

“Wait until when?”

Yu Zi Han asked.

“I know all of you are worried about Yu Zi Yan, but if we strike now, not only will we be unable to save her, all of you will be killed. Even if I could deal with Lord Blood Moon, how are you all going to fight more than a thousand Blood Devils?”

Jiang Chen looked at Yu Tian Long and Yu Zi Han, then he continued, “Let’s wait until midnight. When Lord Blood Moon starts the blood sacrifice ceremony, a ceremony like that would take quite some time to complete. Once the ceremony is interrupted, even Lord Blood Moon will suffer. I’ll wait until Lord Blood Moon has all his attention on the ceremony, then we’ll deliver a deadly strike.”

Jiang Chen sneered. A real warrior didn’t just need great strength, he would also need extraordinary intelligence. With the combination of both, one would be a true warrior.

Jiang Chen’s overall combat strength was incredibly high, and he was never out of plots either. He knew exactly how to deal with an enemy in any given time. With this alone, he has the confidence that he can win any battle. Even if he would need to risk his life, he had to make sure it was something he could handle with confidence, Jiang Chen would never do anything without confidence.

“Chief, what young master Jiang said is correct, there’s no point for us to rush now. If we strike right now, with Lord Blood Moon in his full form, there is no way we could defeat him.”

One of the honorable guests of the Yu family said.

Yu Tian Long took a deep breath and nodded his head, he knew Jiang Chen was right. Because, only by striking according to his plan would they have a chance at defeating the Blood Devils. But, he suddenly thought of something and asked straightaway, “Young master Jiang, just now you said, we’ll wait until Lord Blood Moon has all his attention on the blood sacrifice ceremony... doesn’t that also mean that we’ll wait until the blood sacrifice ceremony begins before we strike?”

“I did say that. A blood sacrifice ceremony like this will take some time to complete, and these 99 teenage girls will be sacrifice one by one, they aren’t all sacrificed at once. You just have to pray that Yu Zi Yan isn’t the first one to be sacrificed.”

Jiang Chen didn’t show any emotion on his face.

“Young master Jiang that also means some of these girls will be sacrificed?”

Yu Zi Han asked.

“Anyways, we would need someone to sacrifice some of them. Sacrificing a few of them is better than sacrificing all of them. It’s not that I don’t want to save them all, but I need to save as many as I possibly can.”

Jiang Chen still didn’t show any emotion on his face. It was hard to believe that a sixteen year old young man could treat life so lightly.

But what Jiang Chen said was correct. Sometimes, someone would have to sacrifice themselves in order to save the lives of many. Even with that, Jiang Chen still wanted to wait until the blood sacrifice ceremony had begun before he would strike, it was only chance of dealing with Lord Blood Moon. If they succeeded, only one life would be sacrificed, while the rest would be saved. This was the only way to do it, if not, every single one of them would have to die.

“We’ll follow young master Jiang’s words.”

Yu Tian Long’s breathing became faster, he was worried, because Yu Zi Yan was the one closest to the altar, and she was the first one in the line. That also meant, if Lord Blood Moon wanted to begin the blood sacrifice ceremony, it was highly possible she would be the first one to be sacrificed.

“Sister, all I can do now is pray for your luck.”

Yu Zi Han clenched his fist tightly, and Yu Tian Long’s eyes turned red. For them, each second passing meant more suffering. The feeling of watching their close family member struggling in hellish fires while all they could do was watching, the feeling simply couldn’t be understood by anyone.

Jiang Chen sighed in his mind. This kind of family relationship made him feel warm, but at the same time helpless.

This was life, which was full of helpless moments. You were

forced to make all kinds of decision, and sometimes the decisions would be life threatening. But even if you were forced to, you still had to make that decision.

Time was ticking, and soon it became midnight. At this point of time, the Yin Spirits within the valley had become really thick. Lord Blood Moon, whose eyes had been closed all this time, suddenly opened his eyes.

Chapter 154 – Midnight Killing

Whoosh...

By just opening his eyes, Lord Blood Moon caused a strong evil wind to appear above the valley. The evil winds formed into a dark cloud and was hovering right above Lord Blood Moon. It made him look ghostly and deadly.

“Blood Moon, Blood Moon, Blood Moon...”

All Blood Devils who laid on the ground started cheering. The cheers were so loud that the entire valley started shaking. Those Yin Spirits found everywhere were deadly for outsiders, but for these Blood Devils, they were beneficial.

Hahaha...

Lord Blood Moon suddenly let out a loud laugh. His voice was shrill like a woman. With a wave of both his arms, a dark airwave emerged from his body and merged together with the dark clouds above his head, transforming into a frightening huge dark face.

Whoosh...

The winds blew even stronger, and as if something had frightened the teenage girls, they suddenly woke up from their previous mind absented state. When they raised their heads up and saw the huge dark face, they instantly screamed out in horror.

These teenage girls were in a mind-absented state; therefore, they could only remain silent. However, once they awakened and saw what was happening in front of them, they immediately hugged each other and trembled in fear.

Witnessing this, Yu Tian Long and Yu Zi Han who were worriedly hiding behind the small hill immediately rejoiced. When the girls started hugging and pushing each other around, their original positions in the line had changed. Yu Zi Yan who was standing at the front of the line and was the one closest to the altar had been pushed to the middle.

The center of the line was the best position to be in, because no matter which side Lord Blood Moon decided to start with, Yu Zi Han's safety would be temporarily guaranteed. Unless Lord Blood Moon wanted to pick Yu Zi Han as the first one to be sacrificed, that is. If that was the case, her luck was just incredibly bad.

“Let the blood sacrifice ceremony begin!”

Lord Blood Moon said with a mystifying voice. Those cheering Blood Devils immediately quieted down, and their expressions became solemn as if they were going to welcome some holy existence.

Ha!

After that, the over a thousand Blood Devils shouted out at the same time. Each of them spat out a lump of red blood, and it all

shot towards the huge dark face hovering above Lord Blood Moon.

Pop pop...

All the blood from the Blood Devils merged together, and the once huge dark face immediately became blood red. Under the control of Lord Blood Moon, drops of blood rained down from above and dropped onto his body. It was immediately absorbed into his body, and some of the blood dripped onto the altar, making it look even more ferocious and frightful.

“The blood sacrifice ceremony is going to begin.”

Jiang Chen focused his attention towards Lord Blood Moon who was on the altar. With his experiences, he could tell that this was a very brutal and cruel blood sacrifice ceremony. These devils were hundreds of times crueler than real devils.

“This blood sacrifice ceremony is really cruel; there won’t be any peace in the Qi Province if these Blood Devils aren’t exterminated.”

Yu Zi Han’s face darkened. By using living humans as sacrifices, Lord Blood Moon was a mad man.

The evil winds were constantly sweeping across the entire valley. The scene would make anyone frightened just by thinking about it. When the blood stained the entire altar, Lord Blood Moon began moving.

He extended his hand towards one of the girls who stood closest to the altar. With a frightened scream, the girl flew onto the altar without the ability to control herself.

The frightened girl kept screaming. When the rain of blood dropped onto her body, she immediately howled like there was no tomorrow. Under the frightened visions of the other 98 teenage girls, the girl on the altar was entirely covered by blood, and her body had started rotting bit by bit. In just three breaths of time, the girl's howls had completely stopped. She had turned into meat paste, and she was melting and dripping all over the altar.

Lord Blood Moon stuck his hand into the meat paste and started absorbing all the essence contained within. His face carried a pleased expression.

“Noooo!”

When the rest of the girls saw what happened, all of them begun screaming and yelling in fear. The scene was incredibly frightening. This was something they wouldn't even have dreamed about one day experiencing.

Behind the small hill, Yu Tian Long and Yu Zi Han wiped sweat from their foreheads quietly. If it wasn't for that evil breeze just now, the one to be sacrificed would be Yu Zi Yan.

The few of them laid their vision on Jiang Chen, then they found he still showed no emotion on his face. Not even a slight hint of nervousness. The calm attitude really made these people subdue to

him unconsciously.

In Jiang Chen's eyes, aside from the indifferent look there was only calmness. The howling and screaming of these girls could never disturb his calm mind, the terrifying sacrifice scene was nothing to him.

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes and stared at Lord Blood Moon's face. The blood sacrifice ceremony had just begun, the best time to strike was not yet.

The pleased expression on Lord Blood Moon's face was getting more intense. Soon, he had immersed himself in the enjoyment completely, and had closed his eyes.

Right at this moment, the altar produced a buzzing sound. The huge blood red face was still dripping blood, and the sacrifice of the girl was almost finished. The entire scene resonated in an odd manner, and over thousands of Blood Devils were kneeling on the ground, chanting some unknown scriptures.

"Now is the time, all of you will save those girls, I'll go to Lord Blood Moon directly."

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirits. In the next second, he turned into a ray of light and flew forwards. In an instant, he arrived in front of the altar. With the battle axe in his hands, he unleashed a bright light and pierced towards Lord Blood Moon.

“Lord Blood Moon, face your death!”

Some buzzing sounded out from Jiang Chen’s Qi Sea. His powerful Yuan energy was rolling within, and the Clap of Thunder had been unleashed with his maximum strength. He predicted that Lord Blood Moon had been immersed within the blood sacrifice ceremony and couldn’t react in time to counter attack. A blood sacrifice ceremony like this wouldn’t be able to stop once it was started. If it was interrupted half way, Lord Blood Moon himself would suffer a serious injury.

Therefore, this was Jiang Chen’s only chance to defeat Lord Blood Moon.

Swoosh!

Sensing the sudden powerful attack, Lord Blood Moon opened his eyes. Two blood red lights shot out from his eyes like sharp blades. His blood sacrifice ceremony had been interrupted by someone, an extreme anger appeared in his eyes.

“How dare you interrupt my blood sacrifice ceremony?! You are courting death!”

Lord Blood Moon forcefully struck out with his palm. A huge blood red palm immediately flew forwards like a huge mountain, piercing towards Jiang Chen.

Bam...

The battle axe and huge blood red palm collided into each other and produced a loud explosion sound. The battle axe had destroyed the huge palm, but at the same time, Jiang Chen also suffered from a huge impact which forced him to fly hundreds of meters backwards.

“This Lord Blood Moon is really strong. With my current combat strength, I’m still not his match... But, since the blood sacrifice ceremony has restricted his movements, I’ll take this opportunity to kill him.”

Jiang Chen carried an imposing aura. He turned into a ray of light once again while carrying his battle axe, then he pierced and slashed towards Lord Blood Moon’s direction again.

“Stop him!”

Lord Blood Moon shouted out loudly. Immediately, three strong Blood Devil leaders rushed forwards and blocked Jiang Chen’s way. The three of them were all Late Heavenly Core warriors, and they were also the only three Late Heavenly Core leaders amongst all thousand Blood Devils here.

“Get out of my way or die!”

Jiang Chen kept swinging his battle axe while all 120 Dragon Marks vibrated within his body. With his current combat strength, ordinary Late Heavenly Core Blood Devils were not his match at all.

In the blink of an eye, Jiang Chen chopped one of the Late Heavenly Core Blood Devils into half.

“Charge!”

Yu Tian Long let out a loud cry. Using his combat weapon, he slash out in a curve. He took the lead and charged past the Blood Devils. On the other side, Big Yellow was the most brutal being on the spot. With his muscular body, he rammed into the Blood Devils group while ramming into all he could see. Blood and flesh splashed all over.

All this happened so quickly and suddenly. Not only the Blood Devils, even Lord Blood Moon himself didn't expected someone would come and disturb them here. This place was the Valley of Yin Spirits' heart, the Yin Spirits here were so intense that coming here was the same as courting death.

Yu Zi Han and the rest joined the slaughter as well. These Blood Devils were sincerely praying towards the altar before they were suddenly attacked, therefore a heavy loss was certain.

“Kill, kill them all!”

“How dare they disturb our master's blood sacrifice ceremony?! They are courting death!”

“Drink all their blood!”

.....

The Blood Devils were yelling and howling. The stronger leaders had taken out their devil weapons and surrounded the attackers. In here, there were more than tens of Blood Devil leaders. Yu Zi Han and the rest were simply outnumbered.

However, three of the strongest Late Heavenly Core Blood Devils were on their way to attack Jiang Chen. Under the lead of Big Yellow, the rest of the Blood Devil leaders couldn't do any serious harm to Yu Zi Han and the others.

Big Yellow was really ferocious, he was like an ancient beast whom no Blood Devil leaders could compare to. Anyone who came to him would die instantly, let alone those ordinary Mortal Core Blood Devils.

“Zi Han, go save your sister, quickly!”

Yu Tian Long shouted out loudly. At the same time, Yu Zi Han started flying towards his sister.

“Big brother!”

When Yu Zi Yan saw her brother, she immediately shouted out and cried tears with rejoice. Her once hopeless heart had again been filled with the will to live.

“Sister, help me calm the rest of the girls, tell them to not be scared, we are here to save you all!”

Yu Zi Han told his sister. He asked Yu Zi Yan to calm these girls so he could return to the fight with the Blood Devils.

Ah...

On the other side, followed by a frightful scream, the last Late Heavenly Core Blood Devil had been killed by Jiang Chen. In just a very short amount of time, all three Late Heavenly Core Blood Devils had been killed by Jiang Chen’s battle axe.

Jiang Chen’s strong and brutal approaches had completely stunned Yu Tian Long and two of his honorable guests. They had witnessed every single one of Jiang Chen’s actions, and that had sent a huge storm down into their minds. They had never seen anyone who could be so powerful.

Not only Jiang Chen, even Big Yellow who was fighting alongside them was the same. This had completely stunned Yu Tian Long. This man and dog were an eye-opener for all of them.

Chapter 155 – Blood Banner

Ah...

Frightful screams were sounding out all over within the Valley of Yin Spirits. There was blood spilled everywhere. Although the few men from the Yu family were surrounded by a lot of Blood Devils, with the help of the abnormal monster, Big Yellow, none of them suffered any injuries.

On the other side, the Blood Devils suffered some really serious losses. Thee Late Heavenly Core leaders had been killed by Jiang Chen, and Big Yellow was also killing the rest of the Blood Devils. Both these combined had given the Blood Devils a deadly blow.

According to normal circumstances, Jiang Chen's decision of attacking the Valley of Yin Spirits was a suicide mission. But the actual situation was completely different. Lord Blood Moon had started his blood sacrifice ceremony, he was restricted by the ceremony and couldn't really strike back. This had given Jiang Chen and the rest the opportunity to kill the Blood Devils.

Lord Blood Moon was the only person Jiang Chen worried about. As long as he was tied up by something, no matter how many Blood Devils were here, their ending would be the same as those who attacked Redsun Town.

The captured girls were hugging in a big group. All of them carried pale faces. Such a scene, such an experience, it had left a deep mark in their hearts that would never go away. The bloody

and cruel scene had let them witness the dark side of the world.

Fear had filled their hearts, but luckily, the shadow of death had slowly faded away. The men who had appeared out of nowhere had brought the lights of hope with them.

Yu Zi Yan was born in a big family, so her mind was stronger than the rest of the girls. After she saw her brother and father coming here to save her, her emotions had clearly settled down. She was in the middle of comforting the terrified girls.

Yu Zi Han stood in front of these girls and protected them. He kept killing the Blood Devils who came to attack him.

“Lord Blood Moon, face your death!”

After Jiang Chen killed all three Late Heavenly Core leaders, his momentum had grown stronger. He simply swung his battle axe towards Lord Blood Moon who was sitting cross legged on the altar.

“Hmph! An insignificant mortal, you’re overestimating yourself. Die now!”

Lord Blood Moon snorted. He waved his hand and unleashed another huge blood red palm which pierced towards the battle axe’s attack.

Bam...

The intense impact had shaken the entire valley. With Lord Blood Moon's powerful counter-attack, he forced Jiang Chen back once again.

However, by continuously striking twice, Lord Blood Moon's blood sacrifice ceremony had been affected. His face begun paling, and his breath became more rapid.

Besides, the sacrifice of the first teenage girl was almost done, he needed to get a second girl to continue his ceremony.

“Haha, Lord Blood Moon, you're doomed!”

Jiang Chen let out a loud laugh, then he begun unleashing his incredible energy. Blood red shadowy dragons were hovering and flying around his body, and with a step forwards, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared in mid-air.

Nine Jiang Chens surrounded the blood altar and sprinted towards Lord Blood Moon at the same time.

When Jiang Chen had taken a closer look at the blood sacrifice ceremony, he had concluded that there was no way for Lord Blood Moon to stop the ceremony half way. Also, the attack he could use to retaliate were limited. If not, not only would the blood sacrifice ceremony become a failure, Lord Blood Moon himself would suffer serious injuries as well.

Therefore, by unleashing the Nine Phantom Wolves, not only would it confuse Lord Blood Moon, it could also distract his mind.

“What a bizarre movement skill.”

Lord Blood Moon’s expression changed. With his experience, he couldn’t tell which was the real one.

However, although Jiang Chen was fast, Lord Blood Moon was even faster. He waved his hand and shouted out with a stern voice, “All of you are fools, how dare you disturb my blood sacrifice ceremony, you’re courting death! Let me kill you first, then I’ll the rest of your friends! Blood Banner!”

With a thunderous noise, a huge blood colored Banner shot out from Lord Blood Moon’s body. It was nearly 30 meters tall. It covered all nine Jiang Chens at the same time and absorbed all of them into the Banner itself.

Swoosh...

The evil wind whistle within the valley, and terrifying screams sounded out from the Blood Banner, it was emitting a blood red light and filled the skies above the Valley of Yin Spirits with the same color.

The evil wind kept whistling, and the ghostly screams didn’t seem to stop at all. The Blood Banner was really frightening. Ghostly facial figures kept appearing on the Banner itself, it was a

terrifying scene.

Just looking at this blood Banner was enough to send shivers down the spines of the person watching and put extreme fear in their minds, as if they had fallen deep down into hell.

“Heavens! That’s the Blood Banner, Lord Blood Moon really found the Banner! He has inherited everything from Blood Moon Shaman!”

When Yu Tian Long who was fighting the Blood Devils saw the Blood Banner, he let out a great cry.

“Decades ago, Blood Moon Sham killed over 100,000 mortals and used their souls to create the Blood Banner. By using this Banner, Blood Moon Sham wreaked great havoc in the Qi Province and killed countless great warriors, he turned the entire Qi Province into hell. Even the strongest man of all four big sect was individually. In the end, Blood Moon Shaman was killed by the combined attack of these four men. I heard it was not quite an honorable win for all four sect chiefs.”

“I never expected Lord Blood Moon had inherited everything from Blood Moon Shaman... Even this long lost Blood Banner is with him now. Over 100,000 ferocious souls reside within the Banner, it’s filled with foul spirits. Even a Divine Core would have a hard time dealing with it... It’s really dangerous for young master Jiang now that he has been absorbed by the Banner!”

Both honorable guests of the Yu family looked worried. Yu Tian

Long and Yu Zi Han also had awful expressions. Their initial plan was to strike during the blood sacrifice ceremony and kill him along with all the other Blood Devils, while rescuing all the innocent teenage girls. But, none of them could expect that Lord Blood Moon had such an evil weapon. Right now, Jiang Chen is under the control of the Blood Banner, it looked like he wasn't going to make it this time.

“Haha, after being absorbed by the Blood Banner, even if you have three heads and six arms, you will die a horrible death within and become one of foul souls within! This is the result of offending me!”

Lord Blood Moon said with his shrill voice and with a sneer on his face. The Blood Banner kept fluttering above the skies, and roars of the fouls soul within that could frighten any living mortal sounded out.

“Hmph!”

Lord Blood Moon snorted. He made a grabbing motion towards the teenage girls and forcefully broke Yu Zi Han's defense, and pulled three teenage girls over.

When these girls were pulled onto the altar, they were immediately showered in blood and became Lord Blood Moon's sacrifices. At the same time, Lord Blood Moon's vision landed on Yu Tian Long and the few others...

Lord Blood Moon had a sneer on his face. He didn't attack these

men, what he did was write their faces down in his memory. Actually, he didn't really need to remember them, because once the blood sacrifice ceremony was completed, every living mortal in Yellowstone would eventually become his food.

As of now, the most important thing was to complete the blood sacrifice ceremony. Besides, Lord Blood Moon needed to use parts of his attention to control the Blood Banner and kill Jiang Chen, therefore he didn't have the chance to do the same to Yu Tian Long and the others. This was the real reason why he didn't strike the others.

In Lord Blood Moon's mind, amongst all these people, Jiang Chen was the only one who could hurt him. The rest of them were nobodies to him.

Right now, within the Blood Banner, countless ferocious souls pierced towards Jiang Chen endlessly, trying to tear him apart. The foul spirits of the hundreds of thousands of ferocious souls turned visible and formed into a storm of soul spirits. These souls were like countless razor sharp blades. It was like Jiang Chen stood right in the middle of a raging storm that was formed entirely by sharp blades, as if he was a lonely boat floating in a raging sea.

If it was some ordinary man who was absorbed into the Blood Banner, he would be devoured by these ferocious souls in an instant. Even without the attacks from these ferocious souls, just the influence of the foul spirits alone was enough to make their minds collapse and turn crazy.

But it was Jiang Chen who had been absorbed into the Banner,

the once greatest Saint in the world.

“Ha!”

Jiang Chen let out a low shout. He was using the Sonic Hawk Cry. In the next second, countless golden Yuan energies shot out from his mouth, they turned into sound waves and clashed forwards. He was surrounded by faded dragon shadows which shined in golden lights, chasing away all all darkness hidden within the Blood Banner.

Aw... aw...

When all ferocious and brutal souls met with the golden lights that was being unleashed from Jiang Chen's body, they all let out heart-wrenching screams. Their expressions became fearful, as if they were looking at their natural predator.

“Hmph! I'm a mighty Saint, the representative of a true dragon! None of you can harm me!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He was portraying an aura of someone above all else, he stood firmly like a mighty god of war, he was like a pillar that supported the entire world, and nothing could shake him even a little. None of those ferocious souls and foul spirits could get close to his body.

Jiang Chen possessed the attitude and mind of a Saint, and he had gone through reincarnation. Ordinary evil and demonic

existences in the world would not be able to affect his mind. Besides, he was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, and he possessed the bloodlines of a few rare demon beasts. Every single drop of blood and qi in his body had the property of the purest Yang, it was the natural rival of all evil and Yin Spirits.

It was not a lie when Jiang Chen said he was the representative of a true dragon, because after he began cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, he had started walking a path where he would transform into a real dragon. Sooner or later, he would transform into a real dragon and soar through the heavens.

Bam...

Jiang Chen raised the battle axe in his hand and chopped at the Blood Banner with full force. The golden light had struck through the darkness. But too bad, the attack was like throwing a stone into a vast ocean, it couldn't do harm to this Banner.

“This Banner is formed entirely by ferocious souls and foul spirits, it has become something really terrifying, a true weapon for evil and devils. Even a weapon like the Axe of Thunder is unable break the Banner open. Although I'm not scared of these ferocious souls and foul spirits, it's still tough for me to escape from here... Unless I can control this Banner.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, “But, this Banner is completely under Lord Blood Moon's control, it's connected to his bloodline, it's impossible for me to control it anymore...”

Jiang Chen kept frowning as he tried to find a solution. He couldn't keep staying within the Blood Banner, Lord Blood Moon was in a critical moment of the blood sacrifice ceremony, and now with all the disturbance, he would certainly speed up the entire process. Once he completes the blood sacrifice ceremony and breaks through to the Divine Core realm, he would surely kill Jiang Chen in an instant, and the entire Qi Province would become a place of chaos once again.

The talent and potential of Lord Blood Moon is not any less than that of Blood Moon Sham. His style and tactics are exactly the same as Blood Moon Shaman's. Now, with the Blood Banner, if he was allowed to break through to the Divine Core realm, he will become a huge threat to the Qi Province. With the help of the Blood Devil skills, Lord Blood Moon would become stronger and stronger incredibly quickly, and would potentially become the next generations Blood Moon Shaman.

Chapter 156 – Seize the Blood Banner, Kill Lord Blood Moon

Bam...

The banging sound didn't stop sounding out from within the Blood Banner. The energy ripples from Jiang Chen's attacks became stronger and stronger, and some golden lights started leaking out from the flag itself.

“Look! The Blood Banner is trembling violently, young master Jiang Chen is in the middle of attacking it!”

One of the honorable guests of the Yu family said in awe.

“Young master Jiang Chen is indeed a man of miracles. He has the purest Yang aura all over his body, those foul spirits within the Blood Banner simply cannot harm him. But, with young master Jiang's abilities, it will be tough for him to escape the flag.”

Yu Tian Long was shocked as well. But, since Jiang Chen could attack from within, that meant he was safe at the moment, and that was actually good news.

“Chief, what should we do now? If young master Jiang can't break free from the Blood Banner, there is no way we can stop Lord Blood Moon from completing his blood sacrifice ceremony.”

Another honorable guest of the Yu family said in a worried tone. The battle had gone on for a long, and Big Yellow had killed most of the Blood Devil leaders. Although there were still a lot of Blood Devils, they were all at the Mortal Core realm, and didn't pose too much threat to them.

But the real threat was still with Lord Blood Moon. As long as he was still alive, he would be able to raise countless Blood Devils. Therefore, even if all of these Blood Devils were killed, Lord Blood Moon just wouldn't care.

The situation now had given Yu Tian Long and a few others a difficult choice. These Blood Devil were not a threat to them, but they couldn't stop Lord Blood Moon from continuing his blood sacrifice ceremony. Once the ceremony was completed, everyone here would be killed, they would die horrifying deaths.

The only thing they could do now was to bring all those teenage girls away, but this was basically impossible. Lord Blood Moon wouldn't allow this to happen. As long as they tried to do something, Lord Blood Moon would risk his own life to counter their actions, and at that point of time, Lord Blood Moon would become completely enraged, and what awaited them afterwards was complete annihilation from Lord Blood Moon.

“I have a way.”

Big Yellow suddenly said.

“What is it?”

Yu Tian Long looked at Big Yellow with a surprised expression. This dog was a miraculous being, and right now, perhaps only Big Yellow would be able to do something about it.

Big Yellow didn't say anything, but his expression suddenly changed into a serious one. An invisible thread of his Divine Sense shout out. Big Yellow's Divine Sense was so miraculous that it could penetrate the Blood Banner and reach Jiang Chen's ear.

“Buddy, don't waste your time, with your current abilities, there is no way you can break it. You only have one option now, and that is to cut away the connection between this banner and Lord Blood Moon, then you'll need to seize control of the Blood Banner as fast as you can. Once Lord Blood Moon loses this flag, he will suffer tremendously from the backfire, then he will become a sheep waiting for you to slaughter him.”

Big Yellow said.

“You know how to cut the connection between the Blood Banner and Lord Blood Moon?”

Jiang Chen felt shocked. The Blood Banner is completely controlled by Lord Blood Moon, it was connected to his own source, it would be incredibly tough to cut the connection between them.

“Let's give it a try.”

After saying that, Big Yellow opened his mouth widely and spat out a huge broken sword. The sword fell onto the ground and made a clang sound. It was the broken sword he had found in the desolate area of Whirling Sun City.

Big Yellow's expression turned solemn. He spat out a clump of blood. The blood was the blood essence of a Dragon Horse. When the blood fell onto the broken sword, the sword that once looked like a scrap of broken metal began violently vibrating.

The vibration of the broken sword became stronger and stronger. After being stained with Big Yellow's blood essence, the broken sword, like a drought soil suddenly showered with rain, suddenly seemed to become alive. Under Big Yellow's control, the broken sword shot up high into the skies.

Roar~

Big Yellow suddenly roared out, then he unleashed numerous bright lights from his body which merged with the broken sword. In an instant, the broken sword started flying and piercing itself towards the blood red altar.

“What is that? The pressure projected from it is so mighty!”

“A divine energy! It makes me feel like I am facing some immortals! This is terrifying!”

Yu Tian Long and the few others watched the broken golden sword flying through the skies with shock. The divine energy made them want to worship the broken sword. The feeling was like watching something that was way above them, as if it was something out of this world.

Clang!

The broken sword slashed and drew out a golden curtain which crashed towards the altar. Lord Blood Moon who was in the middle of the blood sacrifice ceremony had a drastic change in his expression. He could sense and extreme danger from this golden curtain.

“What kind of treasure is that?!”

Lord Blood Moon became frightened by the attack. He immediately dashed aside and evaded the golden curtain.

“Damn it, I can’t really unleash its full power. If I could, Lord Blood Moon would die in an instant. But, it is more than enough for me to cut the connection between the Blood Banner and Lord Blood Moon.”

Big Yellow cursed. The golden curtain drawn out by the broken sword had become a barrier that blocked the connection between the Blood Banner and Lord Blood Moon.

Lord Blood Moon’s expression changed once again, because, at

this moment, he couldn't feel the connection between the Blood Banner and himself. The golden curtain had a mystical divine energy that acted like a barrier between different worlds, cutting all connections in between.

Within the Blood Banner, Jiang Chen could clearly sense the changes within the banner. The feeling of it being controlled by someone else had disappeared. With Jiang Chen's experience, he immediately realized that Big Yellow had succeeded, he had completely cut the connection between the banner and Lord Blood Moon.

“This dog sure does have some amazing abilities. Lord Blood Moon, your time is up! Blood Banner, I will take control of you right now!”

Jiang Chen had an amazing ability. Even if he was only given one second, he would be able to defeat his opponent with that one second. With the help of the Great Soul Derivation skill, he immediately found the source of the banner. His Divine Sense was like a sharp blade, it immediately shattered the last threads of Divine Sense Lord Blood Moon had left behind and took control of the banner by force.

It was really simple for Jiang Chen to control the Blood Banner. With help from the Great Soul Derivation skill, controlling a combat weapon was just a piece of cake. Besides, all the ferocious souls within the flag were scared of Jiang Chen. Once they were out of Lord Blood Moon's control, they would immediately surrender to Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, the golden curtain disappeared. The broken sword fell onto the ground and returned to its scrap metal form. As for Big Yellow, his vision became dark, and he fainted at the same time.

“Big Yellow!”

Yu Zi Han shouted in shock. He rushed to Big Yellow’s side to protect him.

Right now, Jiang Chen had come out from the Blood Banner. The huge blood red banner was not completely under his control. He pulled it back and stored it in his storage ring.

“Nooooo!”

Lord Blood Moon who was in the middle of the blood sacrifice ceremony let out a miserable roar. Losing the blood banner was not something he could accept. It was the foundation of everything he had done, and it was his strongest weapon. But to his dismay, it was lost to someone else today.

Puh!

Lord Blood Moon vomited out a mouthful of blood. He held his head with both hands as he roared and screamed. His face showed a painful expression, and layers of awful red lines filled his face. He

suffered two huge blows upon losing the Blood Banner and the blood sacrifice ceremony being interrupted. Lord Blood Moon had come to his end.

“Lord Blood Moon, face your death!”

Jiang Chen took a step forwards and arrived at the altar. With his hand, he grabbed Lord Blood Moon’s head. His palm that was glowing in a golden light forcefully twisted and tore off Lord Blood Moon’s head. At the same time, he dug out Lord Blood Moon’s devil core.

“Ah! Master!”

Witnessing Lord Blood Moon being killed, all Blood Devils roared in disbelief. For them, Lord Blood Moon was their spiritual pillar, the god they were worshipping. Now, their god was killed in front of them. How could they bear it?

“Pathetic Blood Devils, you are all crazy black sheep of this world, you never should have existed! I’ll have you all perish in hell!”

Jiang Chen took out the Blood Banner. The huge banner spread wide like the massive mouth of a demon king. Countless evil winds was unleashed from within, and they absorbed the remaining few hundred Blood Devils into it. With their Mortal Core cultivation level, what awaited them inside the flag was Jiang Chen’s slaughter.

Now, Lord Blood Moon was killed, all Blood Devils within Yellowstone had vanished, and there were no survivors.

For Lord Blood Moon, this was something rather sarcastic, since he inherited his skill and abilities from Blood Moon Shaman, he had planned to wreak havoc in Qi Province, his ambitious dream was to have Blood Devils in every corner of this world, but too bad, he had met with Jiang Chen, not only he got himself killed, the Flag of Blood Devils had changed a master too, he had worked this hard but at the end it all went to someone else.

As for Jiang Chen, the mission of killing all Blood Devils in Yellowstone was a great success. Not only had he broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, just the Blood Banner alone was worth all his hard work. Although this flag was an evil item, it was also something that could save his life, a powerful hidden trick.

The once restless Valley of Yin Spirits had quieted down. Yu Tian Long, Yu Zi Han and the others raised their heads and looked at Jiang Chen. With his clean white clothes, Jiang Chen glowed in a faded golden light all over his body. His eyes were bright, and his hair was fluttering in the cold breeze. He was like a true god of war who had just descended from the immortal world. He portrayed an image of someone above all else that was enough to make anyone want to submit to him.

Jiang Chen's image had a magnificent charm. Even those frightened teenage girls were looking at him with adoration.

Out of the 99 teenage girls, eight of them had been sacrificed by Lord Blood Moon. But, there was no perfection in life. Sometimes,

someone had to become the sacrifices, there was nothing Jiang Chen could do about it.

“He really killed Lord Blood Moon, he killed all the Blood Devils.”

One of the honorable guests of the Yu family murmured.

“He is a true peerless genius, he was born with a tremendous destiny, he is a true king!”

“His future achievements will be limitless! From now on, the Yu family will submit to young master Jiang, we will follow him and obey all his commands!”

Yu Tian Long had made up his mind. He was not an idiot, he could tell that Jiang Chen had limitless potential, no one could estimate his future achievements. He was a peerless genius that had never been seen throughout history.

“I, Yu Zi Han always thought I was a genius, but compared to him, I am just nothing. I believe that in one year, the battle between him and Nan Bei Chao will be a great one!”

Yu Zi Han thought to himself. After following Jiang Chen around for a few days, he had completely seen the might of Jiang Chen. He was a man of miracles, it was a miracle that he killed Lord Blood Moon today.

Chapter 157 – Being Worshipped

Lord Blood Moon was killed, and all Blood Devils were gone. The disturbance the Blood Devils had brought had been solved by Jiang Chen, even before they did something big. Lord Blood Moon had even provided Jiang Chen with lots of benefits. Not only had he given him lots of devil cores, he had even helped him with breaking through to the Heavenly Core realm, and he had given Jiang Chen the powerful weapon, Blood Banner.

Jiang Chen punched out a huge golden beam and destroyed the altar of blood sacrifice. After that, he descended down and landed next to Big Yellow. Jiang Chen could feel how tired Big Yellow was right now, because he had completely entered a coma.

Big Yellow had followed Jiang Chen for quite some time, he was the real descendant of the Dragon Horse, he possessed a complete bloodline of an ancient beast, he was the king of all abnormal monsters. But now, he had gone into a coma, and this really shocked Jiang Chen.

“What happened?”

Jiang Chen asked. When Big Yellow struck just now, he was captured within the Blood Banner, therefore he didn't know what happened outside.

“Brother Jiang, it was because of this broken sword.”

Yu Zi Han pointed at the broken sword next to Big Yellow and

explained what had happened just now to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up as he looked at the broken sword. He knew where this sword came from. When they were at Whirling Sun City, Big Yellow didn't want anything other than this broken sword.

“It really can cut the connection between the Blood Banner and Lord Blood Moon. With Big Yellow's abilities, it is strange that forcefully using it would cause him to enter a coma... What treasure is this really?”

Jiang Chen was really amazed. With his experience from being a Saint, he could easily recognize a peerless ultimate combat weapon with just a glance. But this broken sword, all he could tell was that it looked just like a scrap of metal.

Jiang Chen grabbed the broken sword, then he circulated his Yuan energy and injected it into the broken sword. But too bad, nothing happened at all. Jiang Chen's Yuan energy couldn't get any reaction out of the broken sword.

“If this broken sword isn't some scrap metal, then it must be something that suppresses saint-rank combat weapons. It might be something from the immortal realm.”

Jiang Chen sighed in his mind; Big Yellow had proven this broken sword was definitely not just some scrap metal, and Jiang Chen couldn't tell what it was. The only explanation to this was that the broken sword was above saint-rank combat weapons.

As for why Big Yellow could unleash the power of this broken sword, Jiang Chen couldn't really explain it. It was most possibly because of his bloodline.

“Young master Jiang, is Big Yellow going to be fine?”

Yu Tian Long asked worriedly. They were all very grateful towards Big Yellow. If Big Yellow wasn't here today, all of the might have been killed by now. They couldn't even withstand the attacks from the Blood Devils.

“He will be fine, it's just that his energy is depleted. He's too tired.”

Jiang Chen said. He knew about Big Yellow really well, he was probably just sleeping right now, and it might take some time before he awakens. But, once he does awaken from his sleep, his cultivation level might go up once again. This was the part Jiang Chen envied the most and which made him speechless.

The bloodline of a Divine Beast might not look special in the beginning, but following the rise in cultivation realms, the power of the bloodline would slowly start revealing itself. Just like Big Yellow, his strength would soon become really terrifying.

“But we need to supply him with energy. If we don't, he might enter deep slumber, and that is not something good.”

Jiang Chen retrieved a jade pot from his storage ring. It was a storage pot actually, and it contained all the Energy Spring Water he had.

Jiang Chen squatted down and opened Big Yellow's mouth, then he poured all the Energy Spring Water into his big mouth.

After drinking so much Energy Spring Water, although Big Yellow was still sleeping, his condition was much better than before. His body started glowing in faded golden lights, and it quickly covered his body.

“Let's go, we need to leave this place.”

Jiang Chen carried Big Yellow up. With the help of a few Heavenly Core warriors, all teenage girls were brought up into the skies. Soon after, the group had left the Valley of Yin Spirits and were now rushing towards Yellowstone City.

Along the way, everyone were looking happy, especially those from the Yu family. The safe return of Yu Zi Yan had given them the biggest reason to be happy. Besides, they never expected that the disturbance of the Blood Devils would be resolved so easily.

Everyone were looking at Jiang Chen, they were all feeling grateful towards this handsome young man. Jiang Chen's image in their hearts had become incredibly huge.

Not only them, all the people in Yellowstone would feel grateful

towards Jiang Chen. Because, not only was he the savior of the Yu family, he was also the savior of everyone in Yellowstone area. He had saved the lives of everyone here.

The way those teenage girls looked at Jiang Chen, aside from their gratefulness, there was a hint of bashfulness and adoration in their eyes. A handsome man like Jiang Chen who portrayed a distinct masculine and domineering image would capture the heart of any teenage girl. He was the man who would appear in their dreams.

Yellowstone City, Yu family!

Jiang Chen was sitting in the master seat within the Yu family's main hall. Aside from Yu Tian Long, Jiang Chen was the first outsider to sit on this seat. But, none of the people here were against it.

Yu Tian Long and Yu Zi Han looked at each other and nodded at the same time. After that, both of them stood up from their seats and bowed deeply towards Jiang Chen.

“What are you two doing?”

Jiang Chen asked with a smile on his face.

“The great deeds young master Jiang has done for the Yu family, and also what you have done for all of Yellowstone, there are no words we can use to express our gratitude. Now, the Yu family

represents all of Yellowstone, we pledge to only listen to your orders! In the future, young master Jiang just needs to give us your orders, and the Yu family will do whatever we can to fulfill them!”

Yu Tian Long said with a serious expression, he had made up his mind. The Yu family and all of Yellowstone would surrender under Jiang Chen. Besides, Yu Tian Long was not an idiot, he could tell the huge potential of Jiang Chen. Following a peerless genius like him was definitely a wise decision, because, not everyone had the ability to kill Lord Blood Moon.

“Brother Jiang, my dad is preparing to build a statue for you in the center of Yellowstone City, so all the upcoming generations will know the huge deed brother Jiang has done for Yellowstone!”

Yu Zi Han told Jiang Chen their decision. In Saint Origin, building a statue for someone happened rarely. Only those who had high virtues and glorious reputations could enjoy this kind of treatment. Because Jiang Chen was the great savior of Yellowstone, and to be exact, without Jiang Chen, there wouldn't be any peace in Yellowstone, therefore, Jiang Chen well deserved this prestige.

This was a glorious honor that destined his name to be sung in praise for generations to come.

“It was just a small matter, I don't think we need to have that.”

Jiang Chen shrugged, he really didn't think it was a big deal.

“Please don’t reject it anymore, young master Jiang, I have already decided, and you truly deserve it!”

Yu Tian Long said.

Right at this moment, a teenage girl wearing a purple skirt came into the hall. She had bright eyes and graceful eyebrows. She had a slim and delicate body figure, and her tiny lips looked freshly red even without makeup. She looked to be at the end of her teenage year, she was a truly elegant and modest beauty.

The girl was none other than Yu Zi Yan. Her nervousness and panic was long gone, and now she just looked like a girl from a respectable family.

Yu Zi Yan carried a glass of tea and walked up to Jiang Chen. She raised her head and looked at Jiang Chen. With a blushed face, she said, “Thank you, young master Jiang for saving my life last night! Zi Yan has made tea for young master.”

“Don’t mention it, Zi Yan.”

Jiang Chen grabbed the tea, took a sip, then he put the glass down onto the table.

Witnessing this, Yu Tian Long and the few other couldn’t help but quietly let out a sigh. Obviously, Jiang Chen’s brave moments had left an everlasting impression in Yu Zi Yan’s heard. All girls dreamt romance, and a man like Jiang Chen was hard not to love.

But too bad, although Yu Zi Yan admired Jiang Chen, he had a strong mind and didn't have any thought towards her.

“Zi Yan, go back and rest, help me take good care of those girls we saved yesterday.”

Yu Tian Long said.

“Yes, dad.”

Yu Zi Yan left the hall with a hint of disappointment in her eyes.

“Chief Yu, since we have completely resolved the problems regarding the Blood Devils, I'll return to the Black Sect tomorrow. I'll take my leave now.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen stood up from his seat.

“Just in time, I'll need to return to the Black Sect tomorrow as well. Why don't brother Jiang just stay with the Yu family tonight, then we can return to the Black Sect together tomorrow morning.”

Yu Zi Han said.

“I'll need to return to Redsun Town first. I will rest in my own mansion there. Zi Han, you can come to Redsun Town and look for me tomorrow, then we'll return to the Black Sect together.”

Jiang Chen rejected the offer.

“That will do.”

Yu Tian Long nodded his head. He didn't say anything more to get Jiang Chen to stay, he knew Jiang Chen was a man with his own mind. He wouldn't change his mind easily.

Jiang Chen brought Big Yellow who was still sleeping with him. The reason why he wanted to return to Redsun Town was because of Big Yellow. Big Yellow had used up too much of his energy by using the broken sword, even a large amount of Energy Spring Water was unable to wake him up.

Therefore, Jiang Chen decided to leave Big Yellow in Redsun Town so he could absorb energy from the energy vein. It would help him regain his energy and wake up. Besides, Jiang Chen also needed some time to digest everything he had gotten this time.

“Zi Han, you will need to maintain a good relationship with young master Jiang. A man like him is a peerless genius, he will definitely become someone great.”

Yu Tian Long advised his son.

“Of course, I will. Brother Jiang has become my idol! Oh right, dad, you better advice Zi Yan to give up her thoughts on brother Jiang. He already has a nice fiancée, and she is also a peerless

genius!”

Yu Zi Han reminded his dad. Everyone in the Black Sect knew about the relationship between Jiang Chen and Yan Chen Yu. In Yu Zi Han’s mind, the biggest reason why Jiang Chen didn’t give Yu Zi Yan a second look was because of Yan Chen Yu.

“It is very difficult for me to give her advice about love... Just let nature take its course.”

Yu Tian Long shook his head.

Last night, Yu Tian Long had spread the news about all Blood Devils being killed throughout Yellowstone. Therefore, when Jiang Chen returned to Redsun Town, what awaited him was a huge celebration.

When these townspeople saw Jiang Chen’s return, all of them cheered with their loudest possible voices. Jiang Chen's reputation had been deeply engraved in the minds of every single townspeople. He had become rather divine here.

Chapter 158 – Fighting Liang Xiao

Jiang Chen didn't accept the townspeople's invitation for the celebration, he just brought the sleeping Big Yellow back to his mansion. When the townspeople found out Big Yellow was in a coma due to the battle with Lord Blood Moon, all of them begun praying for his recovery.

Within a room in Jiang Chen's mansion, he placed Big Yellow on the cushion and let him absorb the energy from the energy vein. That combined with the Energy Sprint Water he fed him, both would make his recovery faster.

After doing that, Jiang Chen shut his doors and begun cultivating. The trip to the Valley of Yin Spirits had given him a lot. Aside from the Blood Banner, he still had four devil cores in his hand. One was from Lord Blood Moon, and the other three belonged to the three Late Heavenly Core leaders. These devil core were really useful for Jiang Chen, especially the one from Lord Blood Moon, as it contained a huge amount of energy within. By absorbing it, Jiang Chen would be able to form a few more Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea.

Aside from absorbing devil cores, Jiang Chen would also need to meditate in order to stabilize his cultivation.

Early morning the next day, Jiang Chen awakened from his meditation. His energy level was much stronger than before, the combination of four devil cores had a huge impact, especially the one that belonged to Lord Blood Moon. The energy provided to him by all four devil cores had given him 30 new Dragon Marks in

total.

Before absorbing these devil cores, Jiang Chen already had 120 Dragon Marks. Combined with the new 30 Dragon Marks, he now had a total of 150 Dragon Marks. With this, his combat strength had improved significantly, and he was one step closer to the Mid Heavenly Core realm.

As long as he managed to form a total of 200 Dragon Marks, he would be able to break through to the Mid Heavenly Core realm, and his combat strength would become much stronger.

When Jiang Chen walked out from his mansion, Yu Zi Han had been waiting for him for quite some time. Jiang Chen gave some tasks to Town Marshal Zhang Zhen, and asked him to take good care of Big Yellow, as well as never allow anyone to enter his mansion.

After everything settled down, Jiang Chen and Yu Zi Han flew up into the sky and left towards the Black Sect.

“Brother Jiang, you have killed all the Blood Devils, as well as Lord Blood Moon. Once we return to the Black Sect, I’m sure Sect Chief will reward you handsomely.”

Yu Zi Han said with a smile. Jiang Chen came to Yellowstone because of Sect Chief’s assignment, and now he had perfectly accomplished the mission. His reputation in the Black Sect would definitely reach a new level, and he would become the number one genius in the Black Sect.

Jiang Chen replied with a smile and didn't say anything. Right now, he just wished to return to the Black Sect as quickly as possible. Ever since he began his journey back towards the Black Sect, the uneasiness in his mind had appeared again. The feeling was rare to him, and he had a feeling that something bad had happened.

Yu Zi Han sensed Jiang Chen was thinking about something, therefore he also shut his mouth and concentrated on flying.

Swoosh!

When both of them arrived above the skies of a desolate mountain range, a light beam suddenly appeared and blocked their way. It was a man with a grey long robe. His face carried a domineering expression that couldn't be hidden. He was Liang Xiao from the Heavenly Sword Sect.

Jiang Chen and Yu Zi Han stopped flying and were hovering in the middle of the air. Liang Xiao was no stranger to both of them, Jiang Chen had a long history of hatred with the Heavenly Sword Sect. As for Yu Zi Han, every single inner circle disciple of the Black Sect knew about top geniuses from each individual sect in the Qi Province.

Even an idiot would know why Liang Xiao suddenly appeared here, the resentment between Jiang Chen and the Heavenly Sword Sect was known by everyone. The reason why Liang Xiao was here was obviously because of Jiang Chen.

I never expected that Lord Blood Moon was so weak, he actually got killed by you? This is really disappointing.”

Liang Xiao had his razor sharp vision locked onto Jiang Chen, then a shocked expression appeared on his face, “But what surprises even me is, from the Qi Province competition until now, you could have such huge improvements in such a short period of time.”

By sensing Jiang Chen’s energy himself, Liang Xiao was shocked by what he found out. It had only been a month since the Qi Province competition, and in just one month, Jiang Chen had grown from the Early Mortal Core realm to the Early Heavenly Core realm. And, he had even killed Lord Blood Moon himself. This really overwhelmed him.

“I supposed it was Fan Kun who told you where I was.”

Jiang Chen sneered. Yellowstone was under the Black Sect’s ruling, it was a place far away from the Heavenly Sword Sect. Since the incident regarding the Blood Devils had just happened, it would take some time before the other areas of the Qi Province got the news. However, Liang Xiao had gotten the news and had come all the way here to block his way. Obviously, someone had told him what happened, and that man must be from the Black Sect. Aside from Fan Kun, Jiang Chen couldn’t think of a second person who would do that.

“All of that is not important. What is important is that today you

will die. Since I am here it simply means you are dead meat. My advice to you is to try not to struggle and fight back. If you surrender now, I might consider giving you a quick death.”

Liang Xiao said lightly. In his mind, Jiang Chen was already a dead man.

“Brother Jiang, what should we do? Liang Xiao is not easy to deal with.”

Yu Zi Han’s face darkened. Liang Xiao was not someone Fan Kun could compare with, he was one of the four top geniuses in the Qi Province, a person comparable to Guan Yi Yun.

Although Jiang Chen had killed Lord Blood Moon, Yu Zi Han knew why he was able to do so. If it wasn’t for Lord Blood Moon being in the middle of a blood sacrifice ceremony, Jiang Chen would completely not be Lord Blood Moon’s match.

“Just in time, I also wanted to see how strong Liang Xiao really is.”

An upward curve appeared on Jiang Chen’s lips. His current combat strength was not the same as when he had just broken through to the Early Heavenly Core realm. 150 Dragon Marks had given him sufficient confidence. With his current combat strength, it was really difficult to find a match amongst all Heavenly Core warriors. Liang Xiao appeared just in time for Jiang Chen to test his true combat strength.

Yu Zi Han felt astonished. With an expression of disbelief, he looked at Jiang Chen who had a confident look. He thought to himself that this man was really courageous, he didn't even fear Liang Xiao at all.

“Zi Han, you just stand aside.”

Jiang Chen told Yu Zi Han. After that, in the blink of an eye, he arrived close to Liang Xiao. His body was glowing, and his spirits were high.

“Jiang Chen, you can still have such high spirits after seeing me? Since that is the case, I'll just kill you now.”

Liang Xiao unleashed his energy. Obviously, he didn't want to waste any time either. He extended his hand and forcefully grabbed towards Jiang Chen.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen snorted. He clenched his fist tightly, and with a bright golden light glowing on his fist, he punched out with a massive amount of force towards Liang Xiao.

Bam...

The brutal attacks from the two great warriors had caused ground-shaking energy ripples to appear. These ripples turned into colorful ray of lights that swept across the skies. The massive

impact of energy even caused the small hill beneath them to collapse.

Jiang Chen was forced three steps back in the air. When he looked at Liang Xiao, he found that Liang Xiao was still floating in the same spot. Obviously, Liang Xiao had won a hand in the first round. But, it was actually a close fight, and the outcome had really surprised Liang Xiao.

“What a strong guy, he is just an Early Heavenly Core warrior, but he can already fight me so closely... This is unbelievable, this guy is talented and has huge potential! I need to get rid of him as quickly as possible, if not, he will become a huge threat.”

The glow in Liang Xiao's eyes became crueler. An intense killing intent filled his body. It was the determination to kill. Today was a rare opportunity, he had to take this opportunity and kill this huge potential threat. Once Jiang Chen returned to the Black Sect, it would be really hard to find a similar opportunity.

As for Jiang Chen, such an outcome didn't surprise him much. Although his combat strength had increased a lot, Liang Xiao was one of the top four geniuses in the Qi Province, and he was also the representative of the Heavenly Sword Sect. He was not someone an ordinary Late Heavenly Core warrior could compare with. Also, Jiang Chen's cultivation level was two stages lower than Liang Xiao's, it was perfectly normal for him to be suppressed by him like this.

“Jiang Chen, you really are a peerless genius, and this makes me even more determined to kill you today no matter what.”

With a sky-piercing killing intent, Liang Xiao shouted out loudly, “Great Fist of Devastation!”

Bam...

Followed by Liang Xiao’s loud shout, he punched out countless rays of light that caused even the air to tremble. These rays of light soon merged into a huge golden fist more than 30 meters tall. It carried a devastating grandeur as it quickly pierced through the skies towards Jiang Chen with great speed.

“Six Solar Fingers!”

Jiang Chen also shouted out loudly at the same time. He unleashed his counter attack, the Six Solar Fingers. Right now, he was able to unleash four huge golden fingers. With Jiang Chen’s current strength, unleashing four solar fingers was something really incredible.

Bam...

The two massive attacks collided. The energy ripples created from the impact were three times stronger than the previous ones. Under the pressure of such a massive amount of energy, Yu Zi Han who was standing far away, his face turned pale. With his combat strength, if he were to join the fight right now, he would have gotten himself killed in an instant.

Great Fist of Devastation and Six Solar Fingers were both Earth rank combat skill. But, doesn't matter if it's quality or the mightiness from the skills, the Six Solar Fingers was a skill the Great Fist of Devastation couldn't compare with.

With the massive energy collision, both Jiang Chen and Liang Xiao suffered from violent shakes. Jiang Chen's combat strength was as strong as a vast ocean, and combined with a powerful combat skill, he could actually narrow the gap between himself and Liang Xiao. The outcome was a tie this time.

In other words, the current Jiang Chen was not someone Liang Xiao could kill as he wished. Even if he could slightly suppress Jiang Chen, it was impossible for him to kill Jiang Chen now.

“How could he be so strong? The combat skill he used just now, I can tell it's a stage higher than my Great Fist of Devastation.”

Liang Xiao was extremely shocked. The Great Fist of Devastation was his strongest combat skill, he thought he could use it to defeat Jiang Chen. But, he never expected Jiang Chen would counter-attack with an even more stronger combat skill.

“Liang Xiao, it's hard to tell which one of us will be the one to die today. Nine Phantom Wolves!”

Jiang Chen was also emitting a sky-piercing killing intent right now. Liang Xiao was trying to kill him, Jiang Chen also wanted to kill Liang Xiao. With 30 newly formed Dragon Marks, combined

with the hidden skills Jiang Chen possessed, he was confident that he might be able to kill Liang Xiao today.

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

In an instant, nine Jiang Chens appeared at the same time. Liang Xiao's expression which had been calm the entire time finally changed.

“What a strange movement skill! How does he unleash so many identical phantoms at the same time?”

Right now, facing the powerful Jiang Chen, Liang Xiao had lost his calm and confidence. The appearance of nine identical Jiang Chen's had made him confused, and he couldn't find out which one the real Jiang Chen was.

Nine Jiang Chens struck out with their palms at the same time. Liang Xiao who was confused by so many Jiang Chens in front of him counter-attacked with his Great Fist of Devastation, instantly destroying five Jiang Chens with just one strike.

Liang Xiao was really fast, and he had found the real Jiang Chen. He instantly punched out forcefully towards Jiang Chen's palm.

But, Liang Xiao didn't see the insidious smile on Jiang Chen's face, and the green light that was blinking within Jiang Chen's palm.

Chapter 159 – Killing Liang Xiao

Both men unleashed their strongest attacks. Even though Jiang Chen's Nine Phantom Wolves didn't really confuse Liang Xiao, it had still freaked him out somehow. Just like now, when Liang Xiao struck out with his Great Fist of Devastation, he was actually using his own fist, and he didn't notice the green light hiding within Jiang Chen's palm.

Normally, with Liang Xiao's sharp responses, he would have been able to find out about the green light. But, because he was freaked out by the Nine Phantom Wolves, he had completely overlooked it.

Bam...

Both men forcefully struck at the same time. When it came to a fight between their bodies raw strength, Jiang Chen was the one who had the dominating advantage. Since he was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, with every new Dragon Mark he formed, his body would become stronger. The level of his body was not something Liang Xiao could compare with.

Because of the huge amount of force that went in, both men were forced back. Jiang Chen could still remain calm, but Liang Xiao was the opposite, he could only feel that Jiang Chen's body was stronger than metal. The counter force had sent a numbing feeling down his hand.

"This guy is really an abnormal monster, I wonder what powerful skill he is cultivating. How could it make his body so

strong? Too bad I didn't kill him back then, now he has become very strong... Not good!"

Liang Xiao's expression suddenly changed, this was because he began feeling something else in his hand other than numbness. He lowered his head and took a look, then he immediately discovered that his entire palm had become green. The green airflow within his palm resembled snakes as it corroded his palm.

He was poisoned!

Liang Xiao was no idiot, he instantly knew he had been poisoned. He wasn't paying full attention to Jiang Chen's palm just now, and he had therefore suffered from the consequences. Liang Xiao hurriedly started circulating his Yuan energy in hopes of expelling the poison from his body, but to his dismay, he found out that was useless. The poison resembled some snakes lurking in his bones, and it could even corrode his Yuan energy.

The poison from the Green Hellish Python was not something fun. Besides, Jiang Chen's poison had been mixed with the deadly poison from the Silent Poisonous Needle, any Heavenly Core warrior would be killed by this poison. Even with Liang Xiao's ability, trying to get rid of the poison in a short period of time was basically impossible.

"Despicable, how dare you use poison on me!"

Liang Xiao became enraged.

“Haha, Liang Xiao, I’ve got to kill my enemies by all means. To tell you frankly, the poison is a mixture of the deadly poison of the Green Hellish Python and the Silent Poisonous Needle. Even a Late Heavenly Core warrior would die with his body rotting from this poison. For you, it might take you one month to rid this poison from your body. Also, your cultivation level might drop because of it. Of course, I won’t give you the time to expel the poison now.”

Jiang Chen was laughing out loudly. He unleashed his energy and pierced towards Liang Xiao once again. Since Liang Xiao was now poisoned, even if he could survive, his overall combat strength would be greatly reduced. This was the best time to kill him.

In the Qi Province, Liang Xiao was considered a rare genius. His cultivation level was at the peak Heavenly Core realm, and he might break through to the Divine Core realm at any time. Once he reached the Divine Core realm, killing him would be extremely difficult.

Therefore, since Liang Xiao was here to ambush Jiang Chen, it was the perfect opportunity for Jiang Chen to kill him.

Shreee~

Jiang Chen transformed into a hawk and flew above Liang Xiao. He opened up his mouth and let out a hawk cry. Layers of powerful sound waves swept towards Liang Xiao as it resonated ripples.

The Sonic Hawk Cry was the innate ability of the Blood Winged Hawk. Since Jiang Chen had absorbed its bloodline, the innate

ability would grow stronger following Jiang Chen's increase in cultivation level. Besides, sound waves were the hardest to defend against.

Liang Xiao's expression changed. Currently, he had to divide half of his focus to resist the deadly poison in his body, it made him have a hard time defending against Jiang Chen's Sonic Hawk Cry.

Clang!

Liang Xiao shook his hand, then a bright golden longsword appeared instantly. The energy unleashed by the sword was incredibly strong, it simply made one feel as if it was a weapon that couldn't be resisted.

“High-ranked combat weapon!”

The expression of Yu Zi Han who was watching the fight from far away changed. He was shocked by the fact that Liang Xiao possessed a high-ranked combat weapon. Because, even for those ordinary Divine Core warriors, a high-ranked combat weapon was something rare.

Liang Xiao was indeed the number one genius from the Heavenly Sword Sect. He was so lucky that he even possessed a high-ranked combat weapon. But, Yu Zi Han didn't worry too much. He had seen Jiang Chen's battle axe, which was also a high-ranked combat weapon. Besides, Yu Zi Han was still immersed in deep shock right now.

He never would have thought that the fight between Jiang Chen and Liang Xiao could come to this state. Although Jiang Chen's cultivation level and combat strength was lower than Liang Xiao's, he still had some incredible abilities, and these abilities had slightly given him the upper hand. There was even a chance that he might be able to kill Liang Xiao.

If Jiang Chen really killed Liang Xiao today, that would really bring explosive news.

“Great Slash of Devastation!”

Liang Xiao shouted out loudly as he unleashed the Great Slash of Devastation. The longsword in his hand had brought forth a bright curtain which blocked Jiang Chen's sound wave attack. At the same time, Liang Xiao broke through Jiang Chen's lock down and flew far away.

Liang Xiao was fleeing from the fight. If news about this was spread out, his reputation would wash down the drain, he wouldn't be able to face anyone with pride any longer. But, Liang Xiao really did have to run away, his condition was really bad right now. If he didn't escape now, he might really get himself killed. He needed to find a way to get rid of the poison in his body before it reached his heart.

“Wish to run? Fat chance!”

Jiang Chen shouted as he spread his blood wings. He had reached the Heavenly Core realm now, the combination of the blood wings

and the Dimension Shift had made his speed increase exponentially.

Swoosh!

In an instant, Jiang Chen caught up to Liang Xiao who was fleeing for his life. A battle axe had appeared in Jiang Chen's hand, and vigorous as a dragon, Jiang Chen chopped with the battle axe that was blinking with mystical symbols in his hand towards Liang Xiao.

If Liang Xiao was in his best form, he wouldn't be afraid of Jiang Chen's attack. Even if he didn't want to fight back, running away was also something easy. But too bad, Liang Xiao had fallen into Jiang Chen's trap. With poison running freely in his body, his combat strength was greatly reduced, and he was no longer Jiang Chen's match.

“Great Slash of Devastation!”

Liang Xiao had no choice, he was forced to counter attack with the Great Slash of Devastation in order to block Jiang Chen's attack.

Clang!

The longsword and the battle-axe forcefully collided with each other. The collision of two high-ranked combat weapons produced a lot of sparks. The sparks ignited the air and turned it into a sea of

flames which surrounded both of them. Liang Xiao's body was like a kite with no string as he was sent flying backwards from the powerful impact, all while coughing out large amounts of blood from his mouth.

Sensing his bad condition, Liang Xiao coughed out another mouthful of blood. This mouthful of blood was forced out because of his anger. Liang Xiao felt so depressed right now, he was here to kill Jiang Chen, but he had never expected he would enter such a state. His chance at escaping death was now slim.

“Liang Xiao, face your death!”

Once Jiang Chen had the upper hand, he would never let his momentum slow down. He raised the battle-axe high up towards the skies, and in an instant, he arrived in front of Liang Xiao. The sky piercing axe beam turned into a huge curtain of light which pressed down onto Liang Xiao's head.

Ah...

Liang Xiao let out an angry roar, he was really pissed off now. Again, he circulated all his available energy and raised up his longsword in hopes of blocking Jiang Chen's attack.

Clang!

Liang Xiao was forced flying away again.

Haha...

Clang... clang... clang...

Coming next, Jiang Chen kept roaring in laughter. He kept slashing and chopping at Liang Xiao with his battle axe. Liang Xiao was forced back hundreds of miles from the attacks, and his momentum was completely suppressed by Jiang Chen. Finally, he was unable to defend himself any longer from Jiang Chen's frenzied attacks. Blood covered his entire body, and his breath was rapid. The poison had reached his heart, and Liang Xiao was on his last mile.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen leapt forwards and arrived in front of Liang Xiao. He placed his battle axe on Liang Xiao's throat. The razor sharp axe kept blinking in a bright light, and it would only take one push from Jiang Chen to chop Liang Xiao's head off.

Yu Zi Han who followed closely behind felt like his mind had been struck by thunder. It was like he was standing in the middle of a raging thunderstorm right now. Jiang Chen's position in his heart had now gone up to a high level that no one could surpass.

Yu Zi Han knew Liang Xiao was doomed for sure. The genius who was so famous in the Qi Province would meet his death today. With Jiang Chen's approaches, there was no way he would allow Liang Xiao to survive even one more day.

From the fight just now, Yu Zi Han had truly witnessed Jiang Chen's abilities. He was a man with careful thoughts and an extremely rich fighting experience. The whole fight seemed like it had gone exactly according to Jiang Chen's plan.

Such an experienced fighter, he shouldn't be just a 16 year old young man. This was experience that could only be gained by fighting countless battles.

Jiang Chen's cultivation level and combat strength was clearly lower than Liang Xiao's, but he was able to decide the outcome by himself and force Liang Xiao into a dead end. A dramatic fight like this, if Yu Zi Han hadn't witnessed it by himself, he would have never believed it.

Puh!

Liang Xiao who was forced into a dead end spat out another mouthful of blood. The poison had penetrated into all his internal organs, even if Jiang Chen didn't kill him now, there would be no way for him to live any longer.

"Liang Xiao, I'll kill you right now. But let me ask, are you convinced with the outcome?"

Jiang Chen spoke with a cruel voice. The edge of his battle-axe had cut an opening in Liang Xiao's throat, causing blood to start pouring out.

“Haha, I have lived a reputable life. I never expected I would get myself killed by you, Jiang Chen. Today’s fight, although it was due to my careless mistake, I am convinced. Come, kill me now.”

Liang Xiao’s laughter was filled with bitterness and unreconciled emotions. But, he willingly admitted his defeat. When it came to a life or death battle, there was no winning or losing; there was only life or death.

If it was Jiang Chen who was defeated by Liang Xiao, he would have been killed without any doubts.

“Good. Liang Xiao, I consider you a true man because of what you just said. I’ll allow you a quick death.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head in approval. At this critical moment of life or death, Liang Xiao didn’t kneel down to beg for mercy. Instead, he proved he was a robust man. But no matter what, Jiang Chen still had to kill him.

Swoosh!

The razor sharp battle-axe edge slashed through Liang Xiao’s throat, and blood shot up like a fountain. Under the reflection of the sunlight, it was a fierce scene.

Yu Zi Han stood not too far away with his mouth wide open due to the extreme shock. Liang Xiao was dead, he was killed by Jiang Chen. If news about this was spread out, it would cause an

earthquake in the Qi Province for sure.

After today's fight, Jiang Chen's status amongst the younger generation had been confirmed. He had become a top genius like Guan Yi Yun. The one-year fight date with Nan Bei Chao, who would be the last man standing, it would become hard to tell.

This was how Jiang Chen treated his enemies, he never showed them any mercy. After killing Liang Xiao, Jiang Chen took away his storage ring. As the number one genius from the Heavenly Sword Sect, Liang Xiao was sure to possess a great amount of wealth. Jiang Chen's thirst towards Mortal Restoration Pills and Earth Restoration Pills was beyond comparison, as he needed to replenish his energy at all times.

Chapter 160 – Return Of Jiang Chen, Something Big Happening

Liang Xiao was dead, it meant the fall of a peerless genius. He had gotten himself killed in this nameless place. Before coming here, Liang Xiao would never have imagined that this would be his ending. He had also never imagined himself getting killed by Jiang Chen.

Life was changeable. The fight between Jiang Chen and Liang Xiao had taught Yu Zi Han a lesson, and that was to never underestimate any opponent. If not, the consequences could be devastating.

Jiang Chen unleashed his Divine Sense and went inside Liang Xiao's storage ring straight away. After a person dies, his Divine Sense would disappear as well. The Divine Sense Liang Xiao had left in his storage ring was gone, so anyone who got his storage ring would be able to open it straight away.

Jiang Chen sent his Divine Sense into Liang Xiao's storage ring. To his surprise, he found a huge pile of Mortal Restoration Pills within. It was a massive amount of wealth.

Besides, the space within Liang Xiao's storage ring was five times bigger compared to Jiang Chen's storage ring. Jiang Chen estimate there were over 200,000 Mortal Restoration Pills stored within Liang Xiao's ring, and ten Earth Restoration Pills.

Ten Earth Restoration Pills were equal to 100,000 Mortal

Restoration Pills. That meant that in this storage ring, there was a wealth worth 300,000 Mortal Restoration Pills. For a Heavenly Core warrior, this was pretty unbelievable.

“Haha, no doubt Liang Xiao was the number one genius from the Heavenly Sword Sect. What a great fortune, but it’s all mine now!”

Jiang Chen laughed heartily. He treated this fortune as his very own without any feelings of guilt. He was more than happy to kill someone and rip all their fortune. Besides, leaving this great amount of fortune behind was forbidden by the natural laws.

Jiang Chen removed the storage ring on his finger and stored it into Liang Xiao’s storage ring. With this, he had a much bigger storage space.

Aside from the big amount of restoration pills, there were dozens of precious herbs in the storage rings as well, and each of them were at least 100 years old. Not only this, Jiang Chen even found a golden colored booklet. Jiang Chen took it out and saw some words written on its cover, Great Devastation Combat Skill.

This combat skill carried a devastating energy. Although it was only a Low Earth skill, it was a good skill anyways. It was not easy for a Heavenly Core warrior to possess a Low Earth combat skill.

Yu Zi Han walked up to Jiang Chen. He calmed down a bit and said, “Brother Jiang is extremely mighty, even Liang Xiao wasn’t your match! Now, in the entire younger generation of the Qi Province, I’m afraid only Nan Bei Chao can match brother Jiang.”

“I never took Liang Xiao seriously, but Nan Bei Chao is someone really extraordinary. He was born with a great destiny, not something Liang Xiao can compare with. With my current cultivation level and combat strength, I would be defeated by Nan Bei Chao in seconds.”

As the once greatest Saint in the world, Jiang Chen was a man with pride. A man he looked highly upon would definitely be someone extraordinary.

“That is nothing! The speed in which brother Jiang levels up is amazing! It has come to a state that no one could have ever imagined! In one year, you and Nan Bei Chao, the one who will be the last man standing, it’s really difficult to tell now!”

Yu Zi Han had completely submitted to Jiang Chen now. He was the fiercest and strongest genius he had ever met.

“Nan Bei Chao has great talent and potential, he is not someone who will stay in a small place for long, he has the aura of someone with the potential to become a king. Someone like him would never surrender under someone else for long.”

Jiang Chen could accurately judge anyone. Nan Bei Chao was a true genius, and someone like him would never target the Qi Province. A man like that had the ability to leave a great name in history. No matter where he went, he would be the hero of the time. Jiang Chen guessed that the entire Qi Province would one day become chaotic because of Nan Bei Chao.

When Jiang Chen thought about this, he couldn't help but feel his blood boiling. Not only was he not afraid to have an enemy like this, he even felt an extreme excitement. Only by having such a strong enemy would he not have to feel lonely on his journey.

“Zi Han, what do you think about this Great Devastation combat skill?”

Jiang Chen handed the booklet over to Yu Zi Han.

“This belongs to brother Jiang, Zi Han dares not possess it!”

Yu Zi Han hurriedly rejected.

“Just take it. This Great Devastation skill is useless to me. But, since Liang Xiao could reach his current level with this skill, it means that this skill is pretty awesome. Here, this sword is yours too.”

Together with the longsword snatched from Liang Xiao, Jiang Chen held both items in his hand and gave them to Yu Zi Han.

Yu Zi Han's expression changed dramatically. They were simply too precious. Put aside the Great Devastation skill, the high-ranked combat weapon alone was an ultimate treasure. Even an ordinary Divine Core Sect Elder of the Black Sect would find it difficult to have a high-ranked combat weapon.

“Brother Jiang, this...”

Yu Zi Han tried rejecting again, but he was stopped by Jiang Chen, “Zi Han, by giving you these items, I am actually treating you as one of my own men. As long as you work sincerely for me, there will be even greater things ahead. If you still want to reject me, that means you are treating me as an outsider.”

“If that is the case, I will accept them. From now on, brother Jiang just needs to tell me what to do, and I will do whatever I can accomplish without even furrowing my brows!”

Yu Zi Han grabbed the Great Devastation skill and the high-ranked combat weapon longsword. He knew Jiang Chen’s character, Jiang Chen was a man with his own mind. If Yu Zi Han kept rejecting him, that would just show Jiang Chen that he was a weak man.

Besides, what Jiang Chen said was right. This combat skill and combat weapon was useless for him. Jiang Chen’s abilities were far more powerful than both of them.

“Let’s go, it’s time to return to the Black Sect.”

Both men flew up once again and continued their journey towards the Black Sect.

“Brother Jiang, you’ve killed Liang Xiao, I’m sure the Heavenly Sword Sect won’t let go of this matter easily.”

Yu Zi Han said worriedly.

“So what? The Heavenly Sword Sect has offended me, that’s just unfortunate for them. With the Blood Banner in my hands now, it will be difficult even for a Divine Core warrior to kill me.”

Jiang Chen snorted. His ambitions laid in the Divine Continent, not this small Qi Province. Even the entire Eastern Continent was of no concern to him. In his mind, the Eastern Continent was only a stepping stone for him. Those who got in his way would definitely suffer a miserable ending.

Yu Zi Han gasped. He could sense an ultimate domineering aura from Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen was a man like Nan Bei Chao, and with the existence of both men, the Qi Province would sooner or later become a chaotic place. Who would have ever thought that a dark horse who came out of nowhere during the Qi Province competition could have such incredible growth in just one month?

When the one-year fight agreement happened, what Jiang Chen’s cultivation level would be, Yu Zi Han had no idea, and he dared not give it a guess.

Back in the Black Sect, it was like a bomb had just exploded. The news of Jiang Chen having killed Lord Blood Moon and all the Blood Devils was known by everyone. All the disciples felt extreme shock as Jiang Chen had just completed an impossible mission. Once again, he had proved that miracles could really happen.

This was inspirational news, but no one could feel excited about it, because everyone knew that the Black Sect was going to enter a chaotic state once again. With Jiang Chen's character, once he returned to the Black Sect and was informed about what happened to Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan, no one could imagine what Jiang Chen would do.

“In just a few days, he has killed all the Blood Devils! Even Lord Blood Moon was killed by him! This Jiang Chen, he really defies all logic! He has broken through to the Heavenly Core realm now, so I wonder how strong he has become. He is a peerless genius that has never been seen in history before!”

“This was a top mission from the Black Sect, and by killing all Blood Devils, once the Sect Chief comes out from his secluded cultivation, I'm sure he will reward Jiang Chen handsomely! Since the mission was related to the safety of the Qi Province, Jiang Chen really did a great job!”

“Don't mention the reward first, Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan were severely wounded and are now in critical conditions! With Jiang Chen's character, once he returns to the Black Sect, I'm sure he won't let this matter be resolved easily!”

“That's right, when Jiang Chen is back, I'm sure he will explode with fury upon learning about the news, and the Black Sect will become a place of chaos once again!”

“Jiang Chen has the credit of killing all Blood Devils, therefore the Sect Chief will need to do something in order to calm him down... But, Fan Kun is backed by a strong grandfather... This

matter will be really tough to resolve.”

.....

Everyone were discussing the coming events. Jiang Chen had killed all Blood Devils and returned as a hero. In the Black Sect, this is something everyone should celebrate about, but now, the celebration might just turn into something bigger and nastier.

On the peak of Guo Shan’s mountain.

Guo Shan looked at both persons who were lying in the beds. He couldn’t help but shake his head, breath out a long sigh, and say, “I’ve tried my best... By using all my long saved herbs, I’ve concocted three pills that can quench one’s life source, but this can barely keep them alive...”

Guo Shan looked like he had become a few hundred years older. In the past few days, he had spent all his time concocting pills while immersed in deep regret. He had no idea how to face Jiang Chen once he returned.

Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan’s conditions were extremely severe. That day, in order to not let Fan Kun insult her virginity, Yan Chen Yu had chose to cut her own heart’s veins. Even with Guo Shan’s ability, he could only keep her alive so she wouldn’t die immediately, but he couldn’t wake her up from her coma.

“Fan Kun, Fan Zhong Tang, both of you better be prepared for

Jiang Chen's anger!"

It seemed like flames were about to shoot out from Guo Shan's eyes. He clenched his fist tightly. No one knew better than him how frightening Jiang Chen was, becoming Jiang Chen's enemy was the worst decision one could make. He was a miraculous young man, Guo Shan firmly believed this.

Being able to kill Lord Blood Moon had proved Jiang Chen's awesome abilities.

At the same time, within the depths of the Black Sect's inner circle area, in Fan Zhong Tang's residence.

"Why is that guy so difficult to kill? Even Lord Blood Moon couldn't kill him, and was instead killed by Jiang Chen."

Fan Zhong Tang had an insidious expression.

"Don't worry grandfather, Jiang Chen killing Lord Blood Moon was just a fluke. At most, he is only an Early Heavenly Core warrior. Liang Xiao of the Heavenly Sword Sect has been waiting for Jiang Chen on the return path. With his abilities, even if there are ten Jiang Chens, he would be able to kill him with ease. I'm sure Jiang Chen won't be able to make it back to the Black Sect."

Fan Kun said with a confident look and an insidious smile on his face. He might not know Lord Blood Moon well, but he sure knew Liang Xiao. As the number one genius of the Heavenly Sword Sect,

one of the top four geniuses in the Qi Province, for him, killing Jiang Chen was just a piece of cake.

Just as Fan Kun firmly believed that Jiang Chen would be dead for sure, two figures appeared outside the Black Sect.

Chapter 161 – Great Fury Because Of Her

“Look! That’s Jiang Chen and Yu Zi Han from the inner circle, Jiang Chen is back!”

“Heavens! He came back so quickly! Something huge is going to happen!”

“Something big is definitely going to happen today! Last time it was only a few outer circle disciples who got beaten, and Jiang Chen had caused a huge disturbance, and now, Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan are in critical conditions! I’m sure Jiang Chen going to pierce a hole through the heavens!”

“There will be no peace in the Black Sect today, Jiang Chen has even killed that Lord Blood Moon, his cultivation level has increased a lot! I’m afraid even Fan Kun won’t be his match!”

.....

Everyone were frightened. Seeing the return of Jiang Chen was like seeing a huge mountain thrown into a vast ocean, it stirred up huge waves.

When Jiang Chen and Yu Zi Han came above the skies of the Black Sect, Jiang Chen couldn’t hold himself from frowning. Somehow, he could feel a weird atmosphere in the Black Sect today. Besides, the uneasiness he had been feeling was now even stronger than before.

Without doing anything, Jiang Chen went straight back to his own residence, Yu Zi Han also felt something was not right and followed behind Jiang Chen.

Outside Jiang Chen's courtyard, there were a few men standing around. The leading men were Wang Yun and Huang Zhen. After getting guidance and teachings from Jiang Chen, Wang Yun had broken through to the Early Heavenly Core realm, and had managed to enter the inner circle.

After Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan were assaulted and wounded, the few of them had been waiting here every single day. They believed Jiang Chen would come back no matter what. Right now, when all of them saw Jiang Chen, they immediately walked up and greeted him.

“What happened?”

Jiang Chen saw their panicked and nervous expression, and he couldn't help but furrow his brows once again. He had guessed they would feel happy and want to celebrate with him after he had accomplished the mission. Even if their expressions weren't happy, they shouldn't have such panicked and nervous expression either. Jiang Chen didn't see Yan Chen Yu amongst them either.

“Senior disciple Jiang, something has happened.”

Huang Zheng said. He was almost in tears at this point.

“Tell me.”

Jiang Chen's expression became stern, and he unleashed an imposing aura from all over his body which no one dared to reject. All who faced him felt fear in their hearts.

Wang Yun and the others trembled, they immediately told Jiang Chen about what had happened. Something like this couldn't be hidden from him.

Wang Yun took a deep breath and said, “Senior disciple Jiang, something bad happened to senior disciple Yan and senior disciple Han Yan.”

“Something bad happened? What happened? Where are they?”

Jiang Chen felt shock in his heart, something really did happen. He knew this must have been why he felt the uneasiness.

“Senior disciple Jiang, a few days ago, Fan Kun was trying to do something nasty to senior disciple Yan. She rejected and fought back, but she was badly wounded by Fan Kun. At the same time, senior disciple Han Yan came out from his secluded cultivation, and he had just broken through to the Heavenly Core realm. He tried to fight Fan Kun, but he was seriously wounded as well. Both of them are in critical conditions and have been brought away by Sect Elder Guo Shan.”

Wang Yun told Jiang Chen everything he knew in detail.

“Senior disciple Jiang, Fan Kun...”

Before Huang Zheng could finish his words, Jiang Chen disappeared from where he was standing. He had flown away towards the direction of Guo Shan’s mountain with extreme speed. They could even see flames bursting out from Jiang Chen’s body, it was the flames of fury.

“Is there any danger to Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan’s lives?”

Yu Zi Han asked worriedly.

“I don’t know, when I checked on senior disciple Yan’s pulse that day, her life force was extremely weak, and so was senior disciple Han Yan’s. But, since Sect Elder Guo Shan is a Divine Core warrior, as well as a great alchemist, I believe he will be able to keep them alive.”

Wang Yun said.

“Sigh... something big is going to happen.”

Yu Zi Han let out a sigh. After being with Jiang Chen for quite some time, he knew pretty well about Jiang Chen’s character. He would never show any mercy to his enemies. Besides, Fan Kun’s actions this time had gone far above Jiang Chen’s limits. Today, even the Sect Chief himself wouldn’t be able to resolve this matter

easily.

Everybody was looking at each other, the atmosphere had become extreme panic, they all knew Jiang Chen's temper, he would never let this off easily.

On Guo Shan's mountain peak, Jiang Chen appeared with lightning speed. When Guo Shan saw Jiang Chen, a rejoiced expression emerged on his face, "Brother, you're finally back!"

"Where are they?"

Jiang Chen's tone was stern, he was worried about Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan's safety, therefore he was not in a good mood right now.

"Follow me."

Guo Shan brought Jiang Chen into a room.

Jiang Chen went straight to Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan. He extended both hands and touched their wrists. An energy flowed into their bodies at the same time, and in an instant, Jiang Chen's expression changed drastically.

"How could this happen?!"

The colors of Jiang Chen's pupils immediately became red. The

condition of both Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan was too serious, their internal organs had stopped functioning, and there was only the slightest life-force floating around in the deepest parts of their souls. It would be extremely difficult to revive their life forces now. If it wasn't for the pills Guo Shan had concocted and fed them, both of them would be dead by now.

“Little Yu is a staunch girl with a mortal integrity. She was scared she might get profaned by Fan Kun, therefore she cut her own heart's veins. It is extremely difficult to wake her up. Han Yan possesses the bloodline and power of the ancient Divine Devil, and supposedly, he should have no problem recovering, but he suffered from severe injuries, and all his internal organs are dislocated. It will be tough for him to recover.

Guo Shan explained the current situation to Jiang Chen, he didn't even dare look at Jiang Chen's eyes.

“Good, good, perfect! Guo Shan, what the fuck were you doing?! When I left the Black Sect, I thought you promised me to keep her safe!”

Jiang Chen burst out in extreme fury. The flames of fury covering his body, and the aura of someone above all else hidden deep within his very source which had turned into an invisible pressure forced Guo Shan to take two steps back. It had given Guo Shan an extreme shock. Right at this moment, he had a feeling he wasn't facing a young Heavenly Core man, but a mighty Saint.

“Brother, it was Guo Shan's fault for not being able to protect Little Yu, I have failed you, brother. Guo Shan is willing to redeem

this mistake with death.”

Guo Shan bowed deeply towards Jiang Chen. He had already prepared himself for Jiang Chen’s fury. There was nothing he could do when the mistake had already happened and the consequences had taken effect. Any actions now were worthless.

“Then go kill yourself, get the hell out of here, I do not want to see you here!”

Jiang Chen roared at Guo Shan. No matter what, Guo Shan couldn’t escape from his responsibility. Jiang Chen could imagine what happened, Guo Shan must have been attracted by the Great Soul Derivation skill and couldn’t help himself. But if Guo Shan had put a little more attention towards Yan Chen Yu, this wouldn’t have happened at all.

Guo Shan remained silent and accepted the blame, he just stood there without moving. He didn’t leave the place to seek his own death, he still needed to redeem his mistakes by good deeds.

Jiang Chen turned around and looked at Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan who were lying there motionlessly. With an indifferent tone, he said, “Did you know, Little Yu possesses the Nine Yin Meridians. She suffered from extreme cold ever since she was six years old. When I brought her along with me, I promised her father, and myself, that no one would ever hurt her. She is my heart’s treasure, the reverse scale of I, Jiang Chen. Han Yan was my first brother, he could stand out and protect Little Yu, even if his life was at risk. No one is allowed to touch my brother either. But you, Guo Shan, I considered you my brother, but, you really

disappointed me.”

“Brother...”

Guo Shan choked with emotions. What Jiang Chen said made him feel ashamed. Tears were flowing down his face, and he wished he could tear Fan Kun apart right now.

“Little Yu, Brother Yan, wait for me, I’ll get revenge for you now. After this, I’ll bring both of you with me and leave this disgusting place.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen turned around and walked out from the door. When he left the room, a heaven piercing energy instantly emerged from his body.

GRAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!!

Jiang Chen looked up towards the skies and let out a loud roar. It was incredibly loud, as if it was a mighty dragon that was roaring. His hair stood up and pointed towards the skies, his anger had reached its absolute maximum. He took a step forwards and flew up into the skies, towards the inner circle area.

Today, Jiang Chen became extremely enraged for his girl. Right now, no matter the Black Sect, the Black Mountain, whatever the mission was, who Daoist Black was, it was all bullshit to him. At this point of time, there was only hatred in his mind, a heaven piercing anger.

Buzz...

This was the first time Jiang Chen had truly become furious since he was reincarnated. It was the anger that came from the deepest source of himself. Ignited by the flames of fury, the Dragon Transformation skill began circulating itself, and it produced a buzzing sound in his Qi Sea.

The fury that came from Jiang Chen's source had activated an inherent quality of the Dragon Transformation skill, causing it to start circulating restlessly. In an instant, Jiang Chen's body began resonating with it. This was a rare situation that changed even the characteristics of the Dragon Transformation skill. With its self-circulation, it began forming new Dragon Marks in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea.

One, two, five, ten... In an instant, 20 new Dragon Marks formed in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, making it a total of 170 Dragon Marks. Followed by the constant burning of Jiang Chen's fury, new Dragon Marks continuously formed.

Jiang Chen had entered a state of fury, he didn't even notice his newly formed Dragon Marks. There was only one thing on his mind right now, killing Fan Kun.

Bam...

With every step Jiang Chen took, a vibration was sent throughout the thin air, and the ground started shaking.

“FAN KUN! GET OVER HERE RIGHT NOW!!”

Jiang Chen was so enraged that his hair was pointing towards the skies. His strong energy shook the entire Black Sect, and every single disciple were rushing towards his direction. Even all the outer circle disciples were on their way. Right at this moment, every single person in the Black Sect could feel Jiang Chen’s heaven piercing fury.

“Oh heavens! Jiang Chen is really furious, his anger is so extreme!”

“What powerful energy ripples! He is like a god of war! This is terrifying!”

“His energy is still climbing! Look, it seems like there are some shadows of dragons hovering around him! Looks like only the Sect Chief can resolve this matter!”

“Even if the Sect Chief interferes, I’m sure he will need to give Jiang Chen a good explanation. This time is different from the previous one, Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan are both in critical conditions, and Jiang Chen just killed Lord Blood Moon! Judging by his current aura, I’m sure he won’t let this matter be resolved easily.”

.....

The entire Black Sect was shaken. The mighty return of Jiang Chen had stirred up a huge thunderstorm in the Black Sect. This time, Jiang Chen was determined to kill Fan Kun, and no one could guess how bad things would become.

Chapter 162 – Those Who Dares Obstruct His Path Will Die

Unleashing massive energy ripples and covering his body with flames of fury, Jiang Chen had transformed into a mighty god of war as he took one step at a time towards the direction of the inner circle.

All dragons had their reverse scale, and death awaited those who touched it; all dragons had mighty prides, and no one were allowed to step over it.

Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan were Jiang Chen's reverse scale.

The anger of a dragon was enough to overturn seas and rivers, bring devastation to the world, and make all living beings perish. Jiang Chen's fury increased with every passing second, and both his eyes had become blood red. With every step he took, his energy became stronger. Within his Qi Sea, new Dragon Marks kept forming. One hundred and eighty, one hundred and ninety, two hundred!

GRRRRRAA!

Jiang Chen looked towards the skies and let out a loud roar. Endless cracking sounded out from his body; it was like countless stars were exploding. At the same time, numerous Dragon Marks emerged from his body and hovered around Jiang Chen. The scene looked amazing and mighty.

The vast energy was trembling, the entire Black Sect was shaking because of the powerful force. Right now, with the Dragon Transformation skill evolving to a stronger level, Jiang Chen had broken through to another realm, he had reached the Mid Heavenly Core realm.

“Heavens, his energy is incredibly strong! In just the time of a few breaths, he has broken through!”

“This is frightening, it happened because of extreme fury! Jiang Chen turned his fury into his power, and unconsciously broken through to the Mid Heavenly Core realm!”

Everyone were shocked by what they saw. Yu Zi Han had a confused expression on his face as he watched. He knew that today, the Black Sect was going to lose Jiang Chen. It would be an immeasurable loss.

“Brother Jiang is a man destined to have his name carved down in history, a peerless genius! Having him was a blessing for the Black Sect, but losing him would be a great loss.”

Yu Zi Han let out a long sigh and shook his head. He knew Jiang Chen very well. After today, Jiang Chen would no longer stay in the Black Sect.

Bam bam bam...

The energy ripples unleashed from Jiang Chen's body was like a tsunami, wave after wave, rising higher and higher. Jiang Chen's energy was increasing in an exponential manner.

Within his body, countless Mortal Restoration Pills were burning like they were something worthless. In an instant, he had consumed more than 50,000 of them, and there were still new Dragon Marks forming. Two hundred and ten, two hundred and twenty... this was a really rare encounter.

Jiang Chen's anger had activated the true meaning of the Dragon Transformation skill. With the help of it, Jiang Chen was experiencing a truly amazing transformation.

The Dragon Transformation skill, its true meaning was to transform one into a dragon. A dragon was a Divine Beast, the king of all beasts, an almighty existence. The dragon's fury could burn anything underneath the heavens, the pride of a dragon couldn't be stepped on, and once it was provoked, it would send devastation in the direction of anyone who provoked it.

Jiang Chen's current motives and anger had matched the true meaning of a dragon. In other words, Jiang Chen had now received approval from the Dragon Transformation skill. This transformation would bring him incredible advantages.

Besides, Jiang Chen had to kill Fan Kun today no matter what, because if he failed to do so, he would suffer backlash from the Dragon Transformation skill, and for the rest of his life, he would never be able to gain its approval anymore.

This was a mighty skill, only those who possessed the mightiest auras could cultivate with it; only those who possessed the courage to kill anyone who got in his way could cultivate with it.

The reverse scale of a dragon, those who touched it would be killed. Right now, Jiang Chen was like a dragon, and his reverse scaled had been brutally ripped apart by someone. He had to kill the person who ripped his reverse scale off, only by killing that person would he be a perfect match for the Dragon Transformation skill.

“FAN KUN! GET OVER HERE RIGHT NOW!”

.....

Jiang Chen's voice sounded out throughout the entire Black Mountain. A lot of inner circle disciples were on their way to check out what was happening, but their faces turned pale immediately upon sensing Jiang Chen's energy ripples. In an instant, they moved aside and tried not getting his way, worried that they might suffer from his anger.

Right at this moment, an inner circle disciple flew in front of Jiang Chen. He was a good-looking guy with a cultivation base at the Late Heavenly Core realm, and he held a minor position in the inner circle. On normal days, he would help the Sect Elders manage some minor issues within the inner circle.

“Junior disciple Jiang, we can talk about this, don't be too

reckless.”

This disciple was used to interfere in everything within the Black Sect, he simply didn't have good judgment. Poking his nose into Jiang Chen's business right now would only end badly.

“Get lost!”

Jiang Chen roared out loudly. The roar was supported by the Sonic Hawk Cry. The powerful sound waves immediately covered the inner circle disciple.

Ahhhhh!!

The inner circle disciple screamed out miserably. His body was cut everywhere by the sound waves. In an instant, he had turned into a man covered in blood. He fell down from the skies and died on the spot.

“Those who gets in my way will suffer from death!”

Jiang Chen was like a raging devil king. In his eyes, any living beings were nothing. Anyone who got in his way and tried to block him, they would only meet one ending, and that was death from the fury of the dragon.

“Heavens, this is terrifying! He killed a Late Heavenly Core warrior with just a roar! How strong is he really?”

“This matter has become worse, this is going to become huge! Everyone, do not get close to Jiang Chen! He is extremely furious right now, those who dares provoked him will get killed instantly!”

“This is frightening, he truly is a mighty divine being who kills all who gets in his way! I wonder how Fan Kun is going to handle this!”

.....

Everyone became frightened, Jiang Chen was simply too ferocious. The disciple who got killed just now was innocent, but no one really pitied him.

Guo Shan was following far behind Jiang Chen, his face was covered with a gloomy expression. He had made up his mind; today, he would stand together with Jiang Chen, he would risk his life and help Jiang Chen get revenge.

“FAN KUN! COME OUT AND FACE YOUR DEATH!”

Jiang Chen’s voice was so loud the entire Black Mountain shook. Within his Qi Sea, the number of Dragon Marks had reached 250. Followed by the high circulation speed of the Dragon Transformation skill, rays of golden colored flames began emerging from his body.

The flames emerged in a bizarre manner, as if it had appeared out

of nowhere. Jiang Chen couldn't hold himself but investigate it with his Divine Sense, but before he could, a strange message appeared in his mind.

‘True Dragon Flames’

That's right, the golden colored flame was the flames of the true dragon, it was the ultimate source fire of a dragon that could compare with the universe's origin fire. It was not something that ordinary demon beast's fire could compare with.

When the True Dragon Flames appeared, it immediately devoured all of the Fiery Tiger's flames that was residing within Jiang Chen's body.

Today, Jiang Chen's body was covered in the flames of fury, there was only one thought in his mind, revenge and slaughter. This had made the Dragon Transformation skill evolve further, which awakened the True Dragon Flames.

The awakening of the True Dragon Flames was far from done. When Jiang Chen's body was fully covered in flames, the Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea increased to a total of 280.

At this moment, another message appeared within Jiang Chen's mind.

‘True Dragon Palm’

This was an combat skill exclusive for dragons, it was an extremely powerful innate ability. When this strange message appeared in Jiang Chen's mind, Jiang Chen didn't even need to study or cultivate it, the innate ability had been deeply rooted in his body, and he could unleash it any time he wanted to.

Crack crack...

Jiang Chen's palm trembled. On his hand, pieces of dragon scales begun forming. They were the scales of a true dragon, and each of them were harder than the hardest steel. Right at this moment, Jiang Chen felt like he had never been so powerful before. It was a mighty feeling that couldn't be described with words.

When Jiang Chen had almost reached the deepest area of the inner circle, there was a total of 300 Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea. With his current combat strength and form, he could instantly kill any Heavenly Core warrior with just his breath alone. The True Dragon Palm and the True Dragon Flames, with both skills he could easily kill an Early Divine Core warrior. He also had the Blood Banner, and with all this, he could even fight a Mid Divine Core warrior.

This was really frightening, the improvement of his abilities and strength had come to a stay that defied all rules and orders.

"Look, Jiang Chen's energy ripples are getting stronger and stronger! Wha... Look at his hand, what is that?!"

"Heavens! It looks like dragon scales! The skill he is cultivating

can really transform him into a dragon! So formidable!”

“A dragon is a legendary divine being, the true king of all beings! There have been no dragons in Saint Origin since the ancient eras!”

.....

Everyone were frightened by what they saw, even Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han couldn't remain calm any longer. Especially Yu Zi Han, he had witnessed how formidable Jiang Chen was when he followed him back to the Black Sect, and the current Jiang Chen was at least ten times stronger than when he had returned to the Black Sect. The energy ripples that were being unleashed from his body could choke anyone who got close to him.

Within the deepest area of the inner circle, Fan Kun couldn't sit still any longer. His expression changed dramatically, and with a panicked voice he said, “Grandfather, what should we do now? Liang Xian was unable to kill Jiang Chen, and now he has returned!”

“Hmph! Don't worry, your grandfather is the acting Sect Chief now, I can decide anything as I like! If that Jiang Chen goes too far, I can punish him by killing him myself! Don't worry, grandfather will keep you safe.”

Fan Zhong Tang let out a cold snort. He was a Mid Divine Core warrior, of course he wouldn't take Jiang Chen seriously.

Bam bam bam....

Jiang Chen kept walking towards the deepest area of the inner circle. With every step he took, the air vibrated, and the ground shook. All inner circle disciple were standing far away from him, and no one dared get close to him or in his way.

“Jiang Chen, this is the inner circle, you have gone too far!”

Right at this moment, a deep and vigorous voice sounded out. Two men came forwards and blocked Jiang Chen’s path. Both of them were old men, one had a strong energy and was an Early Divine Core warrior.

“The Sect Elders of the inner circle have come to stop Jiang Chen! I wonder how he is going to deal with them!”

“Let me tell you, Jiang Chen would never give up on what he is going to do. But now, with the interference of a Divine Core warrior, I’m not sure he can handle it anymore.”

It was really frightening, the matter had reached a state where it would almost be impossible to resolve peacefully. Even the inner circle Sect Elders were here. No one could guess what was going to happen next.

“Jiang Chen, although you have broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, you haven’t officially become an inner circle disciples, you are not allowed to create a disturbance in the inner circle!”

Another old man scolded. This made Jiang Chen sneer, he knew these two men were sent by Fan Zhong Tang in order to stop him.

“Haha, both of you better get the hell out of my way! Look, what is this?”

Jiang Chen laughed out loudly. He flipped his hand and showed them a head, “Look carefully, this is the head of Lord Blood Moon, I have accomplished the mission of killing all Blood Devils! With this huge credit, I want to exchange it for Fan Kun’s death! Those gets in my way will be punished with death, and neither of you are any exceptions, so get lost!”

Chapter 163 – Killing A Divine Core Warrior

Unruly, overbearing, and extremely rampant. He didn't even take the Divine Core Sect Elder seriously. Throughout the entire Black Sect, only Jiang Chen could have such courage and boldness.

“Look, it is the head of Lord Blood Moon! Jiang Chen killed him and all those Blood Devils in Yellowstone! He has accomplished a mission that seemed impossible to complete, and he has helped the entire Qi Province greatly!”

“The head of Lord Blood Moon doesn't look fake, his contributions are really huge! Jiang Chen is determined to kill Fan Kun, and those who gets in his way are considered his enemies!”

“Hmph! Fan Kun deserves to be killed, he assaulted Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan while Jiang Chen was away, such behavior has violated the rules of the Black Sect! However, since the Sect Chief is in secluded cultivation, and his grandfather is the acting Sect Chief now, Fan Kun can do whatever he wants and be arrogant!”

.....

Everyone were shocked, Jiang Chen was too aggressive, he didn't even back off when facing two Divine Core Sect Elders. He was carrying the head of Lord Blood Moon in his hand, this was a great contribution. If the Sect Chief was here personally, he would have to give Jiang Chen the biggest reward he could, big enough to let Jiang Chen ask for pretty much anything.

Both Divine Core Sect Elder's expressions changed. By taking out Lord Blood Moon's head, Jiang Chen was showing them that the Black Sect owes him a lot, and that made both of them feel bad about blocking him. However, they had received orders from Fan Zhong Tang. At the same time, they were also Sect Elders of the inner circle, it would be shameful if they backed off just like that.

“Jiang Chen, please calm down from your anger first. You have killed Lord Blood Moon and all those Blood Devils, this is a contribution unmatched by anything else. Once the Sect Chief exits his secluded cultivation, I'm sure he will reward you handsomely. As for the score between you and Fan Kun, let's just wait until Sect Chief comes out, I believe he will give you a satisfying answer.”

One of the Sect Elders tried to give advice to Jiang Chen.

“Hahaha, bullshit reward, your father doesn't want any of that!”

Jiang Chen roared out in laughter. He unleashed some Yuan energy in his palm and instantly shattered the head of Lord Blood Moon.

Jiang Chen was so furious that all his hair was pointing towards the skies. He clenched both his fists so tightly that cracking sounds emerged. With an insidious look in his eyes, and eyes that had turned completely blood red, he looked like an ancient beast. He was at the edge of exploding.

“I said this before, I will kill those who gets in my way! Both of

you old fools, go die now!”

Jiang Chen was extremely ruthless. He extended his hand towards one of the Sect Elders and unleashed the newly awakened True Dragon Palm.

Bang!

Followed by a loud banging sound, a blood red dragon claw, huge as a house, suddenly descended from the skies. It had locked onto the old man.

“How dare you attack a Sect Elder?! This is disrespectful! Jiang Chen, you are courting death!”

The Sect Elder became angry. He waved his hand and unleashed a bright beam of light which pierced towards Jiang Chen’s True Dragon Palm.

Bang!

A loud banging sound swept across the place. The True Dragon Palm was a dragon’s combat skill, it was not something easy to deal with. Besides, Jiang Chen had a total of 300 Dragon Marks, any strike from him would carry at least 3,000,000 Jin of force. Ordinary Divine Core warriors would find it difficult to handle an attack like this.

The True Dragon Palm struck like a mountain crashing through

the skies. It shattered the old man's attack, then it caught the old man in the air.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you attack me!”

The Sect Elder's expression changed, he never expected Jiang Chen would be so strong. So strong that he could defeat him, who was a Divine Core Sect Elder.

“True Dragon Flames, burn this man to ashes!”

Jiang Chen didn't give him any chance to escape from the dragon claw. In an instant, the claw became covered with flames.

Ahhhh!!

The hot flames was like a drill that could pierce anything. It ripped apart the old man's body in an instant. This was the flames of a true dragon, the king of all beasts. Jiang Chen had managed to unleash it together with the True Dragon Palm. The combination of both was something that no ordinary man could withstand.

The old man had been wounded before this, he also didn't really take Jiang Chen seriously either. He was sure Jiang Chen wouldn't dare attack him, that's why he was captured by the True Dragon Palm. If not, with his Divine Core cultivation base, even if he couldn't defeat Jiang Chen, he wouldn't have been captured by Jiang Chen so easily either.

Horrifying screams sounded out throughout Black Mountain. In just three breaths time, the old man's screams had completely stopped. Because of the scorching True Dragon Flames, the old man was immediately burned into ashes.

The scene had stunned everyone who witnessed it completely. Right at this moment, everyone's eyes had widened and were filled with looks of disbelief. A Divine Core Sect Elder was killed by Jiang Chen in such an easy way. If they hadn't witnessed it themselves, they wouldn't have believed it.

“By the heavens, what kind of flames are that?! It was so formidably powerful! An Early Divine Core warrior was just killed by it in an instant!”

“Did you guys see the combat skill unleashed by Jiang Chen?! That was a huge dragon claw fully covered with dragon scales, it was so formidable! Also, that ferocious flame, I had a feeling it could burn anything in this world!”

“How long has he been in the Black Sect? I think, at most only one month! And yet, he is able to kill a Divine Core Sect Elder! It's funny that most people thought he would be defeated by Nan Bei Chao once their fight arrives, but look at him now, who the last man standing will be is now a mystery!”

“What's more important is, he really killed a Divine Core Sect Elder! This is huge! In the Black Sect's history, a disciple has never even tried to kill a Divine Core Sect Elder, Jiang Chen is the first one! This really shows how much hatred he has towards Fan Kun, he is determined to kill Fan Kun today no matter what!”

.....

Everyone were shocked that Jiang Chen had just killed a Divine Core Sect Elder. Jiang Chen had killed two men so far, one of them was an inner circle disciple, and another was a Sect Elder of the inner circle. Both his actions showed how determined he was to kill Fan Kun today.

“Jiang Chen, you... how dare you to kill Sect Elder, you're outrageous!”

Another Divine Core Sect Elder was so angry that his entire body was trembling. He pointed at Jiang Chen with his finger and spoke with a trembling voice. Everyone could tell he was frightened. Jiang Chen's brutal behavior and the ability to quickly kill a Divine Core warrior had made this Sect Elder extremely frightened.

“Get out of my way if you wish to stay alive.”

Jiang Chen glared at the Sect Elder. The Sect Elder felt a tremble in his mind, and he couldn't hold on any longer. He took two steps backwards. The man in front of him was too frightening.

“Today really is an eye opener for me.”

Yu Zi Han took a deep breath. He couldn't find any words to describe his feelings right now. Jiang Chen's growth had really made everyone speechless.

“Good, that’s my good brother!”

Guo Shan looked really excited. Jiang Chen’s performance today had way exceeded his imagination. He had never seen anyone who could experience such a quick growth in such a short period of time.

“FAN KUN! COME OUT AND FACE YOUR DEATH!”

Jiang Chen moved his leg and took a step forwards once again, his loud voice sounded out above the entire Black Mountain. When he walked past the Sect Elder, he didn’t even take a second look at him. Although the Sect Elder was angry at how he behaved, he had no courage to step up and block his path anymore. He had no doubt that if he did it again, his ending would be no different than the other Sect Elder, who was now dead.

With an indomitable spirit and an overwhelming aura, the Dragon Transformation skill had successfully evolved. It had brought Jiang Chen huge benefits, 300 Dragon Marks, True Dragon Flames, and the True Dragon Palm. All of this had made Jiang Chen much stronger. Now, what Jiang Chen needed to do was kill Fan Kun despite all the obstacles. Once he did it, he would successfully gain the Dragon Transformation skill’s approval and would match it in a perfect manner.

Now, no one had the audacity to get in Jiang Chen’s way anymore. This man was unstoppable, only those Mid Divine Core Sect Elder can stop Jiang Chen from proceeding further.

“Hmph!”

Right at this moment, a cold snort sounded out from the depths of the inner circle area. After that, two figures flew out. Finally, Fan Zhong Tang and Fan Kun were out. Fan Zhong Tang had a cruel and insidious look in his eyes as he stared at Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, you are an unruly disciple, how dare you kill an inner circle Sect Elder? This is a crime that cannot be forgiven! As the acting Sect Chief, I’ll have to punish you by killing you today!”

Fan Zhong Tang said in a righteous manner.

Swoosh~

A human figure suddenly appeared next to Jiang Chen, it was Guo Shan. When he saw Fan Zhong Tang and his grandson, it immediately reminded him of what happened that day and made him furious.

“Fan Zhong Tang, Fan Kun violated the rules first, and now, Jiang Chen wants to bring justice! You, as the acting Sect Chief shouldn’t stop him, you should give him a chance to fight Fan Kun in a deathmatch, let them decide who the last one standing will be!”

Guo Shan said with a stern expression.

Hearing this, all the people who were watching from far away nodded their heads. This was really the fairest method to resolve this matter. Of course, everybody knew that Fan Zhong Tang would never agree to Guo Shan's suggestion and allow Fan Kun and Jiang Chen to have a deathmatch. This was no different than killing Fan Kun himself. Jiang Chen could kill Divine Core warriors now, Fan Kun was too weak compared to Jiang Chen.

“Cruelly killing a Sect Elder is a capital offense; it's way worse than what Fan Kun did!”

Fan Zhong Tang said with an indifferent tone.

Guo Shan still tried to say something, But Jiang Chen just waved his hand and stopped from saying anything else. Jiang Chen didn't want to quarrel with anyone, what he wanted today was to kill Fan Kun, and no one could stop him.

“Both of you have tried to kill me so many times, you even informed Liang Xiao from the Heavenly Sword Sect about my mission to kill all Blood Devils in Yellowstone, then you asked him to ambush me on my way back to the Black Sect! But too bad, my abilities are beyond your imagination, Liang Xiao is nothing in my eyes!”

After saying that, Jiang Chen took out another head from his storage ring. When everyone saw the face of that head, the atmosphere immediately heated up.

“It really is Liang Xiao! Jiang Chen has killed Liang Xiao from the

Heavenly Sword Sect!”

“Heavens! This is frightening! One of the four geniuses of the Qi Province was killed! Jiang Chen can kill Divine Core warriors now, killing Liang Xiao actually means nothing to him!”

“If what Jiang Chen said is true, then Fan Kun and his grandfather are doomed! Their actions are considered betrayal!”

.....

Now everyone could tell that the head belonged to Liang Xiao. Even Fan Zhong Tang and Fan Kun’s expressions changed slightly. They couldn’t believe that even Liang Xiao was killed by Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen had destroyed all their plans.

“Fan Kun, by causing Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan severe injuries, you have offended me by creating hatred that cannot be resolved. Today, I will kill you no matter what!”

Jiang Chen stared at Fan Kun.

Chapter 164 – Unstoppable

With a powerful throw, Liang Xiao's head turned into a beam which pierced towards Fan Zhong Tang and Fan Kun, and it exploded right in front of them and turned into a blood mist. Fan Kun's face turned pale, and all his arrogance was gone. Even Liang Xiao was killed by Jiang Chen, if he had to fight face to face with Jiang Chen, what awaited him was a true hell. There was no way he could survive Jiang Chen's attack.

Fan Kun had turned into a real coward right now. He could only hide behind his grandfather. Even so, he was frightened by the ruthless Jiang Chen, he had no doubt that if he took a step forwards, Jiang Chen would immediately rip him apart.

“Ridiculous!”

Fan Zhong Tang shouted out loudly, an angry expression immediately emerged on his face. Jiang Chen's behavior was an insult to him. No matter what, he was a highly acclaimed Sect Elder, and the acting Sect Chief at the moment. Jiang Chen's behavior had insulted him in front of all the Black Sect disciples, and had put a shameful mark on his body that would never be washed away.

“Haha...”

Jiang Chen let out a wild laughter. His next action told Fan Zhong Tang he could be even more impudent. Jiang Chen unleashed a heaven piercing energy and unleashed the True

Dragon Palm once again towards Fan Kun.

“How dare you!”

Fan Zhong Tang was really pissed off. He waved his sleeves and unleashed a powerful beam, an attack from a Mid Divine Core warrior. Both attacks collided together, and an explosion sounded out.

No matter what, Fan Zhong Tang was a real Mid Divine Core warrior, and his combat strength was far above that of the two Early Divine Core Sect Elders just now. The attack had forced Jiang Chen a few steps back, but, it could only force Jiang Chan back without causing him any injuries.

“Jiang Chen, you are a wicked man! Not only did you show no respect to the Sect Elders, you even killed a Sect Elder! A lawless disciple like who doesn't respect the rules of the Black Sect is not welcome here! Today, I as the Sect Chief will bestow death upon you as punishment for the crimes you have committed!”

Fan Zhong Tang portrayed a strong intent to kill, and he carried a cruel smile on his face. He wanted to use this opportunity to kill Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen had given him a good excuse to kill him when he killed the inner circle disciple and the Sect Elder.

Fan Zhong Tang took a step forwards and came close to Jiang

Chen. With his sleeves fluttering in the wind, and lots of killing intent, he struck out with his palm and unleashed a huge golden palm which looked like a jail. It pierced towards Jiang Chen.

“Fan Zhong Tang, how dare you!”

Guo Shan shouted out loudly. With a move, he appeared in front of Jiang Chen and prepared to block. He circulated his Yuan energy, then he pushed out both palms at the same time, unleashing layers of colorful bright lights, countering Fan Zhong Tang’s attack.

Bang!

The battle between two Divine Core warriors was so powerful, it simply couldn’t be imagined by those who had never witnessed it before. Two great warriors, one was determined to kill Jiang Chen, another counter attacked with a heart full of regret. Both of them unleashed deadly strikes.

Bang!

Although Guo Shan was the chief alchemist of the Black Sect, his cultivation level was only at the Early Divine Core realm, and he was not a match for Fan Zhong Tang. He suffered from the collisions of the attacks, then he was sent flying away by Fan Zhong Tang’s palm attack.

Jiang Chen reacted quickly. With a move, he arrived behind Guo

Shan, then extended his hand and helped stabilize Guo Shan's body.

“Brother!”

Guo Shan looked at Jiang Chen, then he wiped away some blood on his lip.

“Let me handle this. You just stand aside and watch.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. After that, he took a step forwards and arrived in front of Fan Zhong Tang.

“Fan Zhong Tang, I am determined to kill Fan Kun today, there is no way you can stop me. Also, remember this, once I have the ability to kill you, you will face death as well. Both of you will be killed by me one day.”

Jiang Chen had a calm voice, it was as if he was he was talking normally. He knew very well about his own abilities. Although he had 300 Dragon Marks right now, and his combat strength was increased exponentially, and the fact that the True Dragon Palm and the True Dragon Flames had given the ability to kill Early Divine Core warriors, he still couldn't kill a Mid Divine Core warrior now.

But, he had made up his mind to kill Fan Kun today no matter what. Even if Fan Zhong Tang interfered, he would still find a way to kill him.

“You’re shamelessly boasting.”

Fan Zhong Tang’s demeanor was incomparably imposing. He began drawing something in the air with his hand. Soon after, his powerful Yuan energy flew out from his body like a tidal wave and turned into a golden colored shield. The golden shield was about 10 meters tall, it glowed brightly, and it had some simple symbols on it.

Many people cried out in alarm. Fan Zhong Tang, a Mid Divine Core warrior, used his most powerful combat skill against Jiang Chen. One could easily tell that he really wanted to kill Jiang Chen, but many of them could understand why he did. Fan Zhong Tang and Fan Kun had tried crossing Jiang Chen many times before, and now that Jiang Chen was showing his intention to kill Fan Kun, of course they would try their best to kill Jiang Chen.

“Be careful brother, this is the Profound Golden Shield, it is a very powerful attack!”

Guo Shan shouted out loudly from behind.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He flipped his palm, and in an instant, a huge Blood Banner appeared out of nowhere. Jiang Chen injected all his Yuan energy into the flag, causing it to produce a loud and violent rocking sound. With his control, the flag immediately pierced towards Fan Zhong Tang and Fan Kun.

Huu... huu... haa... haa...

At this moment, an evil breeze swept across the places, and foul waves rumbled about. The steaming foul spirits unleashed by the Blood Banner covered the skies, and the demonic cries and howls coming from the flag sent a shiver down the spines of everyone present.

Ghosts cried and howled. There were ghostly faces flying all over the place. These ghostly faces kept roaring and yelling like they were in hell. The entire Black Sect was covered by an evil atmosphere.

“Heavens, what is that?! It’s so frightening!”

“That is the Blood Banner, Blood Moon Shaman’s most powerful weapon! He killed hundreds of thousands of innocent people, then he use their souls to make this banner! It’s one of the evildest weapons in this world! I heard it has also killed quite a number of Divine Core warriors decades ago, but I had never expected Jiang Chen would actually manage to get it!”

“He must have gotten it from Lord Blood Moon after killing him! This is really frightening, the banner is a true weapon of evil, and it should have been destroyed! But, Jiang Chen didn’t destroy it, and now he is using it... Looks like Jiang Chen really is determined to kill Fan Kun at all costs!”

“Damn it, there are over 100,000 foul spirits within that banner,

if Jiang Chen goes mad and releases them all, the entire Black Sect will literally become hell!”

.....

Everyone were stunned upon seeing the Blood Banner, even Guo Shan was shocked by it. Who would have thought that at this critical point, Jiang Chen would take out a powerful weapon such as this.

Bang!

When the Blood Banner crashed into the Golden Shield unleashed by Fan Zhong Tang, the black mist exploded, and foul spirits flew around. The huge Blood Banner trembled and turned into a huge black mouth which tried absorbing Fan Zhong Tang.

Ha!

Fan Zhong Tang shouted out loudly and unleashed two symbols, defending himself from the banner’s absorption force. Because he was facing the infamous Blood Banner, a ferocious and evil weapon that had caused a huge disturbance in the Qi Province decades ago, even Fan Zhong Tang felt scared.

Luckily, it was Jiang Chen who was controlling the Blood Banner now, and he wasn’t cultivating a demonic or evil skill. If it was Blood Moon Sham himself who was controlling the flag right now, Fan Zhong Tang would have already been devoured by now.

Wuu... Wuu...

The cries of the ghosts and the foul spirits didn't seem to stop. The evil breeze kept sweeping across the land and making the skies change color. Jiang Chen held the Blood Banner with one hand, and he looked like a mighty devil king.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you use such an evil weapon? You are out of your mind!”

Fan Zhong Tang scolded with a loud voice.

“Hahaha! Those who hurt my lover, those who wounded my brother, no matter who it was, I will kill him! Let alone this Blood Banner, even if I had the vilest and most brutal ability in the world right now, I would use it to kill Fan Kun! None can stand in my way, so do not try to lecture me with whatever bullshit you have! And do not try to teach me about the rules of the Black Sect! Do you honestly believe I won't just release all evil spirits within this banner and turn the Black Sect into a real hell?”

Jiang Chen let out a wild laughter; he had turned into a complete maniac right now. This was the fury of a true man. If a man couldn't protect his own woman and brother, then he would not be a true man.

If he couldn't get revenge for them, how could he call himself a man?!

Wa!

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, the expressions of everyone at the scene changed dramatically. No one had any doubts about what Jiang Chen said. With his character and incredible courage, he meant what he had said. He would really release all foul spirits within the banner. It might not cause the Black Sect to perish, but it would surely cause tremendous damage.

Besides, these hundreds of thousands of foul spirits were to escape from the banner, even if they could only survive for a short period of time after leaving the Blood Banner, with such a huge amount of them, a huge amount of lives would definitely be sacrificed.

“You really dare to do so?”

Fan Zhong Tang’s expression changed. He had never seen anyone so ruthless before.

“Whether or not I dare is not your problem! Today I want to kill Fan Kun, let me see if you have the ability to stop me!”

After saying that, Jiang Chen immediately released hundreds of foul ghosts from the banner. These frightening and ferocious spirits darted towards Fan Zhong Tang immediately upon being released. After that, Jiang Chen threw the flag high up into the skies.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

At the same time, Jiang Chen unleashed the Nine Phantom Wolves. In an instant, nine Jiang Chens and nine Blood Banners appeared. Combined with those hundreds of foul spirits, even Fan Zhong Tang felt dazzled by the mess and was unable to tell which one of them were real.

“Oh no!”

Fan Zhong Tang was surrounded by nine Jiang Chens and lots of foul spirits. He suddenly had a bad feeling, but it was too late.

“Break apart now!”

Fan Zhong Tang roared out loudly. A bright golden blade appeared in his hand, and with all his effort, he instantly killed all the foul spirits, as well as shattering all phantoms.

But at the same time, the real Jiang Chen had already arrived in front of Fan Kun. A blood red dragon claw had turned into a strong jail, and Fan Kun was captured within.

Only now did Fan Kun realize what had just happened, he found out he had been captured by Jiang Chen, and this instantly sent a tremendous amount of terror to his mind. He struggled with all his effort in attempt to escape from the dragon claw, but to his fear, he was too weak compared to Jiang Chen. No matter how hard he

tried, there was no way he could break the dragon claw apart.

“Save me, grandfather!”

Fan Kun shouted out loudly. He finally felt true terror now. The feeling of having gotten himself killed was creeping in his mind, it was a feeling that he had never experienced before.

“Jiang Chen, let go of my grandson!”

Fan Zhong Tang's expression changed dramatically. He had underestimated Jiang Chen's abilities, he had never thought it was possible for Jiang Chen to catch his grandson while underneath his protect. Now, with Jiang Chen's extremely high intention to kill, it seemed like there was no way for Fan Kun to escape hell's calling.

Chapter 165 – Murdering With A Borrowed Knife

Jiang Chen's performance was really frightening, it made everyone in the Black Sect feel difficulty breathing. With his Mid Heavenly Core cultivation base, he had fiercely broken the defense of a Mid Divine Core warrior and captured Fan Kun. No one would have believed this had happened if they hadn't witnessed it by themselves. In their minds, only Jiang Chen could have done this.

“Is he really just a Mid Heavenly Core warriors? Why is a Heavenly Core warrior so strong?”

“The skill he is cultivating, his combat skills, and also his weapons, they're all beyond what a Heavenly Core warrior should have! Having an enemy like him must be terrifying!”

“Sigh... Fan Kun is doomed this time. Judging by the situation, let alone his grandfather, even the Sect Chief won't be able to save him this time.”

“He deserved it! If he hadn't kept going against Jiang Chen, and also if he hadn't disturbed Yan Chen Yu while Jiang Chen wasn't here, wouldn't have ended up like this today! No matter how influential he is within the Black Sect, there are always someone who absolutely cannot be provoked!”

.....

Everyone had the same feeling as they looked at Fan Kun who was captured by Jiang Chen. When they saw the terrified look on Fan Kun's face and his trembling body, all of them felt pity for him. Of course, they were only able to feel pity for him now.

Jiang Chen wanted to kill Fan Kun, and nobody felt that there was anything wrong about that. An eye for an eye, what Fan Kun was experiencing right now, he had asked for it himself.

Jiang Chen simply ignored Fan Zhong Tang's anger. He turned around and stared at Fan Kun, and just his gaze alone was enough to send terror down Fan Kun's spine. It was a gaze of judgment, it was as if the gaze alone could cause a thousand cuts on Fan Kun's body.

“Grandfather!”

Fan Kun couldn't restrain himself, and his voice was trembling. Right now, anyone could tell how frightened he was.

Nobody wants to die, especially when death was so close by.

“Jiang Chen, we can talk about this! Just let Fan Kun go first!”

Fan Zhong Tang had softened his manner, since his grandson had become the lamb waiting for slaughter, he couldn't help but lower down his pride.

“Let him go? Hahaha!”

Jiang Chen looked at Fan Zhong Tang as if he was looking at an idiot. After that, he started laughing crazily.

“Fan Zhong Tang, have you become a dotard, or was your head just kicked by a donkey? No way I will set him free! But, I can let you choose how he will be killed. First option, I’ll place him within the Blood Banner and let all the foul spirits within bite him until he dies. Second option, I’ll use my flames and burn him into ashes. Which do you like the most? Fan Kun, which one do you prefer?”

Jiang Chen stared at Fan Kun with a sneer. When he heard the two options Jiang Chen presented him, Fan Kun almost fainted due to fear.

Not only Fan Kun, even those in the Black Sect who were watching felt chills. Besides, no one had any doubts about what Jiang Chen said. Both methods were part of his current abilities, and he would for sure use one of them to kill Fan Kun.

But both options were really cruel. Placing Fan Kun into the Blood Banner and have him be bitten by all the foul spirits within, he would be experiencing a slow, painful death. He would rather be killed instantly with a blade.

As for the second option, Jiang Chen had already used it just now. Everyone had witnessed how powerful Jiang Chen’s flames were. He just killed an Early Divine Core Sect Elder with it.

Even a Divine Core Sect Elder was burned into ashes, to say

nothing of Fan Kun.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you?!”

Fan Zhong Tang angrily shouted.

Ahhhh!!!!

Too bad, Fan Zhong Tang's warning was worthless in front of Jiang Chen. Before he could finish his words, Fan Kun's horrifying scream sounded out throughout the entire Black Sect. Every saw a golden flame dancing around the dragon's claw. The flame was like a living being trying its best to squeeze itself into Fan Kun's body under Jiang Chen's control.

In an instant, Fan Kun had been flooded by a sea of golden flames.

Ahhhh!!!!

The shrill scream sounded like it was coming from something that was no human, and those who heard it felt their hair standing on the end. Jiang Chen purposely controlled the flame's temperature, making it burn slowly so that Fan Kun wouldn't die quickly.

Countless peoples gasp at the same time, they couldn't imagine what kind of pain was Fan Kun went through right now, but from his yell of pain could judge that it must be a terrifying experience.

This was an extremely cruel torture, killing a man by slowly burning him. Jiang Chen purposely controlled the temperature to slightly higher than what Fan Kun could withstand, making him slowly burn to death.

Flames like this would make Fan Kun feel a severe pain from inside out. Before he was completely burned into ashes, he would continue feeling extreme pain.

This was how Jiang Chen dealt with his enemies. He needed to get revenge for Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan. Fan Kun had to receive at least one hundred times the pain they felt.

“Ah... bastard!”

Fan Zhong Tang's eyes turned red, and he roared out loudly. The pain and anger he received from witnessing his own grandson burn in the flames was not something that anyone could ever imagine or understand.

Bang!

Fan Zhong Tang became extremely furious. The golden blade in his hand produced a buzzing sound, then he swung it towards Jiang Chen.

The huge golden blade sliced through the skies and transformed into a 30 meter tall golden blade beam. It was bright and shiny,

and it carried a deadly attack force. This attack was unleashed with the full strength of a Mid Divine Core warrior, it was a mighty attack that no one could escape.

Fan Zhong Tang could tell that there was no way for him to save his grandson now. When Fan Kun was captured by Jiang Chen, the only thing awaiting him was death. Suffering from the pain of losing his grandson, what Fan Zhong Tang could do now was kill the one who murdered his grandson, let Jiang Chen's death be the compensation for the death of his grandson.

The blade's buzzing sounded out throughout the skies. Right at this moment, everyone held their breath. An attack with all the strength of a Mid Divine Core warrior was an attack that no one could escape.

When facing such a powerful attack, Jiang Chen still remained calm. With a cruel smile on his face, he just raised his head a little.

“Old dog, I will let you kill your own grandson! I wonder how that will make you feel!”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Right before the golden blade beam reached him, Jiang Chen retracted his True Dragon Flames, then he grabbed onto Fan Kun whose face was barely recognizable, and who was still somewhat conscious, then he simply threw him towards the incoming attack.

“Ahhh!!! Noooo!!!”

Fan Kun had a last frightened look in his eyes. He let out his last shrill scream in this world.

Slash!

Blood spilled everywhere, and Fan Kun's screaming completely stopped. His body was sliced in half by the blade beam, then he fell down from the skies.

After killing Fan Kun, the golden blade beam didn't stop, but it continued its course towards Jiang Chen. However, Jiang Chen was prepared, and because Fan Kun had blocked the attack, Jiang Chen had time to spread his blood wings. His wings combined with the Dimensional Shift allowed him to move away with lightning speed and evade Fan Zhong Tang's attack. As for the energy ripples unleashed by the blade beam, they could simply not harm Jiang Chen at all.

“Aaahhh!!!! Jiang Chen, you bastard!!”

Fan Zhong Tang roared out in disbelief. He was about to go crazy, and his body was violently trembling. Jiang Chen had just made him kill his own grandson.

Although he knew there was no way his grandson could have survived today, it was still two completely different concepts. Killed by someone else, or killed by his own grandfather. For Fan Zhong Tang, it was a completely different feeling.

“Hahahaha! Old dog, you are no better than an animal, you just killed your own grandson! You’re such a maniac, and you still had the audacity to call other people evil? Puh!”

Jiang Chen was laughing out heartily. He would never let go of any chance to attack Fan Zhong Tang, even if it was just with words.

This is frightening! He is so scheme full! The way he killed Fan Kun was the cruelest and most depressing way to kill someone!”

“Jiang Chen is a man full of schemes and wisdom, he has rich fighting experience, and he was determined to get revenge today. Now, by using such a tactic, he made Fan Kun die by his own grandfather’s attack! By doing this, not only did Jiang Chen get revenge for Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan, he also left a deep scar in Fan Zhong Tang’s heart. This painful memory will never leave his mind.”

“That’s right, there is a huge difference between being killed by Jiang Chen and his own grandfather. If Jiang Chen really killed Fan Kun himself, Fan Zhong Tang would at most just become incredibly furious and try his best to kill Jiang Chen for revenge, but when Jiang Chen made Fan Kun die by own grandfather’s hands, a shadow was left in Fan Zhong Tang’s mind.”

“Horrifying! We can never offend someone like this!”

.....

Everyone were shocked by what they just witnessed. From the Sect Elders to the ordinary disciples, everyone let out sighs in their minds. They looked Jiang Chen as if they were looking at a little devil king. The consequences of offending someone like was deadly, the way he got revenge was not something anyone here could handle.

“Kun’er...”

Fan Zhong Tang looked at Fan Kun’s dead body, then he roared out even louder. In the next second, he raised his head up and looked at Jiang Chen with cruel eyes.

“Jiang Chen, the two of us cannot exist together! Today, I will send you to accompany my grandson!”

Fan Zhong Tang was extremely enraged. He unleashed countless golden rays from his blade which interlaced into a gigantic web, then he threw the gigantic web towards Jiang Chen’s head.

Right at this moment, a huge hand descended from the skies. In an instant, it shattered the gigantic golden web unleashed by Fan Zhong Tang.

Someone with great power had finally stepped into this matter. Everyone were shocked once again. In the Black Sect, there was only one man who could shatter Fan Zhong Tang’s attack with a single strike.

“Enough!”

A cold shout sounded out, and soon after, a man wearing a Daoist robe appeared out of nowhere and positioned himself in the middle of Fan Zhong Tang and Jiang Chen. Behind him there was a few Divine Core Sect Elders, and they all held high positions within the Black Sect. Each one of them was an highly acclaimed Sect Elder of the Black Sect.

The main in the Daoist robe was none other than Daoist Black. He was in secluded cultivation before this, and some Sect Elder had obviously interrupted his cultivation and requested him to look into this matter. Todays incident had gone too far, and it could only be resolved by Daoist Black himself. Only he could suppress these people.

“Sect Chief!”

Everyone bowed to Daoist Black. He was the number one man in the Black Sect, and no one dared neglect his existence.

“Sect Chief, this guy cruelly killed his fellow disciple! At the same time, he also killed an inner circle Sect Elder! He walks the path of evil, let kill me him now!”

Fan Zhong Tang’s emotions were still in a state of feverish agitation.

Chapter 166 – Biased

The scene immediately became quiet. Everyone stared at Daoist Black, awaiting his decision. His next words would decide Jiang Chen's fate.

Judging from how Fan Zhong Tang behaved, there was no way he would let Jiang Chen go. Also, Jiang Chen had killed an inner circle Sect Elder and disciple, which is a violation of the Black Sect's most seriously rules. In the entire history of the Black Sect, there hadn't been a single disciple who had done this. Therefore, as the Sect Chief, it would make perfect sense if Daoist Black wanted to punish Jiang Chen.

But, Jiang Chen had killed Lord Blood Moon, and this was considered a magnificent contribution. Even if he had violated the most serious rules, he could use this contribution to compensate for it. Besides, Jiang Chen was a peerless genius, he was a man destined to have his name remembered for many generations, he had potential and talent that could defy any rules. In other words, he really was the future hope for the Black Sect. Just from this alone, it was understandable if Daoist Black didn't punish Jiang Chen.

So, whether or not Daoist Black punishes Jiang Chen, either decision was understandable. Now, it all depended on how he would make the decision.

With a calm look on his face, Daoist Black looked at the angry Fan Zhong Tang, then he turned around and looked at Jiang Chen.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He placed one hand on his back, then he stared back into Daoist Black's eyes with a fierce expression. In his mind, both Guo Shan and Daoist Black were responsible for Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan's injuries. Daoist Black had met Jiang Chen once and promised to provide anything he needed. But now, he as the Sect Chief couldn't even protect Jiang Chen's girl and brothers, and this really pissed him off.

Daoist Black's mind trembled. He focused his gaze and tried looking through Jiang Chen, but to his disappointment, he couldn't find anything. In his eyes, this young man in front of him portrayed an aura of superiority, an aura of a man with lots of power, and a pride that came from his very roots. This was not something one could fake.

And although Jiang Chen's cultivation level was way weaker than his, Jiang Chen still gave him a feeling that he should admire Jiang Chen. The feeling felt so natural, as if Jiang Chen was an immortal who had descended from the immortal real, looking down upon everything in this mortal realm.

For Daoist Black, this was a feeling beyond logic and reason, but it really existed in his mind.

“Please give out your order and kill this guy, Sect Chief.”

Fan Zhong Tang continued.

Finally, Daoist Black moved his gaze away from Jiang Chen. He took a deep breath and said, “I know the cause of today’s incident. It was all Fan Kun’s fault, he had violated the rules and bullied his fellow disciples, and he deserved to be killed. Therefore, Jiang Chen’s revenge was understandable. But, Jiang Chen also cruelly killed inner circle disciples and Sect Elders. This is a crime that cannot be forgiven. But, since he killed Lord Blood Moon and all the Blood Devils in Yellowstone, as this is a great contribution, I’ll have both matters dropped. That’s it for today.”

Daoist Black’s words had poured oil on the flames and shocked everyone present. This decision was obviously biased towards Jiang Chen. Killing a Divine Core Sect Elder was a serious offense in the Black Sect, but Daoist Black had marked it as resolved just like that. This had shown everyone how much he cared about Jiang Chen. He could offend a highly acclaimed Sect Elder like Fan Zhong Tang just for the sake of protecting Jiang Chen.

“Did you see that? This is what I call true abilities! This is the privileges of being a peerless genius!”

“That’s right! It is obvious that the Sect Chief is siding with Jiang Chen! Think about it like this, if Jiang Chen wasn’t a peerless genius, and didn’t have that mighty talent, I’m sure the Sect Chief would punish him and have him killed instantly!”

“It is understandable that the Sect Chief made this decision. If he doesn’t cherish and protect a genius like Jiang Chen, he would be an idiot! Besides, Fan Kun deserved all this! Both he and his grandfather looked down upon everyone in the Black Sect just because of their high status, but they finally bumped into a tough

guy like Jiang Chen!”

.....

Many people whispered to each other. Most of them felt that Daoist Black’s decision was perfectly fine. It was all because of Jiang Chen’s value. In this world where the weak prey on the strong, everything would need to be backed up by strong abilities. Jiang Chen’s abilities and potential had made Daoist Black take him seriously.

Since Nan Bei Chao’s debut in the Qi Province, he had proven that he was a rising star. If there were no other rising stars who could stop him, with Nan Bei Chao’s talent and potential, it would only take him a few years to change the patterns of the Qi Province completely. However, the appearance of Jiang Chen had given Daoist Black a hope to stop Nan Bei Chao, and that was the main reason why Daoist Black took Jiang Chen so seriously.

“Sect Chief!”

Fan Zhong Tang’s expression changed dramatically, he had never expected Daoist Black to make this kind of decision. If Daoist Black really wanted to protect Jiang Chen, he would never be able to get his revenge anymore.

“Enough, Sect Elder Fan! During this period where you were the acting Sect Chief, you allowed this to happen and made our Sect suffer great loss. You will be punished with facing the wall for one month. After one month, you will resume your position as a Sect

Elder.”

Daoist Black said with a stern voice. He portrayed a majestic and dignified image that belonged only to the Sect Chief. No one dared resist the Sect Chief’s orders.

“Sect Chief!”

Fan Zhong Tang’s eyes widened, and he felt like he was going to vomit blood. What was all this about? His own grandson had been killed by someone, and the person who killed him wasn’t punished at all! But he who had lost his grandson was sentenced to face the wall for one month?

“Sect Elder Fan, are you doubting my decision?”

Daoist Black’s expression turned stern. As the Sect Chief, he needed to maintain dignity that no one could challenge. No one could question his decision, even if that person was a highly acclaimed Sect Elder.

“No.”

Fan Zhong Tang cupped his fist and bowed slightly. Although he didn’t want to accept this decision, Daoist Black’s strength was greater than Fan Zhong Tang’s. If he really argued with Daoist Black now, he would be unable to gain any advantages.

“Go to the Cliff of Remorse now to have your punishment.”

Daoist Black waved his sleeve, signaling for Fan Zhong Tang to leave.

Fan Zhong Tang glared at Jiang Chen fiercely. The meaning contained within the look was obvious, he would never let today's matter be resolved easily.

Jiang Chen hated this kind of gaze. But, it also let him make up his mind. Once he had the strength to kill Fan Zhong Tang, he would definitely kill him at once.

Fan Zhong Tang turned around and started flying towards the Cliff of Remorse. An insidious look filled his eyes; today's events was like a sharp blade that had been forcefully stabbed into his heart. He couldn't forgive what happened, and his heart was now filled with hatred.

“Jiang Chen, I'll rip you into a thousand pieces one day! Daoist Black, you wait for me as well, sooner or later I will kill you as well! The day Nan Bei Chao conquers the entire Qi Province will be your last day in this world, and the Black Sect will be mine!”

Fan Zhong Tang's mind was fully packed with hatred and evil thoughts. What happened today had made him completely hate Daoist Black. It was too obvious that Daoist Black was siding with Jiang Chen, he didn't care about the pain Fan Zhong Tang felt after losing his own grandson.

“Jiang Chen, follow me.”

After saying that, Daoist Black disappeared from the place.

Jiang Chen started flying towards Palace Black. What happened to Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan had made him disappointed in Daoist Black. However, Daoist Black was the Sect Chief after all, and it was rare for him to actively get involved in conflicts between disciples. And Jiang Chen was also satisfied with Daoist Black's reaction today.

Jiang Chen's initial plan was to bring Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan away from the Black Sect and return to Redsun Town, but considering Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan's serious conditions, it was better for them to stay in the Black Sect to recover. The Black Sect did after all have better equipment than Redsun Town, and Daoist Black also took him seriously and considered him the Black Sect's only hope.

What's more important was that Jiang Chen had too many enemies now, not only Fan Zhong Tang. Jiang Chen believed that when he left the Black Sect's territory, Fan Zhong Tang would hunt him down at all cost. Also, there was the Heavenly Sword Sect and the Burning Sky Pavilion, both of them were Jiang Chen's enemies as well, especially the Heavenly Sword Sect. The news about Jiang Chen killing Liang Xiao would soon spread to the Heavenly Sword Sect. Once Jiang Chen left the Black Sect, he would step into a situation where no matter where he went, he would be surrounded by all his enemies. Of course, he wasn't scared of this, but he needed to find a peaceful place for Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan to recover.

Therefore, Jiang Chen decided to continue staying in the Black Sect. With Daoist Black's help, Jiang Chen would at least have place where he could rest. He couldn't just give up on this.

Within Palace Black.

“Jiang Chen, do you blame me?”

Daoist Black asked.

“I don't blame you, I'm just disappointed with you. As I was risking my life for the Black Sect killing those Blood Devils, my fiancée and brother were suffering back in the Black Sect.”

Jiang Chen spoke with a cold tone, he didn't show much respect when facing Daoist Black. In the entire Black Sect, only Jiang Chen dared talk to Daoist Black like this.

“Indeed, this was a careless mistake of mine, but I don't want to explain too much about that. You have completed the impossible mission of killing Lord Blood Moon and all Blood Devils, exceeding my expectations, and I am glad for your achievements. At the same time, the amazing speed of your growth has also surprised me, and I have to admit that you really are a peerless genius. You are the only one who can fight Nan Bei Chao in the entire Qi Province, and that is the reason why I didn't punish you today.”

Daoist Black went straight to the point. He didn't punish Jiang Chen because Jiang Chen had huge potential. As the Sect Chief of

the Black Sect, his cultivation level and judgment was far better than that of other people. Of course, he could tell that Nan Bei Chao had huge potential and ambitions as well.

The reason why he was siding with Jiang Chen now was to find a genius that could fight Nan Bei Chao. In other words, Daoist Black did all of this for the future of the Black Sect.

“I’ll handle Nan Bei Chao. However, Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan were seriously injured, and they need some time to recover. I’ll leave them on Guo Shan’s mountain peak. As for Fan Zhong Tang, I don’t want to see anything similar happening again.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Don’t worry, I’ll make sure something similar never happens again. You just need to put all your focus and effort into cultivation so that you can soon fight Nan Bei Chao. As for Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan’s injuries, you can just leave that to Guo Shan. He is the chief alchemist of the Black Sect, and he manages the majority of herbs in the Black Sect. If you need anything, just go to him straightaway.

Daoist Black said. In his mind, Jiang Chen’s cultivation and continuous improvement was the most important thing. After all, Jiang Chen’s opponent was Nan Bei Chao.

Chapter 167 – Profound Nine Solar Pill

Jiang Chen was convinced with Daoist Black's promise, he believed that Daoist Black wouldn't repeat the same mistake again.

“Let me remind you, do pay more attention to Fan Zhong Tang.”

Jiang Chen reminded Daoist Black. There must have been some reason behind why Fan Zhong Tang and Fan Kun wanted to kill him so much. He didn't know either of them before this, and they still tried so hard to find a way to kill Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen guessed that they must have submitted to Nan Bei Chao. He had met Nan Bei Chao before, and he knew that he had the aura of a king. Nan Bei Chao was hugely ambitious, and he would never settle for anything ordinary. No matter where he went, he would become someone like a king.

“Fan Zhong Tang is a respectable Sect Elder of the Black Sect, he has proven his loyalty, and he would never betray us. Although the two of you have some disagreeable issues, I firmly believe in his loyalty.”

Fan Zhong Tang was one of the Black Sect's foundational pillars, Daoist Black never believed he would do something bad to the sect. For him, the reason why Jiang Chen said this was because of his hatred towards Fan Zhong Tang. There was after all an unsettled score between the two of them, and Daoist Black could understand why Jiang Chen said so.

“As you wish.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen turned around and left. He understood what Daoist Black was thinking. But, if Jiang Chen wanted to kill Fan Zhong Tang, there was no need for him to borrow Daoist Black's hand, he himself would kill him sooner or later.

Jiang Chen was never wrong when he judged a person. If Fan Zhong Tang wasn't killed, sooner or later he would become a black sheep of the Black Sect and cause tremendous damage.

However, Jiang Chen wasn't in the mood to consider all this right now. He had reminded Daoist Black, which was his purpose. What he needed to do next was more important, he needed to heal Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan from their critical conditions.

After leaving Palace Black, Jiang Chen flew straight towards Guo Shan's mountain peak. After today's fight, Jiang Chen had completely established his status and position in the Black Sect. By killing Lord Blood Moon and Liang Xiao, and even an inner circle disciple and Sect Elder, these incredible achievements had made everyone take him seriously. From now on, no one in the Black Sect would dare find trouble with Jiang Chen. Even those Divine Core Sect Elders would have to be polite and respectful when bumping into Jiang Chen.

At the foot of Guo Shan's mountain, tens of people had gathered around, and the leading man was Yu Zi Han. Behind him was Wang Yun and Huang Zheng. They were waiting for Jiang Chen here.

When they saw Jiang Chen appearing in the skies above them, joyful expressions immediately emerged on all their faces.

“Brother Jiang, how was it? Did Sect Chief give you any trouble?”

Yu Zi Han hurriedly asked.

“No, don’t worry.”

Jiang Chen finally showed a smile on his face. These people were devoted to following him, Jiang Chen could really feel their sincerity.

“Senior disciple Jiang was really mighty today! All of us felt so happy when we saw you kill Fan Kun just now!”

“That’s right! That bastard should have been killed a long time ago! How dare he try to harm senior disciple Yan while senior disciple Jiang isn’t here?!”

“Senior disciple Jiang is indeed a peerless genius! Killing a Divine Core warrior with just a Heavenly Core cultivation base, this is something incredibly rare!”

Everyone were in high spirits. During the last few days when Jiang Chen was gone, they were all pretty tense. Now, with the return of Jiang Chen, he had just wreaked havoc once again, and he had killed Fan Kun; establishing his dominance in the process.

In the future, no one in the Black Sect will have the courage to offend Jiang Chen.

“That’s enough, all of you can leave first. Go back and put your effort into cultivation. I will need to check on Little Yu and Brother Yan’s conditions.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand casually, turned around and walked toward the mountain peak, he had no mood for all the flattering right now.

“Zi Han, please follow me.”

Jiang Chen said.

Yu Zi Han followed behind Jiang Chen as he started walking towards the mountain peak. Wang Yun and the rest were leaving the place too. Today’s fight had ended with Fan Kun getting killed, and Fan Zhong Tang being punished to face a wall for one month. In the coming days, the Black Sect would be completely peaceful.

On the mountain peak, Guo Shan had been waiting for Jiang Chen.

“Brother, both Little Yu and Brother Yan’s conditions are very serious, and your older brother has run out of solutions... Brother, with your vast knowledge, please help me find some way to save them!”

Within the room where Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan were resting, Guo Shan had a frown on his face. Even now, he was still deeply immersed with extreme regret. He looked at Jiang Chen with both apologetic feelings and fear. This young man was growing too fast, and he had overturned the logic of many. Although Guo Shan was still an Early Divine Core warrior, he could still feel a slight pressure from Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. With a wave of his hand, he unleashed two bright golden sparks and sent them into Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan's bodies through the middle of their eyebrows. The sparks circulated throughout their bodies, then they came out from the same spot and flew back into Jiang Chen's palm.

“How is it?”

Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han stared at Jiang Chen with panicked expressions.

“Their wounds are pretty fatal. Both have been hurt at their sources. All of Brother Yan's internal organs have shattered, and if it wasn't for the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline supporting him, he would have died by now. However, since his life force is too weak, the Ancient Divine Devil's power has stopped circulating. In order to save Brother Yan's life, we need to find a way to reactivate the Ancient Divine Devil's power, forcing it to start circulating once again. If that works, Brother Yan will recover with the power of the Ancient Divine Devil.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen furrowed his brows and continued, “Little Yu's conditions are worse than Brother Yan's. She cut her

own heart's veins, and this has almost caused her to lose her last drop of her life force. If it wasn't for the Nine Yin Meridians' support, I believe she would have died by now. Since she cut her own heart's veins, her Nine Yin Meridians have completely stopped circulating as well. It will be really hard to awaken them again."

Their conditions were worse than what Jiang Chen had expected. In other words, if it wasn't for them having unique body characteristics, they would have been dead by now. Any ordinary person who suffered from such injuries would immediately lost all chance of recovering.

"Nine Yin Meridians!"

Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han shouted out in astonishment. This was an ancient body characteristic, they had heard of it before, but they didn't think it really existed. And to their surprise, Yan Chen Yu actually possessed the Nine Yin Meridians.

"No wonder Xiao Yu has such a powerful cold in her body, it was actually the legendary Nine Yin Meridians!"

Guo Shan said with a shocked expression.

"Brother Jiang, if that is the case, do you have any ways to save them?"

Yu Zi Han asked. After having followed Jiang Chen for so many

days, he had come to think, Jiang Chen was a man who could do anything.

“Of course there are solutions, but they are really difficult to achieve. In order to reactivate the power of the Ancient Divine Devil in Brother Yan’s body, there is only one method. The Ancient Divine Devil was one of the greatest devils in the ancient times, they had powerful devil characteristics and a noble bloodline. In order to awaken his bloodline, we need to find something with a bloodline even more powerful than his in order to stimulate his bloodline. If we can find the Earthly Devil Beast’s demon soul, then I’m sure Brother Yan will not only awaken, his cultivation will also improve significantly. The Earthly Demon Beast is a beast with a powerful devil character, it is the king of all devil beasts. But, it is a rare existence, and I am afraid we can’t find one in the Qi Province.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“Earthly Devil Beast?”

Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han were surprised at the same time. They had heard of this powerful devil beast before, but they had never actually seen one in real life. They had also never heard about one having appeared in the Qi Province.

“Brother, we can’t find an Earthly Devil Beast in the Qi Province. However, there is one place I can think off, and the possibility one exists there is high.”

Guo Shan said.

“What place is that?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up.

“Inferno Hell.”

Guo Shan’s expression became serious, “Inferno Hell is a special realm. A hundred years ago, the greatest Saint in the world cut open the doors leading to the Realm of Immortals, and this caused the barriers of Saint Origin to loosen and produce many unique realms, and this is how Inferno Hell came to be. I heard that there are all kinds of rare demons and devils running wildly in the lands of Inferno Hell, but at the same time, there are all kinds of rare treasures. It is a land filled with both opportunity and risk.”

Hearing this, Jiang Chen couldn’t help but slightly trembled. Guan Yi Yun had told him about this Inferno Hell, but he never knew that it was actually related to himself. It looked like after he broke the door leading to the Realm of Immortals a hundred years ago, he had caused some changes to the structure of Saint Origin.

“Looks like I need to find some time to pay a visit to this Inferno Hell.”

Jiang Chen started developing a strong interest towards Inferno Hell. He wanted to see for himself what kind of existence Inferno Hell was. The appearance of these strange realms was proof that he

had broken the structure of Saint Origin.”

“There is only a slim chance to survive in Inferno Hell. Brother, you better give it careful thought before deciding on whether or not you’ll go.”

Guo Shan reminded.

“I’ll have to visit this Inferno Hell no matter what, as I need to find that Earthly Devil Beast. If not, I don’t know how long Brother Yan will be in coma. Of course, I won’t go there right now, I’ll need to help Little Yu first. I’ll give you the Blood Banner later, just place Brother Yan inside the flag, then the devil spirits within should keep him alive.”

Jiang Chen said. He needed to go to Inferno Hell no matter what, but not now.

“Brother, how can we help Little Yu?”

Guo Shan asked.

“Similar to Brother Yan, in order to save Little Yu, we will need to activate her Nine Yin Meridians. As long as her Nine Yin Meridians awaken, Little Yu will awaken from her coma as well. But since the Nine Yin Meridians are the coldest body characteristics in the world, no items with cold characters can stimulate them. Therefore, in order to awaken the Nine Yin Meridians, we need to strike it from the reverse. If I can concoct

the Profound Nine Solar Pill, I will be able to use the purest Yang energy contained within the pill to awaken her Nine Yin Meridians.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Profound Nine Solar Pill?!”

Guo Shan shouted out in disbelief. As an alchemist, he knew what the Profound Nine Solar Pill was. He knew better than anyone else how rare it was and how tough it was to concoct this pill.

“Brother, it is impossible to concoct the Profound Nine Solar Pill! I do have plenty of herbs with pure Yang properties, do you think those can help Little Yu?”

Guo Shan said.

“No, if it’s just some herbs with pure Yang properties, it will make the Yin and Yang collide, which will instantly kill Little Yu. The Profound Nine Solar Pills contains 49 different kinds of herbs. These ingredient will balance the Yin and Yang, and it won’t cause Little Yu any harm.”

Jiang Chen explained. In the field of herbs and medication, he knew a lot more than Guo Shan. He knew what the best way to save Little Yu’s life was.

Chapter 168 – Firethorn Savage

“But according to what I know, in order to concoct the Profound Nine Solar Pill, there is one ingredient that can’t be replaced, and that is the Nine Solar Holy Water. It is a truly priceless treasure of this universe. Let alone the Qi Province, it’s even a super rare treasure for those super powers in the Eastern Continent. I have spent all my life studying pill concoction, and I have planted all kinds of herbs in this mountain, you can find most of the herbs required to concoct the Profound Nine-Solar Pill on this mountain, but I just don’t have the Nine Solar Holy Water.”

Guo Shan furrowed his brows. The pill Jiang Chen wanted to concoct was both rare and precious, and concocting it is more difficult than anything he could imagine.

“Of course I know about the rarity and value of the Nine Solar Holy Water.”

Jiang Chen smiled while feeling bitter in his mind. In his past life, Nine Solar Holy Water was like plain water to him. But now, it was so difficult to get just a little bit of it.

In his past life, the Nine Solar Holy Water might have been some priceless treasure, but since he had the Nine Profound Solar Energies, he could actually absorb the purest Yang energy from the skies above and turn it into the Nine Solar Holy Water. It was something really easy for him to do.

However, the Profound Nine Solar Energies was a peak Saint

level skill, and with his current cultivation, there was no way he could absorb the purest Yang energies. This was because Yang energies were classified into different levels as well. The purest Yang energy Jiang Chen could absorb now could at most be turned into Six Solar Holy Water, and it was far away from the level of Nine Solar.

“For the time being, there is no way for me to concoct the Profound Nine Solar Pill, but Little Yu’s condition doesn’t allow us to drag on anymore. Therefore, I’ve decided to concoct the Profound Six Solar Pill. It will help keep her alive until I find the Nine Solar Holy Water in the future. When I find it, I’ll just let her drink it straightaway.”

This was Jiang Chen’s last resort. With his current abilities, there was no way for him to concoct the Profound Nine Solar Pill, therefore he was left with nothing better than the second choice; the Profound Six Solar Pill.

“Profound Six Solar Pill?”

Guo Shan was startled.

“That’s right, the Profound Six Solar Pill requires the same ingredients as the Nine Solar pill, the only difference is that I will use Six Solar Holy Water instead of Nine Solar Holy Water. I will write down the required ingredients later, I hope older brother Guo can find them for me.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Please rest assured, brother! Even if requires me to sell all my belongings to find them, I will have them gathered!”

Guo Shan patted his chest and promised. In fact, both he and Yu Zi Han were really surprised. Because, even the Six Solar Holy Water was hard to find. But, Jiang Chen was a man who knew what he was doing. Since he had said he would find it, it simply meant that he had a way to find it. Both of them had been with Jiang Chen for quite some time, they knew what kind of person Jiang Chen.

“But, in order to concoct the Profound Six Solar Pill or even the Profound Nine Solar Pill, aside from the Holy Water, we need another very important ingredient. The Firethorn Savage’s demon soul. It is a beast of pure Yang which will provide the pill with lots of benefits. Anyone of you know where I can find this Firethorn Savage in the Qi Province?”

Jiang Chen looked at Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han. In order to concoct a good quality pill, there were simply too many rare ingredients needed. The mission of saving Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan was a tough one. However, no matter what he needed to save them, or no matter how difficult it would be, he was determined to save their lives.

Besides, this was the path of Jiang Chen’s cultivation. He was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill. It was destined that he would have to defy the rules and natural orders. The road of his cultivation would be a tough one with endless obstacles. The process of saving both of them was another test for his

determination as well.

Although the Firethorn beast was a rare demon beast, but comparing to the Earth Demon beast it was still easier to find, at least it was not extinct yet.

“I know, there is one Firethorn Savage in the Misty Mountain!”

Yu Zi Han’s eyes lit up.

“Misty Mountain? Where is it?”

Jiang Chen’s spirit strengthened. He had been in the Qi Province for quite some time and had some basic knowledge about different places, but he had never heard about the Misty Mountain before.

“The Misty Mountain isn’t in the Qi Province, it is located in the Qian Province right next to the Qi Province, and there is a Firethorn Savage in the mountain, but...”

Guo Shan furrowed his brows.

“But what?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Brother Jiang, Yellowstone is located at the border of the Qi

Province, and this Misty Mountain isn't actually very far away from Yellowstone. The Firethorn Savage residing in the Misty Mountain has a very strong cultivation level, and it is the king of the Misty Mountain. Rumors say that it has broken through to the peak of the Mid Divine Core realm. Combined with the advantages of being a demon beast, even Late Divine Core warriors wouldn't be a match for this Firethorn Savage. Therefore, it is almost impossible for Brother Jiang to get the Firethorn Savage's demon soul."

Yu Zi Han explained. It because the Misty Mountain was so close to Yellowstone that he knew so much about it.

"That's right, a demon beast like this Firethorn Savage being able to safely stay in a place like that, there must be something extraordinary about it. No ordinary big sects in the Qian Province would offend this Firethorn Savage. Brother, although you are very strong and can kill those Early Divine Core warriors, if you were to face this Firethorn Savage, there is no way you could defeat it."

Guo Shan reminded.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He knew that they weren't trying to scare him away. He knew about this Firethorn Savage much better than these two did. A peak Mid Divine Core Firethorn Savage, even Daoist Black would find it difficult to defeat it.

"I can't worry too much now. I'll prepare myself for a trip to this Misty Mountain."

A determined look filled Jiang Chen's eyes. He was never scared of powerful enemies. The stronger his enemy was, the tougher his challenge was. He loved challenges.

“Please think twice, brother! A peak of the Mid Divine Core Firethorn Savage is really frightening, if you really want to go and find it, it might be a deadly trip!”

Guo Shan's expression changed.

“Don't worry, I will act according to circumstances, and not recklessly. Before I leave, I still have something that I need your help with.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand and stopped Guo Shan from continuing. He wouldn't change his decision. The trip to the Misty Mountain was confirmed, but he had learned from his previous experience that before he leaves, he would need to solve all potential threats.

“Please tell me, brother.”

Guo Shan nodded his head. He knew about Jiang Chen's personality, therefore he didn't interfere with his decision anymore. Besides, Jiang Chen had caused too many miracles, and he might just create another during his trip to the Misty Mountain.

“During this trip, the person I worry about the most is Fan Zhong

Tang. Although he has been sentenced to face the wall for one month, we still have to be careful about him. Older brother Guo, your cultivation level is at the peak of the Early Divine Core realm, but you are still no match for Fan Zhong Tang. I will teach you a skill now, it is called the Six Profound Solar Energies. It is a High Earth skill, and it can help you improve your cultivation level significantly.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen sent a long message into Guo Shan’s Divine Sense. With a shocked expression on his face, Guo Shan immediately began studying the Six Profound Solar Energies, and his expression became one of excitement.

“What a good skill, what a profound skill!”

Guo Shan was really excited.

“There is a second part of this skill, and once you have mastered the first part, I will teach you the rest of it according to your situation. I also have a big secret to tell you all, promise me you will keep this secret to yourselves, as it is related to something really huge.”

Jiang Chen had a serious expression.

“Don’t worry brother, just let us know.”

Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han both looked at Jiang Chen at the same time.

“I found an untouched underground energy vein during my trip to Yellowstone. I’ll bring you to Redsun Town now and let you cultivate with the help of it. Combined with the Six Profound Solar Energies skill, you will be able to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm within three days. At that time, you will have the abilities to fight Fan Zhong Tang, and I will be able to leave for Misty Mountain with a peace of mind.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What?! Underground energy vein?!”

Both men shouted in astonishment at the same time, especially Yu Zi Han. He almost jumped on his feet. Jiang Chen had found another energy vein? The news would shake the entire Qi Province, especially the four big sects. If anyone of them could obtain another energy vein, within a few years, the rest of the three sects would be ditched far behind.

Cultivating with the energy essence from an energy vein, it would simply make anyone feel excited. Try to think about this, there was only one energy vein underneath the entire Black Sect, and thousands of disciples and Sect Elders were sharing the same energy vein. The amount of energy they got just couldn’t compare with Jiang Chen’s energy vein.

“Brother Jiang, by telling me such a huge secret, it means you have complete trust in me! I, Yu Zi Yan will definitely keep the secret for you no matter what!”

Yu Zi Han said seriously. His mind was filled with gratitude. By telling him this secret, it meant that Jiang Chen didn't treat him like an outside. Being able to become close to Jiang Chen was an assurance for him.

Besides, he and Guo Shan both knew what owning an energy vein meant. If the news was spread out, with his current abilities, there was no way they could protect this energy vein at all.

“Alright, I'll place Brother Yan in the Blood Banner, after that I will bring the two of you to Redsun Town.”

Jiang Chen had to use this energy vein for his own good. He needed to establish himself in the Qi Province now. Both me in front of him were someone he could trust, so when their cultivation levels became stronger, they would be able to provide Jiang Chen with great help. Guo Shan was an Early Divine Core warrior, as well as an alchemist, so he would be able to provide Jiang Chen great help in the future. He had also helped Jiang Chen fight Fan Zhong Tang in a critical moment.

As for Yu Zi Han, he had the potential to grow. With his young age, he has already broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, and this showed that he actually had a huge amount of potential.

“Perfect.”

Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han were trying their best to hold their excitement, especially Guo Shan. When he thought about himself

soon breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm, he became extremely excited. Alchemists focused most of their time and energy on pill concoction, therefore their cultivation levels were usually weaker compared to others. Being able to reach the Divine Core realm, it actually proved that Guo Shan was a man with potential as well.

But after reaching the Divine Core realm, it would be extremely difficult to level up. Therefore, Guo Shan was incredibly excited right now.

Jiang Chen took out the Blood Banner and placed Han Yan into it. At the same time, he controlled the devil spirits within the Banner using some formation, then he put it somewhere secret, making sure no one could discover it.

After that, Jiang Chen brought Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han with him and left towards Redsun Town. Fan Zhong Tang was in the Cliff of Remorse, and he wouldn't be able to leave so quickly. Therefore, Jiang Chen was not worried about him now.

Chapter 169 – Big Yellow Awakens

Redsun Town was bustling with noise and excitement. Under the lead of Zhang Zhen, all townspeople were busy building a statue for Jiang Chen.

The huge statue was built in Redsun Town's center square. When Jiang Chen and the other two arrived, what they saw was the busy scene of these townspeople working.

“Young master Jiang is back!”

Someone saw Jiang Chen and immediately shouted out. Right now, thousands of townspeople were deeply bowing towards Jiang Chen who was floating in the skies. It was as if they were worshiping their own god.

Although it had only been half a day since Jiang Chen left Redsun Town and came back, his image and prestige had been deeply tooted in the hearts of these townspeople, and nothing could change it.

“Brother, I never expected you would be so highly acclaimed in Redsun Town! Even if the Sect Chief came here himself, he wouldn't be welcomed the way you were! But, this is normal, you did kill all Blood Devils after all. As the one who saved all their lives, the people of Redsun Town won't forget about your contributions for many generations to come.”

Guo Shan nodded his head and said. He knew the details about

how Jiang Chen had killed the Blood Devils. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, all of these townspeople would have been dead right now. A great kindness like this was more than enough for these townspeople to worship Jiang Chen like a god.

“Blood Devils are evil and cruel, everyone has the responsibility of killing them.”

Jiang Chen waved at the townspeople of Redsun Town, then he flew straight towards his mansion.

After Jiang Chen left Redsun Town, Zhang Zhen had given out an order that no one was allowed to get close to Jiang Chen's mansion. This was the first time Guo Shan had come to Jiang Chen's mansion, and he wasn't overly surprised by anything. There was nothing special about the place, and it couldn't be compared to some of the courtyards back in the Black Sect.

Jiang Chen pushed the door open, and the trio immediately saw Big Yellow quietly lying on a cushion. There was some faded golden light blinking around his body. Looking at this, Jiang Chen's eyes lit up.

“What an abnormal monster!”

Jiang Chen was speechless, he discovered that Big Yellow's energy level had at least doubled, and all while Jiang Chen had been away for just half a day.

“I heard Big Yellow contributed a lot in the mission of killing Lord Blood Moon, but it looks like he suffered some serious injuries as well.”

When Guo Shan saw Big Yellow who was lying on the cushion, he couldn't help but feel shocked. Right now, anyone would be able to sense the miraculous abilities of this dog.

“That's right, Big Yellow is really brave and courageous. Although he suffered a serious backlash, it was actually a blessing in disguise. When he wakes up, I think he will break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm.”

Jiang Chen let out a sigh. The way Big Yellow leveled up couldn't be judged by normal standards. The complete bloodline of a Divine Beast just couldn't be compared with an ordinary demon beast.

“Brother, where is the energy vein you mentioned?”

Guo Shan asked. The underground vein was sealed by Jiang Chen with a formation, and without Jiang Chen's help, no one would be able to sense the energy vein, even if the person stood above the cushion itself.

“The energy vein is connected right below Big Yellow, and he is now absorbing its energy source. With its help, Big Yellow should soon awaken. I will need his help for my trip to the Misty Mountain.”

Jiang Chen continued, “Older brother Guo, Zi Han, there are a few more rooms here, you just pick any room you like, then I’ll help you connect the room to the underground energy vein. I hope the two of you cherish this opportunity and use it to break through as quickly as possible.”

“Sounds good!”

Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han looked at each other. Both of them found extreme excitement in the opposite’s eyes. The difference between three people sharing one energy vein and thousands of people sharing one energy vein was huge; the benefits Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han would get were definitely unimaginable too.

Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han didn’t waste any time, they immediately picked two rooms separately. After that, Jiang Chen used his Dimensional Shift and venture deep down underground once again. Then, using the formation, he created another two nodes on the energy vein, then he connected them to the rooms Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han had picked.

When all was done, Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han sat down on their cushions. When they felt the pure energy coming out from the ground below them, their expressions immediately changed, and their expressions immediately filled up with great spirit.

“The energy is so pure! Not only is it rich, its quality is not something the Black Sect can compare with! I never expected that there would actually be a energy vein hidden beneath Redsun Town that hasn’t been discovered the four big sects! Brother Jiang is really a man with great fortune, only someone like him would be

able to find such a huge treasure!”

Guo Shan was really shocked. In his mind, Jiang Chen was a man capable of accomplishing anything. Although the energy vein was discovered by Big Yellow, since Big Yellow was following Jiang Chen, both of them were a team. Therefore, Big Yellow was Jiang Chen’s luck as well.

On the other side, Yu Zi Han’s eyes lit up. He was shocked as well.

“Redsun Town is under the ruling of the Yu family, but we never knew there was an energy vein hidden underneath here. If the Yu family could occupy this energy vein, the strength of our family would definitely explode to new heights. Of course, with out current strength, not only can we not use this energy vein, we might even attract some deadly attention. I’ll followed Jiang Chen wholeheartedly in the future and keep this secret for him no matter what!”

Yu Zi Han sighed.

“After breaking through, return to the Black Sect at once.”

Jiang Chen left behind a message with his Divine Sense in Guo Shan and Yu Zi Han’s hands. At the same time, he also left a message for Big Yellow. After that, he simply started flying back towards the Black Sect.

He couldn’t neglect the safety of Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan any longer. More importantly, Jiang Chen also needed some time to

enter secluded cultivation.

After killing Fan Kun, the Dragon Transformation skill had experienced some changes which had given Jiang Chen many benefits. He needed some time to truly digest these newly acquired abilities. Especially the True Dragon Flames and the True Dragon Palm. Both of them were skills inherited from a real dragon; causing Jiang Chen to be like a tiger that had grown wings.

Back in the Black Sect, Jiang Chen went straight to Guo Shan's mountain. After he had checked on Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan, he entered secluded cultivation.

Buzzing sounded out from around Jiang Chen, layers of golden flames darted in and out of his body like snakes, causing the surrounding air to pop and the temperature to rise significantly.

“The True Dragon Flames are truly power! This flame is king amongst all beast flames, and it can burn anything in this world! With this flame, pill concoction has become easier for me. But, too bad, with my current strength, I am unable to unleash its true power. Cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill has given me the True Dragon Flames and True Dragon Palm, this skill isn't simple... If my guess is correct, this skill might contain a powerful inheritance of a real dragon, and if I follow its transformation, I might get more benefits in the future!”

Jiang Chen was amazed by it. He had the cultivation experience of a Saint, therefore his judgment was far better than the judgment of anyone else.

Initially, he had thought that the Dragon Transformation skill was just a simple powerful skill, but now, he had changed his mind. It actually might be an inheritance from a true dragon. Those who cultivates the skill, once they gain its acceptance, that's when the truly frightening part of the Dragon Transformation skill begins.

Jiang Chen estimated that the more he cultivated with it, the Dragon Transformation skill would keep transforming and changing, and his own bloodline would experience a complete change as well.

With a thought of his mind, a huge blood red dragon claw appeared in the skies. At the same time, his palm transformed as well. It was covered with blood red dragon scales, and it was glowing with a frightening red light. When he unleashed the True Dragon Palm, all 300 Dragon Marks in his body vibrated and caused Jiang Chen to unleash a huge amount of energy, causing him to look like an ancient beast with a frightening power.

“The True Dragon Palm is an authentic combat skill of the dragons, it was inherited from ancient times, and it's a real secret skill that only a dragon could learn. Now that I learned my, my combat strength has improved significantly. With the support of the 300 Dragon Marks, I can kill any Early Divine Core warrior with the True Dragon Palm.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. With 300 Dragon Marks, just with his muscles alone he could unleash the force of 3,000,000 Jin. A massive force like that could easily tear a mountain apart.

“Hmph! I wonder if that Nan Bei Chao has broken through to the Divine Core realm! If he hasn’t done so, I could just kill him right now.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. Nan Bei Chao was no doubt a peerless genius, but Jiang Chen didn’t believe that Nan Bei Chao would always be stronger than him. He was a Saint before reincarnation, and now he was cultivating an ancient immortal skill, the Dragon Transformation skill. If Nan Bei Chao was still at the peak Heavenly Core realm, Jiang Chen had the confidence that he could easily kill him.

However, there was still a year before his fight with Nan Bei Chao, there was no need to rush it. Jiang Chen was still in a period of rapid growth, and what he needed now was just time. Besides, with Nan Bei Chao’s talent and potential, he might have broken through to the Divine Core realm by now.

Besides, Jiang Chen’s focus was not Nan Bei Chao right now. His next target was the Misty Mountain in the Qian Province, he needed to search for the Firethorn Savage who was at the peak of the Mid Divine Core realm, and that’s what really give him a headache right now. With his Mid Heavenly Core realm right now, there was no way he could be a match for the Firethorn Savage.

Three days later, two figures suddenly appeared on the mountain peak. They were Guo Shan and Big Yellow. At the same time, Jiang Chen had awoken from his secluded cultivation. In about three days, he had managed to achieve completely control over the True Dragon Flames and True Dragon Palm, and had managed to

stabilize his combat strength.

When Jiang Chen saw Big Yellow and Guo Shan, he discovered that Guo Shan had broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm. As for Big Yellow, he had broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, one stage higher than Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen wasn't any surprised with this situation. With the help of both the Six Profound Solar Energies and the energy vein, if Guo Shan still couldn't break through, then committing suicide would be the right thing to do.

As for Big Yellow, no matter how he broke through, Jiang Chen wouldn't feel surprised at all. He was happier than anyone that Big Yellow had broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm. The stronger Big Yellow was, the greater help he could provide Jiang Chen.

“Damn you, buddy, they told me that while I, your father was in a coma, you did something really awesome in the Black Sect? It really pisses me off, I didn't have the chance to participate in such an event! I, your father have lost another opportunity to show off my mightiness, if I hadn't, I would have been the center of attention for sure! Just thinking about it... sigh... too bad, what a waste... sigh...”

Big Yellow kept complaining upon seeing Jiang Chen.

Chapter 170 – Green Sanctuary Sect

Big Yellow showed a grieving look. Guo Shan had obviously told him what had happened during the three days he was in a coma.

After Big Yellow had broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, he had planned to show off in front of Jiang Chen and pressure him a bit, but when he heard Guo Shan tell him that Jiang Chen had killed an Early Divine Core warrior, he immediately felt somewhat depressed. But, with Big Yellow's cultivation level right now, he too could defeat an Early Divine Core warrior.

He did after all possess the complete bloodline of a Divine Beast. Battle and defeating someone with a higher cultivation level than him was not a problem at all.

“Big Yellow, don't worry, there will be plenty of chances for you to show off in the future.”

Jiang Chen laughed with a grin on his face. Since Big Yellow hadn't been around him during the last few days, he felt like he had missed a lot of laughter. Now that Big Yellow has broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, he would provide great help for his trip to Misty Mountain.

“I heard Little Yu was badly wounded, damn it! Luckily, Fan Kun is already dead! If he wasn't, I would for sure go tear him into a million pieces and get revenge for Little Yu! How dares he bully my Little Yu, this is ridiculous!”

Big Yellow angrily said. He had been very worried after learning about Yan Chen Yu's condition. He and Yan Chen Yu had established a deep relationship during their journey, and now, Yan Chen Yu was severely wounded and in critical conditions. It was obvious why Big Yellow became extremely angry.

“Fan Kun is dead, but Fan Zhong Tang is still alive. I'll kill that guy sooner or later.”

Upon mentioning Fan Zhong Tang, a cruel and ferocious look emerged in Jiang Chen's eyes. After that, he turned to Guo Shan and said, “Old brother Guo, since you have broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm, with the powerful combat skill Six Profound Solar Energies, I believe you should be able to have a fair fight with Fan Zhong Tang. Big Yellow and I will be going to Misty Mountain now, I'll leave everything here to you.”

“Don't worry brother, even if I have to pay with my life, I will protect Little Yu at all costs! I won't let the same thing happen twice!”

Guo Shan said in a serious manner. For him, what happened to Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan was the biggest disgrace of his entire life, a knot in his heart. What he wanted to do now was make up for his mistakes so that could get rid of the guilt in his mind.

Furthermore, Guo Shan considered Jiang Chen his benefactor, or perhaps even his teacher. He had learned a lot regarding alchemy from Jiang Chen, and he had even given him the Great Soul

Derivation Skill and Profound Six Solar Energies. These two skills were both priceless and rare, advanced skills.

“Buddy, killing the Firethorn Savage and obtaining its demon soul is no easy task. I heard you want to leave the Blood Banner behind for Han Yan, but in my opinion, you should bring the Blood Banner with you. The trip to the Qian Province is full of uncertainty, and the banner is a powerful weapon. We might need to use it in a critical time. At least, it can be a hidden trick for us.”

Big Yellow reminded Jiang Chen. He learned from Guo Shan what Jiang Chen’s next move was.

“We don’t need it. I now have the True Dragon Flames and True Dragon Palm, and with these skills, I can kill Early Divine Core warriors without the help of the Blood Banner. Besides, Brother Yan really needs the help from the environment within the Blood Banner. If I attacked an enemy while he is still sealed within the banner, it will have a really bad effect on him. I’ll just leave it here.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand. He wasn’t going to bring the Blood Banner with him. Han Yan was sealed within the banner, and if he used it to attack the enemies, it would really make Han Yan suffer. Besides, his target this time was the powerful Firethorn Savage, if the Blood Banner was damaged during the fight, it could endanger Han Yan’s life.

Besides, leaving Yan Chen Yu and Han Yan in the Black Sect was far safer than having them close to him. The trip to the Qian Province was filled with uncertainty, so bringing them with him

would be a bad idea.

In fact, after Jiang Chen had learned the True Dragon Flames and the True Dragon Palm, his combat strength had increased exponentially, and this allowed him to have the confidence to deal with the uncertainty.

“As you wish.”

Big Yellow wagged his tail.

“Let’s delay no more, we’ll go to the Qian Province right now.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen started flying towards the Qian Province. The task in the Qian Province was not an easy task, his opponent was too strong. In order to obtain the Firethorn Savage’s demon soul, he was have to use his mind.

Big Yellow Dog let out a long howl, turned into a golden beam of light and chased behind Jiang Chen, this dog was not someone could settle with peace, if there was nothing exciting for him, he might became nuts, the trip of fighting with Firethorn Savage at Misty Mountain had really excited him.

“Buddy, where is my broken sword?”

Not long after they left the Black Sect, Big Yellow hastily asked Jiang Chen for his broken sword. This proved how important the broken sword was to him.

“Big Yellow, tell me, what kind of treasure is that broken sword?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. He had a great interest in the broken sword. Something even he couldn’t tell what was, of course it would attract his interest.

“I don’t know either, but my innate ability can sense the innate character of any treasure. The broken sword is not something that belongs to this realm. Although it’s broken, its power is still great. I have the bloodline of a Divine Beast, that’s why I could barely unleash its power.”

Big Yellow didn’t hide anything from Jiang Chen this time, he told Jiang Chen everything he knew about the broken sword. He also did not know much about its origin.

Treasure hunting was one of Big Yellow’s innate abilities. As long as there was a rare and priceless treasure, he would be able to sense it. He could also tell the rarity of the treasure by how strong his senses towards the treasure were. This innate ability was really awesome.

“Not something that belongs to this realm... It might be something that has fallen down from the Immortal Realm.”

Jiang Chen murmured. He had no doubt about Big Yellow’s words. If the broken sword’s origin was from Saint Origin, Jiang Chen would have been able to tell.

If the broken sword really was something from the Realm of Immortals, then it was a really rare treasure. Jiang Chen had always wanted to enter the Realm of Immortals, Saint Origin was just an inferior realm. Since the ancient era, the connection node between Saint Origin and the Realm of Immortals had been completely sealed.

This head sealed the road for all the Saints in Saint Origin. Every single Saint who had reached the absolute peak had a prime desire to enter the Realm of Immortals, and Jiang Chen was the one with the most desire. That's why he had swung his sword towards the heavens and split open the door leading to the Realm of Immortals. But too bad, he was unable to enter it afterwards.

This was Jiang Chen's biggest regret about his past life. This life, he was determined to walk through the gate leading to the Realm of Immortals, he was determined to get rid of his regrets.

"Buddy, give your father the broken sword back, you can't use it now!"

Big Yellow kept rushing Jiang Chen.

"Take it you miser."

Jiang Chen simply threw the broken sword towards Big Yellow. He had tried many times to use it, but he just couldn't unleash its power. It simply meant that he didn't have the sufficient cultivation level to use it. Only Big Yellow could put this broken

sword to good use.

Big Yellow opened his big mouth and swallowed the broken sword instantly. Big Yellow's stomach was like a huge storage space, and he really dared to devour anything.

“Buddy, I heard that the Firethorn Savage has a strong cultivation level, a Mid Divine Core beast, and that's why it can occupy the entire mountain without anyone daring to challenge it. Do you have any good ideas on how to deal with it?”

Big Yellow asked.

“We could can only use our minds to deal with this Firethorn Savage, we can't go at it with force. With our current combat strengths, even if we fight it together, we will easily be defeated by it and get ourselves killed. I don't have any good ideas right now, we can only take it one step at a time. Let's get to the Qian Province first.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. He was completely blind about the Qian Province and the Misty Mountain right now, and he had no idea about the details regarding the Firethorn Savage. There was no way he could think of a good solution right now.

The Qian Province and the Qi Province were connected to each other, and both of them were also ranked lowest amongst all provinces in the Easter Continent. Also, their powerful sects and clans were almost equal in strength.

Although they were connected to each other, between the Qian Province and the Qi Province there was a huge wasteland, which was what separated them. It took Jiang Chen and Big Yellow an entire day of flying before they managed to cross the wasteland and arrive in the Qian Province.

“Don’t waste any time, let’s just get to the Misty Mountain as quickly as possible.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen flew straight towards the direction of the Misty Mountain.

The Misty Mountain had a circumference of over ten thousand miles. It was a huge mountain range with a dragon-like shape, and it was covered with faded mist all day long; that’s why it got the name Misty Mountain. Countless powerful demon beasts resided within, and it was a rich land.

When Jiang Chen and Big Yellow arrived at the Misty Mountain’s outer perimeter, the time was already late in the afternoon. With their vision, even though they were high in the skies, and far from the mountain, they could still see a huge crowd of people walking back and forth underneath them.

“There are so many people here. Let’s go and check it out.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow descended to the outer perimeter of the Misty Mountain. Jiang Chen could see a lot of people walking away from the Misty Mountain, many of them cursing and scolding with unsatisfied expressions.

“Damn it, this really pisses me off! The Green Sanctuary Sect thinks they are so powerful that they can do whatever want! They just don’t want us small influences to survive!”

“Hmph! The Misty Mountain is a public mountain of the Qian Province, since when has it become their territory?! How could they block us from accessing for a few days? This is outrageous!”

“That’s right, the disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect will have to train in the Misty Mountain once every month, and every time they will deny the public access, blocking all from entering it! Many caravans were chased out from it!”

.....

All these people had angry and unsatisfied expressions, but they dared not speak with loud voices. Obviously, they were afraid of the Green Sanctuary Sect.

Jiang Chen heard what they said, but he couldn’t really understand what had happened. He then called upon a guy who passed by.

“Brother, I’ve got some questions.”

Jiang Chen arrived in front of the man. The man was obviously in a bad mood right now, so when he saw a young man getting in his way, he simply waved his hand and said, “Go away, I’m angry

right now!”

“Brother, I just came to the Qian Province, I need to know something about this place.”

While saying that, Jiang Chen took out 20 Mortal Restoration Pills and put them in the man’s palm. When the man saw the pills, his eyes lit up.

“Little brother, so this is your first time visiting the Qian Province! No worries, just ask me anything you want to know, there is nothing that I do not know!”

The man’s attitude immediately changed, and a smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. Money really makes the world go around. He had just come to the Misty Mountain, and he really needed more information regarding this place and the Firethorn Savage, as well as the Green Sanctuary Sect who had sealed the Misty Mountain.

Chapter 171 – Blocked Path

There were so many questions in Jiang Chen's mind. According to what he had in mind, with a powerful demon like the Firethorn Savage residing in Misty Mountain, the place should have been a forbidden place, and everyone should be avoiding it without getting close to it all.

But what he saw right now was completely different from what he had imagined. Not only was there huge crowds standing outside Misty Mountain, he had also heard news about the Green Sanctuary Sect preventing the public from accessing.

If there was a Firethorn Savage demon lord residing in Misty Mountain, why did the disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect have the courage to train in the mountain? Wasn't that a foolish action equal to seeking death? Jiang Chen was really puzzled.

Besides, the Qian Province was almost identical to the Qi Province. Even if the Green Sanctuary Sect was the biggest sect in the Qian Province, its strength resembled the Black Sect at most. A Firethorn Savage at the peak of the Mid Divine Core realm, even the Black Sect wouldn't dare challenge it, as the consequences would be really devastating.

“Brother, I want to know, is there a powerful Firethorn Savage residing within Misty Mountain?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Looks like this really is your first time coming here. There is a powerful Firethorn Savage residing in the Misty Mountain, and its cultivation level has reached the peak Mid Divine Core realm. Everyone knows about it, do you really have to ask?”

The man said.

“If that is the case, all these people should be avoiding this mountain at all costs, so why can I still see so many people here? What’s your purpose for coming here?”

Jiang Chen asked again.

“There are rich resources in Misty Mountain, we came here to hunt for demon beasts and search for natural treasures. However, the Green Sanctuary Sect has sealed the mountain once again, damn it! They rely on their powerful strength to make Misty Mountain their backyard; they’re sending their disciples here to train every month, and when they do, they prohibit the public from accessing it every single time, just like today! I’ve wasted my time here, this is ridiculous!”

The man looked angry, and Jiang Chen was even more confused now.

“Brother, is this Green Sanctuary Sect really so strong?”

Jiang Chen asked again.

“Of course! The Green Sanctuary Sect is one of the biggest sects in the Qian Province, and they have a Late Divine Core warrior backing them. If it wasn’t for that, how could they act so ruthlessly in the Qian Province?”

When mentioning the strength of the Green Sanctuary Sect, a scared expression emerged on the man’s face.

“The Firethorn Savage is a super-strong beast, even if the Sect Chief of the Green Sanctuary Sect is here to fight it himself, I don’t think he would be able to defeat it. This Firethorn Savage has conquered this mountain and made it its territory, how could it allow other people to trespass here? Don’t tell me this Firethorn Savage has a gentle character and is very friendly with humans?”

Jiang Chen was still puzzled.

“A beast with a gentle character? Little brother, looks like you really are too young. There are no gentle demon beasts in this world! Let alone a super powerful beast like the Firethorn Savage, not only is it not gentle at all, it also has an extremely ferocious temper. The Green Sanctuary Sect was fighting it nonstop a few years ago, they couldn’t bear to let go of such a good place. The Firethorn Savage had brutally wounded many of the disciples and Sect Elders of the Green Sanctuary Sect.”

The man seemed to know a lot. Since he had already been given 20 Mortal Restoration Pills by Jiang Chen, he was obliged to answer all of Jiang Chen’s questions. Besides, none of these things were secret, anyone here would be able to answer these questions.

“Three years ago, the Sect Chief and Sect Elders of the Green Sanctuary Sect attacked together and had a fierce battle with this Red Solar Sect. In the end, both side came to a common understanding, and they divided Misty Mountain into three sectors. The first two sectors, and disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect, or even us, could enter and train. The Firethorn Savage is forbidden from attacking us in the first two sectors. As for the third sector, if anyone ever dares step into sector three, they would risk being killed by the Firethorn Savage. Therefore, no matter if it’s the Green Sanctuary Sect entering or the others entering, we will carry out our business in sector one and two. No one has the courage to enter sector three and risk their lives.”

The man explained the reasoning behind it. Finally, Jiang Chen understood what was happening.

“I see. It looks like the relationship between the Green Sanctuary Sect and the Firethorn Savage isn’t really that good.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head silently. He already knew, there was no way for humans and demon beast to coexist in peace. Especially a super powerful beast like the Firethorn Savage. It was born with pride, so there was no way it would be peaceful towards humans.

“Little brother, don’t tell me you are entering the Misty Mountain in order to train? You can’t go in now, the Green Sanctuary Sect has blocked all access for seven days. You have to wait until their disciples finish their training. The Green Sanctuary Sect is not something you can afford to offend.”

The man reminded Jiang Chen for good before he turned around and left.

“Green Sanctuary Sect.”

Jiang Chen murmured. He looked at Big Yellow and saw a big smile on his face.

“Buddy, looks like we’ve bumped into some roadblock, what are you going to do?”

Big Yellow asked with baring his teeth.

“I don’t have the time or patience to wait for seven days, we have to enter Misty Mountain immediately. That Green Sanctuary Sect better not provoke me. If they do, even if they are a big sect in the Qian Province, I will turn them upside down.”

Jiang Chen sneered. Only he knew how determined he was to enter Misty Mountain. Those who got in his way would be his enemy.

“Kaka, I like your impulsive temper, let’s go!”

Big Yellow laughed out happily. He was a being that never settled for calm, and was never afraid of something big. Looking at his face, it seemed like he was happy for being able to offend a big sect momentarily after arriving at the Qian Province.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow continued journeying towards the Misty Mountain. Their behavior was welcomed by countless flabbergasted gazes.

“Hey, little brother, the Green Sanctuary Sect prevents us from entering Misty Mountain, you can’t go in there... hey... damn it, is this guy deaf?”

“This guy must be an idiot. The Green Sanctuary Sect prevents all outsiders from entering Misty Mountain, and they also just chased away all the people who were inside, and yet, he is still entering... Is he actually seeking death?”

“Idiot, if he offends some disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect and gets himself killed, he won’t even have a place to complain.”

.....

Many people stared at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who were running towards the Misty Mountain as if they were looking at idiots. Although the Green Sanctuary Sect was domineering, they really had the strength and the abilities to do so. A tiger’s butt was not something anyone could touch.

“Looks like this guy is going to enter the mountain straightaway. Let’s follow them and see how he gets himself killed!”

There were always curious people no matter where one went.

Soon, a few men followed closely behind Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. All of them wanted to see how these two who appeared out of nowhere could get themselves killed.

Outside the Misty Mountain, there were six men wearing green robes. All of them were Heavenly Core warriors. Two of them were old outer circle Sect Elders, while the other four young men were inner circle disciples.

Few men were standing there with their hands behind their back. All of them wore the same prideful expressions. Today was the day for the outer circle disciples' training. The Green Sanctuary Sect's training was divided into two categories, one was for the Mortal Core outer circle disciples, and the other one was for the Heavenly Core inner circle disciples.

The outer circle disciples would train in the first sector, and the inner circle disciples would train in the second sector. Now, the Green Sanctuary Sect had blocked off access to the Misty Mountain, and those outer circle disciples who were supposed to be training had all entered the mountain. Soon, it would be the inner circle disciples' turn.

“How dare those people question our decision, they really deserve no attention.”

A young man whose face was filled with arrogance said.

“In my opinion, we don't need to let those people enter the Misty Mountain in the future, let's just declare the mountain our own

territory, then only disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect will be allowed to enter the mountain. Letting those of the public enter the mountain is just a waste of resources.”

“That’s right, that’s how it really should be! It’s we who made the agreement with the Firethorn Savage, so of course we should be the only ones who can use this place!”

“Preventing the public from accessing is not a good idea, it would cause a bad name for the Green Sanctuary Sect. Besides, we can just prevent the public from accessing whenever we want. Once we’ve done so, the people would need to get out of here.”

The few men were discussing. Their words proved that they looked down on everyone else.

Right at this moment, a young man in white clothes who looked to be in his late teens, followed by a big yellow dog were coming towards them.

“Stop right there!”

One of the inner circle disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect shouted towards Jiang Chen. However, when they saw that the man and dog didn’t bother with them and kept walking, angry expressions emerged on their faces.

“Brat, I asked you to stop right there, are you deaf?!”

The disciple shouted with a voice even louder than his previous shout. The rest of them all carried angry expressions. In their opinion, this guy who appeared out of nowhere was simple seeking death. The Green Sanctuary Sect had blocked off all access to the Misty Mountain, and all other people had left the place. But this guy, he didn't obey their orders, and he kept walking towards the Misty Mountain. He really came here to seek his death.

Many people were watching from behind. When they saw that the young man in white didn't stop, but instead kept walking, all of them were shocked.

“Damn it, is there something wrong with this guy's mind? He was ordered to stop, but he still kept waling... is he really here to seek death?”

“This really is an action that that will give him a quick death. Now even an immortal will be unable to save him, as he has challenged the dignity of the Green Sanctuary Sect.”

People were sighing in their minds. All of them were looking at Jiang Chen as if they were looking at an idiot. They had seen many brave men, but they had never seen someone who insisted on getting himself killed.

“You're courting death!”

The Green Sanctuary Sect disciple unleashed his Early Heavenly Core energy and sent pressure towards Jiang Chen. But, this pressure had no effect on Jiang Chen at all. In the blink of an eye,

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow arrived in front of all these people.

“Are you courting death? Did you not hear I told you to stop walking?”

The disciple’s gaze was fierce.

“I need to enter the Misty Mountain for some important business. I hope the Green Sanctuary Sect can let me enter. I did not come to fight.”

Jiang Chen tried his best to talk with a polite tone. His target this time was the Firethorn Savage. If it wasn’t necessary, he would rather not get into a fight with the Green Sanctuary Sect.

Chapter 172 – Do Not Provoke Me

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, the few Heavenly Core disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect felt as if they had just heard a funny joke. Even the angry disciple instantly began laughing out heartily.

“Fuck, this guy really is an idiot! If he wasn’t, how could he have said something like that?”

“Maybe he doesn’t know how strong the Green Sanctuary Sect is? They have put up blocks to prevent the public from accessing Misty Mountain, but he still dared to make such a request. He is just seeking death.”

The spectators were also laughing loudly. No one knew where this young man in white came from, but he was a really funny guy. Or perhaps, he was a guy who didn’t know that there some things that just couldn’t be challenged. No one dared challenge the Green Sanctuary Sect’s decision to prevent the public from accessing.

“Brat, what did you just say? Are you sick in your mind? The Green Sanctuary Sect has block off all access to the Misty Mountain, and you still want to go in? What do you think the Green Sanctuary Sect it? Just now, you have offended us and challenged the dignity of the Green Sanctuary Sect. I’ll give you a chance to escape from death, kneel down and kowtow to all of us, then grandfather I will let you go in peace.”

The disciple said.

Hearing this, anger finally emerged on Jiang Chen's face. He had been expecting this, actually. All these disciples from the big sect were feeling good about themselves, so they acted arrogantly. Jiang Chen came here as a rogue cultivator, that's why they treated him like this.

“Hmph! The Misty Mountain doesn't belong to the Green Sanctuary Sect. I need to enter today no matter what, and if you do not want things to become messy, let me in right now.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He didn't want to cause trouble, but if someone wanted to give him trouble, Jiang Chen would never back off like a coward. He needed to enter Misty Mountain no matter what, and if these disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect insisted on not letting him, then he would use force.

“Brat, you talk a lot of trash, how dare you talk to us like that? No one has ever talked to us like that! Grandfather will give you one last chance, kneel down and kowtow!”

The disciple pointed his finger towards Jiang Chen.

“No one dares point at me like that, looks like you really have no idea what the consequences of doing so are.”

A fierce expression emerged on Jiang Chen's face. Right after his words left his mouth, a golden beam suddenly appeared between Jiang Chen and that disciple. After that, a cracking sound was heard, and a painful scream followed after.

“Puh! It stinks, how disgusting!”

A voice suddenly sounded out. After that, everybody saw Big Yellow spit out a bloody human wrist. It was still struggling on the ground.

“Ahhhhh, my hand!!”

The Green Sanctuary Sect disciple groaned painfully. His wrist had been bitten off by Big Yellow, and blood poured out from his arm.

Right at this moment, everyone were shocked by what they saw. Big Yellow's speed was extremely fast. He was like a lightning strike as he bit off the Early Heavenly Core warrior's wrist. The guy didn't even have time to react.

“What an awful sounding scream, why don't you just go die.”

Big Yellow once again leapt forwards and pushed the screaming disciple onto the ground. With his big mouth, he bit onto his head and ripped it off. In an instant, the screaming stopped, and what was left was the struggling headless body of that disciple, as well as the massive amount of blood that was splashing out from his neck.

When the disciple asked Jiang Chen to kneel down, Big Yellow had decided to strike. With his Late Heavenly Core cultivation base, killing an Early Heavenly Core warrior was no different than killing an ant.

Big Yellow didn't show any mercy when he struck, because he knew Jiang Chen's temper. There was no point in wasting time with these people, they were so arrogant and just wanted to mess with Jiang Chen. Also, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had to enter the mountain no matter what. Therefore, a fight was unavoidable. When Big Yellow strikes, somebody has to die.

“What?!”

The five others shouted at the same time. They were in the mood of watching a show, and were ready to see how Jiang Chen was going to embarrass himself, but they had never expected he would be so fierce and instantly kill their man.

Shock and disbelief filled their widened eyes. What just happened was unimaginable. This guy really had the guts to kill a disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect outside the Misty Mountain, he must be out of his mind!

“Heavens, what did I just see? A disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect just got killed! That dog is a demon lord who can kill a Heavenly Core warrior with a single strike, this is so frightening!”

“No wonder that young man behaved so arrogantly, it is all because he has that demon lord following him! But, by killing a disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect, this thing is going to become huge! No rogue cultivator has ever publicly killed a disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect in the Qian Province before, even worse is that this place is the Misty Mountain!”

“Gone, that young man is going to die for sure! Nowadays, these young men are too impulsive! He thought he could act ruthlessly with a demon lord following him; but fighting the Green Sanctuary Sect is equal to seeking death! Their disciples are not someone anyone could kill!”

The spectators were shocked. Many of them looked at Big Yellow with fear in their eyes. This dog was too fierce and brutal, and the scene where he killed previously by tearing his head off was pretty nasty.

“Brat, do you know what you just did? You just killed a disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect! Now, no matter where you flee, we will find you, and we will kill you!”

Finally, these men from the Green Sanctuary Sect awoke from their shock. One of the Sect Elders scolded at Jiang Chen. These men were responsible for training the outer circle disciples, but they never expected something like this to happen.

“The few of you better not get in my way, do not provoke me again.”

Jiang Chen ignored the anger of the old man and spoke with an indifferent tone. In his opinion, he was giving them an opportunity to survive. If they didn’t cherish the opportunity, Jiang Chen wouldn’t mind giving them what they were looking for.

“What an arrogant guy, how dare you challenge the Green Sanctuary Sect?! You won’t ever find a better path that leads to death! Kill him!”

This time, it was another young man from the Green Sanctuary Sect who spoke. This man was a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, and he held a pretty high position within the inner circle. The young man unleashed his energy and formed it into a gigantic Yuan energy web, then he sent it towards Jiang Chen. At the same time, the other four men drew out their combat weapons. They were preparing to surround Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, then strike at the same time.

“You asked for it. Big Yellow, kill them all.”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. Killing intent could be seen on his face. He rarely gave anyone a second chance. For him, killing one person was no different from killing six persons.

“Alright!”

Big Yellow let out a loud laughter. Suddenly, all the fur on his body stood up and pointed forwards. With a shake of his muscular body, five furs shot out from his body and pierced towards the five men like five razor sharp swords.

Bang!

The fur destroyed all the attacks of the five men. Their attacks

shattered into pieces and turned into sparks that swept across the scene. In the next second, a bloody hole appeared between their eyes, and a golden fur hovered outside the hole.

Plop~

In an instant, all five men fell down and died with blood spilling out from their foreheads. It was a frightening scene.

Witnessing what happened, all the spectators became even more soaked. They all held their breath and stared at the frightening scene in front of them. This was so scary, killing someone with just their fur. Five combined Heavenly Core warriors' attacks couldn't even withstand the furs shout out from a dog's body.

Those arrogant Sect Elders and disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect had become dead bodies in an instant. Jiang Chen didn't even look at their bodies. With a calm expression, he turned around towards the spectators and said, "Pass this message to the Green Sanctuary Sect: Do not challenge me."

After saying that, Jiang Chen brought Big Yellow with him and entered Misty Mountain. He was giving advice to the Green Sanctuary Sect, and if they ignored his warning and continued attacking him, the Green Sanctuary Sect would not just suffer losing two Sect Elders and four inner circle disciples.

After Jiang Chen disappeared from their sights, these people finally awakened, and it became a scene of turmoil.

“Heavens, who the hell was that guy? He is such a daring man! After killing six men from the Green Sanctuary Sect, he still had the audacity to warn them! This is so overbearing!”

“Something big is going to happen! I believe soon, Misty Mountain won’t be at peace anymore! The Green Sanctuary Sect is a big sect, six Heavenly Core warriors were killed during their training, and their rules were violated by someone. They will not let this matter be resolved easily, they will definitely send someone strong into Misty Mountain to hunt for this guy!”

“I don’t think that young man is very strong, but he has a powerful dog following him! Still, that dog is only at the Heavenly Core realm, and by offending the Green Sanctuary Sect, they are doomed!”

Everyone were discussing what happened. This was definitely something big.

Not long after Jiang Chen entered Misty Mountain, another two men descended from the skies. Both of them were young men, but they had much stronger cultivation bases compared to the previous six men. They were both Late Heavenly Core warriors.

Obviously, these two men were here to check on the situation, because not longer after this, the inner circle disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect would come here to attend their training, and both of them were the persons in charge of the inner circle disciples’ training.

When they saw the dead bodies, their expressions immediately changed, and they became extremely furious. They looked around and saw those busybodies who hadn't left the place. One of them then shouted out loudly, "Who did this?!"

Everybody were frightened, but no one dared say anything.

Swoosh! The inner circle disciple sprinted forwards and arrived in front of a man. He grabbed the man's collar and asked fiercely, "Tell me, what happened just now? Who killed them all?"

"It was... it was young man, and a big yellow dog!"

The man was scared, and his forehead was covered in cold sweat. He dared not hide anything, as he feared he would be killed by the disciple.

"Where did that young man and dog come from?"

The disciple asked again.

"No, I don't know!"

Under the pressure of a Late Heavenly Core warrior, the man was trembling and couldn't even speak properly.

"You don't know? Go to hell!"

The disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect forcefully slapped the man's face. Under such tremendous force, the man's head twisted a dozen times, then he died on the spot.

The innocent man died. What he said was all truth, he really had no idea where the young man in white came from. But too bad, he couldn't explain it properly, and had somehow provoked the disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect who was extremely furious.

If the man could live another life, no matter what, he wouldn't be a busybody anymore.

Chapter 173 – Kill All Who Gets In The Way

Witnessing this, the expressions of everyone present changed dramatically. They all took a few steps backwards as they looked at the imposing inner circle disciple with fear. This was too frightening, too overbearing. He had killed the man just like that.

There was the cruel reality of the cultivation world. Sometimes, a man's life was just worthless. It simply had no law or orders, what mattered was strength and abilities. The Green Sanctuary Sect's law and order was their powerful strength. The Green Sanctuary Sect saw high above everyone else in the Qian Province, and their disciples could kill any rogue cultivator without reason. It was just like killing an ant.

“You, tell me.”

The disciple walked up to an old man who was in his fifties. The old man was an Early Heavenly Core warrior, and the leader of a small clan. Although there was fear on his face, his attitude was much more matured than the young man who just died. He looked much calmer.

The old man cupped his fist towards the disciple and said, “I've never seen that young man and dog before. I supposed this was their first time coming to Misty Mountain. Just now, someone saw that young man asking about the Green Sanctuary Sect and the Misty Mountain, and he insisted on entering the mountain, but he was stopped by your Sect Elders and disciples, and a fight immediately erupted. The young man wore white clothes, and he had a handsome face. He is in his late teens, and his cultivation

level isn't worth mentioning. However, the dog that followed the young man was really strong, it was a demon lord, and all the men from the Green Sanctuary Sect was killed by the dog. Also, the young man said something before he entered the Misty Mountain, he asked us to deliver a message: Do not challenge me. This is all I know, what I said just now can be confirmed to be true by anyone here."

"Hmph! I wonder where that maniac came from, how dares he kill so many men from the Green Sanctuary Sect? No matter where he goes, I will find him, and I will kill him. Junior disciple Xu, you just wait here, let me kill that guy in Misty Mountain first. When I return, we'll find a big pot and have that dog cooked!"

Another young man snorted coldly. He turned around and walked into Misty Mountain, soon after, he disappeared from people's sight.

Junior disciple Xu furrowed his brows. He was a man with a thoughtful mind. He glanced at all the six men lying on the ground, then he turned towards the old man once again, "Describe to me how that dog killed our men."

"That dog is a frightening being, it killed all men with a single strike, and it was using its fur."

The old man dared not hide anything. When he recalled the scene where Big Yellow killed these men, he couldn't help but show a frightened expression.

“Killing someone with its furs?”

The disciple stared at the point between their eyes, and to his surprise, he found out all of them had holes in their foreheads. There was a thread of golden hair hanging outside the hole. His expression immediately changed.

“Killing so many Heavenly Core warrior with just a single attack, and one of them was even a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, and it just used a few threads of its fur... Looks like this demon lord is really powerful... I should inform the Sect Elders about this.”

After saying that, the disciple jumped into the skies and flew towards the Green Sanctuary Sect. Although he was a Late Heavenly Core warrior, he had a sober mind. Before getting all details regarding the man and the dog, it was better to stay put. Besides, there were many outer circle disciples who were training in Misty Mountain right now, and if he couldn't killed the man and dog with a single strike, it might bring devastating damage to all outer circle disciples.

After Jiang Chen and Big Yellow entered Misty Mountain, they just kept walking straight towards sector two. Within the depths of the second sector, there should be some powerful demon beasts. Jiang Chen could take the opportunity to kill some of them and increase his cultivation level. As for the Firethorn Savage, they would need to spend some time in order to find it.

Bang!

Loud sounds came seemingly without stop from all directions. It was the sound caused by fighting, it should be the outer circle disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect fighting some demon beasts.

Jiang Chen had no interest in sector one. Doesn't matter if it was the demon beasts of the disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect, he had no interest at all. As long as the Green Sanctuary Sect didn't come provoke him, he couldn't go cause problems with their disciples. After all, his target this time was the Firethorn Savage, the conflict with the Green Sanctuary Sect was just an accident.

The path in Misty Mountain was rough, there were thick woods everywhere. However, the natural Yuan energy was rich in here. The whole place was filled with natural energy, and it was a good place for cultivation. It was no wonder why the Green Sanctuary Sect wanted to prevent the public from accessing and have their disciples train here every month.

When the disciples fought demon beasts here, not only would they gain fighting experience, they could also obtain precious demon souls. Some lucky disciples might even find some rare natural resources. The Misty Mountain was simply a rich land for them.

Not long after they entered the mountain, three persons suddenly jumped out and blocked their path. They were two men and one girl who were wearing the uniforms of the Green Sanctuary Sect. They kept throwing examining looks towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“They are not from the Green Sanctuary Sect, how could they be in the Misty Mountain?”

The girl spoke, and she didn't sound friendly at all.

“Brat, who are you? How did you come here?”

Another young man spoke. He was a Late Mortal Core warrior, a respectful man amongst all outer circle disciples.

Sigh!

Jiang Chen shook his head as he let out a sigh. He really had no intention of causing any trouble. But, it seemed like trouble kept running into him. He knew very well about the pride of the disciples from big sects, they were so arrogant that they would never put any rogue cultivator in mind.”

“I killed those men outside the mountain, therefore I am here. The three of you better not get in my way, I don't want to kill you.”

Jiang Chen said in a straightforward manner.

“What?!”

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, the three of them shouted out in disbelief. The young man who was a Late Mortal Core warrior stared at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, then he let out a loud laugh.

“Haha, what a boaster! Those men outside are all Heavenly Core warriors, they are Sect Elders and inner circle disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect, they are not someone you can kill! Besides, no one in the Qian Province would dare kill any men from the Green Sanctuary Sect! What a joke, brat, I think you must have sneaked your way into here! How dare you disobey the orders of the Green Sanctuary Sect? You’re just seeking death here!”

The young man laughed out loudly.

“Senior disciple, that dog is pretty fat and meaty, let’s kill it and have a dog meal!”

Another outer circle disciple stared at Big Yellow with a tyrannical look. It was as if he could taste the fragrant dog meat he was later going to eat. He put out his tongue and licked his own lips.

Sigh!

Jiang Chen let out a sigh once again and placed his palm on his forehead. There were always some people who didn’t know that their behavior was pushing them towards death. By saying those words, the disciple’s ending had already been determined. Big Yellow was actually even more ferocious than Jiang Chen.

Indeed, right after the disciple finished his words, Big Yellow turned into a golden light and leapt forwards. He bit the disciple’s head off in an instant.

“Damn you, how dare you talk about cooking grandpa dog?! Let me kill you!”

Big Yellow was furious. The Dragon Horse’s bloodline was incredibly noble. Compared to these disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect, Big Yellow was a true noble being. The pride that came from his Divine bloodline made him have his own dignity. Those who dared challenge it were just seeking death.

“What?!”

The other two shouted out in shock. Both of them stared at the headless dead body which was still struggling on the ground, and their faces instantly turned pale.

“Why are you two bastards still blocking our path?! Are you actually seeking death?!”

Big Yellow bared his teeth and threatened the two. He had no interest in killing Mortal Core warriors.

Both of them were really frightened, they had never seen such a cruel dog before.

“You... How dare you kill a disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect?”

The young man said with a trembling voice.

“FUCK! Why do these disciples from the Green Sanctuary Sect have so much fucking pride?!”

Big Yellow’s hot temper exploded. He spat out a golden beam and killed the young man in an instant. After all, he had killed so many, killing another one really meant nothing. Big Yellow had given him a chance to live, but he didn’t know how to cherish it.

In an instant, two out of three disciples were killed. The last female disciples was so scared that she just couldn’t stop trembling. She looked at Big Yellow as if she were looking at a ferocious devil. Her face was filled with fear.

“What should I do? I’m going to die, I don’t want to die...”

The girl had lost all hope. She felt that this cruel dog was not going to let her off. In fact, Big Yellow had no interest in killing her at all.

Right at this moment, a loud shout sounded out above the skies.

“What a daring maniac, how dare you kill the disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect? You’re seeking death!”

The shout was so loud. In the blink of an eye, a figure appeared in front of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. When the girl saw who was coming to save her, her hopeless expression immediately changed into one of joy.

“Senior disciple Wang Yu!”

The girl was so happy she started crying. This Wang Yu was a Late Heavenly Core warrior, an inner circle disciple who had a high position within the sect. With his arrival, the girl felt as if she had been saved. The two maniacs in front of her would definitely be defeated by her senior disciple Wang Yu.

Wang Yu was the inner circle disciple who entered Misty Mountain just now. When he saw the two dead bodies on the ground, extreme anger immediately covered his face.

“You dare kill disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect?! I don’t care who you are or where you came from, your dead bodies will be buried here today!”

Wang Yu unleashed energy that rose up into the skies, and that combined with his loud shout just now had attracted many outer circle disciples who were in the middle of their training. Many outer circle disciples were coming towards them with great speed now.

“Senior disciple Wang Yu, that dog killed them!”

The female disciple standing beside Wang Yu pointed her hand towards Big Yellow.

“Let me say this for the last time, it is best for the Green

Sanctuary Sect to not provoke me. You will be able to train as you want, and I will be able to carry on with my own business. We will not fight each other.”

Jiang Chen spoke and gave his last warning.

“How arrogant! I’ll kill both of you right now!”

Wang Yu shouted out loudly. He waved his hand and unleashed a layer of golden light which transformed into a giant hand made out of Yuan energy. The hand flew towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. This man had a pretty decent cultivation base, but he had just broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm. Compared to Fan Kun, he was even weaker. The brave action of attacking Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, he seemed just like a dancing clown in their eyes.

“Big Yellow, do not show any mercy. From now on, we will kill all who gets in our way.”

A cruel light blinked in Jiang Chen’s eyes. Just now was his last warning, and this man still didn’t want to back off. If that was the case, then don’t blame him for not showing any mercy. Jiang Chen’s patience was limited.

Let alone this small Green Sanctuary Sect, Jiang Chen has never feared any strong enemies before.

Chapter 174 – Big Yellow's Head

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, Big Yellow's face was instantly filled with an excited expression. He leapt forwards with his strong body, and by using his metal-like dog head, he rammed towards the huge hand made from Wang Yu's Yuan energy.

Bang!

Energies were boiling, the huge hand of Yuan energy couldn't withstand Big Yellow's head, it was destroyed just like a huge bubble.

“What?!”

Wang Yu exclaimed. When Big Yellow attacked, only he could feel how powerful his opponent was. The energy Big Yellow unleashed was way more powerful than Wang Yu's.

He had underestimated the enemy this time!

Wang Yu knew he had underestimated his opponent, therefore, he dared not neglect any longer. He immediately drew out a bright shining long sword and slashed out dozens of beams with his sword which weaved into a gigantic web. With the sword in the center, he forcefully attacked Big Yellow.

“Kaka, your grandfather's head is as hard as metal, it is not something your broken sword can harm! You are too weak.”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly. Every everyone's frightened gazes, he rammed towards the sword with his head.

His action had even made Jiang Chen feel shocked. The sword carried by Wang Yu wasn't an ordinary weapon, it was a razor sharp mid-ranked combat weapon. Although Big Yellow's head was really hard, Jiang Chen didn't think it was hard enough to take on a mid-ranked combat weapon.

“Haha, you are just courting death!”

Even Wang Yu was laughing out loudly now. In his mind, no matter how strong Big Yellow was, there was no way he could use his head to fight a mid-ranked combat weapon.

But too bad, Big Yellow had disappointed him. Just before his head was about to collide with the sword, a mystical symbol suddenly appeared in between his eyes. With the help of this symbol, Big Yellow's head immediately covered by a golden light.

Clang!

What happened shocked everyone. When Wang Yu's mid-ranked combat weapon collided with Big Yellow's head, the sword instantly broke.

“What?”

Wang Yu and all the other Green Sanctuary Sect disciples who came here to watch the fight shouted out in disbelief at the same time.

However, Big Yellow's speed was too great, and he didn't give Wang Yu any time to react. With his head glowing in a golden light, he rammed into Wang Yu's chest in the next second.

Bang!

Wang Yu became like a kite which had its string cut. He was sent flying in a straight direction, and he broke a few huge trees before he was finally thrown onto the ground.

After colliding with Big Yellow's head, this result was expected. His head could even break a mid-ranked combat weapon, let alone a human being.

Wang Yu was coughing blood when he was thrown onto the ground, there were even fragments of his internal organs mixed in with the blood. His chest had completely caved in.

Plop!

Wang Yu fell flatly onto the ground, he was now dead. Being killed by a dog's head was just too annoying, he couldn't die in peace at all.

Wa!

Everyone were shocked, all the disciples' eyes widened, and their faces were filled with expressions of disbelief. Wang Yu was a Late Heavenly Core inner circle disciple, and with his Late Heavenly Core cultivation base, he had quite a prominent position in the inner circle, and he hardly found any matches. But still, he was today killed by a dog's head. This was too brutal.

Ahhhh!!

The female disciple couldn't stop herself from crying out in fear. She thought Wang Yu could defeat the enemies, she had never expected this would happen.

“Let's go.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. After that, he brought Big Yellow with him and walked deeper into Misty Mountain, soon after, he disappeared from the people's sight.

“They didn't kill me? I'm still alive?”

The female disciple murmured to herself. She was blanked out just now due to fear. The enemy had killed three men in such a short amount of time, and she thought she would be killed as well, but she never expected he life would actually be spared. She felt lucky she was able to survive from this.

All the outer circle disciple looked at each other with awful

expressions.

“Who was that young man? How does he have the audacity to kill Green Sanctuary Sect disciple in Misty Mountain?”

“That dog was too frightening, even senior disciple Wang Yu couldn’t withstand a single attack from it! How can we continue our training with such a powerful demon lord here?”

“We have to inform the Sect Elders about this and have that man killed!”

“Don’t panic, it’s not long before the inner circle disciples’ training begins. This incident will surely alarm our inner circle Divine Core Sect Elders, they will completely seal off the mountain and kill this man and dog!”

.....

All the disciples were discussing the matter. The Green Sanctuary Sect had occupied the Misty Mountain for such a long time, and never in history had something like this happened. In Misty Mountain, unless they provoked the Firethorn Savage, no one would dare attack any disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect.

Not long after that, another two figures came in from afar and landed in Misty Mountain. An old man and a young man. The young man was the inner circle disciple who went back to the Green Sanctuary Sect to inform the Sect Elders about what

happened. His name was Xu Yun, and similar to Wang Yu, he was a Late Heavenly Core warrior. The Sect Elder who followed him here was an inner circle Sect Elder, a strong warrior at the Early Divine Core realm.

Both men immediately saw the dead bodies on the ground, and Wang Yu who had died a horrible death not far away.

“What?! Even Wang Yu was killed?! What a maniac, I will kill him with a thousand cuts!”

The old man instantly became enraged.

“Looks like that dog is really strong, even Wang Yu wasn’t its match. Luckily I went back and invited a Divine Core Sect Elder and didn’t act recklessly like Wang Yu. If I hadn’t, then I would have been dead like him now.”

Xu Yun felt lucky in his mind.

“How did Wang Yu die?”

Xu Yun turned to those Mortal Core outer circle disciples and asked.

“Senior disciple Xu, Wang Yu was killed by a dog! It had a very strong head, and it broke senior disciple Wang’s mid-ranked combat weapon! He was killed when the dog rammed its head into him! As for that young man, he didn’t attack at all, but judging

from his age, I don't think he is that strong, he's just being protected by that dog!"

An outer circle disciple described what happened just now. When they recalled how brutal that dog was, all of these disciples felt chills down their spines.

"What? That dog's head is that powerful?"

Xu Yun was shocked.

"Where did that young man and dog go?"

The Divine Core Sect Elder asked.

"They went deeper into Misty Mountain not long ago."

A disciple pointed towards the direction where Jiang Chen and Big Yellow went.

"Hmph! What a maniac, how dare they challenge the Green Sanctuary Sect? They have no idea what death means! I will strike myself and kill them!"

The old man let out a cold snort. In the blink of an eye, he started flying towards the deeper area of Misty Mountain. Xu Yun moved at the same time and followed behind the old man. With the help of a Divine Core Sect Elder, the dog would perish this time. Xu Yun

could help kill that young man in white.

The young man only had an ordinary cultivation base, and he had never attack before. He also looked pretty young. That was the only description Xu Yun had for Jiang Chen. Therefore, he had all his attention focused on the dog, and didn't really care too much about Jiang Chen.

However, what Xu Yun didn't know was, misleading information like this would get himself killed.

Bang!

Within the second sector of Misty Mountain, a violent banging sound shook the place. Jiang Chen had just killed a Late Heavenly Core demon lord and retrieved its demon soul.

With the help of the Dragon Transformation skill, the demon soul was absorbed by him in an instant. With his current cultivation level, the demon soul of an Early or Mid Heavenly Core demon beast was useless. But, the demon soul of a Late Heavenly Core demon lord could still let him form 3 new Dragon Marks.

Currently, there were 303 Dragon Marks in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea, but he was still far from freaking through to the Late Heavenly Core realm. He would need a total of 400 Dragon Marks to break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm.

"Three Dragon Marks, this is just a fraction of what I need.

Besides, the more I cultivate, the more energy I will need. Looks like in order for me to break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, I will need to kill some Divine Core demon beasts.”

Jiang Chen sighed in his mind. Since the Misty Mountain was occupied by the Firethorn Savage, it wouldn't allow other Divine Core demon beasts to reside here anyways.

The only good thing for Jiang Chen here was the Firethorn Savage, but it wasn't an easy job to deal with it. Therefore, Jiang Chen was trying his best to kill some demon beasts in sector two in order to increase his combat strength.

Suddenly, two strong energies could be sensed from the outer area of Misty Mountain, and in the blink of an eye, two men blocked the path in front of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Damn it, when is this going to end?!”

Big Yellow almost let fire come out from his nose. After provoking a big sect like the Green Sanctuary Sect, there was almost no way for them to remain low, trouble just kept coming at them with seemingly no end.

“A Divine Core warrior can quickly catch up with us.”

Jiang Chen sneered. He had actually been expecting this. The grievance between himself and the Green Sanctuary Sect had come to a stage where it would be difficult to resolve.

“Here they are!”

Xu Yun looked at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow with a cruel vision.

“I’ll handle that dog, the young man is yours. Don’t kill him, after capturing them both, we’ll torture them slowly. Those who dare challenge the dignity of our Green Sanctuary Sect and kill our disciples, we can’t let them die easily.”

“Alright, be careful Sect Elder, that dog is really strong. As for that young man, I can kill him with ease.”

Xu Yun said with a sneer.

“No matter how strong it is, it’s still just at the Heavenly Core realm. Watch how I capture it, we’ll have a dog meat feast later!”

The old man laughed out loudly. When Big Yellow heard him say dog meat feast, he immediately became enraged. He howled extremely loudly towards the skies, then in the next second, he turned into a golden light and pierced towards the old man.

Although the opponent was an Early Divine Core warrior, Jiang Chen didn’t worry about Big Yellow at all. The bloodline of a Divine Beast was too powerful, and although Big Yellow was only at the Late Heavenly Core realm, he would be able to fight an Early Divine Core warrior without too many problems.

“You’re seeking death!”

The old man unleashed his energy and punched out fiercely. The punch unleash a golden beam which shot towards Big Yellow with lightning speed.

Big Yellow didn’t show any fear, he simply rammed towards the attack with his head facing forwards.

Bang!

Energy ripples splashed everywhere. Big Yellow’s head had shattered the golden beam instantly. However, he was stopped by the attack as well. His opponent was after all a Divine Core warrior, it wouldn’t be an easy fight.

The first exchange ended up in a tie.

“What a strong head!”

The old man’s expression changed, but he didn’t really care too much about it. Massive energy was rolling all over his body, he was preparing to unleash an even more powerful attack.

On the other side, Xu Yun was walking towards Jiang Chen with a look of despise on his face. He had decided to take his sweet time in torturing this young man who only had an ordinary cultivation level.

Chapter 175 – It's Getting Worse

Bang!

Energy waves unceasingly raged across the place, and the loud explosions showed no signs of stopping. Big Yellow and the old man were engaged in an intense fight, and no one seemed to win a hand over the other one. The old man was furious, he never thought a dog could be so strong. With a Late Heavenly Core cultivation base, it could actually fight him equally. This was really impossible, because between the Heavenly Core realm and Divine Core realm, there was a huge gap. This dog fighting against someone in a higher realm proved that it was a remarkable being.

On the other side, Xu Yun unleashed his powerful energy and locked his energy onto Jiang Chen, making sure he didn't give Jiang Chen any chance to escape.

“Brat, you're really brave! How dare you challenge the Green Sanctuary Sect, do you really think you can act lawlessly because you have the help of a demon lord? You're just an idiot, have you seen that? Your dog is no match for a Divine Core warrior! Now, I'll capture you and bring you back to torture you!”

Xu Yun spoke word by word, slowly. His face carried a look of despise, he was completely looking down on Jiang Chen.

It was normal for him to look down on Jiang Chen. After all, Big Yellow's performance had been too strong, and Jiang Chen hadn't even fought once since the beginning. Therefore, all those people

though Jiang Chen only had an ordinary cultivation base, and was only depending on the help of a demon lord. Xu Yun had the same mentality, and it was because of this mentality that he was stepping closer and close to an abyss.

“How do you know I’m only depending on a dog? What if my true strength is stronger than that dog?”

A tyrannical smile appeared on Jiang Chen’s face.

“Haha, prove it, kill me!”

Xu Yun was laughing out heartily upon hearing what Jiang Chen said. In his mind, Jiang Chen was no match for him. With a sway of his body, massive waves of energy flowed out from his body. Wave after wave of energy was shining brightly underneath the sunlight. The energy waves threw itself at Jiang Chen like a tidal wave.

“What a joker.”

Jiang Chen sneered. He simply stood there without moving a bit. With a palm covered in dragon scales, he simply waved his hand and instantly shattered all the energy waves unleashed by Xu Yun, as if he was just popping some bubbles.

After that, Jiang Chen moved like a lightning strike. In an instant, he appeared in front of Xu Yun. His cold blood red dragon claw had clenched tightly onto Xu Yun’s neck.

Xu Yun gasped. An extreme feeling of danger rose up from the bottom of his heart combined with a feeling of death being close to him. He could now only feel the dragon claw clenching his throat was extremely heavy, and he had given up all idea of resisting.

“No, please don’t kill me!”

Xu Yun was scared, and cold sweat had started dripping down from his forehead. An expert warrior knew what was going on when he was in a fight. When Jiang Chen attacked, Xu Yun had immediately regretted his decision. Jiang Chen was able to easily shatter his energy waves and control him, all in an instant. This proved that Jiang Chen’s combat strength was much higher than his. With his current combat strength, there was no way he could fight with Jiang Chen.

Right at this moment, Xu Yun couldn’t help but curse in his mind. Which bastard had told him that this young man only had an ordinary cultivation level? Was this fucking ordinary? He was even stronger than the dog, he really was extremely formidable.

Xu Yun was trembling. He used to be a smart person, but today he had made a mistake. If this young man really had an ordinary cultivation level, how could he have a strong demon lord following him around?

But too bad, it was too late for Xu Yun to understand this, he could feel Jiang Chen’s killing intent right now.

“I, Jiang Chen never give anyone a second chance, and since you from the Green Sanctuary Sect has come and provoked me once again, then there is nothing much to say about it.

After saying that, Jiang Chen squeezed his palm and broke Xu Yun’s neck. The young genius of the Green Sanctuary Sect had died a tragic death.

“What?!”

On the other side, the old man who was fighting Big Yellow shouted out in alarm. He knew well about Xu Yun’s strength, and he had never expected that a young man whom none of them had paid much attention to could have killed him with just a single strike.

Where did these abnormal monsters come from, and how could they be so frightening?

“Kid, who the hell are you? Why do you want to go against the Green Sanctuary Sect?”

The old man stopped his attack and asked loudly.

“I never wanted to cross paths with the Green Sanctuary Sect, I just wanted to enter Misty Mountain. It was never my plan to fight with you guys, but you guys kept getting in my way and wanted to kill me. If that is the case, I won’t be polite with any of you. Old fool, since you are here, we won’t let you go back alive.”

Jiang Chen unleashed his energy. With a cruel decision, a golden light immediately appeared in his palm. In the next second, he pointed towards the old man with his finger, then he unleashed four huge golden fingers which forcefully pierced towards the old man.

Currently, Jiang Chen had managed to unleash the fourth finger of the Six Profound Solar Fingers. It was an extremely powerful attack, and with the support of all 303 Dragon Marks, ordinary Divine Core warriors wouldn't be able to defend from the attack.

“What a strong young man, he only has a Mid Heavenly Core cultivation base, but he can be compared to Divine Core warriors! Where did this monster come from? I don't know anyone in the Qian Province who matches his profile.”

The old man was struck with consternation. He had sensed Jiang Chen's cultivation level when Jiang Chen attacked, but it had also sent a shock down the old man's mind. Jiang Chen was so young, and with his cultivation level, he was able to unleash such powerful combat strength. This was simply the most abnormal monster he had ever met. As the inner circle Sect Elder of the Green Sanctuary Sect, he was well versed with all the strong young men in the Qian Province, but he had never heard of anyone like Jiang Chen.

He didn't have much time to think. Jiang Chen's attack had come closer to him, and he had to react with a counter attack.

Ha!

The old man shouted out loudly. He used his Yuan energy to form a bright spear. This was a powerful combat skill that could let him form any weapon that he wanted.

The spear continuously emanated a buzzing sound, and it looked like it was going to poke a hole through the thin air. In the next second, it pierced towards Jiang Chen's Six Profound Solar Fingers.

Bang!

The massive energy ripples swept across the place and caused devastating damage to everything within a 10 mile circumference. Colorful ripples destroyed all trees and grass in the area, and turned the place into a ruined land. Many demon beasts were frightened by the violent explosions and started fleeing in every direction. The ripples from the collision of two Divine Core warriors' attack could get them killed.

Tap tap tap...

Although the old man had destroyed the Six Profound Solar Fingers with his spear, he was forced back a dozen steps before he could stabilize his body. The Yuan energy spear in his hand had shattered as well. Both his arms were numb, and his palm was trembling. His qi and blood were being circulated in a messy way, which made him feel extremely awful.

“How can a Mid Heavenly Core warrior be so strong, is he still human?”

The old man was completely shocked. He had never seen any Heavenly Core warrior who could be so powerful, so strong that even with his combat strength, he couldn't defeat him at all.

“What a young monster you are! However, since you have offended the Green Sanctuary Sect, you will still have to die. The real great warriors of the Green Sanctuary Sect will soon be here, and there will be no place for you to hide within Misty Mountain.”

The old man tried to threaten Jiang Chen. After saying that, he swayed his body and flew towards the exit of Misty Mountain. The old man was no idiot, after a brief fight, he knew he was no match for this young man in white. If he continued to fight here, he might end up like Xu Yun and die a horrible death, and that was not something he wanted.

“Trying to run? Too late!”

Jiang Chen portrayed an extreme intention to kill. In an instant, he unleashed the True Dragon Palm. A blood red dragon claw appeared high up above the skies, and like a jail, it captured the old man who was trying to flee.

“Break away!”

The old man shouted out loudly as he used all his strength. He

tried to struggle and escape from Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm, but too bad, he had to face disappointment.

“The fuck?! This is an inherited combat skill of true dragons! Damn it, what kind of secret is this guy hiding?! How can he unleash a combat skill only true dragons can use?!”

Big Yellow's eyes lit up, he was shocked by what he just saw. The last time Jiang Chen unleashed the True Dragon Palm was when he wreaked havoc in the Black Sect, and Big Yellow was not there, so he didn't see what happened. That's why he was so shocked right now. Since he was a Dragon Horse himself, he also possessed the bloodline of the dragon. He could easily tell if a combat skill was a true dragon combat skill or not.

“Still trying to escape from my True Dragon Palm? Stop dreaming now!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly as he controlled the dragon claw to forcefully squeeze. The old man instantly felt a massive force squeezing him from all directions, and cracking started sounding out from his body. All his Yuan energy was crushed by the dragon claw, it was like a few huge mountains were pressing him from all directions.

“Stop there!”

Right at this moment, another loud shout came from afar. After that, three figures flew towards them with great speed. They were three old men with powerful energies, and all of them were Divine

Core warriors. There even was a Mid Divine Core warrior amongst them. With Jiang Chen's current ability, there was no way he could defeat a Mid Divine Core warrior.

Judging from their clothes, all of them were Sect Elders of the Green Sanctuary Sect. When the old Mid Divine Core warrior saw that Jiang Chen had captured their own man, he immediately shouted out loudly.

“Hmph!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He simply ignored the shouting of the old Mid Divine Core warrior. In the next second, threads of golden flames shot out within the dragon claw, and in an instant, they turned into a sea of flames.

Ahhh!!

The Early Divine Core warrior instantly let out a shrill scream. Under the pressure of the True Dragon Palm, and the scorching heat from the True Dragon Flames, he finally couldn't hold on any longer, and was burned into ashes in just the time of a few breaths.

“Damn it, this is even more powerful, this is the True Dragon Flames! This guy is going to defy the natural order!”

Big Yellow's eyes lit up. It seemed like he was looking at a ghost when he saw Jiang Chen unleash his skill. This really was an eye opener.

“Bastard!”

The Mid Divine Core warrior shouted out with extreme fury. The guy really had the courage to kill a Divine Core Sect Elder in front of him, this was ridiculous!

The Green Sanctuary Sect was a big sect, and it was supported by all Divine Core warriors. The death of a single Divine Core warrior was an unimaginable loss for them.

“Kill this maniac now!”

Another Sect Elder became enraged as well. The Mid Divine Core warrior instantly unleashed an attack, he unleashed a bright curtain which covered towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Big Yellow, we’re no match for them, let’s go.”

Jiang Chen called upon Big Yellow and flew high up into the skies. Both man and dog flew towards the deeper area of Misty Mountain with lightning speed and disappeared from the scene in an instant.

“Chase them, if we don’t kill this guy, the reputation of the Green Sanctuary Sect will be greatly affected, and we’ll have a hard time remaining a big power house in the Qian Province!”

The Mid Divine Core warrior's energy rose up into the skies. The three of them turned into three beams of light and chased after Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

Chapter 176 – The Powerful Firethorn Savage

The entire Misty Mountain had become restless. Sector two was filled with devastating energy all over, and the massive energy of Divine Core warriors was completely unleashed. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were crazily fleeing, and the three men were chasing closely behind them.

The Green Sanctuary Sect was the biggest sect in the Qian Province, and they sat high above all else. What happened today had never happened before. They had suffered a great loss, and if they couldn't kill the young man and dog, the Green Sanctuary Sect's reputation would be affected, and they wouldn't be able to keep their number one position within the Qian Province any longer.

“Kaka, these three old fools are so clumsy! Fat chance they'll be able to catch up with us!”

While flying with great speed, Big Yellow was laughing out heartily. Both he and Jiang Chen were both incredibly fast and strong. With their full speed, perhaps only a Late Divine Core warrior could catch up with them.

Big Yellow's words were clearly heard by the three old men behind him. They almost threw up some blood. All of them were real Divine Core warrior, but this dog described them as clumsy. This was something they couldn't bear at all.

“Sect Elder Liu, this dog is really wicked!”

An old man gnashed his teeth in anger.

“I’m going to skin that dog alive, then I’ll bake him into some roasted meat!”

The Mid Divine Core Sect Elder was also gnashing his teeth in anger. His name was Liu Hong, and he was one of the top men from the Green Sanctuary Sect. His status in the Green Sanctuary Sect was similar to Fan Zhong Tang’s position in the Black Sect.

“Where did this young man come from? He is an abnormal monster with incredibly powerful combat strength! He just killed an Early Divine Core warrior with his Mid Heavenly Core cultivation base, this is extremely rare!”

“Also, they are really fast, even we can’t catch up with them!”

Both Early Divine Core Sect Elders looked at each other with amazed expressions.

“I don’t care who he is, I have to kill him today no matter what! The dignity of the Green Sanctuary Sect can’t be challenged by any outsider! My sword, come out!”

Liu Hong shouted out loudly. A golden combat sword instantly appeared, and under his control, the sword expanded and became about 3 meters long. The trio all appeared close to the sword and

started injecting their Yuan energy into it. In an instant, with the help of the sword, their speed increased by a lot. Soon after, the gap between them and Jiang Chen became smaller.

“Damn it, these old fools do have some decent abilities. Buddy, speed up, let’s ditch them!”

A pair of bright wings suddenly appeared on Big Yellow’s back, and his speed increased. On the other side, a pair of blood wings appeared on Jiang Chen’s back as well, and combined with the Dimensional Shift, Jiang Chen’s speed equalled Big Yellow’s. Once again, the distance between them and the three old men became larger.

“Damn it, hurry and chase up!”

Liu Hong was furious, he tried his best to catch up with them.

“Fuck, I feel like wanting to fight that old man now!”

Big Yellow said while feeling slightly depressed. But, he knew that with his and Jiang Chen’s current combat strength, there was no way they could defeat a Mid Divine Core warrior. Under such circumstances, the only option for them was to run.

“Hmph! Be patient, we have plenty of time in the future. Let’s ditch them for now.”

Jiang Chen snorted.

“Looks like it won’t be easy to ditch them, that old fool has locked down our energies.”

Big Yellow said.

“Let’s enter sector three, I’m sure they won’t have the courage to follow us since it’s the Firethorn Savage’s territory.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Don’t tell me you are going to find that Firethorn Savage right now. This is no different than committing suicide.”

Big Yellow said with a depressed expression.

“We can take this opportunity to check out the Firethorn Savage, then we’ll find a way to deal with it.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were blinking brightly. In order to deal with the Firethorn Savage, they couldn’t use any force, they had to use their intelligence to handle it. But, since they had just come to Misty Mountain, and were being chased by the Green Sanctuary Sect, Jiang Chen just took this as an opportunity to enter the third sector to check out the Firethorn Savage’s situation.

All of them moved with extreme speed. Soon, they arrived at the border of the third sector. Jiang Chen could clearly sense that the

natural energy here was much richer than the other places. The mist that was hovering around here was also thicker.

Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow went straight into sector three.

Behind them, Liu Hong and the other two old men had also come to the border, but they stopped.

“That guy entered the third sector, what should we do now?”

One of the old men asked.

“We have an agreement with the Firethorn Savage, no men from the Green Sanctuary Sect can step into the third sector. Provoking the Firethorn Savage is no fun thing, and this guy has no idea how dangerous it is to enter the third sector. Once he provokes the Firethorn Savage, his life will end.”

Liu Hong sneered.

“Since he is certainly going to die in there, maybe we should just return now.”

Another Sect Elder said.

“No, we’ll wait here without giving that guy any chance to come out. The training of the outer circle disciples and the inner circle

disciples will take another seven days. After seven days, we'll leave with them, and if that guy still hasn't come out by then, that means he has been killed by the Firethorn Savage and won't come out again. Nobody can stay in sector three unharmed for more than seven days."

Liu Hong said with a confident look.

"Alright, that young man will die. It's so ridiculous that he has caused such a huge loss to the Green Sanctuary Sect."

Another old man gnashed his in with anger.

"You guys go inform those disciples, ask them to guard all exits of Misty Mountain, have them release a signal immediately upon seeing that young man or the dog. They are now fish in a pond, and there is a powerful Firethorn Savage right ahead of them. I'll see how they'll deal with this."

Liu Hong's face carried an insidious expression, he was determined to kill Jiang Chen.

"Fine, we'll go now."

Both men left after saying that.

At the same time Jiang Chen and Big Yellow entered the third sector, they had descended from the skies and hidden all their energy and breathing, then they slowly walked deeper into the

area.

“Big Yellow, don’t forget to hide your breath and energy, don’t fight any demon beasts along the way. We’ll have to avoid all fights until we find the base of the Firethorn Savage and check out the situation.”

Jiang Chen reminded.

“I understand.”

Big Yellow lowered his voice, but his face was filled with excitement. Big Yellow was unable to hold his excitement when doing something as big as this.

Their walking speed wasn’t slow, and they soon came to the center of the third sector. Due to them hiding their energy and breathing, they didn’t alert any demon beasts along the way. Besides, there weren’t many demon beasts residing in the third sector. With the king of Misty Mountain, the Firethorn Savage residing here, not many demon beasts dared stay close in the third sector.

Along the way, Jiang Chen had seen a lot of strange flowers and weird plants. There were even some rare herbs. He simply picked them up and put them into his storage ring.

“The Misty Mountain really is a rich land, no wonder the Green Sanctuary Sect doesn’t want to give it up, and even went so far to

make an agreement with the Firethorn Savage. Big Yellow, use your innate ability and try to sense if there are any treasures nearby.”

Jiang Chen said as he looked at Big Yellow.

“Treasure your big head! You think that treasure is something that you can find anywhere?”

Big Yellow gazed at Jiang Chen helplessly. If there were any treasure nearby, Big Yellow would be able to sense it in an instant.

While walking in a narrow valley, Jiang Chen’s eyes suddenly lit up. He saw within a crack not far away, there was a purple colored orchid growing. Under the sunlight’s reflection, it was shining in a purple glow.

“A Violet Ying Orchid, haha, I never expected there would be a Violet Ying Orchid here! What a lucky day!”

Jiang Chen was excited. Although this purple colored flower was only the size of his palm, it had blossomed with nine petals and had a thick root. Obviously, it had reached its matured state.

“This Violet Ying Orchid is one of the main ingredients for the Profound Six Solar Pill! I couldn’t find it in the Black Sect, and I never expected to find it here.”

Without saying much more, Jiang Chen picked the flower up. In

his memory, a total of 49 herbs were required to concoct the Profound Six Solar Pill-Guo Shan basically had all of them except for this Violet Ying Orchid.

“I never thought you would be such a lucky bastard!”

Big Yellow turned his nose up towards Jiang Chen.

“Go away, this is my lucky day. As a dog, you wouldn’t know anything about this.”

Jiang Chen slapped Big Yellow’s head, causing it to produce a loud sound resembling metals colliding.

“Ruff ruff ruff!! I am not a dog!”

Big Yellow bared his teeth.

“Damned dog, lower your voice, don’t alert the Firethorn Savage, damn it.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Big Yellow. They were in the deepest area of the third sector, and they needed to act carefully as to not attract the Firethorn Savage’s attention.

The man and dog continued their journey. Suddenly, a violent roar sounded out not far away from them.

Graaa...

The roar was extremely loud and deep, and it carried the power of the king of all beasts. With its roar, it could make all beasts in the mountain submit to it.

“It’s the Firethorn Savage.”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow exclaimed.

“The roar came from in front of us. Just from the sound alone I can tell how frightening this Firethorn Savage is. Let’s go over and check it out. Remember, don’t make a noise.”

Jiang Chen said.

In front of them there was a small hill, and the Firethorn Savage’s roar came from there. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow carefully climbed up to the middle of the hill without making any noise, then they both extended their heads upwards. In an instant, they saw a massive object lying not too far away from them.

In the middle of the hill there was a neat, small field. Behind it there was a huge cave. Right now, a huge and majestic demon beast lying in the center of the field.

The beast was over 6 meters tall even when it was lying on the floor. His body was fully covered with golden scale, and underneath the sunlight’s shine, it was reflecting a bright glow.

This was the Firethorn Savage. It had an ugly face with two obviously sharp fangs in its mouth. Right now, the Firethorn Savage was lying motionlessly on the floor with both its eyes shut. It seemed like it was in the middle of enjoying its sun bath.

But Jiang Chen knew that this Firethorn Savage was actually in the middle of cultivation. It was absorbing the pure Yang energy that was being emitted from the sun. This was the innate ability of the Firethorn Savage.

Ordinary demon beasts would be able to transform into human form when they broke through to the Heavenly Core realm, but it would be more difficult for the demon beasts that were above the average. Taking the Firethorn Savage as an example, its cultivation level had reached the peak of the Mid Divine Core realm, but it was still unable to transform into human form. It probably needed to break through to the Combat Soul realm, or perhaps the Demon King realm before being able to transform.

As for a Divine Beast such as Big Yellow, his transformation would be even harder. He might need to break through to the Demon Saint realm before he could have the possibility of transforming into human form. The Demon Saint realm was equal to the humans' Saint realm.

The Firethorn Savage was in his cultivation mode, and he had no idea that there were two uninvited guests watching him from close by. Right at this moment, if he scanned the area with its Divine Sense, he would discover Jiang Chen and Big Yellow immediately. However, this Firethorn Savage would never expect

that anyone would dare intrude the third sector and come so close to it.

Chapter 177 – Golden Egg

Zzz...

The Firethorn Savage looked like it had fallen asleep as it snored. Every time it breathed, some golden colored bubbles would burst out from its nose together with a strong energy. If there was some dust in front of it, each breath would be able to produce a sandstorm.

“Damn it, a Mid Divine Core Firethorn Savage is really powerful. If I could break through to the Divine Core realm, I would easily be able to kill him!”

Big Yellow spoke to Jiang Chen through his Divine Sense. Although the Firethorn Savage’s bloodline was noble, if it was compared to a Dragon Horse’s bloodline, it was still far behind.

“What an overbearing Firethorn Savage! Even the breath is enough to frighten most people! I think that even Daoist Black would be unable to defeat it. If I could absorb this Firethorn Savage’s demon soul, I would be able to break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, and I would be one step closer to the Divine Core realm! A Firethorn Savage’s demon soul could help me form at least another 300 Dragon Marks!”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. Too bad, it was extremely hard to kill this Firethorn Savage. This big guy was just too strong.

“Buddy, are you going to neglect Little Yu’s recovery?”

Big Yellow gazed at Jiang Chen angrily.

“I’m just joking. There are so many Divine Core demon beasts out there, and once I enter Inferno Hello, I won’t have to worry about a lack of demon beasts. The Firethorn Savage’s demon soul will be used to concoct the Profound Six Solar Pill which will save Little Yu.”

Jiang Chen explained to Big Yellow. Although he was slavering the Firethorn Savage’s demon soul, he knew Yan Chen Yu needed this demon soul more than him right now.

“So what should we do now? Don’t tell me we are just going to watch it from here all day?”

Big Yellow was getting impatient.

“What do you think? Do you want to go up there and try fighting it yourself?”

Jiang Chen had a smile on his face.

“Get lost!”

Big Yellow moved his body away from Jiang Chen.

“This Firethorn Savage is too strong, there is no way we can

defeat him face to face. We need to find some clever way. Let's hide our breath and wait here first. This Firethorn Savage has been living in the Misty Mountain for a long time, it must have its own routine. Let's keep an eye on its routine for now."

Jiang Chen said.

A man and a dog held their breath as they watched the Firethorn Savage silently sleeping. Big Yellow yawned, and with a depressed expression he said, "Damn it, what is this all about?! Both of you are just staying here and watching a demon beast sleeping, it's making your father sleepy now!"

Jiang Chen gazed at Big Yellow, he too felt somewhat depressed. He was once the greatest Saint in the world, but now he was hiding and watching a demon beast sleeping. This was ridiculous.

An hour later, the sun had risen to the top of their heads. It was around noon now, it was also the time when the pure Yang energy was the strongest. The sleeping Firethorn Savage suddenly opened its eyes, and it looked really frightening.

The Firethorn Savage let out a loud roar. After that, it's massive and majestic body slowly stood up from the ground. The 6 meter tall body had become a 15 meter tall body, and it had four thick and strong legs fully covered with golden scales that looked like four huge pillars.

It was so huge, the Firethorn Savage was like a small sized golden hill. Its body was shining so brightly that no one could stare

directly at it.

The Firethorn Savage had awakened. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow strengthened their spirits at the same time. They didn't dare make a single noise, and they held their breaths tightly.

This Firethorn Savage obviously didn't expect someone would intrude its territory. Therefore, it didn't pay any attention to the surround area. This was not because its senses were weak, it was because Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were extremely good at hiding. If it was someone else, they would have probably been discovered by the Firethorn Savage.

Roar!

The Firethorn Savage suddenly let out another loud roar that sounded out through the woods. With a sway, its massive body jumped into the skies and dashed towards another direction. It soon disappeared from Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's sight.

“Gone like that?”

Big Yellow was startled.

“It's now noon, it's the time when the pure Yang energy is at its richest, this Firethorn Savage should have continued its cultivation, why did it choose to leave at this hour?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows and felt puzzled.

“Whatever, let’s take this opportunity to check out its cave.”

Big Yellow jumped up and prepared to walk towards the cave, but Jiang Chen pulled him back.

“Buddy, why are you pulling me?”

Big Yellow bared his teeth.

“Be careful, if that Firethorn Savage comes back, we’ll be doomed.”

Jiang Chen pulled Big Yellow back to their hiding spot.

“Let’s spend some more time monitoring the Firethorn Savage’s routine, then we’ll discuss what to do next.”

Jiang Chen wanted to cover all bases. Their opponent was so powerful, there was no way they could fight it with force alone, they had to understand all of its routines before thinking about a way to deal with it.

The wait lasted for half an hour, and Big Yellow also nagged continuously for half an hour. He kept complaining that Jiang Chen was a coward. Half an hour was more than enough for him to wreak havoc in Firethorn Savage’s cave.

But Jiang Chen just remained calm. He wouldn't act recklessly before figuring out the Firethorn Savage's routine.

Swoosh...

Right at this moment, the Firethorn Savage came back from afar. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could clearly see that his mouth was open when it flew back. Within his mouth, something was shining brightly. It was a ball of water.

Clop!

The Firethorn Savage landed on the field and shook the entire hill. After that, he walked back into the cave and spent another half hour in there.

Half an hour later, the Firethorn Savage came out from the cave and laid down on the same spot, then it continued slumbering.

"It's sleeping again."

Big Yellow rolled his eyes. Finally, he had found someone who could sleep more than him.

"Be patient, let's continue waiting."

Jiang Chen kept comforting Big Yellow. This dog seriously lacked patience.

The Firethorn Savage really knew how to sleep well. It only woke up around noon the next day, and once again, at this hour of the day, the Firethorn Savage flew away from the field in the same direction as he previously went.

“It’s gone, again.”

Big Yellow widened his eyes.

“So this is its routine. Yesterday, when the Firethorn Savage came back, I think there was something in its mouth. You saw that too, right?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Yea, there really was something in its mouth.”

Big Yellow nodded his head.

“Come, let’s follow and check where the hell this Firethorn Savage went.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen stood up and walked towards the direction where the Firethorn Savage went. He and Big Yellow didn’t fly this time, they just sprinted on the ground. Flying would cause a slight disturbance with the natural Yuan energy, and this would make the Firethorn Savage discover their existence.

Tens of miles away from the Firethorn Savage's cave there was a valley. Right in the middle of this valley there was a pond, and at the center of the pond there was a huge floating rock. The rock was hollow, and right now, the Firethorn Savage was laying in the with its head inside the hollow rock.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow both saw some crystal clear liquid within the rock. The liquid was so clear that it reflected the sunlight like a crystal. They knew what the liquid was, it was the rare Energy Spring Water, the same that they had found in the Water Curtain Cave. It was a surprise for them that even this place had Energy Spring Water.

Right now, the Firethorn Savage had soaked its red tongue into the Energy Spring Water. It wasn't drinking the water, it had just put its tongue into it without moving.

“What is it doing now?”

Big Yellow asked with a puzzled expression.

“He is releasing his own life-force essence... why is the Firethorn Savage releasing its life-force essence into the Energy Spring Water?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. The Firethorn Savage was using the time where the pure Yang energy was the richest to release its life-force essence into the Energy Spring Water, and this behavior really puzzled Jiang Chen. If it was here to drink the Energy Spring

Water, that would be somewhat understandable. This water was after all a rare treasure. Human or demon beast, they all had a huge demand for it.

But not only did this Firethorn Savage not drink the Energy Spring Water, it was actually releasing its life-force essence. This didn't bring it anything good, it would just cause it a huge consumption.

Half an hour later, the Firethorn Savage opened its mouth and swallowed the Energy Spring Water that had merged with its life-force essence. After that, it jumped up into the skies and flew back to where it came from with great speed, causing some huge waves to appear in the pond.

“So it was this Energy Spring Water that was in its mouth yesterday.”

Big Yellow said.

“What else could it be?”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes.

“Kaka, there is so much Energy Spring Water here! Don't waste it, let I take it all away!”

Big Yellow was laughing and was filled with excitement.

“No way! If you take the Energy Spring Water, it will alert the Firethorn Savage. If I am not mistaken, the Firethorn Savage will come here again tomorrow. If it finds out the Energy Spring Water is gone, it will surely become enraged.”

Jiang Chen kept pulling Big Yellow back.

When they returned to their hiding spot, they saw the Firethorn Savage walking out from the cave once again. The Energy Spring Water in its mouth had disappeared, but the Energy Spring Water's energy ripples didn't exist in its body. It was the opposite, it actually looked tired after losing some of its life-force essence, and it soon lied back down onto the field and begun sleeping.

During the next two days, the Firethorn Savage repeated its routine. It flied to the pond around noon, got some Energy Spring Water, went into the cave, then went to sleep.

“This Firethorn Savage doesn't drink the Energy Spring Water itself, there must be something important in the cave that it cares so much about. We'll enter the cave tomorrow at noon.”

Jiang Chen made up his mind. After spending three days, he had finally figured out the Firethorn Savage's routing. It was obvious that there was something important that this Firethorn Savage cared extremely much about in the cave. Therefore, it might be the key point for Jiang Chen to deal with this Firethorn Savage.

Around noon, the next day. Just like before, the Firethorn Savage

went to the pond once again. After it left the place, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow instantly jumped up and went into the cave with lightning speed. They knew that it would take the Firethorn Savage half an hour before returning, so they had more than enough time.

The Firethorn Savage's cave was really huge, but simple. Right in the middle of the cave there was a small pond, and in the center of the pond there was a golden egg the size of a human head. The head was glowing in a golden light.

A golden aura was hovering around the golden egg, and there were countless golden symbols swirling around the egg. A rich sense of life-force was coming out from, and underneath the golden egg there was the Energy Spring Water that contained the Firethorn Savage's life-force essence.

“This is the Firethorn Savage's egg, its baby. No wonder the Firethorn Savage wanted to merge the Energy Spring Water with its life-force essence.”

Jiang Chen finally understood why this Firethorn Savage kept wasting its life-force essence.

Chapter 178 – Wicked Man & Dog Duo, Evil Plan

“There is a baby Firethorn Savage in this golden egg. The Firethorn Savage really put all its heart and soul into this, by providing the egg with the Energy Spring Water that was merged with its life-force essence every day, once the little Firethorn Savage comes out from the egg, it will be an abnormal monster for sure.”

Big Yellow said as he raised his eyebrows.

“You’re right, a little Firethorn Savage raised with Energy Spring Water and life-force essence will definitely become an existence that defies rules and orders. The adult Firethorn Savage really put its effort into this.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Buddy, this golden egg is a priceless treasure, it has absorbed so much Energy Spring Water and the adult Firethorn Savage’s life-force essence. This egg alone contains an enormous amount of the purest energy, and it also contains pure Yang energy. If you can absorb it, the benefits you get will be massive!”

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up. This golden egg was a rare treasure, and any cultivator who obtained it would be able to harvest a great yield from it. If Jiang Chen could absorb it, not only would his cultivation increase a lot and give him the possibility of breaking through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, he might even inherit

the Firethorn Savage's innate ability, killing two birds with one stone, and compensate for the loss of not absorbing the Firethorn Savage's demon soul.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Obviously, the temptation of absorbing the golden egg was huge. Just like Big Yellow had said, if he absorbed it, the benefits he would harvest would be massive.

Of course, although the temptation was huge, Jiang Chen didn't act recklessly.

"Big Yellow, we can't take this golden egg."

Jiang Chen said.

"Why?! We'll be punished by the heavens if we don't take something this good!"

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen with a gloomy face. Leaving such good stuff untouched was totally not Jiang Chen's style.

"If we take this golden egg, the Firethorn Savage will definitely go crazy. With its senses towards this golden egg, we won't be able to escape from its hunt. Besides, our goal this time is to kill the Firethorn Savage, we can't take this golden egg now, but, we can put it to good use. This is our only chance."

A grin appeared on Jiang Chen's face.

Big Yellow Dog suddenly realized what Jiang Chen mean, his ears stood up instantly and his dog eyes shots out two bright beams.

“Damn, buddy, you’re really an insidious man! You are trying to frame the Green Sanctuary Sect by using this golden egg.”

Big Yellow jumped up excitedly.

“Clever. We’ll take this golden egg away now, then we’ll give it toe Sect Elders as a token of apology.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Damn, what a crafty plan! Those old fools of the Green Sanctuary Sect has never seen this golden egg before, of course they won’t be able to tell that there is a baby Firethorn Savage within. They will definitely take it back to the sect thinking that it’s some rare treasure. When the Firethorn Savage comes back from the pond and find out that the egg is missing, it will surely become furious and attack the Green Sanctuary Sect. When that time comes, either the fish dies or the net splits, and then, you and I will reap the harvest! Kaka, buddy, you’re so crafty to come out with this evil plan, but I like it!”

Big Yellow was filled with extreme joy.

“Hehe, the Firethorn Savage and the Green Sanctuary Sect already has a tense relationship. If the Green Sanctuary Sect takes

away the Firethorn Savage's most important thing, it will definitely go crazy, and the already hostile relationship between them will never be resolved. At that point of time, the Green Sanctuary Sect will surely fight the Firethorn Savage with all their strength. We will be able to sit back and watch them fight. When the Firethorn Savage is seriously wounded, that's the time when we will strike and kill it. After that, we'll take its demon soul, and if we are lucky, we might even take the golden egg away as well."

Jiang Chen let out an evil laugh. A man and a dog looked at each other, one was laughing out loudly, and the other one had his mouth wide open.

"Despicable, this is really brilliant! Serves them right for offending us!"

Big Yellow kept praising Jiang Chen. The way he looked at Jiang Chen was filled with admiration and respect.

"Let's delay no more, the Firethorn Savage will be back in half an hour, we don't have much time left."

After saying that, Jiang Chen grabbed the golden egg and stored it in his storage ring. After that, they left the cave and flew towards the exit of Misty Mountain like lightning.

Right now, at the border of the third sector, three Sect Elders from the Green Sanctuary Sect were still waiting. All of them had dark expressions, especially the Mid Divine Core Sect Elder, Liu Hong.

“Sect Elder Liu, it has been four days, I’m afraid that young man has already become the Firethorn Savage’s poop. There is no point for us to keep waiting here.”

An Early Divine Core Sect Elder said.

“That’s right. How dare they enter the third sector, they are no match for the Firethorn Savage with their cultivation bases. I’m sure they’re dead by now.”

Another old man said.

“Let’s just wait until the training ends. If that young man still hasn’t come out, then there is no point for us to keep waiting.”

Liu Hong had an insidious expression as he spoke. Right after he finished his words, the trio immediately saw two figures quickly coming towards them from the third sector. In an instant, they arrived in front of these Sect Elders.

Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elder’s eyes lit up. The man and dog were the targets they had been waiting for.

Bang!

Almost an instant after they saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders immediately unleashed

powerful energy and sky-piercing killing intent. The two bastards in front of them had made them wait four days, and they had killed so many men from the Green Sanctuary Sect. They deserved a thousand deaths.

“I didn’t expect you would be so lucky as to not get yourselves killed by the Firethorn Savage. However, although the Firethorn Savage didn’t kill you, I will still do so myself. Let me teach you a lesson today, offending the Green Sanctuary Sect will cost you your life!”

Liu Hong’s killing intent was soaring high into the skies. The three Divine Core warriors had surrounded Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in a triangular formation, they didn’t want to let them escape.

“Don’t attack us!”

Jiang Chen hastily said.

“Why? Are you afraid now?”

Liu Hong sneered.

“Sect Elders, we and the Green Sanctuary Sect had no conflicts before this. I was being reckless when I killed the disciples and Sect Elders of the Green Sanctuary Sect, my apologies!”

Jiang Chen hold his fist toward these Sect Elders, when Big

Yellow Dog saw the sincere expression on Jiang Chen's face, he almost thrown out all his blood, this guy was really a crafty man, not only he was despicable, he was also good in acting.

“Haha, an apology? Are you nuts? So now you're afraid and want to apologize. If you knew this was coming, then you shouldn't have killed any men from the Green Sanctuary Sect! The score will have to be repaid with your life, I'll have your blood spilled today to protect the honor of the Green Sanctuary Sect!”

Liu Hong was laughing out heartily. The other two Sect Elders were sneering at the same time. In their minds, this young man was scared. He thought that Jiang Chen might have spent his last few days frightened, and when he wanted to escape, he realized the exits were sealed. He knew he couldn't escape at all, therefore, he came to them in order to apologize.

“Sect Elder Liu, don't listen to this guy's nonsense, let's just kill them now.”

Another old man said as he drew out a longsword about 1,5 meters in length. With a large killing intent, he had completely locked down Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. If they dared move a bit, he would strike without hesitation.

“Young man, face your death!”

Liu Hong shouted out loudly. His body was covered with waves of golden Yuan energy, and the grandeur of a Mid Divine Core warrior was completely unleashed. He was getting ready to kill

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in an instant.

“Please spare our lives, Sect Elder!”

Jiang Chen purposely changed his expression into a frightened one and begun begging.

“Haha, now you’re begging me! Too late, I’ll let you taste the abilities of a Mid Divine Core warrior! Remember, my name is Liu Hong, and in your next life, think carefully before offending someone!”

Liu Hong let out a pleasant laughter. Jiang Chen’s fear and begging had made him feel satisfied. The feeling of having an enemy trembling in front was marvelous.

“Sect Elder Liu Hong, please don’t kill me! I have a rare treasure with me, and to keep me alive, I’ll give it as a surrendering gift to the Green Sanctuary Sect! I just hope that Sect Elder can spare my life and allow me and my companion to leave Misty Mountain! From today onwards, me and the Green Sanctuary Sect will walk separate paths!”

Jiang Chen hastily spoke again. His face carried a panicked expression, and it looked like he was scared Liu Hong would kill him. At the same time, his expression made it seemed like he had just made an important decision, causing these people to believe that he really had a rare treasure.

“What? You have a rare treasure with you?”

Liu Hong asked with a surprised expression, and he immediately stopped his action. In his mind, this young man in front of him had nowhere to run, and there was no way he could escape from this place, so he was curious about what kind of rare treasure he had. If he couldn't show him, then he would kill him.

“That's right! Please take a look, Sect Elder!”

Jiang Chen flipped his hand and retrieved the golden egg from his storage ring. The golden egg with the size of a human head was glowing in layers of golden light.

When the golden egg was taken out, a pure and rich energy immediately flowed out from it, and a strong sense of life force and essence was emitted from the egg, which attracted the gazes of all three Sect Elders in an instant.

“What kind of treasure is this?! How come I've never seen it before? What powerful energy! Look, there are so many mystical symbols on it, it looks so miraculous!”

Liu Hong was shocked, he had no idea what this golden egg was, but as a Divine Core warrior, he was no idiot either. His judgment was far better than that of those ordinary cultivators, he could tell how extraordinary and precious the golden egg was.

“Young man, what is this treasure?”

Liu Hong asked.

“I’m lacking experience and am unable to tell what it is, but I obtained this treasure some weeks ago. By just absorbing a little bit of the energy that was leaking out from this egg, I was able to break through from the peak Mortal Core realm to the Heavenly Core realm. After that, I used this golden egg for another ten days, and I broke through to the Mid Heavenly Core realm, and my combat strength was increased by a few hundred times. That’s why I’m able to fight Early Divine Core warriors.”

Jiang Chen kept explaining without showing any signs of guilt. When Big Yellow heard his words, he couldn’t help but cough and rub his head onto the ground nonstop. He feared that he might burst out in laughter.

Damn!

Fuck, this guy really knows how to act, what a crafty man!

Chapter 179 – The Furious Firethorn Savage

As expected, after listening to Jiang Chen's words, Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders' expressions changed dramatically. The way they looked at the golden egg had become extremely passionate. They simply couldn't take their eyes away from it.

“This guy really has the ability to defeat Early Divine Core warrior, he killed an Early Divine Core warrior earlier. How could a young man like him be so strong? It looks like it was all because of this treasure!”

Liu Hong was extremely tempted. Four day ago, he had witnessed how Jiang Chen killed an Early Divine Core warrior. Also, Jiang Chen looked really young, only in his late teens, so if he didn't have any special encounters, he wouldn't be so strong. Therefore, the three of them had no doubt about what Jiang Chen told them.

“This treasure must have been produced by the wonderful nature! It might even be a legacy treasure from the ancient era! The energy contained within is so massive, this guy is really lucky! By just absorbing a little of its energy, he broke through to the Heavenly Core realm, and then ten days later, he broke through to the Mid Heavenly Core realm! This is a rare situation, it must be because of this treasure!”

Another Sect Elder thought in his mind.

“It's such a waste for this young man to possess this rare treasure! If I can absorb the energy within this egg, I will certainly

break through the bottle neck and reach the Mid Divine Core realm!”

Another old man couldn't take his passionate vision away from the golden egg.

“It really is a rare treasure! With this treasure, the overall strength of the Green Sanctuary Sect will increase, and at that time, we will be able to conquer the entire Qian Province!”

A pleasantly surprised expression filled Liu Hong's face.

All three old men were deeply attracted by the olden egg. Or, they had been tempted by Jiang Chen's words. The truth was, the Firethorn Savage's egg didn't have such great benefits. At most, it could be considered an object with a massive amount of energy. But after Jiang Chen had manipulated them, the golden egg had become something really extraordinary.

The thing was, a treasure that could help a person break through to the Mid Heavenly Core realm from the peak Mortal Core realm was rare. Also, these three men couldn't recognize the Firethorn Savage's golden egg, therefore they all believed Jiang Chen's words.

They never thought that this was an important thing for the Firethorn Savage. In their minds, no one dared touch anything that belonged to the Firethorn Savage. If this man and dog had the guts to do so, they would have died by now.

“This treasure is the breath of my life, but no matter how good the treasure is, it just can’t compare with my life. Now, I’ll present this as a token of apology to the Green Sanctuary Sect. I hope Sect Elder can spare my life. As for those disciples and Sect Elders that died, I can only say sorry, but there is no way for a dead man to walk again. Sigh... it was all my fault for behaving so recklessly.”

Jiang Chen bowed his head with sorrow and a bitter face. His apologetic expressed seemed extremely sincere.

“Hmph! Leave your treasure behind, and you’ll still have to face your death!”

Another old man let out a cold snort as he threatened Jiang Chen.

“I am sincere with my apology, I just want to walk away from here alive. If you three think I am not sincere enough, then never mind, I’ll just destroy this treasure in front of you all. After all, I won’t leave this treasure behind if I will die anyways.”

An insane expression emerged on Jiang Chen’s face, he was behaving desperately.

“Don’t!”

As expected, when Liu Hong heard Jiang Chen say he was going to destroy the golden egg, he immediately shouted out loudly and stopped him. If a rare treasure like this was destroyed, it would

make them feel really bad.

“Little brother, what is your name?”

Liu Hong's tone eased off a little, and at the same time, he retracted his energy and killing intent.

“Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist towards Liu Hong.

“Just like you said, there is no way for a dead man to walk again. Even if I kill you now, I still won't be able to revive them. Since you are so sincere with your apology, as long as you hand your treasure over to us, I'll let you go.”

Liu Hong said with a friendly expression. However, in his mind, he was sneering. He had decided to kill the duo in front of him once he got his hand on the treasure.

But what Liu Hong had in mind couldn't be hidden from Jiang Chen. But, Jiang Chen didn't care about it either. What he wanted to do now was make Liu Hong firmly believe that this golden egg was a rare treasure, and make him try his best to get it.

“How can I trust you?”

Jiang Chen purposely asked. He had to show his desire to live so

that these old fools wouldn't have any doubts about the golden egg.

“I'm a noble and trustworthy Sect Elder of the Green Sanctuary Sect, I'll guarantee your safety with my reputation.”

Liu Hong patted his chest and promised.

“Alright, I believe you.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen simply threw the golden egg towards Liu Hong.

Liu Hong extended his hand and grabbed onto the golden egg. When he felt the rich energy that was coming out from the egg, excitement immediately emerged on his face. He had no doubts about what Jiang Chen had told him.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, thank you for giving us such a priceless treasure! However, I still can't let you go!”

Liu Hong was laughing heartily as he stored the golden egg into his storage ring.

“Old dog, how could you go back on your words?!”

Jiang Chen pretended he was angry.

“I did say I wouldn’t kill you, but I never said I wouldn’t cripple you! None of those who have offended the Green Sanctuary Sect have received good endings! Today, I’ll personally cripple you, but I’ll spare your life. This is the greatest mercy I can show you.”

Liu Hong became treacherous and ruthless in the next second. He unleashed his energy and leapt towards Jiang Chen with his attack.

“Damn you! Old dog wants to kill I? No way!”

Jiang Chen cursed out loudly. With the same understanding, he and Big Yellow immediately turned around and sprinted into sector three, and they soon disappeared from their sights.

“Damn it, he escaped again.”

A Sect Elder exclaimed in dismay.

“Don’t chase him anymore, just let that guy run his own course. If he bumps into the Firethorn Savage, they will die anyways. Even if they can come out from there unharmed, I believe they won’t have the courage to challenge the Green Sanctuary Sect again.”

Liu Hong said with a prideful expression.

“Sect Elder Liu, what kind of treasure is that, can you recognize it?”

A Sect Elder asked.

“This is a rare treasure, I have never seen one before. However, I am sure it is an extraordinary treasure! There is no way for the three of us to possess this rare treasure alone, let’s bring it back to Sect Chief, maybe he can recognize what it is. By submitting this treasure, we can receive huge credit, and I’m sure he will reward us greatly! We will be able to enjoy this treasure together, or perhaps even break through with its help!”

Liu Hong was laughing out loud, by obtaining this priceless treasure had made him felt extremely happy, the gloomy feeling for the past few days had gone in an instant.

“Alright, we’ll do what Sect Elder Liu said.”

The other two old men looked excited. They could imagine how happy the Sect Chief would be when he saw this treasure.

“Release the signal, gather all inner and outer circle disciples, tell them their training has ended early, and everybody needs to return to the sect at once.”

Liu Hong said.

“Understood.”

Both old men cupped their fist towards Liu Hong. None of them dared show any neglect towards Liu Hong's words.

At the same time, within the third sector of Misty Mountain, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were rolling on the ground while laughing. Big Yellow was so excited that while rolling and crawling around, he kept smashing his hard head everywhere, creating holes in the ground.

“Crafty, really crafty! Buddy, you're the kind of all evil-minded men in the world, this is so wicked! Those three old dog were cheated by you, but it's so exciting! I don't think it'll take long before everyone in the Green Sanctuary Sect start crying for help!”

Big Yellow had complete admiration towards Jiang Chen now. He used to think he was a mean guy, but he never expected Jiang Chen to be even worse than him. This evil plot that he had set up would drag the Green Sanctuary Sect into a chaotic situation, and both of them could just sit back and relax while waiting to reap their harvest. It was a perfect plan!

“Only by doing this will we have the opportunity to defeat the Firethorn Savage. If we don't, I don't know when we'd get the Firethorn Savage's demon soul.”

Jiang Chen said as he laughed out heartily. He felt no guilt about framing the Green Sanctuary Sect. Since they were so determined to kill him, why would he need to show them mercy?

“Let's find a place to hide. We'll wait until the Firethorn Savage

becomes enrage, then we'll followed behind and watch the big show!"

Big Yellow was laughing with his mouth wide open. He was extremely excited because Jiang Chen had used the golden egg to frame the Green Sanctuary Sect.

After receiving orders from their Sect Elder, all inner and outer circle disciples left Misty Mountain with great speed, then they returned to the Green Sanctuary Sect in a short amount of time.

In the deepest area of the Green Sanctuary Sect there lays a magnificent palace. Four old men were gathered in the main hall. Three of them were Liu Hong and the other two Early Divine Core Sect Elders. The other man looked to be in his fifties. He had a bright and clean face, and he wore a green robe. He portrayed an image of grandeur, and his smooth face gave anyone an impression of dignity. The man's cultivation base was much stronger than Liu Hong's, he had reached the Late Divine Core realm, and he was no weaker than Daoist Black. He was the Sect Chief of the Green Sanctuary Sect, and his name was Qing Styx.

Right now, a golden egg was floating right in the middle of the four men.

"Sect Chief, can you recognize this treasure?"

Liu Hong asked. At the same time, he recited what Jiang Chen had told him to Qing Styx.

“I don’t recognize what it is. It contains a strong life-force essence within, and it looks like a demon beast’s egg. But, how can it possess such powerful energy?”

Qing Styx furrowed his brows. He was puzzled as well.

“You don’t know what this is? This is an extraordinary treasure!”

Liu Hong said.

“It is indeed an extraordinary treasure... but, why do I feel a familiar energy from this egg?”

Qing Styx furrowed his brows. He had never seen this golden egg before, but he could sense a familiar energy from it, and the feeling was really ridiculous.

Besides, this golden egg was indeed an extraordinary treasure, but Qing Styx had a bad feeling regardless. What exactly it was, he had no idea at the moment.

Within Misty Mountain, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were hiding in a quiet place while counting time.

“It’s been half an hour!”

Big Yellow’s ears stood up.

“The Firethorn Savage should return from the pond about now.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up at the same time.

Roar...!

Right after their words, they immediately heard a furious roar coming from the depths of Misty Mountain. The roar seemed to carry an emotion saying it wanted to tear everything apart. It was so furious that the entire Misty Mountain shook.

Roar... roar...

Following that, the roars didn’t seem to stop, and they were getting more violent each time. The furious roars had caused a tremendous storm to sweep across Misty Mountain.

Chapter 180 – The Green Sanctuary Sect

Wages War

Bang!

Followed by the continuous furious roars, the entire Misty Mountain entered a state of turmoil. Even from afar, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could see explosive golden energy waves from the center of Misty Mountain. The continuous furious roars were loud as thunder strikes, they were coming directly from the Firethorn Savage's fury.

“The Firethorn Savage has become extremely furious.”

Big Yellow was bouncing all over.

“Every dragon has a reverse scale, and those who touch it will get killed. The golden egg is the Firethorn Savage's reverse scale, and those who touches the golden egg will suffer from its fury. The Green Sanctuary Sect is going to be bustling with noise and excitement!”

Jiang Chen let out a grim laughter.

Bang!

Explosive sounds continuously sounded out like thunder strikes. The furious Firethorn Savage was running amok with its huge

body, countless flowers and plants were destroyed, and numerous demon beasts were fleeing for their lives. Some of them were even crawling on the ground with bodies seemingly trembling without any signs of stopping. The Firethorn Savage was the true king of Misty Mountain, and once the king was angry, every living being would tremble.

The anger was burning within the Firethorn Savage's heart, it had gone completely amok. Although it had a huge body, its speed wasn't slow. In the blink of an eye, it had flown out from sector three. Without making any stops, it continued flying towards the Green Sanctuary Sect.

“The Firethorn Savage has sensed the Golden Egg's energy, and it's now heading towards the Green Sanctuary Sect. Let's follow it and watching this great show!”

Jiang Chen laughed brightly with a huge grin on his face. He and Big Yellow immediately jumped up into the skies and followed the Firethorn Savage from afar.

Hundreds of miles away from Misty Mountain there was a mountain range with green hills and clear waters. On top of these hills there were splendid buildings, and the entire place was covered with a faded fog. This was the heart of the Green Sanctuary Sect.

The sky was clear, and the sunlight was shining brightly. Suddenly, a wild wind blew out of nowhere onto the peaceful Green Sanctuary Sect. It was like something big was going to happen. A sky-piercing demonic energy was quickly approaching,

and moments later, a huge and majestic demon lord appeared above the Green Sanctuary Sect. The demon lord's body was fully covered with golden scales, and it reflected beams of sunlight.

“Ah! It's the Firethorn Savage, the Firethorn Savage is going to attack us!”

“Heavens, it really is the Firethorn Savage! Hurry, inform the Sect Chief that the Firethorn Savage is here! Only Sect Chief can defend against this beast!”

The disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect entered a state of turmoil. The disciples who had just come back from their training in the Misty Mountain didn't even have the time to check out their loot. All of them were frightened and stunned when they saw the Firethorn Savage.

After the Green Sanctuary Sect had come to an agreement with the Firethorn Savage three years ago, there were no more conflicts between them. Even when they were fighting each other before the agreement, the Firethorn Savage had never come to attack the heart of the Green Sanctuary Sect.

Besides, the Firethorn Savage looked extremely furious right now. Obviously, it was not here for some chit chat.

“Roar!! You despicable humans, you should all perish in hell, damn it!”

The Firethorn Savage was speaking in human tongue, and his voice was as loud as a thunder strike. It sounded out throughout the skies above the Green Sanctuary Sect. In the next second, the Firethorn Savage opened up his mouth and spat out a golden fireball.

Bang! Ahhh! ...

The fireball collided with the Green Sanctuary Sect's front gate. The huge gate instantly exploded into ashes, and the fire spread all over the place. Some of the disciples who were hit by the fragment of the fireball immediately cried out in pain and died on the spot.

Swoosh!

At this moment, a Late Heavenly Core Sect flew up into the skies. While trembling, he arrived not too far away from the Firethorn Savage. He shouted out loudly, "Red Sol Beast, the Green Sanctuary Sect has an agreement with you, we will not fight with each other! Although he entered Misty Mountain, we have never gone beyond sector one, so what is your purpose for coming here to attack us today?"

"Die!"

The Firethorn Savage's heart was filled with flaming fury. What he wanted to do now was to kill anyone who got in his way. He opened his mouth and spat out a golden ray beam. The beam was like an invincible sharp beam, and it pierced through the old man in an instant. No Late Heavenly Core warrior could withstand a

single attack from the Firethorn Savage.

At this moment, the huge disturbance caused by the Firethorn Savage reached Qing Styx and Liu Hong.

“What? The Firethorn Savage? We never offended him, why would he suddenly come here and attack us?”

Liu Hong was startled.

“Let’s go check it out.”

Qing Styx’s face turned stern, and he instantly disappeared from the scene.

Many strong figures were coming from everywhere within the Green Sanctuary Sect. In just a short period of time, more than ten Divine Core warriors had appeared, and all of them were blocking the Firethorn Savage’s path. These Divine Core Sect Elders all had high positions in the sect, and it was very difficult to directly meet one of them. The arrival of the Firethorn Savage had made all these Sect Elders come out. From this, one could tell how much attention the Green Sanctuary Sect paid to this Firethorn Savage.

“Firethorn Savage, why did you suddenly attack us?”

Qing Styx shouted out loudly.

“Return my son to me!”

Firethorn Savage’s eyes turned red as he shouted with an extremely loud voice.

“What? How can your son be in my Green Sanctuary Sect? Besides, I have never heard that you had a son before, you’re just making trouble without any reason!”

Liu Hong shouted back. They had fought this Firethorn Savage countless times, but they had never seen any son before, and no one had ever seen a second Firethorn Savage in Misty Mountain either.

What they didn’t know was that the golden egg was produced by the Firethorn Savage after absorbing the natural energies. The golden egg contained the complete bloodline and life-force essence of the Firethorn Savage, of course it was his son.

The Firethorn Savage was a rare demon beast in this world, there was only a limited number of them. If an adult Firethorn Savage wanted to pass down its bloodline, this was the only way to do it, and the success rate was extremely low. This Firethorn Savage had put in a lot of effort for many years, and he had only produced one. And now, it was taken away by the Green Sanctuary Sect while he was away. This was so wicked.

“Roar!! Despicable humans! All of you shall face your death!”

The Firethorn Savage kept roaring furiously, he was extremely enraged. He could clearly sense that the golden egg was hidden within the Green Sanctuary Sect. These humans always liked to pretend that they had high morals, but they just took his golden egg, and were now denying having taken it. This was ridiculous.

The Firethorn Savage kept shooting fireballs everywhere within the Green Sanctuary Sect. It looked like he was going to completely destroy the sect.

Bang!

In just a short amount of time, sound of explosions were coming from everywhere, and flames leapt into the skies. Many disciples were trapped by the burning flames and died on the spot.

“What a ridiculous beast, how dare you wreak havoc in the Green Sanctuary Sect?!”

Qing Styx was mad. In the blink of an eye, he arrived not to far away from the Firethorn Savage. He used both his hands to draw something in the air, then he unleashed a huge barrier which pressed towards the Firethorn Savage.

Roar...

The Firethorn Savage kept roaring. His body seemed impervious to sword and spear. He unleashed a layer of golden light which covered his body, then he rammed towards Qing Styx.

Bang!

The thin air was almost ripped apart by their attacks. This was an intense fight of Divine Core warriors. The massive ripples from their fights could send chills down anyone's spine. There was no way for ordinary people to imagine how intense the fight could become.

Clop clop clop!

Qing Styx was forced back three steps, and his face carried a shocked expression.

“This beast is much stronger than it was three years ago, even I can barely hold it down!”

Qing Styx's expression changed, and he felt a powerful shock in his mind. The Firethorn Savage was a rare demon beast of this world, and they possessed powerful combat strength. Although this one was just a peak Mid Divine Core demon beast, only a Combat Soul warrior could kill it. Ordinary Late Divine Core warriors would find it difficult to deal with.

Above the skies, far away, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were leisurely sitting on a cloud. They were watching the fight in the Green Sanctuary Sect from far. From where they were sitting, they could clearly see everything that was happening in the Green Sanctuary Sect.

“This Firethorn Savage is indeed very strong. Buddy, luckily you were clever enough to come up with this idea! If you hadn’t, even with the combined attack of both of us, we would have been killed in an instant!”

Big Yellow had an excited look on his face.

“This is the result I wanted. Now, the Firethorn Savage is covered by the flames of fury, and those men from the Green Sanctuary Sect still have no idea what’s going on, kaka!”

Jiang Chen was laughing out loudly.

“Hehe, I think that old fool still thinks that the golden egg is your treasure! He will never be able to relate it to the Firethorn Savage! As long as they don’t hand over the golden egg, the Firethorn Savage won’t let this matter be resolved. Just let them fight, the more violent it becomes, the better! I hope both of them are seriously wounded, then we’ll have a chance to reap our harvest!”

A huge grin emerged on Big Yellow’s face. Jiang Chen’s idea was really marvelous. Of course, this was the only chance for them to obtain the Firethorn Savage’s demon soul.

Graaa!!

Firethorn Savage had become angrier and angrier, he hates these humans, in his mind, all of these humans shall be perished in hell,

until now they still didn't want to hand over his golden egg, if that was the case, there was not much to discuss anymore.

With a sway of his body, the Firethorn Savage unleashed some golden ray beams from his body. Each beam was like an indestructible sharp blade. At this point of time, the entire Green Sanctuary Sect was being showered with golden beams. This was a furious attack from the Firethorn Savage with no specific target. All the beams were shooting towards the tens of Divine Core Sect Elders in front of him.

“Everyone be careful, this beast is enraged!”

Qing Styx shouted out loudly. Even he himself didn't dare hesitate. In an instant, he unleashed all his energy and covered his body with bright energy. In his hand, a 3 meter long silver spear suddenly appeared.

This was a high-ranked combat weapon, and its quality was even better than Jiang Chen's Axe of Thunder. It was glowing brightly in Qing Styx's hand.

“Break away for me!”

Qing Styx shouted as he swept his spear. In an instant, countless spears appeared in the skies above the Green Sanctuary Sect. The spears weaved into a gigantic web, then it clashed with the Firethorn Savage's golden beams.

Bang!

The scene resembled countless lightning bolts striking endlessly at the same time above the skies. Gigantic colorful waves swept across the skies above the Green Sanctuary Sect; all these waves were destructive energy ripples. The Firethorn Savage who was covered in flames of fury had become incredibly powerful, the attack unleashed by him in this state was so strong that even Qing Styx who had counter attacked with his high-ranked combat weapon couldn't block the attack at all. Some of the bright beams passed through the web and shot towards the other Divine Core Sect Elders.

The expressions of the Sect Elders immediately changed. No one dared hesitate, and they all immediately took out their combat weapons. With the combined counter attack from all of them, they had finally managed to block all beams. Some of the weaker Sect Elders felt their qi and blood being circulated in a messy way, which made them feel really bad.

“Damn it, this beast has become much stronger than he was three years ago, and he is now in a frenzied state. It will be hard for us to defend!”

Liu Hong couldn't help but curse at the situation. He still had no idea that what happened today was all because of him, he was the one who brought chaos to the Green Sanctuary Sect, and he was still in the dark.

Chapter 181 – The Gargantuan Formation

Bang!

Energy waves swept across the skies. All places near the Green Sanctuary Sect were filled with ripples from the fight, and a colorful energy cloud had covered the sky. Beneath the cloud, there were some black energy waves hovering around. It had blocked the sunlight and immersed the entire Green Sanctuary Sect in absolute darkness. Everyone felt heavy in the mind.

The entire Green Sanctuary Sect was shaking. All the Divine Core warriors were continuously striking with their combat weapons as they fought the Firethorn Savage in a tough battle. It seemed like the war was not about to end any time soon.

Everyone from the Green Sanctuary Sect felt slightly depressed, including Sect Chief Qing Styx. No one knew why this Firethorn Savage was so angry. They had been living in peace for three years, and not once had something like this happened. Although there had been some minor conflicts throughout the years, not once has this Firethorn Savage become so violently angry.

What was more depressing is that this Firethorn Savage actually came here looking for his son. Wasn't this the same as bullying someone innocent? When did the Green Sanctuary Sect come close to the Firethorn Savage's son? This was insane!

Just as the Green Sanctuary Sect was suffering from the fury of the Firethorn Savage, on a cloud far away, a man and a dog were

bouncing up and down excitedly. They looked extremely happy right now.

The man and the dog were none other than the culprits of this incident. Jiang Chen had brought chaos to the Green Sanctuary with just a golden egg.

“Entertaining, this is so entertaining! Buddy, you are really mean! Thanks to you, the Green Sanctuary Sect is in chaos now! They deserve it though, who let this damned sect offend us?!” Big Yellow was laughing out heartily while his saliva dripped all over.

Watching the intense fight between the Firethorn Savage and the Green Sanctuary Sect had made him; the real culprit, feel excited.

“Fight! Keep fighting! The best possible scenario is if both of them are seriously wounded! If they don’t fight, how are we going to reap the spoils of their war?” Jiang Chen’s face carried a cruel smile.

“This Firethorn Savage is really strong, he alone can fight the entire sect, and the strength of his bloodline is really extraordinary! But still, it’s no match for my Divine Beast bloodline!” Big Yellow said.

He wasn’t bluffing, the Firethorn Savage was a rare demon beast, and that’s why the strength of its bloodline was so extraordinary. If it wasn’t for its strong bloodline, there would be no way for it to have such powerful combat strength. Of course, no matter how strong a demon beast was, it still couldn’t compare with a Divine

Beast. The difference between a Firethorn Savage and a Dragon Horse was not small.

If Big Yellow's cultivation base was at the peak Mid Divine Core realm, a man like Qing Styx or Daoist Black would not be Big Yellow's match. He might even kill them in an instant.

“That's the reason why we need to use this Green Sanctuary Sect to fight with the Firethorn Savage. With our current strength, killing the Firethorn Savage and obtaining his demon soul is just impossible.” Jiang Chen sat back on the cloud and spoke with an indifferent voice.

The man and dog were both in good moods and seemed relaxed. They were chit chatting leisurely while watching the great show that was happening in the Green Sanctuary Sect.

Buzz...

Above the skies of the Green Sanctuary Sect, Qing Styx's green rope was fluttering in the winds. He kept unleashing spear shadows with the combat weapon in his hand, causing the air to continuously vibrate. Carrying the spear with a single hand, Qing Styx sprinted towards the Firethorn Savage and fiercely attacked. At the same time, all the other Divine Core Sect Elders had grouped together and were attacking the Firethorn Savage from another direction.

Roar~

The Firethorn Savage's flames of fury were rising. His massive body was violently shaking, and metal clanging sounds could be heard coming from his body. He had finally unleashed his innate ability. In an instant, his body was covered with sharp golden spikes.

Each spike had the diameter of a water bucket. They looked extremely sharp and unbreakable.

Under the bright sunlight, all the sharp spikes blossomed with radiance. The Firethorn Savage's huge body was like a hill that kept shaking violently above the skies. Then, like an ancient demon beast, he dashed towards Qing Styx's spear with extreme speed.

Clang!

A large amount of sparks emerged when Daoist Styx attacked the Firethorn Savage's body. The powerful high-ranked combat weapon could only leave a white mark on his body, and it couldn't even cause any wounds.

"What?!" Qing Styx shouted out in disbelief. He couldn't believe that the Firethorn Savage's innate ability could be so strong. Not only could those spikes be used to attack, they also gave the Firethorn Savage a solid defense. It was like a strong armor that could block any attacks from the enemies.

"What a mighty innate ability!" Jiang Chen's eyes widened as he watched from afar. The Firethorn Savage's innate ability was

really frightening; it allowed one to both attack and defend at the same time.

“Buddy, you’re tempted now, right? I know you are cultivating some epic skill which allows you to absorb the innate abilities of demon beasts, but do not touch the Firethorn Savage’s demon soul! If we can get that golden egg, you might be able to inherit the Firethorn Savage’s innate ability from it.” Big Yellow knew Jiang Chen very well. He could tell what Jiang Chen was thinking just from his expression.

Jiang Chen nodded his head, but he didn’t comment on what Big Yellow said. He was really tempted by this powerful innate ability. If he wasn’t cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, he wouldn’t even be thinking about having an innate ability. But, since he had the ability to absorb any innate ability, it simply made him drool.

All of Jiang Chen’s current abilities were in the attack category, with the exception of the Dimensional Shift skill which was a speed skill. What he lacked now was a defensive skill. Although he had cultivated some defensive skills in his past life, the defensive stats those skills gave him were even weaker than his current body, and was far weaker than the Firethorn Savage’s body. Therefore, Jiang Chen was really tempted to inherit this ability.

Bang!

The Firethorn Savage erupted, countless gigantic golden waves shot out from his body and swept across the entire place. Under the massive impact of these gigantic waves, the Divine Core Sect

Elders who were piercing towards him became like tiny boats in a raging storm, and they were immediately sent flying far away.

Roar!

The Firethorn Savage had become extremely brutal. He had sensed the energy of the golden egg, it was right in the Green Sanctuary Sect, and it was hiding with Qing Styx.

Bang!

Once again, countless gigantic golden waves were unleashed from the Firethorn Savage's body. All the golden waves turned into energy ray beams and shot down towards the Green Sanctuary Sect.

It seemed like the Firethorn Savage was an energy fountain that possessed an endless amount of energy that would never deplete.

Bang!

Ahh!

When the Firethorn Savage's attacks fell within the Green Sanctuary Sect, a few hills were shattered in an instant, and numerous buildings were destroyed. Some unfortunate disciples were too slow at dodging the attack, and were instantly turned into ashes.

Bang!

The Firethorn Savage had become crazy, there was only a single thought in his mind right now, and that was to kill all humans in the Green Sanctuary Sect. Frightening attacks rained down from the skies, golden energy beams, gigantic fireballs, all of it brought devastation to the Green Sanctuary Sect.

“Sect Chief, this beast is too ferocious, we can’t defeat it even with the combination of all our strength! If this carries on, we are going to suffer some huge losses!” A Sect Elder shouted towards Qing Styx with a pale face.

“Firethorn Savage, stop right now!” Qing Styx shouted out loudly, “Firethorn Savage, the Green Sanctuary Sect has never offended you! We were living in peace in peace for the past three years, why did you suddenly attack us?”

“Return my son!” The Firethorn Savage shouted with a thunderous voice as he stared angrily at Qing Styx.

“Damn it, what son do you want?! There is no young Firethorn Savage in the Green Sanctuary Sect! We do have a few bears here... don’t tell me your son is a bear?” Liu Hong was so pissed he felt like throwing up some blood.

“Firethorn Savage, you better not look for trouble where there is none! Since when did you have a son?” Qing Styx said as he felt a slight depression because of the situation.

“Damn humans, you have stolen what’s mine, and yet you still twist words and force logic! Damn it, all of you shall die, I’m going to ruin this place today!” Firethorn Savage’s flames of fury kept rising. In his mind, the Sect Chief in front of him had stolen his son, and was still pretending to have done nothing. He was just courting death.

Roar!!

Firethorn Savage roared out loudly once again. He continued spitting fireballs out from his mouth and shooting out golden ray beams from his hard armor, once against sending a storm of attacks towards the Green Sanctuary Sect.

The battle had become even more violent. The real culprits were leisurely sitting on a cloud, watching. If Liu Hong realized he had been framed, he might throw up all his blood.

“Activate the Gargantuan Formation!” Qing Styx became extremely angry right now. If this situation continued, the Green Sanctuary Sect would suffer massive losses. Judging from how Firethorn Savage behaved, there was no way he would let this matter be resolved easily.

“Understood, activating the Gargantuan Formation now!”

A few of the Sect Elders were shocked. After that, all the Divine Core Sect Elders began flying towards different directions.

Buzz...

Buzzing sounds could be heard with seemingly no end. A gigantic blue curtain of light appeared above the skies of the entire Green Sanctuary Sect.

There were countless mystical and complicated symbols on the curtain of light. It covered every single disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect. Dozens of Divine Core Sect Elders were standing in different locations on the curtain of light, and Qing Styx stood right in the center of this curtain of light with a spear in his hand.

“So this is the Green Sanctuary Sect’s defensive formation, it looks powerful!” Big Yellow’s eyes lit up.

“The Gargantuan Formation is just an ordinary formation, and it only has one minor weakness. However, if it was unleashed by a dozen Divine Core warriors, it could be considered a perfect formation. Look here, Big Yellow, this Gargantuan Formation has activated fifteen cores, and each core is handled by a Divine Core Sect Elder, and Qing Styx is standing in the center. With this, the defensive strength of this formation can be maximized, and there will be no weaknesses. What’s most important here is that all combat strength of the 15 Divine Core Sect Elders will be transferred to Qing Styx, and that will make his combat strength increase exponentially. It will be extremely hard for Firethorn Savage to deal with him now.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were glowing brightly. As the once greatest

Saint in the world, he was well verse with all types of formations. The secret of the Gargantuan Formation in front of him was nothing.

“Buddy, are you really a human? Why do I have a feeling that you are a cunning old fox who has lived for thousands of years? Why does it seem like you know everything?” Big Yellow said as he rolled his eyes.

Jiang Chen smiled and didn’t say a thing. He just kept staring at the Green Sanctuary Sect.

“Do you think Firethorn Savage can break this formation?” Big Yellow asked.

“Qing Styx is gathering the combat strength of all Divine Core warriors within him, of course Firethorn Savage won’t be able to withstand his attack. However, Firethorn Savage won’t give up on retrieving his golden egg. Therefore, he will counter with even more brutal and violent attack, probably some extreme measures. Soon, the ending where both sides are severely wounded will come, haha!” Jiang Chen laughed out heartily.

“Kakaka... so mean, so fierce, so crafty, I like it!” Big Yellow was laughing so much that even his fur was trembling.

Chapter 182 – The Cause Is Here

All the Green Sanctuary Sect disciples stood underneath the Gargantuan Formation with pale faces and terrified expressions as they stared at the skies above them which looked like a scene resembling doomsday. They were so frightened that even their souls were trembling

This was too frightening. They were all used to being arrogant and looking down upon everyone else, they were proud to be disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect. However, when up against a formidable being like Firethorn Savage, none of them had any chance to strike. They were just too weak against the powerful Firethorn Savage, they were like a group of ants who could only hide underneath the Gargantuan Formation's protection. If they didn't hide, just an energy ripple unintentionally unleashed from Firethorn Savage would be enough to kill them.

“Firethorn Savage is terrifying! He is much stronger now that he was three years ago, even the Sect Chief isn't his match!”

“Firethorn Savage has never become so angry before, why is he here today asking for his son? This is ridiculous, since when did this Firethorn Savage have a son?! I have never seen any young Firethorn Savage in the Green Sanctuary Sect, isn't he here to cause trouble without reason?”

“I don't think that Firethorn Savage's fury is fake though. Why would he want to attack us without any reason with such raging fury? I can't really think of a reason.

“The Sect Chief has activated the Gargantuan Formation! I heard it is the sect’s defensive formation, and it’s controlled by more than 10 Divine Core warriors! It allows them to channel all their energy to the Sect Chief. With this, I’m sure Firethorn Savage will soon be defeated.”

“That’s right! I also heard that if the Gargantuan Formation is fully activated, every single disciple will be able to channel their energy together! It is really massive!”

.....

The activation of the Gargantuan Formation had calmed these disciples who were panicking about the attack down. As disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect, they all knew certain things about the Gargantuan Formation. It was used as a sect’s defensive formation for a reason, it really possessed some unique and powerful features. Therefore, these disciples believed it could defeat Firethorn Savage without many problems.

“Firethorn Savage, you still don’t want to retreat? If you keep causing trouble, I’ll have to teach you a lesson!”

Qing Styx shouted towards Firethorn Savage. Although they had activated the Gargantuan Formation, he still didn’t want to make things any worse. He knew very well how strong Firethorn Savage was, his sect had even suffered massive damage today. However, as long as Firethorn Savage retreats, Qing Styx won’t fight until one of them perishes.

Roar...

However, Firethorn Savage simply ignored Qing Styx's demand. He opened his mouth and spat out a few huge fireballs towards the formation.

Bang!

The fireballs collided with the Gargantuan Formation, causing it to violently shake. The curtain was covered with countless symbols, and with a seemingly indestructible defense, it managed to block the fireballs. The strike couldn't break the Gargantuan Formation's defense.

"Give me back my son!"

The furious Firethorn Savage had only one goal, and that was to retrieve his son. He also wanted to destroy the sect underneath his feet.

A golden flame emerged from Firethorn Savage and covered his body. The huge body looked like a flaming mountain as it rammed towards Qing Styx in a seemingly invincible manner.

"You're seeking death!"

A wicked look emerged on Qing Styx's face. An unending buzzing sound was produced by the spear in his hand. All 15 Divine Core Sect Elders kept channeling their energy into the Gargantuan

Energy, which then passed into Qing Styx's body, causing his combat strength to rise to a new level.

The energy provided by a synergetic effect, when all the energy of 15 Divine Core warriors was channeled into a single person, that person would be able to possess combat strength much greater than the combined attack of all 15 Divine Core Sect Elders.

A shrill noise sounded out from the spear. After that, with a leap, Qing Styx jumped into the skies towards Firethorn Savage. He struck his spear with huge momentum towards Firethorn Savage's abdomen.

Clang! Pop!

This time, the power of the spear was way stronger than before. It penetrated Firethorn Savage's solid golden armor. The spearhead even went deep into Firethorn Savage's body.

Golden colored blood flowed out from Firethorn Savage's wound. It was shining brightly as it dripped onto the Gargantuan Formation, then it disappeared in an instant.

Hmph!

Qing Styx let out a cold snort. With a shake of his spear, the huge Firethorn Savage was thrown far away. Qing Styx who had merged the energy of all 15 Divine Core Sect Elders now possessed combat strength greater than Firethorn Savage's combat strength.

Above the clouds, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were still watching the show. Jiang Chen still had a calm expression on his face. As the once greatest Saint in the world, he knew far too well what kind of foundation a big sect had. Let alone those super massive sects in the Divine Continent, even this Green Sanctuary Sect could be used as an example.

A big sect did not only benefit from being created at a perfect timing in a favorable location, it also had powerful treasures that could support a powerful formation. Just like what was happening right now, if the sect was without the Gargantuan Formation's help, the Green Sanctuary Sect would most likely have been turned into ruins by Firethorn Savage. However, because they had the Gargantuan Formation, they were able to turn the tables.

This was the foundation of a big sect, and also the reason why a big sect could remain in power for many years in a territory. If the Gargantuan Formation was fully activated, it would be able to channel the energy of every single person in the Green Sanctuary Sect into just one person. This included the inner and outer circle disciples as well.

Therefore, no matter who wanted to topple a big sect, it would be something extremely difficult to accomplish.

“Firethorn Savage is wounded, is he finished?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Don’t worry, this kind of minor injury is nothing for Firethorn Savage. Rather, it will ignite his true fury and brutality, which will cause him to counterattack with an even more devastating attack. The battle is far from finished.”

An upward curved appeared on Jiang Chen’s lip.

“Haha, look, Firethorn Savage is wounded!”

“The Gargantuan Formation is really powerful! Firethorn Savage isn’t Sect Chief’s match anymore!”

“Look, it looks like the injured Firethorn Savage is transforming!”

.....

When the excited disciples saw Firethorn Savage’s transformation, all their expressions changed once again.

Roar!

A furious roar sounded out throughout the place. Firethorn Savage didn’t bother checking on his bleeding wound. It was as if his blood was of little value to him.

Firethorn Savage had gone completely crazy. His massive body was rolling around in the skies. He raised his head up proudly and

let out a long cry. Both his eyes had become completely red, and no other colors could be found within his eyes.

Not only that, the golden flames covering his body had slowly changed into a blood red color. With all of this, Firethorn Savage's energy was also rising continuously. In just a short moment, it had doubled.

“Damn it, what kind of skill is this beast using, how could it be so powerful?!”

Liu Hong couldn't help but curse.

Above the clouds far away, the eyes of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow lit up. They knew why and how Firethorn Savage was transforming.

“Perfect, mission accomplished!”

Jiang Chen couldn't hold his excitement.

“That's right, when the Sect Chief wounded Firethorn Savage with his spear, it completely ignited Firethorn Savage's fierceness and causing him to start burning his life-force in exchange for an increase in combat strength! He's using his life in exchange for a surge of energy so he can retrieve the golden egg. After doing so, Firethorn Savage will become weak for a period of time, and that time is when we strike!”

Big Yellow said. He had an Jiang Chen both had excellent judgment, they could easily tell what was going on with Firethorn Savage with just one look. Although he looked invincible now, that combat strength was only temporary. Once he became weak, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow would be able to kill him.

Roar!

The invincible Firethorn Savage's flames of fury soared up into the skies. With both eyes completely red, he once again forcefully leapt towards Qing Styx.

“Why is this bastard burning his life-force?! What is the reason for this struggle? Is it really true that his son is in the Green Sanctuary Sect?”

Qing Styx frowned. Up until now, he was still puzzled why Firethorn Savage did this. If it was just because of nothing, then there was no need for Firethorn Savage to burn his life-force at all.

He didn't have enough time to think any further as Firethorn Savage's attack was coming towards him with great speed. Qing Styx let out a furious shout, then he turned the spear in his hand into a dragon which clashed with Firethorn Savage's attack.

Bang!

The ear-splitting sound shook the entire Gargantuan Formation, and many disciples who stood underneath lost their hearing in an

instant. Firethorn Savage's combat strength had more than doubled, and Qing Styx who had activated the Gargantuan Formation couldn't even withstand a single attack.

The collision had sent Qing Styx flying a large distance.

Puh!

Qing Styx opened his mouth and puke out a mouthful of blood. The blood fell onto the Gargantuan Formation, and with a sparkling bright light, it disappeared. Qing Styx's face had turned pale, his qi and blood was being circulated in a messy way which made him feel nauseous. The collision had seriously injured him.

Qing Styx looked at his palm and found out that the part between his thumb and forefinger had been torn apart, and blood was flowing out from the wound.

Plop!

Firethorn Beast stamped his muscular foot onto the Gargantuan Formation, cause it to shake violently, many parts of the formation had starting to crack, it looked like going to shattered soon.

Roar!

The furious Firethorn Savage was desperately attacking. Right at this point of time, everyone in the Green Sanctuary Sect had pale faces. None of them knew why Firethorn Savage had become so

angry, and they were guessing whether or not Firethorn Savage's son really was in the Green Sanctuary Sect.

Right as Firethorn Savage was going to attack the formation, Qing Styx's expression changed, and he suddenly thought about the golden egg.

“Golden egg, it must be that golden egg! No wonder I could sense a familiar energy from it! It was the energy of a Firethorn Savage! That's right, the egg contained a powerful life-force energy, Firethorn Savage's son is inside that egg!”

When thinking about this, Qing Styx threw up another mouthful of blood once again. However, this time it was because of anger. In fact, when he saw the golden egg for the first time, he had sensed a familiar energy from it. But, since it had been three years since he last met Firethorn Savage, as well as the fact that the golden egg was brought back by Liu Hong and that he had received it from a young man as a token of apologies, he hadn't related it with Firethorn Savage.

“Firethorn Savage, stop your attack now! Is this what you're looking for?!”

Qing Styx hurriedly shouted. He couldn't let Firethorn Savage continue his attack anymore. In an instant, he retrieved the golden egg from his storage ring.

When the furious Firethorn Savage saw the golden egg, he immediately stopped his attack. The redness in his eyes slowly

faded away, and the fierce energy calmed down.

Chapter 183 – The Praying Mantis Stalks The Cicada, Unaware Of The Oriole Behind

“Despicable human, how dare you steal my son?! And you even denied it just now!”

Firethorn Savage had finally stopped his attack. He stared at the golden egg held by Qing Styx with a gentle expression on his face.

Hearing what Firethorn Savage said, Qing Styx once again threw up a mouthful of blood. He was extremely mad right now. In an instant, he turned around and stared at Liu Hong and the other two Early Divine Core Sect Elders, and a fury erupted within his heart.

These three useless fools, how dare they bring back a baby Firethorn Savage?! They were framed, but they were still so happy. Now, they had brought a terrible disaster to the Green Sanctuary Sect.

“What? This rare treasure was a baby Firethorn Savage?! I thought that guy said he got it much earlier and had used it to cultivate?”

Liu Hong was stunned, but soon after, he finally understood what had happened, and his face turned dark. He was trembling because of the extreme anger.

“So this rare treasure was actually a baby Firethorn Savage?!”

That bastard, how dare he cheat I?! Ahh... I'm so pissed off, I'm really pissed off!"

Liu Hong beat his chest and stamped his feet, he almost hurt himself due to the extreme anger. If Jiang Chen jumped in front of him now, Liu Hong would definitely tear him into pieces.

The two other old men who were with Liu Hong felt a bitter taste on their tongues as well. The angry gaze from Qing Styx made them feel ashamed. They never thought that the terrible disaster today was brought by them. This made them feel really bad.

Kakaka...

At the same time, laughing that seemed to never stop could be heard above the clouds. Big Yellow was rolling around laughing out loudly while kicking his legs in mid-air. Jiang Chen was also laughing his head off. The scene really eased their anger, especially when they recalled the scene where Liu Hong looked extremely excited after he got the golden egg and linked it to the scene they saw just now. It was hilarious.

"I guess this old fool's lungs are going to explode due to anger, he must be thinking about eating you alive right now!"

Big Yellow was trembling with laughter. Being able to set up a trap and fool a big sect to such a stage, it was more enjoyable than striking and attacking himself.

“Haha, even after Firethorn Savage retreats, Liu Hong and the other two old fools won’t have any good days to come. The Sect Chief will definitely put all the blame on those three!”

Jiang Chen was laughing with satisfaction. Both man and dog were rolling around with excitement. On the other side however, the intense atmosphere was still covering the entire Green Sanctuary Sect.

“How did this happen? Where did that golden egg come from, why is it Firethorn Savage’s baby?”

“In the end, the son of Firethorn Savage was really hiding here, is this a joke? No wonder Firethorn Savage was so angry and didn’t want to give up!”

“Damn it, how dare they take away something so important from Firethorn Savage?! Don’t they know that it would bring them a devastating disaster? Normally, the Sect Chief wouldn’t leave the Green Sanctuary Sect, so I don’t think he is the one who took the golden egg away... However, I wonder who the one who gave him that egg is, he deserves death!”

.....

All the disciples were yelling and shouting. The terrible disaster was all because of that golden egg. Not only did it cause the entire outer circle area to be destroyed, it had also caused the death of many disciples.

“Roar! All of you are too despicable! I’m going to destroy this place today!”

Firethorn Savage was still angry, and did not wanted to let this matter be resolved easily. In his mind, the Green Sanctuary Sect was too despicable. Three years ago, they had come to an agreement where they wouldn’t fight amongst each other any longer. But now, the snuck into his cave and stole his most precious thing. Such treacherous behavior, he was unable to bear it.

“Firethorn Savage, we are not the ones who took your child, it was stolen by a young man! This guy killed a few of our Sect Elders and disciples, then he used this egg as a token of apology to us! That young man is the real culprit behind all this, the Green Sanctuary Sect has no intention of breaking the agreement between us!”

Qing Styx explained

“What a lame excuse!”

Firethorn Savage became furious once again. He felt that this old fool’s explanation was too ridiculous. How could he used a bullshit young man story? This was just an insult to his intellect! Besides, what young man had the abilities that allowed him to have the guts to steal the golden egg from his cave, wasn’t this just bullshit?

The energy surge brought by the burning of his life-force was still there. If he struck out of fury now, he could still cause devastating damage to the Green Sanctuary Sect.

“Stop!”

Qing Styx shouted out loudly. He knew Firethorn Savage wouldn’t believe his explanation anymore.

“Firethorn Savage, I’ll return your son now. After that, please leave at once. If you still don’t want to give up, and want to keep attacking us, then I’ll crack this golden egg now. Worst case scenario, both of us will suffer great losses. Also, I don’t think the energy surge that came from you burning your life-force will last for long. And I haven’t fully activated the Gargantuan Formation yet, if I fully activate it, I’ll be able to merge with the thousands of disciples’ energy. Do you have the confidence to defeat me?”

Qing Styx went straight to the point.

Hearing this, the furious Firethorn Savage instantly calmed down. After noticing that his child was unharmed, he calmed down a bit and finally regained consciousness. He knew that Qing Styx's words were correct. If they fought till there was only one man standing, no one would gain any advantages. The most important thing was that the golden egg was still with them.

Firethorn Savage didn't say a word, and he remained calm. It made everyone from the Green Sanctuary Sect feel nervous, because Firethorn Savage's decision would determine whether or not a violent battle was going to break out.

Qing Styx felt nervous as well. Although he could deal with Firethorn Savage with help of the Gargantuan Formation, he didn't want to place the Green Sanctuary Sect's destiny on a betting table. Who knew if Firethorn Savage had any more fierce and powerful attacks? A real life and death battle erupting was not something fun. Even if they managed to kill Firethorn Savage, in the end, the overall strength of the Green Sanctuary Sect would be reduced significantly. At that time, the big sects of the Qian Province would take advantage of the opportunity and attack them, and the Green Sanctuary Sect will be completely removed from the Qian Province.

A moment later, Firethorn Savage finally spoke, "Give me back my child."

Firethorn Savage's words had surprised Qing Styx. Without any hesitation, he immediately threw the golden egg over. Firethorn Savage opened up his big mouth and placed the egg within, and a

loving expression emerged on his face.

After that, Firethorn Savage turned his huge body around and retreated towards Misty Mountain. Before he left, he said, “From today onwards, no man from the Green Sanctuary Sect shall be allowed access into Misty Mountain. If you do enter, you’ll have to bear the consequences.”

After saying that, Firethorn Savage disappeared from the scene.

Qing Styx had expected this. After a tough battle with Firethorn Savage, there was no way he would allowed the Green Sanctuary Sect to use his mountain as their training ground.

Qing Styx deactivated the Gargantuan Formation. With a dark face, he stared at the Divine Core Sect Elders, then he spoke with a stern voice, “All of you, follow me.”

Qing Styx flew towards the Green Sanctuary Sect’s inner area, and all other Sect Elders followed behind closely. Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders looked at each other, all of them carried awful expressions. They were prepared to received Qing Styx’s fury.

At the same time, above the clouds far away.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had been waiting for this moment. When they saw Firethorn Savage leaving the place, both of them looked at each other with a smile on their face.

“The praying mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind. It’s time for the oriole to reap all benefits, let’s go!”

Jiang Chen’s body swayed, then he started flying towards Misty Mountain.

“Don’t go so fast, the weakened state of Firethorn Savage is not here yet. Let’s wait until he completely enters his weakened state, that’s when we’ll strike.”

Big Yellow reminded.

“Alright, let’s count the time carefully. Once the weakened state arrives, we’ll strike at once. The Green Sanctuary Sect’s Sect Chief is a wise man, he should know about Firethorn Savage entering his weakened state soon. Now, Firethorn Savage has warned them not to enter Misty Mountain anymore, and this is a great loss for them. If my guess is correct, the Sect Chief will also strike when Firethorn Savage temporarily becomes weak. This is the only chance for him to kill Firethorn Savage, and I’m sure Qing Styx won’t let it go.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Buddy, you’re a really smart fellow! Nothing can hide from you!”

Big Yellow really admired Jiang Chen. What happened since they

came to Misty Mountain had all gone according to Jiang Chen's plan. His ability to carefully plot a plan and execute it perfectly was nothing something ordinary people had.

Within the deepest area of the Green Sanctuary Sect, in the main hall of a magnificent palace, two huge pillars stood firmly. Golden colored dragons that looked real coiled around the pillars, the floor of this main hall was made with a unique silvery white rock, and mystical symbols could be seen everywhere.

Qing Styx was standing right in front with a pale face. He was wounded during his fight with Firethorn Savage, but compared to his anger right now, these injuries were nothing.

“You three, kneel down!”

Qing Styx cast his razor sharp vision onto Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders.

The trio felt a chill in the spines; they immediately knelt down.

“Sect Chief, we were fooled by that young man, Jiang Chen! We had no idea that the golden egg contained Firethorn Savage's child!”

Liu Hong tried to explain.

“What?! You are the one who brought back the golden egg? Liu Hong, are you an idiot? Look at the disaster you brought upon us!

Firethorn Savage became furious, and he won't allow us to enter Misty Mountain! Just with this alone, will you be able to take the responsibility?"

"You have really become old, how could you be fooled by a young man?"

"This is ridiculous! If it wasn't for the Sect Chief remembering the golden egg in the most crucial moment, I'm sure the Green Sanctuary Sect would face a truly devastating disaster today! Can you three really bear the responsibility for that?!"

Hearing that the golden egg was brought back by Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders, all other Divine Core Sect Elders became mad. Every single one of them pointed their fingers at Li Hong and the other two Sect Elders and scolded. If it was another situation, they wouldn't behave rudely like this. Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders were after all Divine Core warriors, they had high virtues and glorious reputations within the sect. These Sect Elders would still respect each other no matter what.

But today's situation was completely different. Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders had almost caused the Green Sanctuary Sect to be removed from the Qian Province. All of them had witnessed how strong Firethorn Savage was, and if it wasn't for the Gargantuan Formation, many of them would have been killed today by Firethorn Savage.

All of this happened because this trio of old fools were cheated by a young man and a dog, this was ridiculous.

All Sect Elders were so furious that they could devour anyone with their vision. In any case, these three old men had been living for decades, and they had vast experiences. It was fine for them to make wrong calls, but with their age, they were still fooled by a young man in his late teens and a dog. Damn it, how could they still have the dignity to live on?

Chapter 184 – Powerful Cooperation

Facing the angry looks of despise, Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders' faces turned purple. If a crack appeared on the floor right in front of them, they would jump in without any hesitation.

This was too humiliating, it was so shameful that they wanted to commit suicide.

After living for so long, they ended up being fooled by a young man and a dog in such a horrible manner. This incident was an insult that could definitely never be forgotten by the three of them. From now on, these three men had lost all their face in the Green Sanctuary Sect.

“Sect Chief, please punish me, I am the one who brought Firethorn Savage here, it had nothing to do with those two.”

Liu Hong gnashed his teeth as he spoke. At this critical point, he was still able to shoulder all of the responsibility. This had given the other two old men a really noble impression of him.

“Sect Chief, when that young man took out the golden egg, the two of us were at the scene as well, so the responsibility should not only be shouldered by Sect Elder Liu Hong. We have eyes, but we failed to see, we couldn't tell that the golden egg carried a baby Firethorn Savage, that's why the young man was able to fool us so easily.”

Another Sect Elder jumped into the conversation and explained

what happened, but his words had attracted a scolding from Qing Styx. Even Liu Hong and the other old man stared at him angrily; damn it, old fool, if you don't know how to talk, just shut your mouth!

“Damn it, so you're implying that I too have eyes but failed to see, and could not tell the origin of that golden egg, right? I felt a familiar energy from that golden egg, but I was deceived by your words, that's why I didn't bother checking further!”

Qing Styx shouted out loudly, causing the old man to become covered in cold sweat. Only now did he realize that his words were not appropriate, because Qing Styx himself also failed to tell that the golden egg was Firethorn Savage's baby. So, when he said he had eyes but failed to see, it implied that Qing Styx was the same as them.

Liu Hong and the other old men inwardly sighed. It looked like this old fool not only had eyes but failed to see, he was also very ignorant. It really was a miracle that he could live to such an age, and even become a Divine Core warrior.

“I'm sorry, Sect Chief, that's not what I meant.”

The old man wiped the sweat off his forehead and hurriedly tried explaining.

“That's enough, this incident is not entirely your fault, the main culprit is that young man.”

Qing Styx waved his hand.

When the young man in white and the big yellow dog were mentioned, Liu Hong and the other two old men immediately became enraged. The flames of fury in their eyes could literally burn the air in front of them.

“Sect Chief, I don’t think that young man has fled too far away! I’ll capture him and bring him back here.”

Liu Hong said in a vicious manner.

“Fine, I’ll give you the opportunity to redeem your mistake. Get that young man back here, I want him to bear all the losses of the Green Sanctuary Sect! That dog as well!”

Qing Styx felt immense anger. As one of the biggest sects in the Qian Province, the Green Sanctuary Sect was a majestic and well respected sect, never once had anything like this happened before. They had suffered greatly today, and their foundation had almost been shaken. If they didn’t find and catch the main culprit, all of the Green Sanctuary Sect’s face would disappear, and they would have a hard time continuing to stay in power.

“Understood!”

Liu Hong and the other two old men immediately stood up from where they knelt down. This was their only opportunity to redeem their mistake. No matter what, they had to captured that young

man and dog. Chopping both of them into pieces was the only way to soothe their anger.

“Sect Chief, Firethorn Savage has turned his hatred towards us, and he’s even forbidding anyone from our sect entry to Misty Mountain. This will cause us to lose an excellent training ground for the lower rank disciples.”

After the three old men left the hall, one of the Sect Elders spoke.

“That’s right, Sect Chief, it will be a great loss for us if we aren’t allow to enter Misty Mountain. Because of today’s events, Firethorn Savage holds a grudge towards us and considers us as his worst enemies. I do not believe that the lower rank disciples will be able to enter Misty Mountain anymore. ”

Another Sect Elder worriedly said.

“Hmph! Nothing to worry about, I won’t allow the resources in Misty Mountain to go to waste! Besides, this is our best chance to rule Misty Mountain completely!”

Qing Styx snorted, and a sneer emerged on his face.

“Does Sect Chief have any ideas?”

All the Sect Elders felt delighted.

“That’s right. During the fight just now, Firethorn Savage burnt his life-force in exchange for a surge in his energy. Not long after having done that, he will enter a weakened state. During that period, the powerful Firethorn Savage won’t be so frightening, he will no longer be a fierce tiger, but a tame sheep. However, since I too suffered injuries from the fight, I’ll need two days to recover. Once my strength returns, I’ll personally go to Misty Mountain and kill Firethorn Savage. Its demon soul and child are both priceless treasures, if I can get both of them, I might be able to break through the bottleneck that has kept me from breaking into the Combat Soul realm for more than ten years.

Qing Styx kept laughing grimly as he fantasized about his plan.

“Perfect, this is perfect, this is indeed the best chance to kill Firethorn Savage! If Sect Chief is able to break through to the Combat Soul realm, you will be the first Combat Soul warrior in the Qian Province! At that point of time, we’ll be able to wipe out all other sects in Qian Province and rule it all by ourselves! After that, the Qian Province will be like the other big provinces that get their attention from the Martial Saint Dynasty!”

“That’s right, the Qian Province is one of the lowest ranked provinces in the Eastern Continent, there isn’t even a single Combat Soul warrior here, that’s why we are being neglected by the Martial Saint Dynasty. Once Sect Chief breaks through to the Combat Soul realm, the Martial Saint Dynasty will surely pay great attention to a Combat Soul warrior!”

Hearing that Qing Styx would be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm, all Sect Elders rejoiced with unrestrained

excitement. They had begun picturing the future of the Green Sanctuary Sect within their minds.

If all the Divine Core warriors from Green Sanctuary Sect combined forces and snuck into Misty Mountain, and waited until the weakened state of Firethorn Savage arrived and struck, they would definitely be able to kill him, and even Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to stop them. If that was the case, all of their dreams would really come true.

Too bad, Firethorn Savage had just left the place, and no one dared to enter Misty Mountain right now. They could only wait for their Sect Chief to recover. However, what they didn't know was that someone had already beat them to it.

In the center of Misty Mountain, Firethorn Savage carefully placed the golden egg back into the cave. After that, he walked out from it and laid back down where he usually slept. From his look, one could easily tell how tired he was. His eyes had dulled, and in the time of a few breaths, he had already entered a deep slumber. He didn't notice that not too far away from him were a man and a dog concealing themselves/hiding..

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were still laying in the same spot in the middle of the mountain. They stared at the sleeping Firethorn Savage without even blinking their eyes. Right now, the Firethorn Savage's body still emitted a blood red light. This meant that the true weakened state had still not arrived.

Jiang Chen had extraordinary patience. He had waited for a few days, and he didn't mind waiting a bit more. There was no way for

them to strike right now, the weakened state had yet to arrive, and Firethorn Savage was even stronger than he usually was. If they struck now, it would be the same as committing suicide.

“I estimate it will take less than an hour before his weakened state arrives.”

Big Yellow said.

“That’s right. Let’s just keep waiting until his weakened state comes, then we’ll strike at once and kill him.”

The reason why Jiang Chen had come to Misty Mountain was for this moment. With the ‘help’ from the Green Sanctuary Sect, Jiang Chen had finally achieved his goal in the shortest period of time possible.

An hour later, the blood red light covering Firethorn Savage had completely disappeared. Even the golden color on his body had faded away. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could both tell that the Firethorn Savage was extremely fatigued, and the energy of his source had become extremely weak as well.

“Firethorn Savage has entered his weakened state.”

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up. Firethorn Savage had just entered his weakest possible state. Firethorn Savage was in such a bad condition that he couldn’t even utilize more than one percent of his full power, he was extremely weakened. He could easily be

defeated by any Early Divine Core warrior now.

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirit. The final moment was here, and his expression became serious. There was a saying that a dead camel was still bigger than a living horse; so even if the Firethorn Savage had entered a weakened state, he still couldn't be underestimated.

“Big Yellow, you'll walk up to Firethorn Savage and attack him upfront while I go launch a sneak attack from behind. Let's try our best to kill him with a single strike and give him no opportunity to counterattack. I don't know what other powerful abilities he might have.”

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes and spoke word by word. He had always planned ahead and covered all bases before striking. He didn't allow any accidents to happen. Although Firethorn Savage had entered a weakened state, a demon beast like him might still have some earth-shattering skill he could use if his life was threatened.

Therefore, Jiang Chen didn't even want Firethorn Savage to have the chance to fight for his life; Jiang Chen wanted to kill him with a single blow.

“Alright.”

Big Yellow's face was filled with excitement. A bright golden light covered his body, and in an instant, he dashed out with lightning speed. Some mystical symbols instantly appeared on his

steel-like head as he rammed towards Firethorn Savage's head.

Swoosh!

Firethorn Savage who was currently slumbering suddenly opened his eyes. An extreme feeling of danger arose in his heart; he never expected that there would be such a huge risk hiding right beside him.

But too bad, Big Yellow was simply too fast. It was as fast as a lightning strike. Even though Firethorn Savage was able to respond at the critical time, he still couldn't dodge Big Yellow's attack.

Bam!

Big Yellow's head rammed right onto Firethorn Savage's head. Because he wasn't really defending himself, Firethorn Savage who was in his weakest state had no way of withstanding Big Yellow's powerful slam.

This was also because Big Yellow's head was something that could even shatter a mid-ranked combat weapon.

Firethorn Savage's huge body was sent flying backwards in a straight line. At the same time, he let a horrible cry out towards the skies. His huge head had a big bloody hole which was caused by Big Yellow's fierce attack. Blood and brain could be seen leaking from the hole; it was a deadly wound.

Big Yellow's head is his invincible weapon, using it to launch a sneak attack would kill anyone in an instant.

But even when suffering such a severe injury, Firethorn Savage would not die so quickly; his bloodline was simply too strong. Even when he was at his weakest, even when he suffered such a severe injury, he was still able to unleash a powerful combat strength. A ferocious demon beast like this was most frightening when he was struggling for his life.

Roar!

Firethorn Savage once again became covered in the flames of fury; how dare a demon lord launch a sneak attack on him in his own territory? This was something that he couldn't bear at all. He felt that his dignity was being challenged.

After that, when Firethorn Savage was about to counterattack, a loud explosive sound came from above his head. The next second, he saw a huge blood red dragon claw pressing towards him while emitting a mountain-like pressure.

Chapter 185 – One Move, Two Gains

The blood red dragon claw was as huge as a mountain. In an instant, it started pressing down with an enormous force.

Bang!

Taken by surprise, Firethorn Savage was slapped back onto the ground. His huge body collided with the ground; causing a huge crater to appear. The attack unleashed by Jiang Chen's full force was incredible, his muscles alone could give him the strength of over 3,000,000 jins, and when it was combined with the True Dragon Palm, the force would be much greater than that. Firethorn Savage was a powerful being, but since he was caught off guard while being in a weakened state, as well as being severely wounded by Big Yellow and Jiang Chen's combined sneak attacks, no matter what strong abilities he had; there was no time for him to unleash them underneath Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's flawless combined attack.

Roar!

After being hit by the True Dragon Palm, Firethorn Savage still showed no signs of dying. He was still unceasingly bellowing while dim golden lights had begun to surround his body. He was preparing to unleash his innate ability.

“Hmph! Firethorn Savage, don't waste your time struggling, your last day is here! Big Yellow!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. Right after the words left his mouth, Big Yellow immediately attacked. With extreme speed and his head that was as hard as diamonds, he once again rammed into Firethorn Savage's body.

This time, Big Yellow had impaled Firethorn Savage's abdomen, causing blood and internal organs to pour out everywhere.

“True Dragon Flames, burn for me!”

Jiang Chen could not let this opportunity pass. He unleashed the True Dragon Flames from his dragon claw. The flame penetrated Firethorn Savage's wound and begun burning within his body. They had to attack repeatedly until he was dead, they couldn't allow him a single chance to regain control.

Aowuuu...

With Jiang Chen attacking with both the True Dragon Flames and True Dragon Palm simultaneously, no matter how strong Firethorn Savage was, there was no way he could withstand it; his injuries were getting worse and worse. Big Yellow had used his head to make two big bloody holes on his body, and his life-force was getting weaker and weaker.

The True Dragon Flame was the king amongst all flames, and when it was combined with the True Dragon Palm's pressure, Firethorn Savage could only let out horrible screams.

Firethorn Savage kept letting out painful roars. He struggled to survive.. However, it was futile as there was no way he could escape from Jiang Chen's dragon claw. In the end, he died from Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's combined attacks.

Plop!

Firethorn Savage fell onto the ground; his charred body had finally become motionless.

The king who had dominated Misty Mountain for so many years, he had never thought that one day his life would end like this. He didn't even get the chance to clearly see the faces of those who killed him... This was truly a tragic way to die.

Jiang Chen retracted his energy and looked at Big Yellow. The duo could see the excitement in each other's eyes. Frankly speaking, before coming to Misty Mountain, none of them had any confidence in accomplishing their goal, they had no idea how they would deal with the powerful Firethorn Savage.

Now, with the Green Sanctuary Sect's 'help', he had finally been able to kill Firethorn Savage and obtain the ingredient that could save Yan Chen Yu's life.

“Hurry up and retrieve his demon soul.”

Big Yellow pushed Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen pointed his finger like a sword and unleashed a bright light which split open Firethorn Savage's skull. Firethorn Savage had a sturdy body, so even if a Mortal Core warrior arrived after Firethorn Savage had died, he wouldn't be the ability to retrieve the demon soul from the corpse.

Buzz...

A golden colored pearl that was the size of a fist shot out from Firethorn Savage's skull. It was Firethorn Savage's demon soul, as well as Jiang Chen's main goal for this trip. With a wave of his hand, Jiang Chen grabbed onto the demon soul. The demon soul felt lukewarm and contained a massive amount of energy.

“What a worthwhile trip!”

Jiang Chen smiled and placed the demon soul in his storage ring. Finally, he could be at peace.

“Buddy, Firethorn Savage's body is like a treasure trove! Aside from his demon soul, the fur is priceless as well!”

Big Yellow said. A huge beast like this, if one used it to make armor, the armor would possess incredible defensive properties.

“Hehe, just leave it for the Green Sanctuary Sect. They've helped us greatly this time, we need to leave something good for them.”

Jiang Chen laughed mischievously. He didn't have much interest

in Firethorn Savage's body. After cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, his body had become extremely strong, and the armor made from Firethorn Savage's fur was useless to him. Big Yellow didn't need it either, as his body was even stronger than Firethorn Savage's.

“Oh right, the golden egg!”

Big Yellow's eyes lit up.

“That's right, the golden egg is the real treasure!”

Jiang Chen turned around and flew into the cave with lightning speed. In an instant, he returned with a golden egg in his hand.

“This golden egg contains a massive amount of source energy. If I can completely absorb it, I will be able to form at least another 100 Dragon Marks and break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm. Firethorn Savage's complete bloodline is also within this egg, so I might be able to obtain Firethorn Savage's innate abilities.”

Jiang Chen was extremely happy. The trip to Misty Mountain was truly plentiful. Not only had he accomplished his goal and obtained Firethorn Savage's demon soul, he had also gotten Firethorn Savage's golden egg. It really was two gains with a single move.

“Buddy, you're a man of great fate, and no matter where you go, fate will follow. And thus, there is nothing you cannot achieve. I

don't think Nan Bei Chao's fate can be compared with yours."

Big Yellow said in a manner which showed he had confidence in Jiang Chen. Fate was something that couldn't be seen or touched, it was something mystical and inescapable. Being able to reincarnate like he did, Jiang Chen actually did possess a grand fate. And cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill had made his fate even grander. His encounters along his journey had proven this.

This trip to Misty Mountain had completely shown that Jiang Chen was really followed by a great fate. The introduction of the golden egg had given Jiang Chen an opportunity to use the Green Sanctuary Sect, and only with this did he have a chance to kill Firethorn Savage. A fateful encounter like this, how could one not be convinced?

"Big success! Let's leave Misty Mountain at once and return to the Black Sect."

After saying those words, Jiang Chen jumped into the skies. Together with Big Yellow, they flew towards the exit of Misty Mountain.

Outside Misty Mountain, just as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow exited the mountain, they immediately heard a loud shout.

"Little bastard Jiang Chen, stop right there!"

The shout was loud like a clap of thunder, it sounded like the person who shouted had just suffered from an immense amount of anger. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow turned around; they immediately saw Liu Hong and the other two old men soaring towards them with extreme anger.

“Hahaha!”

Seeing who was coming, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow immediately burst out into laughter.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s laughter was like pouring hot oil onto burning flames. The trio immediately roared, and it looked like they were going to tear the duo into pieces.

“Bastard! How dare you frame us?! You deserve a thousand deaths!”

Liu Hong shouted out furiously.

“Haha, I’ll need to thank Sect Elder Liu for helping, thank you very much!”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist towards Liu Hong. After that, he placed his palm on Big Yellow’s head and said, “You are such an ungrateful dog, hurry up and say thank to our benefactors!”

Big Yellow finally awakened. He hurriedly turned his head towards the trio, and while nodding his head he said, “We’ll never

forget Sect Elder Liu's great deeds, kaka!"

Ahh!!

Liu Hong beat his chest and stamped his feet, he couldn't bear it any longer, and he screamed out with extreme fury. He felt like he was choking on his own anger, and he felt like throwing up blood.

This was so infuriating, so f*cking infuriating! These two bastards, were they trying to kill him by provoking him? No one poured oil onto fire like this.

"Kill, kill, kill! I'll kill both of you! I'll peel off your skin and tear out your tendons, I'll crush every single bone in your bodies!"

Liu Hong was covered in flames of fury. A sword immediately appeared in his hand; he unleashed all his Yuan energy at swept his surrounding with massive energy ripples. In an instant, he dashed towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow with a ferocious attack. The other two old men who were equally furious took out combat weapons and followed Liu Hong.

"Haha, he is mad!"

Big Yellow was laughing out heartily without giving it much thought.

"I have no interest in fighting Sect Elder Liu right now, so I'll have to say goodbye to you now. Don't worry, we'll be brought

together by fate in the future."

Jiang Chen waved his hand towards Liu Hong who was coming towards him with great speed. At the same time, he spread his blood wings, and together with Big Yellow, they flew away with incredible speed.

"Let's chase after them, I'll kill them both today!"

Both of Liu Hong's eyes had turned red. He had never hated someone to this extent, he had never been so eager to kill someone. All three Sect Elders increased their speed to the maximum and chased after Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

"Big Yellow, let's ditch them."

Jiang Chen had gotten what he was looking for. Therefore, there was no need for him to keep struggling with the Green Sanctuary Sect. Besides, his current combat strength didn't allow him to defeat Liu Hong. Although he couldn't defeat them in terms of strength, in terms of speed, even two Liu Hong's wouldn't be able to catch up to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

Swoosh...

Jiang Chen's blood wings flapped violently, and together with his Dimension Shift skill, he immediately became like a meteor. On the other side, a pair of light wings appeared on Big Yellow's back. He flew side by side with Jiang Chen, and in an instant, they

managed to ditch Liu Hong and the other two old men far behind.

Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders kept chasing crazily for a few hundred miles, but in the end, they were forced to stop chasing. They couldn't even see the shadows of their targets, so what was the point of chasing? They couldn't even see the dust left behind by them.

“Sect Elder Liu, they managed to escape.”

An old man angrily said.

“Did you guys see that? They were heading towards the Qi Province! Perhaps they're originally from the Qi Province?”

Liu Hong said.

“There is no strong young man like him in the Qian Province. If there was one, he would be famous by now, and we'd know who he was.”

Another Sect Elder said.

“Let's go. We'll return to the sect and report to Sect Chief, then we'll catch those people who have met with Jiang Chen and question them. If this guy really isn't from the Qian Province, we'll head to the Qi Province to search for him. We can't let go of this matter, if we can't kill this man and dog, us three won't be able to live good lives in the Qian Province, and our reputations will be

gone.”

Liu Hong gritted his teeth as he spoke. Since they couldn't chase after Jiang Chen, they could only return empty handed.

For the Green Sanctuary Sect, finding people who had met with Jiang Chen was a piece of cake. It only took Liu Hong one day before he found all the men who had appeared outside Misty Mountain on the day when Jiang Chen had arrived, including the man who Jiang Chen had asked for information.

Because of that man, Liu Hong found out that this was Jiang Chen's first time coming to the Qian Province. Also, since Jiang Chen and Big Yellow fled towards the Qi Province, he came to the conclusion that Jiang Chen really was from the Qi Province.

So, the trio personally went to the Qi Province, with the addition of a Mid Divine Core warrior. They vowed to find the young man whose name was Jiang Chen. This was an enormous shame for their sect and themselves, they had to find this young man and dog. If they didn't, the sect's reputation and face would be greatly damaged.

Late afternoon the next day. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow appeared above the skies of the Black Sect, then they landed on Guo Shan's mountain peak.

Chapter 186 – Concocting The Pill

Guo Shan's mountain peak was as tranquil as ever. Herbs were spread out all over the hills, and natural Yuan energy filled the surrounding area. It was the best place for cultivation in the Black Sect.

After having gone through a painful lesson, Guo Shan didn't dare show any neglect any longer. He had placed Yan Chenyu and Han Yan in the courtyard, and he was cultivating near a herb plantation outside the courtyard while protecting Yan Chenyu and Han Yan from any possible harm. Also, if anyone tried getting close to his mountain peak, Guo Shan would immediately find out.

After Guo Shan had received the Six Profound Solar Energies skill, his cultivation base had increased exponentially. In just a few days, his cultivation base at the Mid Divine Core realm had completely stabilized.

Sensing that someone was approaching, Guo Shan suddenly opened his eyes. When he saw that it was Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, he immediately rejoiced with extreme excitement.

“Younger brother, you're back!”

Guo Shan sprung up from where he was sitting and walked up to Jiang Chen.

“Older brother, how is Little Yu and Brother Yan?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Don’t worry, your older brother has been standing guard all the time, not even a fly could escape from my senses!”

Guo Shan said with utmost confidence. He had a distinguished look, and he was in high spirits. His energy had become much stronger. After cultivating the Six Profound Solar Energies and breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm, Guo Shan had gone through a tremendous change. It could even be considered a rebirth for him.

“Good job.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Guo Shan didn’t let him down this time. Although Fan Zhongtang didn’t come give them any trouble this time, Jiang Chen was satisfied with Guo Shan’s attitude.

“Brother, did you meet Firethorn Savage in Misty Mountain? It is a beast of terror, in order to obtain its demon soul, you’ll have to plan carefully before making any decision!”

Guo Shan hastily said.

“Damn it, old man, why are you looking down on us? So what if that Firethorn Savage is terrifying! Let me tell you, we have killed that Firethorn Savage!”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes and stared at Guo Shan.

What? Firethorn Savage was killed by you? Who would believe that!

“Big Yellow, I know that everyone sometimes love bragging a little, but one must by all means never pretend to have done something that is impossible! With both of your abilities, it is impossible to kill Firethorn Savage in just a few days. Don’t you try to fool me like I was a three years old kid!”

Guo Shan stared back at Big Yellow in a serious manner.

“Damn you, I have never thought you were a three year old kid! In your father’s mind, you are just a six months old baby!”

Big Yellow let out a ‘pooh’. How dare Guo Shan look down on him? If it wasn’t for Jiang Chen being here, Big Yellow might have already bitten Guo Shan’s butt by now.

“Older brother Guo, Big Yellow is speaking the truth, we really did kill Firethorn Savage. Here is his demon soul.”

Jiang Chen flipped his palm and retrieved the demon soul from his storage ring. Guo Shan’s expression drastically changed when he felt the powerful energy fluctuations coming from the demon soul.

“This... this really is Firethorn Savage’s demon soul! Broth...

younger brother, how did you do it? This is unbelievable, how could it be possible?”

Guo Shan was shocked by what he saw. He had never seen a real Firethorn Savage’s demon soul, but he could tell the level of this demon soul; a peak Mid Divine Core demon soul. It must belong to Firethorn Savage, as Jiang Chen would never make this kind of joke.

“Don’t be surprised, older brother. Let me explain how it happened.”

Jiang Chen began telling Guo Shan what happened back in Misty Mountain. The entire story really stunned Guo Shan.

“Younger brother...brilliant! That was so clever! How did you come up with such a crafty plan? That poor Green Sanctuary Sect suffered a great loss because of you. By using them to help you kill Firethorn Savage and reap all harvests, you were able to drastically reduce both of their power! That plan was really clever!”

Guo Shan was swept off his feet by Jiang Chen. In fact, he didn’t have much hope for Jiang Chen’s trip to Misty Mountain before this. Their target was after all the powerful Firethorn Savage. He couldn’t even imagine how Jiang Chen would be able to kill a frightening peak Mid Divine Core demon beast at all.

But to his surprise, Jiang Chen really did it, and he done it in a way Guo Shan hadn’t even been able to dream about. Framing someone and making them fight each other, this method was

brilliant.

“Nothing worth mentioning, really. The Green Sanctuary Sect offended me at first, that’s why I won’t feel guilty about using them to my advantage.”

Jiang Chen said. In fact, even if the Green Sanctuary Sect didn’t offend him, in order to obtain Firethorn Savage’s demon soul, Jiang Chen might still use the same trick.

As a man, he had the justification to become crazy for his love and his brothers; he would use any means necessary to save his close ones. It didn’t matter if it was humans or objects, he would use it all for his own advantage, and the Green Sanctuary Sect was his tool this time.

“However, I don’t think the Green Sanctuary Sect will let go of this matter easily. I know about this sect, it is one of the biggest sects in the Qian Province, and their strength is about the same as our Black Sect. They are not someone who can be easily trifled with, I don’t think they will let you go just like that.”

Guo Shan said with a worried tone.

“Don’t worry, I never put that Green Sanctuary Sect in my mind. Since I have obtained Firethorn Savage’s demon soul, I’ll start concocting the Profound Six Solar Pill now. Have you prepared all the ingredients?”

Jiang Chen asked. Yan Chenyu's condition was getting worse day by day. Since he had now obtained Firethorn Savage's demon soul, he didn't want to delay any longer.

“Out of all 49 ingredients needed for the Profound Six Solar Pill, I've prepared 47 of them. Including Firethorn Savage's demon soul, we have 48, and we still lack one last herb; the Violet Ying Orchid. This herb requires a strict environment to grow, and even I can't grow it here, and I can't find it anywhere in the entire Black Sect.

Guo Shan furrowed his brows. He had tried his best to gather all herbs during the last few days, and in order to let Jiang Chen concoct the Profound Six Solar Pill, he had taken out all his fortune. But still, there was one last herb he didn't have, the Violet Ying Orchid, which was a main ingredient in the Profound Six Solar Pill that couldn't be replaced.

“I found the Violet Ying Orchid in Misty Mountain.”

While saying that, Jiang Chen retrieved the glowing Violet Ying Orchid from his storage ring. Guo Shan was immediately stunned, and he stared at Jiang Chen with his mouth wide open. He became speechless when facing this brother of his.

In the past, he believed that there is no one in this world who could accomplish anything he wanted. However, since he had met Jiang Chen, he began to firmly believe that this young man was a man full of miracles.

Guo Shan had been worrying about how he could find the Violet Ying Orchid, but now Jiang Chen had returned with it. This not only proved Jiang Chen's ability, it also showed the great amount of fate Jiang Chen possessed.

“Younger brother, you really are a man capable of making anything happen! The rest of the herbs have been prepared, and I've also emptied the furnace room. You can concoct the pill in there without any disturbances.

Concocting the Profound Six Solar Pill was completely different from concocting the Five Elemental Pill. The steps it took was complicated, and no ordinary pills could compare with it. Even if Jiang Chen was the one to concoct the pill, he might need two to three days time in order to concoct it. Just the step of merging Firethorn Savage's demon soul into the pill alone was something extremely strenuous.

If it was Guo Shan, not only would the time needed be unknown, he didn't even have the ability to concoct the pill. Ordinary flames couldn't even break down Firethorn Savage's demon soul.

Guo Shan's furnace room was enormous, it was the biggest furnace room in the Black Sect. With all four walls sealed, it had the size of a palace. There was many secret drawers hidden within the walls of the furnace room, and although these drawers were closed, Jiang Chen could still smell the fragrance of herbs from them.

In here, almost all of the Black Sect's precious herbs were stored.

The floor in the furnace room was made from golden rocks, giving it a majestic look. On top of the furnace room there were some round-shaped windows made from transparent crystals. The round windows on top and square floors on bottom fit perfectly with the natural orders. And right in the middle of the room, there stood a 3 meter tall golden furnace.

This was a precious furnace. With Guo Shan's abilities, there was no need to use a furnace when he concocted some ordinary pills, he could just his Yuan energy and soul energy, as well as some flames. However, if he was going to concoct a more complicated pill which would take him a long time, he would still need help from a furnace. If not, he wouldn't be able to endure the entire process.

Although the furnace room looked grand and majestic, with Jiang Chen's vast experience, he had seen many furnace rooms. A furnace room like this was nothing for him. However, when he stood within it, he couldn't help but recall the mayor's mansion back in Fragrant Sky City. If he were to compare the furnace room in the mayor's mansion to this one, the one in the mayor's mansion was rubbish.

"I wonder how dad is right now. Since the territory around Fragrant Sky city is very peaceful, as well as it having the protection of a demon lord, I think nothing dangerous will happen. Besides, I've given dad the Profound Yuan skill, and with his talent and potential, I'm sure he has at least broken through to the Heavenly Core realm by now."

Thinking about Jiang Zhenhai, Jiang Chen couldn't help but

show a gentle smile on his face.

Refocusing back on the present. Jiang Chen found all sorts of herbs piled up besides the furnace. There were 47 of them, and all were required to concoct the Profound Six Solar Pill.

“Guo Shan is actually still somewhat dependable.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He immediately adjusted his form to its optimal level. With his current cultivation level, concocting the Profound Six Solar Pill required him to go all out.

“It’s simple for me to merge all 48 herbs, the most difficult part is to merge them with Firethorn Savage’s demon soul. A demon soul at the peak Mid Divine Core realm was extremely durable, ordinary flames can’t burn it down at all. Luckily, I have the True Dragon Flames. If not, I wouldn’t be able to concoct the Profound Six Solar Pill, even if I did obtain the demon soul.”

Jiang Chen felt really lucky, the flame he possessed previously was just the flames of a Fiery Tiger. It was very weak, but it was sufficient when it came to concocting Mortal ranked pills. However, when it came to more advanced and complicated pills, the Fiery Tiger pills was useless. But, since he had obtained the True Dragon Flame, a flame that could compare with the flames which forged the universe, which was able to burn down everything, he is able to concoct higher level pills.

“Come!”

Jiang Chen waved his hand in a simple manner, and under the control of his Yuan energy, all 47 herbs, as well as the Violet Ying Orchid, floated up in front of him. After that, Jiang Chen immediately unleashed his Great Soul Derivation skill. With its aid, he would be able to gain precise control over every single herb.

Pop!

Followed by a soft vibration, Jiang Chen spat a fireball out from his mouth. The fireball immediately exploded and turned into a sea of flames which engulfed all of the herbs.

Under the intense heat of the True Dragon Flame, all of the impurities within the herbs were being burnt. Although the purification process looked simple, it was an important step that couldn't be neglected. Jiang Chen's action of purifying dozens of herbs at once was simply shocking.

Jiang Chen needed to control the temperature of the True Dragon Flames with his Great Soul Derivation skill. If the temperature was too high, all the herbs would turn into ashes in an instant.

Chapter 187 – Astonishing Accomplishment

The scorching flames were dancing around happily. The air seemed to be on the verge of burning out. Even though Jiang Chen was controlling the flames, as well as covering the flames with a certain amount of his Yuan energy, the True Dragon Flame was too mighty. It had raised the temperature of the furnace room in an instant, causing a blazing airflow to float around in the furnace room.

Jiang Chen had a calm expression. His black hair was fluttering backwards, and his eyes were brimming with vigor like a pair of dark gemstones. With all his focus, he kept staring at the sea of flames in front of him. Within the flames, all 48 herbs were floating in different positions, and were being burned with different temperatures that suited them individually.

If Guo Shan was here, even though he already knew about Jiang Chen's ability, he would be laying on the floor due to extreme shock. Purifying 48 herbs compared to 5 herbs simultaneously were two completely different things. This was because each herb had its own smelting point in purification, only when the heat reached a certain point would it be purified and the impurities would disappear. If the temperature wasn't high enough, then the impurities wouldn't be completely burnt off, and if the temperature was too high, then it would burn some of the herb's essence.

Therefore, in the purification process, it required the alchemist to have a very precise control of the flame. The alchemist needed to focus with all his attention, and use his soul energy to sense the smelting point of each herb, and control the temperature of the

flame to that point. Only then would he be able to get rid of all impurities while keeping all of the essence.

There are no doubts about this being a very difficult step in alchemy. Therefore, when ordinary alchemist concocted pills, they would use a furnace to help control the temperature of the flame. Besides, since each herb had its own smelting point, the alchemist would need to purify them one at a time, or purify herbs with the same smelting point at the same time. If two herbs with different smelting points were purified at the same time, it would usually result in impurities remaining or essence being burned off, which then makes the pill low quality.

Even the alchemists with rich experience might at most purify a few herbs together at once. The fact that Jiang Chen is able to purify dozens of herbs together at once was simply astounding. Only the renowned alchemists had the courage to do so, and none of them would be able to do it so leisurely.

However, this was Jiang Chen, he was once a mighty Saint rank alchemist. Along with the Great Soul Derivation skill that gives him an excellent perception and precise control, he also had the True Dragon Flames. He truly possesses a godly prowess when it came to concocting pills.

Purifying dozens of herbs at the same time was not something easily accomplished. Jiang Chen needed to find over 40 smelting points in these herbs and burn them at the same time; this step had taken him nearly three hours.

“It took me nearly three hours. If I was in my prime, I would be

able to do it in minutes.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. If what he said was heard by Guo Shan, or any other alchemist, they might have thrown up all their blood and try to attack Jiang Chen. His words dealt a huge blow to all alchemists. His words could make every single alchemist in this world feel ashamed.

Put aside other alchemists and just use Guo Shan as an example; if he wanted to purify all 48 herbs, it might have taken him at least 4-5 days. As for Firethorn Savage’s demon soul, he might need even longer. And then there was the last step which was merging all the ingredients. Without at least half a month, it was simply impossible for him to concoct the Profound Six Solar Pill.

“Next, I’ll need to refine Firethorn Savage’s demon soul. I’ll melt it down to liquid, then I’ll merge everything together and produce the pill.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. With the control of his Yuan energy, 48 purified herb essences glowed colorfully. All of them looked like droplets of crystal as they floated at one corner within the flame.

Jiang Chen flipped his palm and retrieved the golden colored Firethorn Savage’s demon soul from his storage ring, then he threw the fist-sized demon soul into the sea of flames. His True Dragon Flame transformed into dozens of fiery dragons which immediately surrounded the demon soul.

HA!

Jiang Chen let out a shout, then he adjusted the True Dragon Flame's temperature to its maximum, then he begun to burn Firethorn Savage's demon soul.

Firethorn Savage's demon soul contained a massive amount of energy essence, and it couldn't be wasted. Aside from that, it also contained pure yang energy within, which was the source of Firethorn Savage's strength.

Actually, the demon soul only contained the demon's essence, so there was no need for it to be purified at all. What Jiang Chen was doing now was melting it down to liquid form so that he could merge it with the other ingredients.

Melting down Firethorn Savage's demon soul was some extremely difficult. Not only was it difficult because of its durability, Jiang Chen also need to make sure that the source energy contained within was not wasted, and that would require him to be extra careful while melting it. He couldn't afford to make a single mistake.

Outside the furnace room, Guo Shan and Big Yellow were sitting face to face next to a stone table. This time, Guo Shan was generous enough to serve the best wine he had brewed with some herbs to Big Yellow. In his mind, Jiang Chen would need some days to concoct the pill this time, so he could use that time for find out more about what happened during their trip to Misty Mountain from Big Yellow.

“Old man Guo Shan, you finally show some hospitality and serve this master dog with some fine wine, not bad. After following this master dog for some time, you have learnt from me and found out how to do things correctly.”

Big Yellow held a jade wine glass with his paws. He drank the fine wine as he held his head up high.

“That’s enough, I can’t even shut your mouth with this fine wine. I think the day where you stop being so narcissistic is the day when the sun rises from the west! Hurry, tell daddy all the detail about your trip to Misty Mountain!”

Guo Shan immediately stopped Big Yellow from talking further. When this dog’s narcissistic side is awakened, the heavens would walk and the ground would fly. He was one mighty bragger.

When Guo Shan mentioned Misty Mountain, Big Yellow immediately became excited. He began talking nonstop, and his saliva splashed everywhere, including Guo Shan’s face and head. He was confused about whether or not it was Big Yellow’s saliva or some wine.

Guo Shan furrowed his brows, he began feeling regret about his decision to chat with Big Yellow. If it wasn’t for him really wanting to know the details about what happened in Misty Mountain, he might have flipped the table and walked away, without ever sitting down together with Big Yellow to drink again.

Within the furnace room, it took Jiang Chen an entire day before he finally melted down Firethorn Savage's demon soul. He had some sweat dripping down from his forehead. If it was any other alchemist, he might already be laying on the floor in exhaustion.

“Now, the next step, merging all ingredients and producing the pill, the most crucial step.”

Jiang Chen's expression changed into a serious one; even he dared not show any neglect right now. Finally, Jiang Chen begun the last step of the process; merging.

Qian Province, Green Sanctuary Sect.

Liu Hong and the other Sect Elders returned from the Qi Province, and they were now meeting with Qing Styx.

“How was it? Did you guys find out anything?”

Qing Styx's combat strength had almost fully recovered. He opened his eyes and looked at Liu Hong and the other two Sect Elders.

“Sect Chief, we've found something, that's why we returned to report it to you. We'll wait for Sect Chief's orders.”

Liu Hong said.

“Why? Did that young guy have some sort of troublesome background?”

Qing Styx furrowed his brows. With Liu Hong’s temper, he didn’t kill Jiang Chen straightaway, but instead returned to the Green Sanctuary Sect. This proved that the young man had a troublesome background. At least, the background was not something Liu Hong could afford to offend.

“That’s right, that Jiang Chen isn’t from the Qian Province, he is from the Qi Province, and he is very famous within the Qi Province. When we arrived in the Qi Province, every single person we asked knew his name.”

Li Hong said with mixed feelings. The trip to the Qi Province was to find out about Jiang Chen had gone unexpectedly smooth. He had thought he would need to go through the entire Qi Province to find Jiang Chen, he had never expected that Jiang Chen was so famous that every single person he asked knew about him.

Indeed, Jiang Chen was a man whom everyone in the Qi Province knew about. Besides, the place where Liu Hong had gone was the Yellowstone area, where Jiang Chen was worshipped like an immortal, and even a three year old kid idolized him.

“Tell me about it.”

Qing Styx said.

“The young man is a disciple of the Black Sect, and he made his debut in the Qi Province competition. He also has a fight agreement with the Burning Sky Pavilion’s Nan Bei Chao in one year. He recently became famous in the Qi Province after killing all Blood Devils and Lord Blood Moon. He even killed Liang Xiao from the Heavenly Sword Sect. I heard that this man’s cultivation speed is extremely fast, and Daoist Black favors him; that’s why we didn’t strike, and instead came back to report. We need Sect Chief to decide on this matter.”

Liu Hong told Qing Styx about everything he had learned in the Qi Province.

“Nan Bei Chao is a rare peerless genius, and I think the Martial Saint Dynasty has already noticed him. There’s no doubt he is going to join them in the future. This Jiang Chen is really brave to make a one-year fight agreement with him.”

Qing Styx nodded his head. He wasn’t too surprised about Jiang Chen, a genius like him was surely known by many.

“Sect Chief, since Jiang Chen is from the Black Sect, what should we do now?”

Liu Hong asked. The overall strength of the Black Sect was similar to the Green Sanctuary Sect. Besides, if the Green Sanctuary Sect really sent someone to kill Jiang Chen in the Qi Province, there wouldn’t be many advantages for them, as the place wasn’t their territory.

“Let’s wait, we can’t afford to offend the Black Sect right now. The Qi Province is after all not our territory. Just let that young man off for now. I’ll fully recover tomorrow, then I’ll proceed to Misty Mountain and kill that Firethorn Savage. If I can obtain his demon soul, I’ll be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm. When that time comes, the Black Sect will be nothing.

Qing Styx said. However, he did not expect that what awaited him tomorrow when he arrived at Misty Mountain was just a dead Firethorn Savage, and his decision of letting Jiang Chen off for now would be unreal.

“Alright, we’ll follow Sect Chief’s orders.”

Liu Hong cupped his fist towards Qing Styx. Although he hates Jiang Chen to the maximum, he also understood that going to the Black Sect to kill Jiang Chen was basically impossible. Therefore, what he could do now was just follow Qing Styx’s orders.

Black Sect, Guo Shan’s mountain peak!

Late evening, energy ripples suddenly came out from the furnace room which had been quiet for an entire day. Guo Shan and Big Yellow raised their brows at the same time.

“These ripples... Don’t tell me he successfully concocted the pill?”

Guo Shan said with a hint of disbelief. Only one and a half day

had passed, and if Jiang Chen had really concocted the Profound Six Solar Pill in one and a half days, that would be a really astonishing accomplishment.

Crack...

The door of the furnace room was pushed open, and Jiang Chen who was wearing white clothes walked out from the room with a bright smile on his face, and a golden colored pill floating in his palm.

Chapter 188 – Martial Palace

Guo Shan immediately fixed his gaze on the pill floating in Jiang Chen's palm. He could sense the pure energy radiating from the pill, and all the mystical symbols that covered the pill gave it a sense of divinity.

The energy that overflowed from the pill would make anyone who breathed it in feel refreshed, and give him an unparalleled comfortable feeling.

Two bright beams shout out from Big Yellow's eyes, he kept staring at the pill as he drooled nonstop.

“Damn it, this pill looks so delicious! It would be best if daddy could take it as an appetizer with this wine!”

Big Yellow said in a heartless manner. But, before he could finish his words, Jiang Chen's foot slammed into his face, leaving a huge footmark on it.

“Damned dog, don't even think about it! You're just looking for a hard beating!”

Jiang Chen glared at Big Yellow. Big Yellow knew he was in the wrong, thus, for the first time, he didn't retort.

“48 herbs combined with Firethorn Savage's demon soul and Six Solar Holy Water. Finally, I've successfully concocted the Profound

Six Solar Pill. With this pill, Little Yu will be able to sustain her life-energy.”

Jiang Chen said. He had prepared the Six Solar Holy Water before he started concocting the pill. Jiang Chen cultivated the Six Solar Energies, which allowed him to absorb the pure Yang energy from the natural environment and turn it into Six Solar Holy Water, and this was one of the ingredients that couldn't be replaced.

“Oh, younger brother...”

Guo Shan unexpectedly started crying out. Tears came rolling, and he couldn't help but cry his lungs out.

Jiang Chen was confused by Guo Shan's tears. He had obtained Firethorn Savage's demon soul and successfully concocted the Profound Six Solar Pill, so Guo Shan should supposedly be happy. Even if he wasn't happy at all, why would he be crying?

“Older brother Guo, what happened to you? Who bullied you? Was it Big Yellow? Let me bully him back!”

Jiang Chen said seriously, but it actually made Guo Shan cry even louder.

“Damn it, it is you who made him cry, what does this have to do with me? This old guy is crying because you dealt him a heavy blow!”

Big Yellow jumped in and straightened the situation out.

Hearing this, Jiang Chen finally understood why Guo Shan was crying, it was all because Jiang Chen had successfully concocted a high ranked Profound Six Solar Pill in just one and a half days. Guo Shan was a respectable alchemist in the Qi Province, so this had dealt a really huge blow to his pride.

“Brother, this really is a huge blow to me.”

Guo Shan was happy, but at the same time, he felt somewhat depressed. He was happy because Jiang Chen had finally concocted the Profound Six Solar Pill, and that meant Yan Chenyu wouldn't die. However, he was depressed because Jiang Chen had dealt a huge blow to his face. He thought that no matter how much of a genius Jiang Chen was, he would need at least 3-4 days to concoct the pill, but he had never thought it would only take him one and a half day. Also, judging from the color of the pill, it was a 100% effectiveness pill. His pill concoction skill was simply astonishing.

“Older brother, don't cry... You have learned the Great Soul Derivation skill, your alchemy skills will definitely become much stronger! I'll go save Little Yu now.”

Jiang Chen patted Guo Shan's shoulder to show his comfort. After that, he walked towards the direction where Yan Chenyu was resting.

Guo Shan let out a long sigh, then he followed Jiang Chen. Jiang

Chen's existence had taught him what a miracle was. From now onwards, no matter what kind of heavenly defying things happened around Jiang Chen, Guo Shan would never behave like this again.

Yan Chenyu was still laying on the bed within the room quietly, she looked like a sleeping beauty.

Jiang Chen squatted down next to her. He placed his palm on her cold face, then he gently said, "Little Yu, it was Big Bro Jiang Chen's fault for not being able to protect you. When you recover, I promise; I won't let you suffer any grievances. Whoever dares bully you, I will kill them."

Jiang Chen's voice was soft and gentle, but Guo Shan could feel the determination and cruelty within. No words from this man could be taken as a joke.

Jiang Chen placed the Profound Six Solar Pill into Yan Chenyu's mouth. When the pill entered her body, in an instant, a massive amount of energy emerged from her body. In just a brief moment, a golden colored light barrier appeared outside her body. Yan Chenyu was still sleeping quietly within the barrier. The golden light barrier was like a cocoon that protected Yan Chenyu, waiting for her to break free and be reborn.

"The Profound Six Solar Pill's power will be able to guarantee that Little Yu stays alive. She will also be absorbing strength from the pill bit by bit, Little Yu's cultivation will keep progressing even while she is sleeping. In the future, when I find the Nine Solar Holy Water and let her drink it, Little Yu will immediately wake

up, and her cultivation will soar.”

Jiang Chen explained.

Guo Shan nodded his head. He had no doubts about Jiang Chen’s words, the Profound Six Solar Pill contained Firethorn Savage’s demon soul, and its value was simply enormous. If it had the Nine Solar Holy Water instead, not to mention Yan Chenyu who had a Divine Body which possessed the Nine Yin Meridians, even an ordinary man would become a genius, and his cultivation would soar as well.

“Older brother Guo, I’ll probably go to Inferno Hell in a few days. You’ll have to help me take good care of Little Yu and Brother Yan.

After saving Yan Chenyu, Jiang Chen’s next goal was to enter Inferno Hell and find the Earthly Demon Beast. Han Yan was his first brother after reincarnating, as well as his only brother; so he had to save him no matter what.

“Brother, do you really want to enter Inferno Hell?”

When mentioning Inferno Hell, Guo Shan couldn’t help but furrow his brows. That place was an extremely dangerous place, it was best not to go there.

“I have a great interest in this Inferno Hell. It also happens to be that I need to go there in order to save Brother Yan as well. Since Guan Yiyun was brave enough to enter, there is nothing that I,

Jiang Chen need to be afraid of.”

Jiang Chen said with a serious expression. He loved adventures and challenges, it gave him some meaning to life. Besides, by cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, he would need to go through a certain amount of challenges before yielding any progress. The Dragon Transformation skill only got harder and harder to cultivate the more you broke through. Therefore, Jiang Chen would take this opportunity to enter Inferno Hell.

“Big Yellow, the trip to Inferno Hell is extremely dangerous; you can choose not to follow me, I won’t force you.”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow as he spoke.

“Damn it, how could you leave me behind when going to such a dangerous place? Let me tell you this buddy, there is no way you can ditch me and go off by yourself! Daddy is going to this Inferno Hell with you no matter what!”

Big Yellow raised his prideful head and spoke with an arrogant tone.

“Haha, good!”

Jiang Chen burst out into laughter, and he felt somewhat touched in his heart. Although his and Big Yellow’s relationship had started after an intense fight, after spending so much time together and having gone through so many events, they had built a

deep relationship. No matter what Jiang Chen was going to do, no matter how dangerous it seemed, Big Yellow always willingly followed him. From killing Lord Blood Moon to Firethorn Savage, Big Yellow had always been a great help.

Besides, when this dog followed him, the help he provided was enormous.

After settling his matters with Yan Chenyu, Jiang Chen could finally have a peace of mind; he felt relaxed at last. The same night, outside of Guo Shan's herb plantation, Jiang Chen, Guo Shan and Big Yellow sat around a stone table, drinking together. And of course, they were drinking the best wine that Guo Shan had brewed.

Swoosh!

Suddenly, a figure descended from the skies above and appeared next to the table. The man didn't show any formality, he just sat down and grabbed the wine pot, then he drained it with one gulp.

"Sect Chief, this is so rude of you, you didn't even ask me for permission; that wine was mine."

Guo Shan mockingly said. The man who suddenly arrived was the Black Sect's Sect Chief, Daoist Black.

"What? Daddy only drank a mouthful of your wine, how could you be so stingy?"

It was rare for Daoist Black to be so gracious.

“I’m sure Sect Chief is here for a reason.”

Jiang Chen said as he cupped his fist towards Daoist Black.

“Indeed, I’m here to inform you about something, it will give you a sense of crisis.”

Daoist Black said as he looked at Jiang Chen.

“Sense of crisis? I suppose it is related to Nan Bei Chao?”

Jiang Chen was a brilliant man, something that could attract Daoist Black’s attention and was related to Jiang Chen, it must be something related to Nan Bei Chao.

“That’s right. I just got some news saying Nan Bei Chao has broken through to the Divine Core realm. This isn’t what’s special, the important part is that he has been chosen by the Martial Palace, and is not a disciple of the Martial Palace.”

When mentioning the Martial Palace, Daoist Black couldn’t help but express a slight hint of respect on his face.

“What? Nan Bei Chao was chosen by the Martial Palace?!”

Guo Shan exclaimed as if he had just heard something really shocking.

With a puzzled expression, Jiang Chen asked, “Martial Palace, what’s that?”

“Jiang Chen, it looks like you don’t have much knowledge about the distribution of powers in the Eastern Continent. Do you know anything about the Martial Saint Dynasty?”

Daoist Black asked.

Jiang Chen shook his head. He had never heard about the Martial Saint Dynasty before. Since he ventured from Red City, through Origin Mountain, and into the Qi Province, he hadn’t made any other stops. There were a total of 28 provinces in the Eastern Continent, and there were many powerful sects and clans with complicated relationships. He was not familiar with any of them at all.

“Younger brother, the Martial Saint Dynasty is the giant of the Eastern Continent. You could say that they’re the power who rules the entire Eastern Continent. The Martial Palace was established by the Martial Saint Dynasty, and its purpose is to cultivate all geniuses amongst every single province in the Eastern Continent.

Guo Shan explained.

“I see. With Nan Bei Chao’s talent and potential, it’s only natural for him to be chosen by the Martial Palace. Oh right, since this Martial Saint Dynasty rules the entire Eastern Continent, I suppose the Qi Province is ruled by it as well... But why has nobody mentioned it before?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“It’s a shame, actually. The Qi Province is one of the weakest provinces in the Eastern Continent, and the Martial Saint Dynasty has never taken us seriously. In fact, none of the big sects in the Qi Province are even qualified to be ruled by the Martial Saint Dynasty. There are quite a few geniuses from the four big sects, and all of them broke through to the Divine Core realm before they became 30 years old and became core disciples, but none of them ever attracted the Martial Saint Dynasty’s attention. Therefore, they could only journey into more powerful provinces to train themselves further. It’s the first time in history that the Martial Saint Dynasty came to the Qi Province to invite Nan Bei Chao to become their disciple; this really proves how incredible Nan Bei Chao’s potential is. Right now, Nan Bei Chao has broken through to the Divine Core realm, and the pressure on you has become larger.”

Daoist Black said with a worried tone. Nan Bei Chao was the first man from the Qi Province to become a disciple of the Martial Saint Dynasty. His existence was not only a threat to Jiang Chen, he also posed a threat to all the other 3 big sects in the Qi Province. It would just take him a few years before the current situation in the Qi Province changed completely.

Chapter 189 – Heavenly Sword Sect's Yun Can

At this moment, both Daoist Black and Guo Shan were immersed in deep thought and silence. The Qi Province was just one of the weakest provinces in the Eastern Continent. It's overall strength was pretty similar to the Qian Province's overall strength. Compared to the other powers, the difference was huge. There wasn't even a single Combat Soul warrior in the entire Qi Province.

That was the reason why the Martial Saint Dynasty had abandoned these two provinces. Both of them really were the weakest provinces in the Eastern Continent. Supposedly, Daoist Black should be feel happy that that the Martial Saint Dynasty came to the Qi Province to invite a genius to join them, because it's good fortune for the Qi Province. But, he didn't feel happy at all, and he believed that the Heavenly Sword Sect and Valley of Happiness felt the same.

They all knew very well what kind of person Nanbei Chao was. He was not someone who would be content with a small place like this. Even if he wasn't invited to join the Martial Palace, the overall picture of the Qi Province would still be broken apart by this man. Once Nanbei Chao joins the Martial Palace and gets cultivated by both the Martial Palace and the Martial Saint Dynasty, his cultivation level will soar up into the skies. With the intense relationship between the Qi Province's four big sects, all three other sects would have to soon face a huge threat.

But Jiang Chen who was sitting opposite of them had an excited

expression. His mind was experiencing a huge fluctuation now. He never feared his enemy becoming strong, because in his mind, the more powerful his enemy was, the bigger challenge he would have to face. The discovery of the Martial Saint Dynasty and Martial Palace had sent a turmoil through his mind. In an instant, he had discovered a new target; the Martial Saint Dynasty and the Martial Palace.

Nanbei Chao was someone who wouldn't be content with a small place, and Jiang Chen was a true dragon who would sooner or later soar through the highest of heavens. The small Qi Province was just a tiny stepping stone for Jiang Chen's grand future, and thus, the Martial Palace and the Martial Saint Dynasty had become his next target.

Jiang Chen had great ambitions and sooner or later, he would reach the top of the Eastern Continent and begin his journey back to the Divine Continent. He would reclaim what belonged to him in his previous life. His Saint Sword was still residing in Cliff of Saints, and 100 years ago, he had used it to split open the doorway to the Realm of Immortals. In this life, he was going to slice the heavens.

This was Jiang Chen's grand ambition. The Qi Province was just his first step towards his final goal, the Martial Saint Dynasty and the Martial Palace was his next step.

"That doesn't matter to me. The stronger Nanbei Chao becomes, the better it will be. I'm never afraid of my opponent becoming stronger. If not, the one-year fight appointment would just be meaningless. Sect Chief, don't worry too much, the overall state of

the Qi Province will soon change, and it won't take long before it happens. However, it won't be because of Nanbei Chao, but me, Jiang Chen."

Jiang Chen slowly stood up from his seat. With both hands behind his back, and his head tilted a little bit upwards, he stared at the moon above the skies with a pair of bright eyes. The energy he emitted couldn't be ignored.

Daoist Black and Guo Shan looked at each other, both of them could see a shocked look in their eyes. Jiang Chen had always given them a different kind of impression, and right now, this young man right in front of them seemed so mighty. It was the spirit of one trying to reach the top of the heavens. He was just standing there, but he gave them an impression that he was someone above all, making it impossible for them to not admire him.

"Fine, Jiang Chen, you're truly amazing. Your potential is actually much greater than Nanbei Chao's, and I truly hope the Black Sect will have a peerless genius. And I wish that one day, the Black Sect's name will be known throughout the entire Eastern Continent."

Daoist Black stood up, then he patted Jiang Chen's shoulder and left.

"Brother, you're a man full of miracles, there is nothing in this world that you cannot accomplish. I believe that even Nanbei Chao can't get in your way."

Guo Shan sincerely said, “However, you cannot underestimate Nanbei Chao. He has now broken through to the Divine Core realm, so you need to have a sense of urgency, and you can’t relax with your cultivation.”

“I found a treasure during my trip to Misty Mountain, and with it, I believe I can break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm. Older brother Guo, I’ll return to my place and enter secluded cultivation, please help me take good care of Little Yu and Brother Yan.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist towards Guo Shan.

“Brother, you just focus on your cultivation, your brother I will take care of everything here.”

Guo Shan patted his own chest as he promised.

Jiang Chen led Big Yellow and left Guo Shan’s mountain peak, then he returned to his own courtyard. Although he had broken through to the Heavenly Core realm, he still hadn’t officially become an inner circle disciple, so he was still staying at the same place.

Of course, Jiang Chen didn’t really care about the inner circle title. With his current reputation in the Black Sect, even the Divine Core Sect Elders had to be respectful in front of him. That title meant nothing for him.

The damaged courtyard had already been repaired by Wang Yun and the other disciples, and it looked just like it previously did. When Jiang Chen returned to his courtyard, he immediately entered secluded cultivation.

“Big Yellow, I’m going to enter secluded cultivation and absorb this golden egg, and I think I need about 1-2 days to do it. Please help me guard the place for the time being, don’t allow anyone to disturb me during this period.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Damn you, you always ask daddy here to do it! Master dog is a mighty existence, but you still ask me to guard the place for you!”

Big Yellow said with a slight hint of depression in his words.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes, then he slapped Big Yellow’s head. He immediately recalled that every time he had asked Big Yellow to guard while he cultivated, this dog had gone to sleep. Of course, Big Yellow would yield a leap in his cultivation every time he woke up from his slumber.

“Damned dog, shut up and do as I say, unless you’re going to sleep. However, if you do go to sleep, you better break through to the Divine Core realm! If you don’t guard me during my secluded cultivation, and don’t break through to the Divine Core realm, daddy here will break your dog balls for sure!”

After threatening Big Yellow, Jiang Chen turned around and walked into his room while ignoring the murderous glare from Big Yellow.

“How dare he threaten to break my dog balls?! This is ridiculous! Damn it, master dog is so pissed off, ruff ruff ruff! Damn buddy, daddy will bite your butt once your finish cultivating!”

Big Yellow grinded his teeth as he bounced and rolled around angrily in the courtyard.

Within the room, Jiang Chen was sitting on a cushion with his legs crossed. He adjusted himself to an optimal condition, then he retrieved the golden egg from his storage ring.

“This golden egg contains the source energy of Firethorn Savage, and the energy is massive. If I can absorb it all, I will be able to form another 100 Dragon Marks and break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm. When that time comes, those ordinary Mid Divine Core warrior won’t be my match any more.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. This golden egg was definitely an unexpected gain during his trip to Misty Mountain. He was soon going to enter Inferno Hell, and it was a place filled with great dangers. If he was able to break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm and increase his overall combat strength, then that would give him more confidence when entering Inferno Hell.

Besides, Jiang Chen witnessed how Firethorn Savage fought, he had a really great interest in his innate ability. The ability gave

him a powerful defense, as well as an attack. If Jiang Chen was able to inherit Firethorn Savage's innate ability, it would give him another really powerful skill.

Buzz...

Buzzing started sounding out from Jiang Chen's body. The Dragon Transformation skill had begun circulating at full speed and absorbing the golden egg bit by bit.

Early morning the next day, when the sun appeared in the skies far away, a loud shout suddenly sounded out near the Black Sect's main gate.

“Jiang Chen, come out and face your death now!”

The shout was loud as a clap of thunder, and it sounded out throughout the entire Black Mountain. The sound waves turned into ripples which swept across the entire place, causing everyone in the Black Sect to hear it loud and clearly.

“Who the hell is that? Why is he shouting near the main gate so early in the morning? Does he think the Black Sect has no one who can defeat him?”

“Damn it, who the fuck is that, how dare he come to our Black Sect and ask senior disciple Jiang to face his death? Is he here to commit suicide?”

“I think he came here to commit suicide. Last time this happened, that Li Wuling from the Heavenly Sword Sect came here early in the morning and wanted to kill senior disciple Jiang to avenge his brother, Li Wushuang, but in the end, he was killed by senior disciple Jiang.”

“Let’s go check it out, let’s find out who is seeking his own death so eagerly.”

Soon after, many disciples emerged from the Black Sect. All inner circle disciple were flying towards the scene, and the outer circle disciples were sprinting towards the scene.

Right at this moment, above the skies outside the Black Sect, a man wearing a grey robe was floating in the skies. The man looked to be in his late twenties, he had a handsome face, and he portrayed a domineering image. He was unleash an imposing energy, and his killing intent was soaring.

A short sword was embroidered on the man’s chest; it was the Heavenly Sword Sect symbol.

“Damn it, he is from the Heavenly Sword Sect, but who is this guy? Why have I never seen him before?”

“Such powerful energy, he is a Divine Core warrior! Since when did the Heavenly Sword Sect have such a young Divine Core warrior?”

“I know him, his name is Yun Can. He was once the number one genius in the Heavenly Sword Sect, and he broken through to the Divine Core realm two years ago and became one of the few Heavenly Sword Sect’s core disciples. After that, he went somewhere to train, and now he is back.”

“What? A Heavenly Sword Sect core disciple? Any disciple from the four big sects who can break through to the Divine Core realm before becoming 30 years old would become a core disciples, but there is only a limited number of core disciples, and most of them have gone to some bigger places to train. Thus, most of them are not residing within their respective sects. I think this Yun Can is here to kill senior disciple Jiang and avenge Liang Xiao.”

.....

Many people recognized this man, he was a core disciple from the Heavenly Sword Sect. In the Qi Province, core disciples was just a symbolic title. Normally, there wouldn’t be more than 2 core disciples in every individual sect. Those who could become a core disciples was usually a rare genius, and all of them had their own prides. Once they broke through to the Divine Core realm, they would leave the Qi Province and cultivate themselves in bigger and stronger provinces.

Yun Can was a rare genius from the Heavenly Sword Sect. He had broken through to the Divine Core realm two years ago and had left the Heavenly Sword Sect, and he just came back recently and learned that Liang Xiao was killed by Jiang Chen. That’s why he became so angry and came to the Black Sect to kill Jiang Chen.

“A core disciple, that’s a real genius! Those Sect Elders of the Heavenly Sword Sect couldn’t attack senior disciple Jiang personally after he killed Liang Xiao, and there are no more disciples who can defeat senior disciple Jiang amongst all younger generation disciples of the Heavenly Sword Sect. Since Yun Can is back, they can use a younger generation genius to challenge another one, that would give them an excellent excuse.”

“Those core disciples are all abnormal monsters! Although Yun Can is only an Early Divine Core warrior, he is able to fight a Mid Divine Core warrior! I’m afraid senior disciple Jiang won’t be his match at all.”

Chapter 190 – Qing Styx's Fury

The arrival of Yun Can had shaken the entire Black Sect. At the same time, the name of Yun Can began spreading across all disciples. Many of them had heard his name before, but they had never seen him in person. He was after all one of the legendary men from the Heavenly Sword Sect, and was very famous two years ago. If anyone said they had never heard his name before, they should be ashamed.

The news about Jiang Chen killing Liang Xiao had spread across the entire province, and of course, the Heavenly Sword Sect had gotten the news as well. Liang Xiao was the number one genius of the Heavenly Sword Sect, and if there were no accidents, he would become the next core disciple. His death had definitely made the Heavenly Sword Sect suffer a great loss.

If it was a Divine Core Sect Elder from the Black Sect who killed Liang Xiao, the Heavenly Sword Sect would definitely erupt with anger and go all out against the Black Sect. But, Liang Xiao was killed by Jiang Chen. Besides, when Jiang Chen killed Liang Xiao, he had a much weaker cultivation level compared to Liang Xiao, and everybody knew this.

There was an unwritten rule amongst the four big sects of the Qi Province, so it was rare for an elder to get involved in the fights amongst younger generation geniuses. So, it all depended on their own abilities to fight each other and decided who the last one standing would be.

Therefore, although the Heavenly Sword Sect was extremely

angry and wished to tear Jiang Chen into pieces, their elders didn't dare openly come to the Black Sect to find trouble with Jiang Chen, they couldn't shame their own faces. The number one genius from the Heavenly Sword Sect was killed by a new rising star of the Black Sect, and this brought huge disgrace onto the Heavenly Sword Sect. Besides, it happened because Liang Xiao tried assassinating Jiang Chen, and therefore, the Heavenly Sword Sect's management couldn't openly get revenge.

And even if they did want to avenge Liang Xiao, they would have to wait until Jiang Chen left the Black Sect. Jiang Chen had become stronger and stronger, and it seemed like he was going to become the second Nanbei Chao. All elders of the Heavenly Sword Sect wished to kill Jiang Chen as quickly as possible, but they simply couldn't do it with him still being within the Black Sect.

The return of Yun Can had given the Heavenly Sword Sect an opportunity to kill Jiang Chen. Yun Can was also a genius of the younger generation, and no one would say anything bad about a young generation genius fighting another one. As long as they could kill Jiang Chen, not only would the blood debt caused by Liang Xiao's death be paid off, it would also make the Heavenly Sword Sect rise in fame. But, the most important thing was that Jiang Chen would be killed.

“Jiang Chen, don't be a shirker, come out and face your death! Yun Can from the Heavenly Sword Sect is here to challenge you!”

Yun Can's challenge surged throughout the entire Black Mountain.

“Fuck, why is every single person from the Heavenly Sword Sect so shameless? Last time it was that Li Wuling, and now it’s this Yun Can! Senior disciple Jiang is only a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, but this Yun Can is a well-known Divine Core warrior, and he doesn’t even feel ashamed about challenging a Mid Heavenly Core warrior.”

“That’s right, if senior disciple Jiang was a Divine Core warrior, this Yun Can would be running as far away from here as possible the moment he heard senior disciple Jiang’s name. I don’t think he would have the courage to come here.”

“Senior disciple Jiang used his true abilities to kill Liang Xiao, and according to what I know, it was Fan Kun who secretly informed Liang Xiao and had him ambush senior disciple Jiang. But in the end, he failed and got killed by senior disciple Jiang, so he can only blame himself for lacking abilities. I think this Yun Can is similar to Liang Xiao.”

.....

Yun Can’s arrogant attitude had pissed off many disciples of the Black Sect, but although they were angry, no one really dared stand out and confront Yun Can. The Black Sect’s core disciples were still away from the sect.

Within the Black Sect, Guo Shan who was resting and cultivating heard the shouts as well. His expression instantly changed, and at the same time, Big Yellow flew towards Guo Shan while shouting, “Old man Guo Shan, hurry up and get rid of that stupid guy. Jiang Chen is in a critical moment of his cultivation, he has no time to

fight that guy now.”

“Alright, I’ll go right now.”

Guo Shan nodded his head. He knew that Big Yellow was speaking the truth. He immediately stood up and flew towards the Black Sect’s main gate.

“Old man Guo Shan, tell that guy he will have to wait another two days if he wants to challenge Jiang Chen. Two days later, Jiang Chen will beat him so much that his mother will be unable to recognize him.”

Big Yellow said.

“Haha, fine.”

Guo Shan laughed out heartily. He believed Big Yellow’s words. Currently, Jiang Chen was able to kill any ordinary Early Divine Core warriors, and he might not be able to defeat a genius like Yun Can. However, if Jiang Chen broke through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, that would be a completely different story, and Yun Can would definitely not be his match. Jiang Chen would be able to crush him in an instant.

“Jiang Chen, why have you still not come out?”

Yun Can was extremely aggressive as he kept shouting for Jiang Chen.

“Shut up!”

Right at this moment, a loud shout sounded out from within the Black Sect. In the next second, everyone at the scene saw Sect Elder Guo Shan coming with great speed and an angry expression on his face.

“Yun Can, why are you shouting from the Black Sect’s entrance so early in the morning? Didn’t your parents teach you any manners? Do you believe I won’t kill you right now?”

Guo Shan said in a stern manner.

“Hmph! Try to kill me? Unless you really have some abilities, I don’t have time for you! Let that Jiang Chen out right now, I want to kill him today and avenge junior disciple Liang Xiao!”

Yun Can let out a cold snort. He simply looked down at Guo Shan. Core disciples were usually proud and thought nothing about others. Although Guo Shan was one level higher than him, if they really engaged in a fight, Guo Shan would have a hard time defeating him.

Yun Can had broken through to the Divine Core realm two years ago, and he was now a peak Early Divine Core warrior now, just a few steps away from breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm.

“Let me tell you this, Jiang Chen has no time for you now. However, if you want to challenge him, you’ll have to wait for two more days. In two days, he will beat you so much that even your mother will be unable to recognize you. If you keep yelling without any manners, don’t blame me for sending someone powerful to attack you now.”

Guo Shan sneered.

“Haha, Yun Can, did you hear that? In two days, senior disciple Jiang will beat you until your mother can’t recognize you anymore! I think you better hurry up and get lost, and avoid coming here again! You don’t want what happened to Liang Xiao to happen to you, really.”

“That’s right, senior disciple Jiang never shows any mercy when he attacks! If you get yourself killed here, nobody will help bury your dead corpse. It would be a really tragic death.”

Wang Yun and Huang Zheng were trash talking and laughing out loudly.

“Hmph! Presumptuous! Fine, I’ll return in two days. Tell Jiang Chen to wash his neck for me. Two days later, I, Yun Can, will return once again, and kill him!”

After saying that, Yun Can turned around and left.

“Senior disciple Jiang really accepted Yun Can’s challenge... Is it

because he's close to another breakthrough?"

"It's hard to tell. Senior disciple Jiang is probably in secluded cultivation right now, he might be able to breakthrough again during these two days, and if that is the case, he will be able to defeat Yun Can without many problems."

"You're right, senior disciple Jiang is a peerless genius, his potential is no less than Nanbei Chao's. His cultivation speed is extremely fast, and he can't be judged with ordinary standards. Besides, senior disciple Jiang would never do something he wasn't completely confident about. If he says he'll accept Yun Can's challenge in two days, that means he really has the confidence to do so."

"Haha, if senior disciple Jiang really kills a core disciple from the Heavenly Sword Sect, his fame will definitely grow exponentially, and it'll prove that he is able to fight Nanbei Chao!"

All the disciples of the Black Sect carried excited looks on their faces. Jiang Chen's reputation had left an eternal mark in their hearts.

At the same time, Qian Province, Green Sanctuary Sect.

Early in the morning, a figure flew out from the Green Sanctuary Sect with extreme speed. In just a few breaths time, he arrived at Misty Mountain's outer perimeter. The man was the Green Sanctuary Sect's Sect Chief, Qing Styx.

Qing Styx suffered pretty serious injuries during his battle with Firethorn Savage, but he had now fully recovered from that. The first thing he wanted to do now that he had fully recovered was to kill Firethorn Savage and get rid of the Green Sanctuary Sect's biggest rival.

“Firethorn Savage, I know you are in a serious weakened state right, so let me see how you are going to fight me. As long as I can kill you, this mountain will belong to the Green Sanctuary Sect, and we will be able to enter the third sector whenever we want!”

A prideful smile emerged on Qing Styx's face. He seemed to be in high spirits, and he was imagining what would happen after he killed Firethorn Savage. Not only would the Green Sanctuary Sect get complete control over Misty Mountain, with the help of Firethorn Savage's demon soul, he would certainly be able to break through the bottleneck that had trapped him for so many years and reach the Combat Soul realm.

Qing Styx flew above the skies of Misty Mountain. He held a spear in his hand, and with every step he took, his energy level would rise. Therefore, when he arrived at the center of Misty Mountain, his energy level had become extremely strong, and he portrayed an enormous killing intent. His combat strength had also been adjusted to its maximum.

“Firethorn Savage, come out and face your death!”

Qing Styx's shout shook the entire sky. At the same time, he arrived in front of Firethorn Savage's scene. The scene in front of him made him trip on his own feet, and he almost fell down from

the skies.

He saw Firethorn Savage, but what he saw was a dead body. The entire field located in the middle of the mountain had been splashed with Firethorn Savage's blood. It had been two days, but the blood hadn't completely dried up yet.

Firethorn Savage's body was covered in wounds, his brain was dug out, and cracks could be seen everywhere. A violent fight had obviously happened here.

“How could this be possible? Who did this?”

Qing Styx was stunned. In an instant, all his dreams about the Green Sanctuary Sect's future, all his great plans, were all shattered.

With a blink of his eyes, Qing Styx entered the cave and found out the golden egg was missing as well. The situation almost made him throw up a mouthful of blood.

Qing Styx started breathing rapidly with extreme fury. It felt like someone had stolen his most precious and cherished treasures.

“Jiang Chen, it must be that young man whose name is Jiang Chen! Firethorn Savage was his real target, and he used the golden egg to frame my Green Sanctuary Sect and make us fight Firethorn Savage, and in the end, he was the one to reap all the harvest! What a crafty trick, damn it! This is ridiculous!”

In an instant, Qing Styx understood everything. Anyone could use their nose to understand what had happened by looking at the mess in front. What Qing Styx had not expected was that Firethorn Savage's weakened state was so weak that he couldn't even defend himself from a Heavenly Core young man and a dog. If he knew he was so weak, Qing Styx wouldn't spend two days to recover his injuries, he would have just attacked right away.

“Jiang Chen, I'll definitely kill you!”

Qing Styx roared out with extreme fury. He stared towards the Qi Province while covered in fury. All his hopes were gone, his fruit of labor that was supposed to belong to him was now gone, it was all taken by Jiang Chen.

Chapter 191 – Elite Trouble Maker

Qing Styx was furious, extremely furious. His lungs seemed like they were going to explode due to the unbearable madness. When a man was filled with hope, and had even seen the lights of these hopes in front of him, but suddenly discovers that all his hopes had become illusions, and everything had shattered like glass; this kind of emotion was not something ordinary people could understand.

The Green Sanctuary Sect and Firethorn Savage had fought a violent battle which had resulted in severe damage to both sides. At the same time, Firethorn Savage was the Green Sanctuary Sect's biggest hope for rising. Qing Styx was dying to become a Combat Soul warrior and rule the entire Qian Province, he was longing for the Qian Province to become like the other provinces who also had Combat Soul warriors. He wanted to get the Martial Saint Dynasty's attention.

But it was now gone, it was all gone.

Firethorn Savage's demon soul was gone, but Qing Styx still brought the body with him. He carried the mountain-like body back to the Green Sanctuary Sect. Firethorn Savage's body was filled with useful things, and just his fur alone would be enough to make a lot of defensive items.

On the same day after Qing Styx returned to the Green Sanctuary Sect, he immediately summoned a few Divine Core warriors and proceeded towards the Qi Province.

“Bastard! This is ridiculous! That little bastard really killed Firethorn Savage while he was in his weakest state, he has taken everything that belongs to the Green Sanctuary Sect!”

“Kill him, we must destroy him and get rid of our great hatred!”

“Let’s go, proceed to the Black Sect! We’ll ask Daoist Black to hand over Jiang Chen, and if he refuses then the Green Sanctuary Sect will become his enemy!”

.....

All the Green Sanctuary Sect Elders were filled with righteous rage, and fury could be seen on their faces. The situation made it seem like Jiang Chen had just abducted their daughters, causing a deeply rooted hatred.

Qing Styx had become really furious this time. If he couldn’t kill Jiang Chen, a knot would form in his heart, and if he allowed this to keep pressuring him, he would never be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm for the rest of his life.

The mighty Green Sanctuary Sect was a respected sect in the Qian Province, but it was fooled by a young man. If they couldn’t do something about it and bring back their reputation, the Green Sanctuary Sect would become a laughing stock in the Qian Province.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen was completely immersed in a

state of cultivation, and all his focus was on absorbing the golden egg. Therefore, he didn't pay any attention to what was happening outside.

The golden egg the size of a human's head was revolving in midair in front of Jiang Chen. Countless blood red Dragon Marks dashed out from Jiang Chen's body and covered the entire golden egg. The energy contained within the golden egg started flowing into Jiang Chen's body, and with help from the Dragon Transformation skill, the energies were quickly transformed into the purest energy, then it entered Jiang Chen's Qi Sea and circulated around his Heavenly Core, and started forming into new Dragon Marks.

Completely absorbing the golden egg was no easy task, it had to be done bit by bit. If it was absorbed too fast, the energy contained within would be wasted. In any case, Jiang Chen had plenty of time right now, so he wanted to fully utilize this golden egg and break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm.

After a restless night, a quarter of the golden egg had been absorbed, helping Jiang Chen form 25 Dragon Marks, making it a total of 328 Dragon Marks in his body. This was the terrifying power of the Dragon Transformation skill, with each new Dragon Mark formed, Jiang Chen's overall combat strength would increase.

Jiang Chen was cultivating with a peace of mind right now, and Big Yellow was fulfilling his duty by guarding outside. However, none of the Black Sect disciples could have a peace of mind now. The arrival of Yun Can had created a turmoil amongst them,

everyone knew what was going to happen in two days. If Jiang Chen really broke through, a violent fight was inevitable.

Late in the afternoon, another disturbance happened outside the Black Sect's main gate. More than five overbearing energies were quickly approaching.

“Little bastard Jiang Chen, come out and face your death!”

A frightening loud shout sounded out throughout the mountains. The sound waves were many times more powerful than Yun Can's, and even though it came from a distance far away, it still made many people feel pain in their ears.

“What the fuck, again?! What happened? When is this going to end?”

“Damn it, what did Jiang Chen do, why are there so many people with grudges looking for him? Look at them, I think their hatred towards Jiang Chen is extremely huge.”

“Since senior disciple Jiang came to the Black Sect, trouble has come with seemingly no stop; there is no peace in the inner circle or the outer circle. Senior disciple Jiang really is a devil incarnate, my idol!”

.....

All Black Sect disciples were soon going to throw up their blood.

All of them were wondering what had happened today; Yun Can just left in the morning, and later that day, another group of people who wanted to kill Jiang Chen appeared. Judging from their energies, this group was much more powerful than Yun Can.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Once again, many disciples emerged from their locations. They were now even faster than they were in the morning, all of them wanted to see who were coming for Jiang Chen, and find out what Jiang Chen had actually done.

Outside the Black Sect's main gate, a group of five old men were floating in the skies. All of them wore the same green uniform, and the leading man had the strongest energy, which was no weaker than Daoist Black's.

"Heavens, where did these men come from? Their cultivation bases are so strong!"

"I can sense that the cultivation of their leader is no weaker than Sect Chief! However, I have never seen these people before... Since when did the Qi Province have so many strong warriors?"

"They are definitely not from the other three big sects, perhaps they aren't even from the Qi Province? Oh my, what has senior disciple Jiang done? Look at their faces, it seems like they're going to eat someone alive!"

.....

When these disciples found out the cultivation levels of this group of people, all of them were shocked. The overall strength of these people were many times stronger than Yun Can. However, none of them knew where they came from. So many Divine Core warriors just to hunt Jiang Chen down, this could be considered as another kind of ability. None of the disciples here had the ability to make something like this happen.

“Get that Jiang Chen out here as soon as possible, I want him to hand over Firethorn Savage’s demon soul! If not, I won’t let him off easily today!”

Qing Styx’s shout was like a massive clap of thunder, vast and mighty.

“Who dares wreak havoc in the Black Sect?!”

At this point of time, a shout similar to Qing Styx’s shout sounded out from the Black Sect’s inner area. In the next second, Daoist Black was seen flying through the skies. He arrived in front of the Black Sect’s front gate, and next to him there was a few more Divine Core Sect Elders, Guo Shan included.

“Who are you, and why are you shouting in front of the Black Sect’s front gate?”

Daoist Black glanced at Qing Styx and a few others. He was not

familiar with these people.

“Judging by your cultivation level, I suppose you are Black Sect’s Sect Chief, Daoist Black? I am the Green Sanctuary Sect’s Sect Chief, Qing Styx. We travelled far for one single reason; we want Jiang Chen. We have no intention to seek conflict with the Black Sect, so as long as you can hand Jiang Chen over to us, we’ll turn around and leave immediately.”

Qing Styx went straight to the point. He guessed that Firethorn Savage’s demon soul was still with Jiang Chen, and therefore, as long as he could find Jiang Chen, there was still a chance for him to retrieve the demon soul.

“What? The Sect Chief from a big sect in the Qian Province came all the way to the Black Sect personally? When did Jiang Chen go to the Qian Province to cause trouble?”

“Damn, Jiang Chen really is a devil incarnate! Not only did he cause so much trouble in the Qi Province, he even went to wreak havoc in the Qian Province. What did he do to the Green Sanctuary Sect that pissed them off so much?”

“What is a Firethorn Savage? Jiang Chen is a man who can really do a lot of things.”

Hearing that these men had come from the Qian Province, and that they were all Sect Elders of a big sect, including the Sect Chief, everyone on the spot became speechless. Jiang Chen’s ability to cause trouble was really good.

“Firethorn Savage’s demon soul?”

Daoist Black furrowed his brows. Perhaps no one else here knew what a Firethorn Savage was, but he knew about this demon beast. There was a Firethorn Savage residing within Misty Mountain, Qian Province, but it was impossible for Jiang Chen to obtain its demon soul.

“Sect Chief, let me explain what happened to you.”

Guo Shan immediately summarized all the information and passed it onto Daoist Black through his Divine Sense, giving him a picture of what had happened. In order to save Yan Chenyu, Jiang Chen had gone to Misty Mountain to hunt for Firethorn Savage, and in the end, he had used the Green Sanctuary Sect and caused them to suffer great losses.

After digestion all the information, Daoist Black became stunned. Jiang Chen really killed a peak Mid Divine Core Firethorn Savage, and he even obtained its demon soul. If Guo Shan hadn’t told him this personally, Daoist Black would have never believed it at all.

“Good, perfect! This young man will definitely become someone great in the future!”

Facing this threatening group of men from the Green Sanctuary Sect, not only did Daoist Black not feel any panic or nervousness, he was excited. Being able to accomplish something so huge, it proved that Jiang Chen was a man with careful thoughts. At the

same time, it also proved he was brave. A genius like this would definitely grow to be someone great in the future.

“Qing Styx, don’t you think that it is inappropriate for you to come here, in front of the Black Sect’s front gate to ask for our disciple?”

Daoist Black said.

“Daoist Black, Jiang Chen has cruelly killed the Sect Elders and disciples of the Green Sanctuary Sect, and he also framed us, causing us to suffer massive damage! The reason I am here today is to kill him, and I don’t think Daoist Black will want to offend a big sect like ours just for a tiny little disciple, right?”

Qing Styx said.

“I’m sorry, but I have to disappoint Qing Styx. I, Daoist Black am well known for being over protective with my own disciples. Besides, the Green Sanctuary Sect is such a big sect, and yet, you can’t even fight a ‘tiny little disciple’ of mine, and you even suffered massive damage? You should stay at home and do some self-reflection. Why do you still have the nerve to come here and ask me to hand my disciple over to you? Qing Styx, I think you better return to where you came from.”

Daoist Black said with a smile on his face. In his mind, Jiang Chen was his most precious disciple, so there was no way he would hand him over to them.

“That’s right, you are such a big sect, but you still suffered massive losses because of senior disciple Jiang, that’s really shameful! How do you still have the dignity to come here?”

Some disciples shouted.

“Daoist Black, no matter what, I, Qing Styx want to bring Jiang Chen away today! Do you really want to make the relationship between the Black Sect and the Green Sanctuary Sect become tense?”

Qing Styx was still furious.

“Hmph! Look carefully at where you are standing right now! This is the Qi Province, not your Qian Province! Don’t tell me you’re going to attack us with just the few of you?”

Daoist Black let out a cold snort. As the Sect Chief, he had to behaving domineeringly. Not just because he wanted to protect Jiang Chen, even if it was just an ordinary disciple, he wouldn’t just hand him over easily. If he really did do so, he would lose the trust of all his disciples, and he would have a hard time managing the Black Sect.

“Sect Chief, Daoist Black’s words are correct. This is the Qi Province, and we hold no advantages if we were to strike.”

Liu Hong whispered to Qing Styx.

“Hmph! I can’t return empty handed! Besides, that little bastard Jiang Chen might not have had the time to absorb Firethorn Savage’s demon soul yet, we can’t just give up right now.”

Qing Styx let out a cold snort. Firethorn Savage’s demon soul could help him achieve his dream, there was no way he could just give it up so easily. However, this Daoist Black just didn’t want to give way, and if they really wanted to strike, they were going to suffer losses for sure.

Chapter 192 – 410 Dragon Marks

“This Jiang Chen really is a trouble maker.”

Daoist Black laughed and talked to Guo Shan through his Divine Sense.

“Sect Chief, it looks like this Green Sanctuary Sect won’t give up easily, I think they bear a really deep grudge against Jiang Chen. If they didn’t, they wouldn’t be coming here personally. I might just have a trick to solve this though.”

Guo Shan said.

“Tell me.”

Daoist Black said.

“The Green Sanctuary Sect’s purpose is to kill Jiang Chen to vent their grievance, so if that is the case, we’ll give them an opportunity. Just let them send one of their genius disciple to fight Jiang Chen. Since there is already Yun Can from the Heavenly Sword Sect, I don’t think Jiang Chen will mind fighting one more person. This can also be a test for Jiang Chen.”

Guo Shan said.

“Alright, we’ll do as you said.”

Daoist Black's eyes lit up. He felt that Guo Shan's idea was pretty good. In an instant, he turned towards Qing Styx, and with a loud voice he said, "Qing Styx, the Black Sect has no intention of fighting the Green Sanctuary Sect. However, no matter what, Jiang Chen is my disciple, and you can't just bring him away from here. Beside, as a Sect Chief, fighting a younger generation genius is not something that fits your status. I have no idea what Jiang Chen did to your sect, but I'll give you all an opportunity; you can send one genius disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect, and no matter who it is, Jiang Chen will accept his challenge, as long as he is a younger generation disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect that is. I promise that none of us from the Black Sect will stop their fight, and no one will help Jiang Chen during the battle either."

"What a joke! Although that Jiang Chen is just a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, even an Early Divine Core Sect Elder was no match for him! Daoist Black, are you asking me to send my disciple here to get himself killed?"

Qing Styx angrily said. Although he had yet to meet Jiang Chen in person, it was a face that one of their Early Divine Core Sect Elders were killed by Jiang Chen.

"Don't tell me the Green Sanctuary Sect doesn't have any core disciples?"

Guo Shan said with a loud voice.

"Qing Styx, this is my bottom line, genius versus genius. This is

fair. If any of you old men want to strike, I, Daoist Black will definitely fight you till the end! Don't forget, this is the Qi Province, the Black Sect's territory. I believe you'd have zero advantages if we really were to fight."

Daoist Black said with a stern expression.

"Sect Chief, we could get Huo Yuner back from the Karst Cave to fight this Jiang Chen."

Liu Hong whispered to Daoist Styx.

"That's right, Huo Yuner broke through to the Divine Core realm one year ago! With his unique body characteristic, the Heavenly Flame Skill he has been cultivating, as well as the fact that he has been cultivating in the Karst Cave for nearly a year, I'm sure Jiang Chen won't be his match."

Another Sect Elder said. All the other Sect Elders nodded their heads in agreement. When a core disciple was mentioned, all of them immediately thought about Huo Yuner.

"Fine, let's return to the Qian Province now. Liu Hong, you'll personally go to the Karst Cave to get Huo Yuner. Send him here to kill Jiang Chen."

Qing Styx strengthened his spirit, then he led the rest of the Sect Elders and returned to where they came from. Although Qing Styx was eager to kill Jiang Chen, he knew that if Daoist Black got in his

way, he might not even be able to see Jiang Chen's face.

Also, he somehow agreed with Daoist Black's words. Fighting a tiny younger generation disciple with his status as a Sect Chief, that would really damage his reputation. Since they had made it clear that they could send a genius disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect to challenge Jiang Chen, no one from the Black Sect would stop them.

Although Jiang Chen could defeat and kill an Early Divine Core warrior, Huo Yun'er was not an ordinary person, he was a genius that couldn't be compared to any other ordinary warriors that were the same level as him. He was more capable of fighting than anyone who had a higher cultivation level than him.

The Green Sanctuary Sect had left, but the Black Sect was once again in a state of turmoil, and Jiang Chen had become everyone's focus. Everybody was guessing what would happen two days later. There was already Yun Can who wanted to fight him, and now there was the Green Sanctuary Sect. Also, nobody knew how powerful the Green Sanctuary Sect disciple would be.

The restless situation didn't bother Jiang Chen who was in a shut cultivation at all, for him, nothing was more important than absorbing the golden egg, now, he had absorbed half of it and it had allowed him to form another seventy dragon marks, making him have a total of three hundred and seventy-three dragon marks, closer to the four hundred mark.

The restless situation didn't bother Jiang Chen who was in secluded cultivation at all. For him, nothing was more important than absorbing the golden egg. He had now absorbed half of it, and

that had allowed him to form another

Although there was still 50% left of the golden egg remaining, the more Jiang Chen's cultivation advanced, the more difficult it would be for Dragon Marks to form. The energy required to form a new Dragon Mark would become bigger. But still, this golden egg was more than enough for Jiang Chen to break through to the Late Heavenly Core realm.

Time passed, and soon, another day had gone by, and the night had come.

Jiang Chen who had been sitting quietly in his room for two days suddenly opened up his eyes. Two bright beams shot out from his eyes, and the energy that he unintentionally unleashed from his body shook the entire room.

“Damn it, such a powerful energy! Buddy really broke through to the Late Heavenly Core realm.”

Sensing the energy, Big Yellow who had looked bored and tired suddenly had his ears stand up. He immediately turned around and looked towards Jiang Chen's room.

Within the room, Jiang Chen had completely absorbed the golden egg. He was in the middle of breaking through to the Late Heavenly Core realm. He shouted with a deep voice and retrieved a huge amount of Mortal Restoration Pills from his storage ring, then he just ate it all like it was something worthless.

The energy from this massive amount of Mortal Restoration Pills was absorbed by the Dragon Transformation skill, and was turned in streams of energies which rocked and flowed into Jiang Chen's Qi Sea with great speed.

At this moment, the Heavenly Core residing within the Qi Sea begun transforming. The fist-sized golden colored Heavenly Core began producing a buzzing sound and started trembling violently. Countless blood red Dragon Marks forcefully penetrated into it, and made its size double.

Jiang Chen's energy was extremely powerful, it was a foundation that no one could ever understand. He looked like an ancient demon beast, extremely formidable.

Right now, Jiang Chen had successfully broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, and he had a total of 400 Dragon Marks. However, due to the golden egg's energy not being completely depleted, Jiang Chen didn't stop cultivating. He also needed to stabilize the energy within his body and make his cultivation stand firmly at the Late Heavenly Core realm.

“He has broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, but he still doesn't want to come out? Don't tell me he is sleeping inside the room...”

Big Yellow had a depressed expression. However, he knew that there must be some reason why Jiang Chen hadn't come out, therefore he didn't disturb him, but continued guarding.

Early morning the next day, Yun Can arrived from far. He floated outside the Black Sect's main gate while portraying an image of grandeur. Just like two days ago, he shouted, "Jiang Chen, come out now and face your death!"

"Damn it, that Yun Can is really on time, he arrived so quickly."

"He is determined to kill Jiang Chen and get revenge for Liang Xiao. After waiting for two days, I'm sure he's starting to get impatient

"We haven't seen senior disciple Jiang for the last two days, I think he's still cultivating."

.....

The arrival of Yun Can marked the prelude of a violent fight. All disciples of the Black Sect stormed out from their locations and gathered at different places within Black Mountain, then they stared at the high spirited Yun Can.

"Since Yun Can is here, I wonder when the disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect will arrive?"

"I think he's on his way. Looks like the Green Sanctuary Sect is determined to kill Jiang Chen."

Many disciples carried excited expressions on their faces. This was the first time in history that a Heavenly Core warrior from the

Black Sect was going to fight a core disciple from another sect, it had never happened before. Therefore, everyone were eagerly anticipating it. If Jiang Chen could defeat Yun Can, the fight would definitely be recorded in the Black Sect's history. Even Nanbei Chao doesn't have such a record.

“Where is Jiang Chen? Why has he not come out yet? Does he really want to be a loser?”

With an arrogant and prideful expression, Yun Can repeatedly shouted from the skies.

“Can't you be just a little more patient? Senior disciple Jiang will be here for sure.”

“That's right! Why are you so impatient to getting yourself killed? You can live longer since senior disciple Jiang isn't here yet, why do you just not know how to cherish your own life?”

Wang Yun and Huang Zheng were yelling back him. The two of them were the earliest batch of Jiang Chen's followers, and their loyalty towards Jiang Chen had no comparison. Therefore, they kept provoking Yun Can for him.

“Who do you think you are? How dare you to talk to me like that, you are just seeking death!”

Yun Can's eyes widened as he gazed at Wang Yun and Huang Zheng. Yun Can would not take someone like them to heart.

“Such high self-esteem! Later, senior disciple Jiang will beat you so badly your own mother won’t be able to recognize you! I’ll wait and see how arrogant you’re going to be then!”

“Let him be, why are you talking so much to someone that is soon going to die?”

Wang Yun and Huang Zheng were echoing to each other, they were provoking Yun Can and making him feel pissed off. If his target wasn’t Jiang Chen today, he would definitely attack both of them right now.

“Ask Jiang Chen to come out and face his death immediately! There is no use wasting time and trying to be a loser!”

Yun Can continued his provoking.

Right now, within the Black Sect, Jiang Chen was still in his room. Big Yellow was walking back and forth outside his room. He could clearly hear all of Yun Can’s provocation, and it made him feel panicked.

“Big Yellow, what happened? Why haven’t brother Jiang finished cultivating?”

Guo Shan arrived from afar and asked with a worried tone. Yun Can was yelling and provoking outside, and if Jiang Chen didn’t go out to face him, it would seriously affect his reputation.

“I don’t know, this guy broke through last night, but he still hasn’t come out, damn it!”

Big Yellow was flustered and exasperated.

Right as Big Yellow’s words left his mouth, the door to Jiang Chen’s room was pushed open. Jiang Chen who was wearing pure white clothes walked out from the room with a bright smile on his face.

After spending the entire night, Jiang Chen had finally absorbed the entire golden egg, giving him a total of 410 Dragon Marks, as well as completely stabilizing his cultivation base at the Late Heavenly Core realm.

“My ancestor, you’re finally out! If you hadn’t come out by now, your master dog would shit on your head!”

Big Yellow said as he bared his teeth.

“Fuck you!”

Jiang Chen cursed out loud. He hadn’t done anything wrong, so why did this dog want to do something so disgusting?

“Big Yellow, I only asked you to guard me during my cultivation, why do you want to take a shit on my head?”

Jiang Chen felt speechless.

“Jiang Chen, come out now and face your death!”

Yun Can shouted once again. Only this time, Jiang Chen could hear him loudly and clearly.

“What happened? Which bastard is seeking death?”

Jiang Chen’s expression immediately became fierce.

“Now you know why. That guy has been shouting and yelling for quite some time, and your master dog can’t stand it anymore!”

Big Yellow said as he bounced around.

“Who is that?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

Chapter 193 – Killing In Order Of Arrival

“He is a core disciple of the Heavenly Sword Sect, Yun Can, an Early Divine Core warrior. He came two days ago and was clamoring to kill you and avenge Liang Xiao. However, since you were in secluded cultivation, me and Big Yellow told him to come back two days later, and here he is, early in the morning.”

Guo Shan said.

“Core disciple?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He had heard about core disciples from the four big sects, but he had never seen any of them before.

“Yun Can is the number one genius of the Heavenly Sword Sect, a famous person amongst the younger generation of the Qi Province. He broke through to the Divine Core realm two years ago and became a core disciple. After that, he left the Qi Province and continued cultivating in other bigger provinces. The reason why he came back was to kill you. Your growth has posed a serious threat to the Heavenly Sword Sect. Besides, you long ago became the Heavenly Sword Sect’s enemy. Not only have you killed many of their disciples, you even killed Liang Xiao. The main reason why the Heavenly Sword Sect sent Yun Can here is to kill you and get rid of the threat.”

Guo Shan explained the current situation to Jiang Chen.

“Hmph! So this is what they are up to. Fine, I also want to witness how strong a core disciple is. I’ll go check him out.”

A grin appeared on Jiang Chen’s face. He had now broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, and he had 410 Dragon Marks. His combat strength was extremely powerful, and with current cultivation base, he would be able to kill ordinary Mid Divine Core warrior. As for Early Divine Core warriors, he would be able to kill them in an instant. Even if this Yun Can was a genius amongst the younger generation, he could still kill him without too much trouble.

“Brother, this Yun Can is not an easy target, you have to be extra careful.”

Guo Shan reminded Jiang Chen.

“Careful shit! Little Chen has broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, with his abilities, if he attacks with all his strength, he could squeeze the shit out of that Yun Can!”

Big Yellow said while nodded his head. He had an unparalleled confidence in Jiang Chen. Because Jiang Chen could kill an Early Divine Core warrior while only being a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, no matter how strong this Yun Can was, he was just an Early Divine Core warrior. If Jiang Chen hadn’t broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, he might struggle a bit with dealing with him, but now it was a completely different story. Yun Can was nothing to him at all, so unless it was a Mid Divine Core Heavenly Sword Sect core disciple, Jiang Chen wouldn’t be defeated.

“Damned dog, can’t you be more civilized? Don’t keep mentioning shit when you talk.”

Guo Shan rolled his eyes.

The trio flew up into the skies, and in just the blink of an eye, they arrived at the Black Sect’s front gate.”

“Senior disciple Jiang is here! I told you, he doesn’t fear this Yun Can at all! Since he is here, I’m sure a violent fight will soon erupt!”

“I wonder who will win this fight. Yun Can is after all a genius who became famous a long time ago, and he is also a Divine Core warrior. He is not someone that any ordinary man can compare with.”

“I guess it will be senior disciple Jiang who wins the fight. He has never fought any fights where he isn’t completely confident of winning. Try to think about it, since the Qi Province competition, has senior disciple Jiang ever lost a single fight before?”

.....

The arrival of Jiang Chen had ignited the entire scene. He looked like a moon that was surrounded by a myriad of stars.

Yun Can's sight stopped on Jiang Chen, and with a cruel voice he asked, "So, are you that Jiang Chen?"

"That's right, who do you think you are? Tell me your name."

Jiang Chen replied with an indifferent voice. Of course, he knew who Yun Can was, but he never showed any politeness towards his enemy.

Hearing this, Yun Can immediately erupted with anger. How dare this guy ask who he thinks he was? He was the famous Yun Can, and no one dared talk to him in such an impolite tone. Although he had left the place for quite some time, his legend was still repeatedly told.

Yun Can was a legendary man, and although he had left two years ago and just came back, everyone who met him would still fear him. The way Jiang Chen talked to him was an insult to his dignity.

"Hmph! Jiang Chen, you killed Liang Xiao, so today I am here to avenge him! Accept my challenge immediately!"

Yun Can was extremely arrogant.

"Yun Can, it is no easy task to cultivate to your level. I am a merciful man, and my advice to you is to get the hell out of here as quickly as possible, it would be miserable if you followed Liang Xiao's footsteps. Oh right, forgot to tell you, Liang Xiao died a

horrible death, he was beheaded.”

Jiang Chen’s words had made Yun Can enraged. How does a tiny little Heavenly Core warrior dare have the audacity to ask him to get the hell out of here as quickly as possible? This was one of the biggest jokes he had ever heard.

“Jiang Chen, enough of your trash talk! Come here and face your death now!”

Yun Can unleashed his massive energy. He was now filled with killing intent. It looked like he had no intention of ever stopping until he tore Jiang Chen into pieces.

Swoosh Swoosh...

All of a sudden, a wild wind swept into the scene. A few other powerful energies were approaching from far, and in an instant, they arrived in front of the Black Sect’s front gate. All these men wore green clothes, and disciples of the Black Sect were very familiar with these men. They were from the Green Sanctuary Sect. A young man in his twenties stood next to Qing Styx, he had red hair which fluttered in the wild wind, even his eyebrows were red, and he wore a long red robe. With a muscular body and an arrogant expression, anyone could tell that he was a hot tempered man.

“The men from the Green Sanctuary Sect are here again! Look at that young man, I suppose he is the core disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect.”

“Damn it, first there was Yun Can, and now there is that guy. Let’s see how senior disciple Jiang is going to handle this.”

“Sect Chief said it before, as long as the Green Sanctuary Sect sends a younger generation disciple, he won’t interfere with the fight. Now, Jiang Chen has to deal with them by himself.”

The place entered turmoil once again. Today’s scene was much bigger than everyone’s imagination.

“They are from the Green Sanctuary Sect?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“Brother, the Green Sanctuary Sect came here two days ago, but they were blocked by Sect Chief. He asked them to send their core disciple here, and I supposed that man wearing red is their core disciple. He looks pretty strong.”

Guo Shan explained to Jiang Chen.

“Haha...”

Hearing this, Jiang Chen immediately burst out into laughter. He gazed at Qing Styx with a teasing look. He knew too well why the Green Sanctuary Sect was so angry and had even traveled to the Black Sect which was so far away to look for him. It was because of

Firethorn Savage.

“Sect Chief, he is that Jiang Chen, and there is that dog.”

Liu Hong said while gritting his teeth.

“Little bastard Jiang Chen, today I’ll have you chopped into pieces no matter what!”

Qing Styx shouted in extreme fury, completely forgetting that he was a Sect Chief. When he saw Jiang Chen, he immediately remembered Firethorn Savage. Jiang Chen reminded him about his own grand ambitions, which had now become shattered bubbles. He wanted to eat Jiang Chen alive.

“There are so many people who wants to kill me, but I am still alive and kicking.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. He didn’t expected so many things to happen right after he finished cultivating. However, he felt no fear. He considered this an opportunity to witness the abilities of the core disciples from the big sects.

“Huo Yun'er, kill him.”

Qing Styx said in a cruel manner.

The red haired young man took a step forwards, flames were

dancing around his body, and temperature around him had risen significantly.

“Jiang Chen, it is your fortune to be killed by me, Huo Yun'er.”

Compared to Yun Can, this Huo Yun'er was even more arrogant.

“It's very easy to get yourself burned when you play with fire. Huo Yun'er, let me give you an advice, get the hell out of here as quickly as possible, it is no fun to die here.”

Jiang Chen sneered. He could easily tell the roots of Huo Yun'er. Huo Yun'er was cultivating a powerful flame skill, and it gave him a pretty strong ability. If one were to compare the attack strength of Huo Yun'er and Yun Can, Huo Yun'er was actually stronger than Yun Can. But too bad, his opponent was Jiang Chen, and this had made all his advantages become disadvantages. In front of the True Dragon Flames, Huo Yun'er's flames were just a joke. Besides, Jiang Chen was an alchemist, and he was a master when it came to playing with fire.

“Ridiculous! How dare you talk to me like that?! You will die today even if you have ten lives!”

Huo Yun'er shouted out loudly. His arrogance seemed like it had no comparison.

“Damn it, has this guy eaten some explosive powder? How did he gain such a superior feeling to himself?”

Even Big Yellow couldn't bear his attitude.

"Jiang Chen, I never expected you to have so many enemies. However, brother, we need to attack according to who arrived first, Jiang Chen's life belongs to me. I don't think there is much you can do here."

Yun Can said.

"Who are you? How dare you get in front of me? Today, Jiang Chen's life belongs to me, Huo Yun'er!"

Huo Yun'er was getting more and more arrogant.

"Hmph! I am a core disciple from the Heavenly Sword Sect, Yun Can. This Jiang Chen has killed one of our geniuses, we have a great grievance with him. No matter what, I will kill him today! Who dares fight about this with me will be my enemy!"

Yun Can let out a cold snort.

With just a few words, Yun Can and Huo Yun'er had begun fighting each other. The scene had stunned all disciples of the Black Sect, and it had even made some of them angry.

"What the fuck, who do these two men think senior disciple Jiang is? Why do they sound like senior disciple Jiang is dead for

sure?”

“Damn it, this is ridiculous! They came to the Black Sect to challenge our man, and they’re still so arrogant! Fuck, even daddy here can’t stand them anymore! I want to slap their faces right now, but too bad, I’m not their match.”

“They talk like senior disciple Jiang is sure to die! Neither of you are senior disciple Jiang’s match, so why are you fighting each other to decide who will get killed first?! Idiots!”

.....

Not only the disciples of the Black Sect, even Jiang Chen felt speechless. He really had enough of these two idiots who had such high self-esteem.

“Hey, why don’t you two fight amongst each other to decide who will kill me? What do you think?”

Jiang Chen suggested in a serious manner.

“Huo Yun'er, are you sure you want to get in my way?”

Yun Can unleashed his massive energy.

“You’re the one who’s getting in my way.”

Flames danced around Huo Yun'er, his energy was no weaker than Yun Can's.

Seeing this, the expressions of all Green Sanctuary Sect Elders changed. They came here today to kill Jiang Chen. Huo Yun'er had a hot temper, and Yun Can was a man with an ultimate pride. If both of them engaged in a fight with each other, it would take a really tough fight to decide who the last man standing would be. In the end, both of them would suffer injuries, and this would just give Jiang Chen an easy fight.

“Huo Yun'er, stop now!”

Qing Styx shouted out loudly. He looked at Yun Can and said, “Since the Heavenly Sword Sect wants to kill Jiang Chen, we'll let you strike first.”

After all, this place was the Qi Province, and Qing Styx was no idiot. He had offended the Black Sect, so he did not want to offend the Heavenly Sword Sect as well. Judging from the current situation, Jiang Chen's death was already set in stone.

Chapter 194 – Firethorn Combat Armor

Hearing what Qing Styx said, although Huo Yuner wasn't happy with the decision, he couldn't deny Qing Styx's order. He simply let out a cold snort, then he returned to Qing Styx's side.

“Sect Chief, why did you concede? Why don't you let me kill that Yun Can first, then after that kill Jiang Chen? If Jiang Chen is killed by him, doesn't that mean we also won't be able to retrieve Firethorn Savage's demon soul?”

Huo Yuner said in an arrogant manner.

“Don't worry, I'll step in before Jiang Chen dies, then I'll get back the demon soul. It is better to let the core disciple of the Heavenly Sword Sect kill Jiang Chen, he can save us the hassle. Besides, Huo Yuner, do you really have the confidence you can kill this Yun Can?”

Daoist Styx looked at Huo Yuner.

Hmph!

Huo Yuner let out a snort, then he turned his head away. Obviously, although he didn't fear Yun Can, it was also impossible for him to kill Yun Can right now. A core disciple from a big sect was no easy target.

“I have a suggestion, since both of you have come from afar, why

don't you attack me at the same time? I'll fight both of you alone. Besides, I won't want people to say I'm bullying you."

Once again, Jiang Chen spoke with an indifferent tone. However, what he said almost made both geniuses die from extreme anger.

"Kaka, senior disciple Jiang is really mean, if they are currently competing amongst themselves, I'm sure neither of them are senior disciple Jiang's match at all."

"They better be pissed off! Just look at how arrogant they are, I really wish I could leave my shoe mark on their faces."

All the disciples from the Black Sect burst out into laughter. They got very excited whenever Jiang Chen fought someone who wasn't from the Black Sect.

"Hmph! Us two fighting you alone? You really think too highly of yourself! You're just a mere Heavenly Core warrior, I could kill you with one hand!"

Huo Yun'er let out a cold snort. He had become so arrogant that even his father wouldn't be able to recognize him.

"Jiang Chen, enough of your bullshit, come up here at once and face your death!"

Yun Can's energy climbed to its maximum.

“Little Chen, enough wasting time, hurry up and kill them so we can go back for some drinks.”

Big Yellow said as he shook his head. His words were even more provoking than Jiang Chen’s.

“Fine.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. With a sway of his body, he arrived in front of Yun Can.

“So you’re Yun Can? I’ll beat you until stars glitter around you head!”

Two fierce rays shout out from Jiang Chen’s eyes. At the same time, his energy was rising quickly.

“What powerful energy! He has broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm!”

Liu Hong who was standing far away had a change in expression.

“This guy was able to kill an Early Divine Core warrior when he was only a Mid Heavenly Core warrior, and now he has broken through again, I think it will be even tougher to defeat him.”

Another Sect Elder was shocked as well. He witnessed how strong

Jiang Chen could be. Now, judging from the energy Jiang Chen unleashed, he was shocked that Jiang Chen had broken through again. This meant that Jiang Chen had become even stronger, and with the incredible abilities of this man, perhaps neither Yun Can or Huo Yun'er would be his match.

“Face your death, Doomsday Palm!”

Yun Can instantly struck out with a mighty combat skill, the Doomsday Palm. Just the name alone was enough to scare people. This was an extremely powerful combat skill, and once it was unleashed, it would carry a devastating force that would break its target apart.

Bang!

An explosion sounded out, and in the next second, a gigantic silver palm taller than 3 meters suddenly appeared, and it caused endless airwaves to sweep across the place. The massive force even caused the air to produce violent cracking sounds. The palm carried a really devastating momentum as it forcefully thrust out towards Jiang Chen.

“So strong! This is a Mid Earth ranked combat skill, it’s so frightening! If I was the one who had to face this palm attack, I’m sure I’d be torn to pieces in an instant and die a horrible death!”

“The previous number one genius from the Heavenly Sword Sect is really incredible! I think those ordinary Mid Divine Core warriors would be seriously wounded by this attack!”

“I wonder how senior disciple Jiang is going to handle this. He looks so calm right now... When I think about it, I’ve never seen him panic before... I really wish to know why he can have such high confidence!”

.....

When a skillful warrior strikes, everyone could tell whether or not he had possessed great skill. When Yun Can struck with the Doomsday Palm, he immediately shocked everyone present, even Huo Yuner couldn’t help but start taking Yun Can seriously.

With both eyes shining brightly, Jiang Chen stood firmly right in the middle of the skies. If this happened before he broke through to the Late Heavenly Core realm, Jiang Chen would definitely choose to dodge Yun Can’s attack and have a hard time defending himself, but now he had over 400 Dragon Marks in his body, and that gave his combat strength a significant improvement compared to before. Now, he was not someone Yun Can could mess with.

“Hmph!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort, and he didn’t move. Right as the gigantic silver palm was about to hit him, he suddenly forcefully struck out a punch. His fist was covered with blood red dragon scales, and there were even some dragons flying around him. He had unleashed a massive amount of energy.

Bang!

Jiang Chen's punch carried a powerful force that could shatter a mountain, the force of a few million jins. Nothing could stand still when faced with this massive attack. In an instant, Jiang Chen's fist slammed into the Doomsday Palm.

Crack!

A cracking sound could be heard from the gigantic silver palm as countless cracks appeared on it, and in the next second, it shattered, turning into bits of sparks that disappeared into the thin air. As for Jiang Chen, he was still maintaining the posture of punching, and his body wasn't moving at all.

What happened brought a storm to the entire crowd, nobody could maintain their calm when witnessing this. Numerous shocked gazes locked onto Jiang Chen's face, even those disciples who were super confident in Jiang Chen became stunned. They knew how mighty Jiang Chen was, but they didn't think he'd be this mighty. His opponent was after all Yun Can.

"Oh heavens, what did I just witness? Jiang Chen just shattered the Doomsday Palm with his bare hand, this is really frightening!"

"What kind of monster is this? How can a man gain so much strength so quickly? He just came to the Black Sect not long ago..."

"Sigh... This is what a real genius is like... Compared to Jiang Chen, no one can call themselves a genius. In the entire Qi Province, I'm afraid only Nanbei Chao can compare with him."

.....

Every time Jiang Chen attacked, he would certainly bring a storm to the crowd. It had already become the norm, and most people were already numb to it.

“What a strong man, how could the Black Sect have such a monster?”

Qing Styx’s expression changed. With his experience, he could easily tell how powerful the Doomsday Palm was. Initially, he had thought that even if Jiang Chen was able to withstand the attack, it would take him some effort. However, he had never expected that Jiang Chen would shatter the attack with just a punch. The mighty Doomsday Palm couldn’t pose a single threat to him, and this really shocked Qing Styx.

“His muscles strength is extremely high! I can sense he has a massive amount of qi and blood, and his raw strength is like that of a dragon. He is just like a beast in human form!”

Liu Hong widened his eyes in awe. Two days ago, he was still able to suppress Jiang Chen, but now he felt that if he were to fight Jiang Chen again, he would most likely die.

Even Huo Yuner’s expression changed. He couldn’t help but reduce his arrogance a bit.

Above the skies in the Black Sect, Daoist Black had witnessed what just happened. He was in shocked as well, but at the same time, he had a bright smile on his face.

Yun Can was the most terrified person actually, his eyes had turned red, and he forced himself to reevaluate Jiang Chen. Yun Can had ultimate confidence in his Doomsday Pal, he thought he could smash Jiang Chen into meat paste with this attack alone, but to his shock, not only was Jiang Chen not turned into a meat paste, he had even shattered his attack.

“You are just a mere Heavenly Core warrior, it’s really surprising that you could have such incredible combat strength. It looks like I really underestimated you.”

Yun Can was really surprised.

“Yun Can, don’t say I didn’t give you a chance. Hurry up and unleash whatever powerful skills you have. Since I decided to strike just now, this day will be your doomsday. Before I kill you, I’ll give you the opportunity to attack with whatever you got.”

Jiang Chen portrayed an image of grandeur. His body was glowing in a bright, golden light which made him look like a war god.

“What a shameless boaster.”

Yun Can’s killing intent was extremely high. In an instant, he

retrieved a bright longsword. It was a rare high-ranked combat weapon. The sword was covered with mystical patterns which made it look amazing.

After the first attack, Yun Can had stopped looking down upon Jiang Chen. He was getting ready to unleash his ultimate attack and kill Jiang Chen on the spot.

“Jiang Chen, take this, Soaring Heavens Sword!”

Yun Can once again adjusted his energy to its highest level. The sword in his hand began producing a swooshing sound, and the 2 meter longsword transformed into a 30 meter long sword.

The longsword looked like a rainbow slicing the skies, the mystical patterns on it was glowing and emitting shining colors. In an instant, it forcefully slashed towards Jiang Chen.

“Nice.”

Jiang Chen praised the attack. The skill was considered, ‘not bad’. He was about to counter with his Six Solar Fingers. Right now, Jiang Chen was able to unleash the fifth finger, and with its powerful strength, it would certainly defeat Yun Can.

However, Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up, and he suddenly decided not to use the Six Solar Finger.

“I could use this opportunity to test Firethorn Savage’s innate

ability, let me see how powerful its defensive strength is.”

When the sudden idea popped up in his mind, a golden colored light barrier suddenly appeared around Jiang Chen’s body. The barrier made some cracking sounds, and in that instant, gigantic thorns appeared on the barrier. All these gigantic thorns were connected to each other, and they soon weaved into an armor with a razor sharp surface.

This was a full armor which even covered Jiang Chen’s head, and it emitted a glorious golden light. Jiang Chen had inherited this innate ability after he absorbed the golden egg, but since there was no information about this ability, Jiang Chen simply gave it a name, Firethorn Combat Armor.

“What skill is that? Why does it look so familiar?”

Far from the fighting scene, Qing Styx’s expression changed. Jiang Chen’s skill gave him a feeling of familiarity, but he couldn’t recall where he had seen it before. Actually, this was Firethorn Savage’s innate ability, so of course Qing Styx was familiar with it. However, no matter how hard he tried to think about it, he just couldn’t relate it to Firethorn Savage, as he did not expect a human to actually use the innate ability of a demon beast.

“Come on!”

Jiang Chen shouted out with extreme vigor. He stood firmly, and he didn’t try dodging or blocking the attack. By channel all of his energy into the Firethorn Combat Armor, Jiang Chen clashed

directly with Yun Can's attack.

Clang!

The mighty high-ranked combat weak collided with Jiang Chen's Firethorn Combat Armor, and the sparks from the collision instantly turned the place into an ocean of flames.

Jiang Chen's Firethorn Combat Armor, not only did it have incredible defensive strength, it also carried a massive attack ability. By clashing into the Soaring Heaven Sword, the massive attack force of the Firethorn Combat Armor countered most of the Soaring Heaven Sword's force. As for the rest of the force, it could only leave a faded mark on the armor, it was completely unable to harm the armor.

Chapter 195 – Wish To Kill Me? Come To Inferno Hell!

Slash!

The Soaring Heaven Sword streaked across the surface of Jiang Chen's Firethorn Combat Armor, leaving behind a deep mark. But, that was it, it could only leave behind a mark. The powerful strike couldn't even break Jiang Chen's armor, let alone hurt him.

“What?”

Yun Can's expression changed dramatically, and he looked at Jiang Chen as if he was looking at a ghost. The current situation would never happen even in his wildest dreams.

The result had once again sent a storm to the audience. However, this time, the storm was even greater than before. Breaking the Doomsday Palm with a bare hand and blocking the Soaring Heaven Sword with only his armor were two completely different concepts.

“By the heavens, what did I just see? What kind of skill is that? It is so strong! Even a high-ranked combat weapon was unable to break it!”

“That isn't a real armor, it is actually a powerful ability. When Jiang Chen unleashed it just now, it felt like he was a mighty demon beast, and his energy changed completely. This is

incredible, even Yun Can was unable to break his defense with a full force attack! An ability like that really defies the natural order.”

“Senior disciple Jiang brings us new miracles every time he fights, he always comes out with new techniques and skills, and each of these skills are extremely powerful and goes beyond our imagination. Just looked at that golden armor, not only does it have solid defensive strength, it also gives him an extremely good potential for attack.”

“Haha, this Yun Can is finished, he isn’t a match for senior disciple Jiang!”

“That’s right, he couldn’t even break senior disciple Jiang’s defense, how is he going to defeat him?”

.....

Disciples of the Black Sect once again became excited. Jiang Chen did after all represent the Black Sect. If he could defeat the Heavenly Sword Sect’s core disciple, every single disciple of the Black Sect would feel proud as well.

“What kind of ability is that? Brother Jiang’s abilities are getting mightier and mightier!”

Guo Shan was surprised as well. Big Yellow was flying in circles above him, bouncing around with his tongue sticking out, and his

saliva splashing all over the place. No one really knew what ability Jiang Chen had used, except for Big Yellow. He had seen Firethorn Savage use this innate ability before, and he knew Jiang Chen was cultivating a mysterious skill which allowed him to absorb the bloodline of any special demon beast and inherit its innate abilities.

Judging from what he saw, it looked like Jiang Chen had successfully inherited Firethorn Savage's innate ability from the golden egg.

Within the Black Sect's inner area, Daoist Black became even more excited. Jiang Chen really brought him a lot of surprises, and even helped him chase away that dark cloud that was hovering in his mind. He couldn't help but recall what Jiang Chen had told him before; the Qi Province's structure was soon going to be changed, but it wouldn't be because of Nanbei Chao, it would be Jiang Chen who breaks the current structure.

Those men from the Green Sanctuary Sect all carried horrified expressions, they felt extremely familiar with Jiang Chen's ability, and it made some of them start thinking about Firethorn Savage. However, none of them related the two. After all, in their minds, no human could use the innate ability of a demon beast.

“Yun Can, do you have any other skills?”

With a thought of his mind, Jiang Chen retracted the Firethorn Combat Armor. He stood in the skies with a calm expression, and his razor sharp gazes was thrown onto the terrified Yun Can.

“Jiang Chen, I never thought you would be so strong. Thank you for the experience.”

After saying those words, Yun Can turned around and prepared to flee the scene. At this moment, he couldn't care about his reputation any longer. He had unleashed his strongest attack, but even with that, he still couldn't break Jiang Chen's defense, so there was no point in continuing the fight.

Besides, up until now, Jiang Chen had yet to show any of his brutal attacks. If Yun Can continued fighting, he might end up dying in the end.

Yun Can had no idea why Jiang Chen was so strong, but he had to admit that Jiang Chen really was a peerless monster. He was no match for Jiang Chen. What Yun Can could do now was put this matter aside, wait until he broke through to the Mid Divine Core realm, then come back to seek revenge.

But too bad, when Jiang Chen decided to kill someone, nobody could escape from him.

“Trying to run? Too late.”

A grin emerged on Jiang Chen's face, and in the next second, a massive amount of killing intent emerged from his body. With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen caught up with Yun Can using his extreme speed.

“True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen shouted out with a deep voice. In an instant, he unleashed the True Dragon Palm. A huge drag claw descended from the skies and grabbed towards Yun Can.

Bang!

The huge dragon claw was crashing down like a gigantic mountain. Yun Can’s expression changed dramatically upon sensing the massive pressure coming from the dragon claw. In an instant, he slashed with his sword and tried to penetrate the dragon claw.

Too bad, his reaction was too slow. The dragon claw came crashing down with a tremendous force, and it was like a closed cage that captivated Yun Can within.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. The True Dragon Palm squeezed with an enormous force, and everybody could hear a terrifying scream coming from within.

Blood mist floated and hovered in the skies. When Jiang Chen retracted the True Dragon Palm, what was left in the skies was a lump of blood mist a sword.

Jiang Chen extended his hand, then a powerful suction force shot out from his palm and pulled the Soaring Heaven Sword into his hand. This was a rare high-ranked combat weapon, and he couldn't let it go to waste.

In the blink of an eye, the arrogant Yun Can had been crushed by Jiang Chen. He was completely gone from this world, he had a miserable ending.

The disciples of the Black Sect didn't feel too shocked about this outcome. They had all witnessed how brutal and fierce Jiang Chen was. Not only Yun Can from the Heavenly Sword Sect, Jiang Chen had even killed his fellow disciples in the same manner.

Swoosh!

After killing Yun Can, Jiang Chen swiftly threw his gaze towards Huo Yuner. Sensing the killing intent coming from Jiang Chen, Huo Yuner's heart trembled. Right at this moment, all of Huo Yuner's arrogant and maliciousness had disappeared, and his hot temper was annihilated. No matter how much confidence he had in himself, he simply didn't have the courage to fight Jiang Chen right now.

“Huo Yuner, what are you waiting for? I'm here for you to fight!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly.

“You...”

Huo Yun'er was furious. For the first time in history, he was being looked down upon by someone else. Jiang Chen's gaze was really pissing him off. But still, he didn't have the courage to fight Jiang Chen now.

"Kaka, red haired ghost, are you scared? Are you going to piss your pants? If you don't have the courage to fight, take your ass back home right now and drink some milk, come back whenever you're tired of milk!"

Big Yellow was indeed a cruel being, he would never let go of a chance to provoke a person.

"Come on, fight now! Huo Yun'er, I seem to recall you being extremely arrogant just now, so why are you just standing there without moving?"

"Aiyoyo, so this is a core disciple from the Green Sanctuary Sect! He doesn't even have the courage to fight! This is disappointing, go back and take care of your baby!"

"Fight now, if you don't, you're just a coward! It was you who came and challenged Jiang Chen, but now you're backing off!"

.....

All the disciples of the Black Sect were yelling and shouting. Wang Yun and Huang Zheng were bouncing around. At this

moment, the men from the Green Sanctuary Sect could only stand there with dark faces. Qing Styx felt like he had gone too far to turn back. Today's events had really shamed them, but if they insisted on letting Huo Yun'er fight Jiang Chen, it was no different than asking him to die.

All of them had clearly witnessed the fight between Jiang Chen and Yun Can. They mighty Yun Can was defeated by Jiang Chen with just a single strike, he was killed in an instant. Therefore, Huo Yun'er had no chance at defeating Jiang Chen either.

“Fine, I’ll fight with you!”

The furious Huo Yun'er shouted out. He couldn't stand the provocations any longer. Never once in his life had so many people looked down upon him at the same time, he couldn't stand it any longer. He would rather die fighting than keep getting insulted.

“Huo Yun'er, don't overreact.”

Qing Styx pulled Huo Yun'er back, and a few Sect Elders surrounded him at once. It was too stupid to fight a certainly lost battle.

“Jiang Chen, you truly are a peerless genius. Return Firethorn Savage's demon soul to me, after that, all scores between the Green Sanctuary Sect and you will be settled.”

Qing Styx told Jiang Chen with a loud voice.

“Qing Styx, I have already absorbed the demon soul, can’t you see that I have just broken through to the Late Heavenly Core realm? Besides, I left you Firethorn Savage’s body, so don’t be too greedy.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

“What? You absorbed its demon soul? Impossible! With your abilities, I don’t think it’s possible to completely absorbed Firethorn Savage’s demon soul in just two days.”

Qing Styx’s expression changed. He never gave up the idea of getting Firethorn Savage’s demon soul. When he heard Jiang Chen say he had absorbed its demon soul, he felt extremely bad.

“I don’t want to listen to your bullshit. I don’t care about settling scores with you, the Green Sanctuary Sect means nothing to me. Huo Yuner, come here and fight me.”

Jiang Chen had a domineering attitude. He never cared about Qing Styx’s words. Without saying anything else, he unleashed his Six Solar Fingers, causing a huge golden finger to pierce towards Hu Yuner in an overbearing manner.

“GRAAA! LET ME FIGHT HIM!”

Huo Yuner roared out loudly. The insulting look in Jiang Chen’s eyes was an insult to him.

Qing Styx casually waved his hand and unleashed a beam of energy which shattered Jiang Chen's Six Solar Finger. He was a peak Late Divine Core warrior, Jiang Chen was far from being his match.

“Jiang Chen, hand over Firethorn Savage's demon soul, now!”

Qing Styx couldn't hold his killing intent any longer. He unleashed a huge phantom hand which grabbed towards Jiang Chen.

“Hmph! Qing Styx, how dare you assault my disciple in front of the Black Sect? You're seeking death!”

Daoist Black flew out from the Black Sect with an imposing aura. With a palm, he shattered Qing Styx's attack.

“Qing Styx, although you are from a big sect, you better not mess around here! Look carefully where this place is, either you let Huo Yun'er fight Jiang Chen today, or you get the hell out of here. If not, I'll attack you all with every single one of the Black Sect's forces. I think, except for you, Qing Styx, everyone from the Green Sanctuary Sect will die if that happens.”

Daoist Black immediately warned them.

“Huo Yun'er, get the hell out my sight. In the future, hide as far away from as you can when you see me, you do not have the qualifications to fight me. If the Green Sanctuary Sect will wants

to kill me, come seek me out in Inferno Hell.”

Jiang Chen portrayed an image of incomparable grandeur. He showed his mighty character which resembled a peerless lord. He continued, “I’ll say this today; Heavenly Sword Sect, Green Sanctuary Sect, and even that bullshit Burning Sky Pavilion, if anyone of you want to kill me, come seek me out in Inferno Hell!”

Chapter 196 – Entering Inferno Hell

Jiang Chen stood high in the skies with his domineering attitude, portraying an overwhelming image as he looked down on his enemies in front of him, he was challenging the world.

The Green Sanctuary Sect, the Heavenly Sword Sect, the Burning Sky Pavilion. He alone was challenging all three big sects. Such a statement, there was only one person in the entire Qi Province who could speak these words, and that was Jiang Chen.

After saying those words, Jiang Chen turned around and started walking towards the inner area of the Black Sect. His figure attracted many gazes, and they were all filled with admiration.

Respect, fear, admiration; each of these gazes were filled with mixed emotions. Every single man dreamt about reaching the top of the world, all men wished to defeat all enemies who got in his path and leave behind a mighty legend. In every single era, there was a star of the generation, and everyone dreamt about becoming that star.

Everyone were sighing inwardly. Living in the same era as Jiang Chen, it was their fortune, but at the same time, their misfortune.

Jiang Chen walked with spirited and vigorous steps, and his eyes were glittering. As man with a great destiny, he wanted to live a glorious life after his reincarnation. He wanted to be a man who could walk everywhere underneath the heavens, following nothing but his heart's desires while killing all who got in his way. This

could only be done by a man with huge courage and resolution.

“What an overbearing man! He is like a shining sun, no dark clouds can cover his glory!”

“Senior disciple Jiang is my number one idol! If I can one day portray the same domineering attitude as him, challenging the entire world; even if I would die in the next second, there would be no regret in my life!”

“A man like him is destined to leave a glorious mark in history! He is a peerless genius who can’t be found, even in a thousand years! I’m afraid that only Nanbei Chao can be his match...”

.....

The disciples of the Black Sect were still staring at Jiang Chen’s back. Although he had disappeared from the scene, they still didn’t want to take their eyes off where he had gone. He had become a role model amongst the younger generation, he was the Black Sect’s pride.

“Ahh... let me fight, I want to fight with him!”

Huo Yun'er roared out in fury. Flames danced around him, and his eyes had turned red. Jiang Chen’s words had seriously injured his self-esteem, the self-esteem of a genius which couldn’t be stepped on. Therefore, even if he would die fighting Jiang Chen, he wanted to do it.

Huo Yun'er's cultivation had gone smooth as sailing ever since he was born, he and Yun Can were famous in their respective provinces, and they stood on top amongst everyone in the younger generation. Huo Yun'er was the number one genius of the Green Sanctuary Sect, and everyone there feared him, so he had never suffered such insults before. He had come and provoked Jiang Chen today, but he was scared off fighting even before the fight begun, and this was a tremendous loss of face.

“Huo Yun'er!”

Qing Styx shouted, then he said, “You are not his match! Besides, didn't you hear what he just said? He is going to enter Inferno Hell, hmph! I'm sure you know just how dangerous this Inferno Hell is, even I would have a slim chance of survival if I were to enter. This guy is so prideful and arrogant, he is just seeking his own death by entering Inferno Hell!”

Hearing Qing Styx's words, the crowds finally woke up. The expressions of all the disciples changed. They had been stunned by Jiang Chen's mighty manner just now, therefore, no one really paid attention when he said Inferno Hell. After being reminded by Qing Styx, they finally responded.

“What? Senior disciple Jiang is going to enter Inferno Hell? That is too dangerous!”

“I heard that senior disciple Guan Yiyun has entered Inferno Hell as well, but he was looking for an opportunity to break through to

the Divine Core realm, therefore he made up his mind and entered. He vowed he would either successfully break through, or die in there. However, senior disciple Jiang's potential is much better than senior disciple Guan Yiyun's, I don't see why it's necessary for him to risk his life in Inferno Hell.

“You know nothing! Senior disciple Jiang is an abnormal monster! Obviously, he will choose to take an extraordinary path! For us, this Inferno Hell is a gateway to hell, but for him, it's just a challenge.”

.....

The crowds were shocked by the news, Jiang Chen's decision was too frightening. Inferno Hell was originally used by all the powerful sects in the different provinces, including the Martial Saint Dynasty, to punish the men who had committed serious crimes. They would throw these criminals into Inferno Hell and let them run their own course inside.

Of course, there had been many brave men who entered Inferno Hell because of their own will to have life and death experiences. Rumors say that there is great fortune hiding somewhere within, and as long as a man can leave the place alive, he would experience a transformation from his roots. The transformation did not only affect the cultivation, but also the person's mindset. Anyone who had encountered life and death situations would have strong mindsets that others couldn't compare with.

“This guy really wants to enter Inferno Hell? What exactly is he after?”

Daoist Black reacted as well, his brows were knit in a frown. In his mind, Jiang Chen was the Black Sect's most precious disciple, so he didn't want to see anything bad happen to him. Because Jiang Chen was the only man who could fight Nanbei Chao, he was also the Black Sect's only hope of changing their destiny. If anything bad happened to Jiang Chen, Nanbei Chao would sooner or later destroy the Black Sect.

“Let's go.”

Qing Styx shook his head helplessly with an look of extreme disappointment on his face. Judging from today's situation, he had lost all his hope of obtaining Firethorn Savage's demon soul. He was standing in the heart of the Black Sect, and with the presence of Daoist Black, there was no way for him to kill Jiang Chen. The initial plan of having his core disciple, Huo Yuner, fight with Jiang Chen, didn't work out either. Not only that, he had to make sure Huo Yuner didn't act impulsively, in order to save his life. If not, he would just experience the same as Yun Can.

“I'll enter Inferno Hell and fight him!”

Huo Yuner strengthened his resolve and became the first one to fly towards the Qian Province, while leaving a blazing trail of scorching hot flames in his path. What happened today was a huge blow to him. Jiang Chen had left a permanent dark shadow in his mind. If he couldn't get rid of this shadow, it would become a ghost which would keep hunting him and make his cultivation come to a standstill.

In order to get rid of this shadow, he had to fight Jiang Chen. No matter what, he would either die or live in the end.

“Sigh!”

All the Green Sanctuary Sect Elders let out sighs. They hurried up and started following Huo Yuner. It was such an ironic scene; the Green Sanctuary Sect had come here in an imposing manner, but in the end, they had to leave in such a miserable way.

Jiang Chen was still alive, and they didn't retrieve Firethorn Savage's demon soul. Not only that, he even delivered a huge blow to Huo Yuner's face. Huo Yuner was a precious disciple of the Green Sanctuary Sect, he had been gifted a powerful flame skill since birth and was previously cultivating in the Karst Cave. If nothing bad happened to him, he would have broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm in no time. But what happened today, it had dealt him a huge blow which directly affected his cultivation progress.

Yun Can was killed, and Huo Yuner had left. Jiang Chen had once again strengthened his mighty position in the Black Sect.

Guo Shan's mountain peak.

“Jiang Chen, do you really want to enter Inferno Hell? With your potential, there is no need for you to cultivate in such a dangerous place.”

Daoist Black asked with a frown on his face.

“Sect Chief, I have made up my mind, we don’t need to discuss this any further. I just hope that the Sect Chief can open the path to Inferno Hell for me.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Jiang Chen, you probably have no idea how dangerous Inferno Hell is. Even I do not dare enter. I tried persuading Guan Yiyun to not enter, but he insisted. However, you really don’t have any reason to cultivate in Inferno Hell.”

Daoist Black had a puzzled expression as he looked at Jiang Chen. In fact, Daoist Black had no idea about what was in Inferno Hell, as he had never gone there before. There were only a handful of men who had entered Inferno Hell before, and that’s why almost no one knew what exactly could be found within. The only thing people knew was that it was a frightening place filled with dangers, and chances of survival are very slim.

“Sect Chief, the reason why brother Jiang insists on entering Inferno Hell is to save Han Yan.”

Guo Shan tried explaining.

“To save Han Yan?”

Daoist Black was startled.

“That’s right, Brother Yan’s condition is too severe, and his life-force is almost gone. All his internal organs have shattered, and he is only surviving because of the Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline. I’ve placed him within the Blood Banner with hope that the demonic energy contained within can give him some help. However, in order to completely save him, I’ll need the Earthly Demon Beast’s demon soul. Brother Guo told me that a rare demon beast like that might only exist in Inferno Hell, that’s why I must go there.”

Jiang Chen then said with a serious expression, “Brother Yan is my brother, his life is equal to mine. Even if it requires me to climb a mountain of swords and dive into a sea of flames, I’ll still save him; even if Yama wants to take my life, he will have to ask my permission.”

When mentioning Han Yan, Jiang Chen couldn’t help but feel a pain in his heart. This was his first brother after his reincarnation, and he had risked his life to save Jiang Chen’s girl during a critical moment. Jiang Chen would never forget what he had done for him, and as long as Han Yan still had vital signs, Jiang Chen would risk everything to save him.

Hearing Jiang Chen’s explanation, Daoist Black’s mouth opened wide, but he couldn’t say a word. He felt guilty when Jiang Chen mentioned Han Yan and Yan Chenyu, and he didn’t even dare look into Jiang Chen’s eyes.

“Therefore, there is no need for Sect Chief to say anything more regarding this matter. In my eyes, Brother Yan’s life is most

important, so I have to go to Inferno Hell no matter what. Besides, all of you are afraid of this place, but I have never feared it. No matter how dangerous the place is, it will be nothing but a training ground for me.”

Jiang Chen expressed a high amount of confidence, the confidence of the once greatest Saint in the world.

“Good, Jiang Chen, you slaughter with a firm resolution, I’m sure you will become a very capable person! You show no mercy to your enemies, but to your own brothers, you are a man with a true heart! I, Daoist Black respect you, and I need to take responsibility for what happened to Little Yu and Brother Yan as well, but I can’t do anything else than apologize. I’ll open the path to Inferno Hell for you. Remember, be extra careful upon entering!”

Daoist Black didn’t try to convince Jiang Chen anymore. He knew that once Jiang Chen made up his mind, there was nothing that could change it.

“Alright. Sect Chief, please wait for me at Palace Black, I need to arrange something with brother Guo.”

Jiang Chen said.

Daoist Black nodded his head and flew away.

“Brother, you are a man with a great destiny. I’m sure you’ll be able to come back from Inferno Hell, and you might even

encounter some big opportunities.”

Guo Shan said.

“Older brother Guo, I don’t know how long I’ll be in there, so I need you to take really good care of Little Yu and Brother Yan. Later, I’ll transfer the control of the Blood Banner to you. Although it is an evil weapon, it is still a very strong one, and it will provide you great help.”

Jiang Chen decided to leave the Blood Banner behind. Firstly, it could help Han Yan. Secondly, if there was an emergency, Guo Shan could put it to good use.

Fan Zhongtang was soon going to exit the Cliff of Remorse, and Jiang Chen was really worried about that cunning old fox.

Chapter 197 – The Miserable Monster

After Guo Shan had obtained complete control of the Blood Banner, Jiang Chen brought Big Yellow with him and left Palace Black.

Decades ago, Blood Moon Shaman had used the Blood Banner to wreak havoc in the Qi Province. He was invincible back then mostly because of the Blood Banner. Since Guo Shan was a Mid Divine Core warrior, there was no problems with him controlling it. With the Blood Banner's help, Guo Shan's combat strength would improve significantly, and Fan Zhongtang would not be his match.

That's the reason Jiang Chen felt safe in leaving Yan Chenyu and Han Yan behind. He had to leave to help Han Yan, he didn't want to see anything bad happening to him again.

Within Palace Black, Daoist Black had been waiting for quite some time. When he saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, he immediately walked towards them.

“Jiang Chen, the trip to Inferno Hell really isn't something fun. I still hope you can give it a second thought.”

Daoist Black reminded Jiang Chen once more with a serious tone.

“I won't change my mind. Sect Chief, please open up the path to Inferno Hell for me.”

Jiang Chen had a determined look, he was going to Inferno Hell no matter what.

“Fine, follow me.”

Daoist Black didn't say anything else. He led Jiang Chen and Big Yellow towards the depths of Palace Black.

They came across a long corridor, which they could clearly feel was leading downwards. The corridor was pretty dark, and after having traveled around three miles, a steel door appeared in front of them.

“I didn't know there was such a place hidden in the Black Sect.”

Jiang Chen felt surprised. There was nothing special outside Palace Black, and he had never expected a hidden place like this within.

“The portal to Inferno Hell is mysterious, we need to hide it properly.”

Daoist Black said.

“It's right behind this steel door?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“That’s right.”

Daoist Black waved his hand and unleashed a beam of light onto the steel door. A click immediately sounded out from the door. It looked like it hadn’t been opened for quite a long time, or perhaps it had only been opened a few times, which is why it produced such a rusty sound when opening.

Behind the steel door was a spacious secret chamber, and it was sealed on all sides. Right in the middle of the secret chamber there was an illusory portal. It was floating endlessly like water while emitting bright lights.

“A portal!”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up, he was very familiar with this kind of portal, so he could tell what it was with just a single look.

“That’s right, it’s the portal to Inferno Hell.”

Daoist Black nodded his head.

“Last time, Guan Yiyun told me it was an ancient portal, but this portal doesn’t look old at all. I think it was made by a Combat King warrior. The man who made this is really skillful with formations, the portal is different from all other kinds of portals and formations, and it’s related to the dimensional forces. Without advanced knowledge about formations, ordinary Combat King

warriors would never be able to make a real portal.”

Jiang Chen said with a calm voice.

Daoist Black’s expression changed. He stared at Jiang Chen with awe. Once again, he had been shocked by Jiang Chen. This portal had been here for decades, and even Daoist Black couldn’t tell anything about it. But Jiang Chen, he was able to tell everything about it with just one look, and he could even tell that it was made by a Combat King warrior.

A Combat King warrior, a mighty Combat King, an ultimate person who has mastered the dimensional forces, that’s someone who stands at the top of the world, a man Daoist Black couldn’t even imagine. His life’s biggest goal was to reach the Combat Soul realm. As for the mighty Combat King realm, he could only dream about it during his deep slumber.

“This portal was given to us decades ago by the Martial Saint Dynasty. I suppose every single big sect in all 28 provinces of the Eastern Continent has the same portal. Even I don’t know anything about this portal, I didn’t expect it was made by a Combat King warrior.”

Daoist Black had mixed feelings about this. The Martial Saint Dynasty ruled the entire Eastern Continent, and they had given the same portal to every single big sect and made sure that each province had this portal so that they could send people into Inferno Hell. Even the Qi Province and the Qian Province had this portal.

“Looks like there is a Combat King warrior in the Martial Saint Dynasty, not bad.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. It looked like this Martial Saint Dynasty was much stronger than he had expected. A Combat King warrior, it was considered a reputable existence, even in the Divine Continent. It's quite normal for the Martial Saint Dynasty to have a Combat King warrior, as they ruled the entire Eastern Continent.

“Sect Chief, hurry up and activate the portal.”

Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any more time.

“Fine.”

Daoist Black nodded his head. With a flip of his palm, he retrieved a golden colored token from his storage ring. It was about the size of a palm, and it looked to fit right into the slot located at the center of the portal.

Daoist Black took a step forward and slowly placed the token into the portal. An instant later, the portal produced a buzzing sound, then it started functioning.

Swoosh swoosh...

Followed by the activation of the portal, a wild wind swept across

the entire secret chamber. Dimensional forces were leaking out from the portal, making it difficult for them to breath.

Buzz...

Not long after that, a pitch black tunnel appeared right in the middle of the portal. Freezing winds immediately violently blew out from it. It was so cold that it felt like it was coming from an eternal darkness, it sent a shiver down the spines of all who heard it.

Even Daoist Black's expression changed upon sensing this. Jiang Chen, however, was standing right in front of the storm with an indifferent expression. He actually felt a sudden nostalgia from this feeling. Big Yellow stuck his tongue out and felt excited as well. This dog doesn't fear danger, he became excited upon encountering danger. He and Jiang Chen loved adventures, they liked the feeling of excitement.

"Hurry, the tunnel can only be maintained for three breaths time."

Daoist Black hurriedly said.

"Big Yellow, let's go."

Jiang Chen leapt forward and disappeared into the tunnel. Big Yellow followed closely behind him and disappeared into the tunnel at the same time.

Click!

Right as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow disappeared, the tunnel instantly closed. The portal had also stopped functioning. The golden token popped out from the slot and fell right into Daoist Black's hand.

Daoist Black stared motionlessly at the portal, then he said to himself, “Jiang Chen, I really hope you can come out from Inferno Hell safely. The Black Sect’s future destiny is in your hands.”

Swoosh... swoosh...

The freezing wild wind never seemed to stop. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were moving along the flow, there were whirlwinds everywhere, and the tunnel looked variegated.

The tunnel was pretty narrow actually, it only allowed one person to pass through at one time, so it caused Big Yellow’s body to feel a tight squeeze. The whirlwinds kept blowing into the tunnel, causing their faces to hurt.

“Damn it, fuck! What kind of a shitty trash tunnel is this?!”

Big Yellow kept cursing. The tunnel seemed shaky and unstable, as if it was going to collapse at any time.

“That Combat King warrior seems to have just mastered the dimensional forces. He was using an advanced portal to construct this dimensional tunnel, therefore, it isn’t stable. We better be careful. Do not unleash any energy here, if we drift into some dimensional turbulence, it will be huge trouble!”

Jiang Chen reminded.

“Damn it, if we drift into a dimensional turbulence, we’ll be trapped for more than a hundred years!”

Big Yellow felt even more depressed. He looked around and found out there were multicolored dimensional turbulences everywhere. Also, from time to time, a massive dimensional typhoon would appear in their sights. Luckily, it was Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who was here. If it was any other ordinary person, they would probably be pissing their pants due to fear.

Dimensional turbulence, that was a place where coldness and darkness blended together. It was tough to find a dimensional node within, and even a Combat King warrior who has mastered the dimensional forces would find it hard to get out from it. Only those mighty Combat Emperors would be able to walk out from it with ease.

Besides that, the dimensional typhoon within the dimensional turbulences was the deadliest existence. It was just a dreadful monster that would cause anything that gets dragged into it to perish.

Jiang Chen had a bitter smile on his face. If this was his past life, he would be able to go anywhere in this world with the Dimensional Shift skill. Entering Inferno Hell would take him just a few seconds.

The mighty Saint warriors had all completely mastered the dimensional rules, they could walk anywhere they wanted amongst the dimensional space. Also, any Saint who has mastered the Dimension Shift skill could break open dimensional barrier with their bare hands and walk in like it was their backyard.

No matter what, it was all history now. Currently, Jiang Chen was just a small potato at the Heavenly Core realm, he had a long way to go.

Within the teleportation tunnel, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were admiring the breath-taking dimensional turbulence around them while chit-chatting. After staying for a full day in the tunnel for an entire day, the duo finally saw a light at the end of the tunnel.

“We’re almost there.”

Seeing this, Jiang Chen’s spirit rose.

“Damn it, finally, we can leave this damned place! I wonder what Inferno Hell looks like.”

Big Yellow was so excited that he jumped up from where stood with his tongue sticking out from his mouth. With his jump, he

made a crack in the tunnel.

“Damned dog, you better be careful! Daddy doesn’t want to drift into a dimension turbulence and die at this young age!”

Jiang Chen slapped Big Yellow’s head, scolding him in a hopeless manner.

The light at the end of the tunnel became brighter, and soon after, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow arrived at the end of the tunnel. The duo held their breath as they were getting ready to enter Inferno Hell.

Right now, within Inferno Hell, some place within an abyss.

It was a foggy place, and everything here looked gray. The abyss was a completely desolated area, and rocks were everywhere. A monster with a body fully covered with black scales was roaming around in this area.

This monster was over 3 meters tall, its whole body was fuming with frightening black mist. It only had one eye, which was positioned vertically right in the middle top of his face. It also only had one nostril and one huge mouth below the eye. The eye, nose and the mouth, they were all lined up in a straight line, and it looked really fearsome and savage.

The monster was roaming around, its eyeball was rolling around in full alert, as if it was searching for something.

Suddenly.

Bang!

A loud banging sound could be heard from the skies above. It was as loud as a fierce thunder strike. A hole in the dimension appeared, and a figure shout out from it. The monster was shocked by the sound, so it raised its head to look towards the direction. In an instant, an unknown object fell onto its head.

Plop!

The arrival of this unknown object was so sudden, this monster didn't even have time to react. Also, the object carried a massive amount of force when fell onto his head, this monster cried out horribly and started rolling on the floor.

Roar!

The monster was furious. It immediately stood up on the ground to look at the unknown object, then another loud bang sounded out from above. Once again, another unknown object fell onto its head. When the unknown object hit its head, the monster could hear it scolding out loudly, "Damn it, what a shitty tunnel!"

Chapter 198 – Inferno Hell's Evil Devil And Nine Life Crystal Beast

The first unknown object that fell onto the monster was Jiang Chen. After him, it was Big Yellow. When the duo came out from the dimensional tunnel, they were pushed around by the dimensional turbulence and were squeezed out from the tunnel. The force pushed them tremendously, giving them no chance at controlling their bodies.

“The fuck, what is this?”

Big Yellow was laying on the floor when he was shot out, that's why his head was facing downwards and he could see the monster below him immediately. In an instant, his head start glowing in a golden light, then he forcefully rammed towards the monster's head.

Bang!

Blood splashed everywhere, the monster's head exploded into a mess.

The most miserable thing in this world must be this monster. If it could still stand up and say something, it would definitely both its eyes would tear up. No, it would its single eye would tear and cry, “Oh heavens and earth, what have I done wrong to deserve this?”

Not only was it hit by something unknown without having the

time to react, but it was immediately hit a second time as well. Fine, it could still bear it, but now, they even took away its life by crushing its head. What happened to this world?

Big Yellow fell onto the ground, rolled, and then stood up, then he walked up to Jiang Chen and looked at the monster who was lying on the ground.

“What is this thing? It looks so ugly! Still, this master dog is the most handsome being in this world!”

No matter where Big Yellow went, he just couldn't get rid of his narcissistic character.

“Big Yellow, it was you who killed it by ramming into its head.”

Even Jiang Chen felt speechless. What a miserable way to die.

“It scared me just now, so I couldn't help it, that's why I crashed into it with my head. But, I never thought it would be so weak!”

Big Yellow licked his lips.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes and said, “Look at this poor fellow, it was only an Early Heavenly Core monster, how could it defend itself from your dog head? Not only this, based on the suddenness of the situation just now, it was killed by you before it even had the time to react, you're brutal!”

Big Yellow's head could even penetrate Firethorn Savage, let alone this tiny Early Heavenly Core monster. That's why it was instantly killed by Big Yellow.

"It was his unlucky day."

Big Yellow nodded his head. After that, he looked around and said, "I don't think our look is any good either. Why does this damn abyss feel so ghastly? There is gray fog everywhere! Luckily, this fog can't hurt us."

Jiang Chen's expression became serious, and he looked around as well.

"I think that all places in Inferno Hell are like this. They shouldn't be a sun or moon here. It looks like an individual parallel dimension. However, the environment here is really bad."

Jiang Chen did expect such a bad environment in Inferno Hell. If this place was a paradise, no one would fear it so much. Only a foul environment like this could deserve the name Inferno Hell.

"What is this monster? It doesn't look like a demon beast, I think it's a rare creature."

Big Yellow turned around and threw an examining look at the dead monster, but he couldn't tell anything about it.

“I saw what it looked like just now. It only had one eye, one mouth, and one nose. The energy coming from it was not demon energy, but a shivering devil energy. So, I think it’s a devil. I know that there is a kind of devil with a weird look, they are extremely ferocious, and they only have one eye, one nose and one gigantic mouth. They are also the devils of all sins. I think it’s called the Evil Devil. If my guess is correct, this is an Evil Devil.”

Jiang Chen carefully examined the monster. Indeed, it was an Evil Devil. In his past life, he had dealt with a lot of devils, but he had never seen something like this before. However, he did know some ancient legends about it.

“You even know about this?”

Big Yellow widened his eyes as he looked at Jiang Chen.

“Of course I know about it! Devils aren’t easy to deal with. According to the legends, this kind of devil has a really strong body and incredible muscles, and its most powerful weapon is its vertical eye which can unleash a mystical light that can cause damage directly to one’s soul. It is extremely frightening. However, according to legends, these Evil Devils only exist in the ancient eras, and should be extinct by now. I never expected to see one still here. Looks like this Inferno Hell is pretty amazing.

Jiang Chen sighed inwardly. He was told by Guo Shan that the Inferno Hell had suddenly appeared one hundred years ago, and it was all because he had swung his sword towards the heavens, damaging all dimensional spaces in Saint Origin in the process, which caused all these strange dimension and beings to appear.

“You consider this a strong body and incredible muscles? Do you still remember the legend properly?”

Big Yellow snorted.

“Damn it, no matter how strong it is, how can it be compared to you? Even Firethorn Savage couldn’t withstand your dog head!”

Jiang Chen really wished he could step on Big Yellow’s face right now. Not only was this guy incredibly narcissistic, his sarcastic remarks angered him as well.

“You’re right! I, the master dog, have a copper head and iron bones! Even if the ancestor of this Evil Devil was here, it wouldn’t be able to withstand a single head slam from this master dog!”

In an instant, Big Yellow became narcissistic again.

“Inferno Hell is indeed an extraordinary place. The air is filled with devil energy, and there’s also all sorts of demon energies. I supposed there are all kinds of devils and demons here. Besides, since even the Evil Devil could be found here, I think we’ll most likely find the Earthly Demon here as well.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. The existence of Evil Devil allowed him to see new light. The main reason why he came here was to hunt for the Earthly Demon, and if there was no Earthly Demon here, the trip would be a waste of time.

Big Yellow walked towards the Evil Devil. Using his hooves, he forcefully kicked it and retrieved its devil soul.

“Buddy, since you’re able to absorb any demon soul, I wonder if you can absorb this devil soul?”

Big Yellow said as he threw the devil soul directly towards Jiang Chen.

“The skill I am cultivating allows me to absorb any bloodline in this world. If I can absorb a demon soul, I don’t see any problem with me absorbing devil soul. Besides, I now have the True Dragon Flames, which is the king of all beast flames, and it’s capable of burning down anything in this world. It’s the perfect enemy for all evil beings, I’ll be able to burn off all evil and impurities within this devil soul, and turn it into the purest energy which I can immediately absorb.”

After saying this, Jiang Chen shot out a sheet of flames from his palm, covering the entire devil soul. After that, cracking sound came out from the devil soul, and in an instant, the devil soul was completely purified and turned into a glowing energy object.

“What a freak!”

Although he already knew how abnormally insane Jiang Chen was, Big Yellow still rolled his eyes in shock. Doesn’t matter if it was a demon soul or a devil soul, none of them could be absorbed by a human being, because they contained too much non-human

elemental impurities. Absorbing it by force would seriously impact the person's cultivation, and it could even make them enter a state of psychosis.

Jiang Chen forcefully clenched his fist. Followed by a cracking sound, the devil soul shattered. It turned into bright sparks which all entered Jiang Chen's body.

“An Early Heavenly Core devil, it's really weak, and it doesn't have any more effect on me. If we bump into any more devils later on, we'll still gather their devil souls, as I think it will be able to help Brother Yan.”

After saying that, he shot out a ball of True Dragon Flames and burned the body to ashes.

Roar~

Right at this moment, a loud roar sounded out from somewhere not far away from where they stood. It sounded deep, and a little hoarse, which made it extremely awful. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow immediately turned around and looked into the direction. In an instant, they saw a monster which was glowing brightly appearing not far away from them, and it was slowly walking towards them.

The monster was obviously attracted by the smell of blood.

“What kind of monster is this?”

Big Yellow was startled. The monster wasn't tall, it was just a little bit taller than an average human. The body didn't look very muscular either, but it gave them an overbearing impression. This monster had a transparent body which looked like a crystal, and it didn't have any facial figures. No nose, no ears, and no mouth. Right in the middle of its face, there was a crystal eye, which kept staring at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

The monster roared out once again. It didn't have a mouth, but it could still roar loudly. The roar sounded like it came from its body, and it was enough to send shivers down most people's spines. If any normal man saw this strange monster, he would definitely be scared to the limits and flee immediately.

But Jiang Chen and Big Yellow didn't move at all. With their judgment, they easily found out the cultivation level of this monster; it was only a Mid Heavenly Core monster. Although it was considered pretty strong, it couldn't pose any threat to either of them.

“Buddy, can you tell me what kind of monster this is?”

Big Yellow asked.

“I once read a book called the ‘Book of Mysterious Beings’. I recorded all sorts of monster and demons from the ancient era until now. There is a monster called the Nine Life Crystal Beast, and this kind of beast is transparent like a crystal, and has only one eye, no other facial features. It's a powerful monster, and it very difficult to deal with, because as the name implies, it has nine lives. You have to kill it nine times before it dies.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Damn it, buddy, why does it seem like you know everything?”

Big Yellow felt really depressed. He had followed Jiang Chen for such a long time, but it felt like there was nothing that Jiang Chen didn't know.

“If I told you I am a reincarnated Saint, would you believe me?”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow with a smile on his face.

“I believe! Even if you were to say you are a fucking reincarnated immortal, I would still believe you!”

Big Yellow nodded his head. If this was said by some other person, Big Yellow would definitely look at him as if he was an idiot, he would then turn around and leave. But since it was told by Jiang Chen, Big Yellow did partly believe in him, because no 16 year old should know so much.

The Nine Life Crystal Beast roared out once again. It didn't feel surprised when looking at the human in front of it. Obviously, it had seen quite a lot of humans in Inferno Hello. Besides, this Nine Life Crystal Beast had a clear hostility towards humans. It carried an extreme killing intention as it quickly sprinted towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Since this guy is seeking his death, let’s see if it really has nine lives, just like you said.”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly in excitement. In an instant, he dashed towards the crystal beast.

Chapter 199 – The Usage Of The Crystal Core

Bang!

Big Yellow's head was probably one of the hardest things in this world. The indestructible Nine Life Crystal Beast's body shattered instantly because of the impact, it turned into pieces of crystals and scarred across the place.

“Kaka, so weak!”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly. However, before he could finish his words, an expression of shock emerged on his face. He could see the broken crystal pieces assembling back to normal in an instant, making the Nine Life Crystal Beast whole again.

Roar!

The Nine Life Crystal Beast was extremely angry. It roared out in fury as it dashed towards Big Yellow once again. This Nine Life Crystal Beast was a rare and unique life form, it didn't possess any kind of innate ability, it only relied on its body's strength. It could rip anything apart. Besides, the bright light that shot out from its body could cause devastating damage. Anyone who got hit by it would either die or suffer severe injuries.

“Damn it, don't tell me it really has nine lives!”

Big Yellow felt somewhat depressed. He had never seen any

living being like this before, it was simply something that couldn't be killed.

“I don't believe this.”

Big Yellow leapt forwards once again, and with a loud bang, he smashed the Nine Life Crystal Beast into pieces one more time. Big Yellow was never scared of anyone when it came to comparing body's strength.

But in an instant, the shattered Nine Life Crystal Beast restored back to its original shape, which looked and felt exactly like it did before.

“Fuck you!”

Big Yellow's fury ignited. Just as the Nine Life Crystal Beast assembled back into one piece, he sprinted and smashed it into pieces one more time. This time, he stepped on some of the broken crystal pieces.

“Daddy will just step on you! Let's see how you are going assemble once again!”

Big Yellow was pissed off. Jiang Chen, who was standing on the other side, was shaking his head, as he knew that this was useless.

Indeed, the broken pieces of crystals disappeared from under his feet, and in an instant, the Nine Life Crystal Beast assembled its

whole body once again.

“Damn it!”

Big Yellow couldn't remain calm any longer.

“Big Yellow, that's useless, the Nine Life Crystal Beast is a unique life form in this world, you must kill it nine times before it completely dies. Even if you make it disappear from the face of the planet, it will still appear again.”

Jiang Chen said with a laugh.

“Damn it, this abnormal monster! Buddy, if you could absorb this ability, that would be awesome! Who would be able to kill you in the future if you had this ability?”

Big Yellow said.

“Kill it first before we discuss that.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand and asked Big Yellow to hurry up and finish the fight.

“Alright!”

Big Yellow's ears stood up, and he unleashed all his energy, then

he once again leapt onto the monster.

Bang bang bang...

Smashing into it five times in a row, the Nine Life Crystal Beast had been killed 8 times. After being killed 8 times, the Nine Life Crystal Beast immediately turned around and started fleeing with extreme speed. This rare beast did possess basic intelligence, so after having been killed 8 times, it finally understood how powerful its opponent was. If it continued fighting, it would get itself killed here.

“Trying to run? Kaka!”

Big Yellow burst into laughter. It would be really shameful if he let a Mid Heavenly Core monster escape from him.

Bang!

Another loud banging sound was heard. Although the Nine Life Crystal Beast was fast, it still couldn't compare with Big Yellow. Once again, Big Yellow smashed into it, and it finally died.

Buzz...

Followed by a buzzing sound, the broken crystal pieces which were shattered around the place formed into a fist-sized crystal ball which floated in the middle of the air.

“What’s this?”

Big Yellow was startled.

“This is something good.”

Jiang Chen had quick hands. In an instant, he grabbed the crystal ball with his hand, then he said, “This is the Nine Life Crystal Beast’s crystal core, and it contains its real essence. It only drops upon completely killing the Nine Life Crystal Beast.”

“What’s the usage of this crystal core? Is it any different than a demon soul?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Huge difference! No human can absorb demon souls or devil souls without purifying them first, but this crystal core is different. According to the records in ancient books, the Nine Life Crystal Beast is born from nature after having absorbed natural energy essence. Not only does this crystal core contain huge amounts of pure energies, it also contains natural source energy, which allows any human cultivator to absorb it directly. The benefits it provides are even greater than what you can get from an energy vein. Don’t underestimate this tiny crystal core, if we can bring it out from here, then we can sell it for some good money.”

Jiang Chen said.

“So that’s what it is.”

Big Yellow’s ears fell down in an instant. He thought there would be tremendous benefit from this crystal core, but he wasn’t attracted to it as he had the Dragon Horse bloodline, and could easily break through with help of his bloodline. Therefore, he didn’t have any need for this crystal core.

Jiang Chen wasn’t surprised by Big Yellow’s response. This crystal core was useless for him, but for all human cultivators, it was a priceless treasure.

“Finally, I know why there are so many people who are risking their lives in Inferno Hell. Besides, they also get to experience life and death situations. I’m sure there are a lot of Nine Life Crystal Beasts here, we are going to make a fortune this trip!”

A bright smile appeared on Jiang Chen’s face. This really was a massive amount of wealth. However, getting the crystal cores was no easy task.

“If people have come here specifically for these crystal cores, I’ll call them idiots! If a human bumps into a Nine Life Crystal Beast which is at the same level as him, it will surely end with him dying! He would simply stand no chance at killing it. Even if he is one level higher than it, it will still be a risky fight.”

Big Yellow said. The Nine Life Crystal Beast possess nine lives, and it also possesses powerful combat strength. No matter how

powerful a person was, it would still be tiring to kill a monster nine times.

“That’s none of our business. The thing is, we are going to get his wealth no matter what. Since we are here, we need to get something good.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

“Buddy, since you can easily absorb demon souls and devil souls, is this crystal core any different for you?”

Big Yellow asked in disdain.

“There is no difference for me. But, we can bring this with us and exchange it for great wealth. I’m sure there are a lot of people thirsting for it. Besides, we can give these crystal cores to our friends.”

Jiang Chen explained. There were countless benefits provided by the crystal cores. Worst case, they would just absorb the cores themselves.

“If there really are so many Nine Life Crystal Beasts here, why have we never seen any crystal cores before?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Are you an idiot? Only after realizing how strong these Nine Life Crystal Beasts are will you know how difficult it is to obtain a crystal core. Once someone gets one, they will usually use it themselves, and won’t easily show it to other people. Besides, while we were hanging around in the Qi Province, there were only a handful of people who had the courage to come here. And even if they do come here, people rarely make it out alive.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Big Yellow with despise. Usually, this dog was smart, so why couldn’t he understand this simple reasoning?

“You are an idiot! Hurry up and absorb this crystal core, let’s see if you can inherit the nine lives ability!”

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up as he stared at Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen really was able to obtain this ability, that would awesome.

“You’re thinking too much. The Nine Life Crystal Beast is just an unique life form, they are not considered a true beast. Also, their nine lives is not really an innate ability. The crystal core is just an energy source. But, since you mentioned t, I’ll give it a try.

Jiang Chen swallowed the crystal core, then he circulated the Dragon Transformation skill and absorbed the entire crystal core in an instant. However, just as he had thought, the crystal core was just an energy source. A Mid Heavenly Core crystal core couldn’t even help him for a single Dragon Mark. As for the nine lives, that was just a wild dream.

“How is it?”

Big Yellow asked with anticipation.

“Nothing. But, the energy contained within this crystal core is really pure, and the natural energy essence can even strengthen my foundation, so I felt really refreshed after absorbing it. I think I’ll kill some more of these Nine Life Crystal Beasts. I’ll store away those low level crystal cores, and absorb the high level ones. If I can absorb them together with some devil or demon souls, not only can it increase my combat strength and cultivation level, they can also strengthen my foundation and help me maintain a strong foundation when I break through to the Divine Core realm.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. The effects of the crystal core to him were really great. He previously consumed the Five Elemental Pill to strengthen his foundation, preventing it from being shaken upon leveling up too quickly. The more advanced his cultivation became, the more he would need to strengthen his foundation.

And this crystal core could give him this result. It was like it was specially prepared for Jiang Chen.

“Damn it, why does benefits always go to you? This master dog never gets anything good!”

Big Yellow said with a depressed tone.

“Big Yellow, you possess the noble Dragon Horse bloodline, it’s the most privileged existence in this world. Not only are you handsome and unconventional, mighty and majestic, you can even

break through while you're sleeping! You're simply the mightiest existence in this world, even I have to throw myself down at your feet in admiration. You don't need help from these crystal cores, am I right?"

Jiang Chen used the most effective way to handle Big Yellow, he just kept flattering him, making him happy and excited. Saliva was dripping all over the place, and Big Yellow's head was raised up high.

"Buddy, you really know me well! The master dog is the mightiest being in this world, of course I don't need these tiny things!"

Big Yellow stood up on his legs like a human and turned around.

"Alright, let's begin our journey in Inferno Hell. I suppose this place is only the outer perimeter, so let's move out from this abyss and start going towards the depths of Inferno Hell. It's better if we could bump into someone so we can learn more about this place."

Jiang Chen said.

"Fine."

Big Yellow nodded his head.

The duo leapt forwards and start flying in a straight line away from the abyss. In front of them, there was a grayish desolated

area with rocks scarred all over the place. There were also some thick woods, and some strange plants growing within.

“The place is filled with all kinds of demon and devil energies. I can also sense the energies of the Nine Life Crystal Beasts. Foul monsters are everywhere, we need to be extra careful.”

Jiang Chen reminded Big Yellow. The Evil Devil and the Nine Life Crystal Beast were just some appetizers, the real dangers of Inferno Hell was still ahead of them.

“No matter what kind of foul demons or devils come, they will flee immediately upon bumping into the master dog... No, they will worship me, they will throw themselves down at my feet and admire my mightiness!”

Big Yellow became narcissistic again.

Chapter 200 – Two-Headed Black Crow

Caw~

Just as Big Yellow finished performing his narcissistic speech, a huge object suddenly got in their way. It was a huge black crow with two heads. It was 3 meters tall, and it was fully covered with black scales. It seemed fierce, and can easily scare someone with its looks alone.

Swoosh...

Black fog kept rising from the Black Crow's body. A pair of evil eyes stared at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, it had decided them to be its prey.

“Big Yellow, didn't you just say that all foul devils and demons were going to throw themselves underneath you feet just now?”

Jiang Chen would never let go of any opportunity to tease Big Yellow.

“Damn it, what kind of monster is this two headed black crow? This Inferno Hell is such a weird place! We've only been here for a short time, and we have already bumped into three weird beings!”

Big Yellow felt like throwing up some blood. He wasn't scared of the black crow at all. Although it was stronger than the Evil Devil and Nine Life Crystal Beast they previously fight, it was only at the

Late Heavenly Core realm. It wasn't Big Yellow's match if they did fight.

What pissed Big Yellow off was that this black crow had appeared immediately after he had delivered his narcissistic speech. It really didn't show any respect to Big Yellow at all.

“Inferno Hell is indeed a special place, it even has someone that hasn't been recording in the Book of Mysterious Beings. I can't even tell the name of this double headed black crow.”

Jiang Chen inwardly let out a sigh. The devil and demon beasts in Inferno Hell were really unique, there were even some that Jiang Chen couldn't recognize.

“I don't care what kind of devil or demon beast this is, let master dog kill it first!”

Big Yellow's fighting spirit rose tremendously. His head was glowing in a golden light, and in an instant, he turned into a beam of light as he forcefully rammed towards the black crow.

Swoosh!

In a split second, the black crow flapped its wings and dodged Big Yellow's attack.

“What?”

Not only was Big Yellow shocked, even Jiang Chen felt surprised. Both of them were shock by the black crow's speed. Jiang Chen knew how fast Big Yellow's attack was, but this black crow was still able to completely dodge the attack.

Caw!

After dodging the attack, with speed great as lightning, the black crow initiated a counter-attack towards Big Yellow. It was using its long and sharp beak to peck towards Big Yellow.

“Hmph! I don't believe you're actually faster than me!”

Big Yellow let out a cold snort. He had become angry by the fact that a demon beast the same level as him could actually dodge his attack. This really insulted his pride.

The black crow was extremely fast, but Big Yellow was even faster. In an instant, he turned his huge body and pointed his head towards the black crow.

When the black crow saw Big Yellow using his head to try and block its attack, a scornful look emerged in its eyes. It knew that its sharp beak could penetrate any tough objects, but this dog actually didn't try to avoid it, and was using his head to block it. Wasn't this an act of seeking death?

Clang!

Too bad, the black crow's expression changed immediately when its beak hit Big Yellow's head. A metal clanging sound was heard when its powerful beak collided with Big Yellow's head, and the scene of Big Yellow's head being destroyed didn't happen. Not only did the attack not hurt Big Yellow, it couldn't even leave a mark on his head.

Caw!

The double headed black crow let out a loud cry. An intense shock emerged in its eyes when it felt the pain in its beak.

Jiang Chen who was standing on the sidelines shook his head. This black crow was strong, and its sharp beak could be considered a magnificent weapon, but compared to Big Yellow's head, it was still far away from being able to defeat him. Besides, although the black crow was overbearing, its cultivation level was still too low, it was only at the Late Heavenly Core realm. No matter how overbearing a demon beast or devil was, none would be Big Yellow's match if they were in the same realm and stage as him.

Caw!

When the black crow found out that Big Yellow's body was indestructible, it immediately opened its mouth and spat out two lumps of black mist, which shot towards Big Yellow like two sharp swords.

“Big Yellow, be careful, that mist is poisonous.”

Jiang Chen could immediately tell the characteristics of the mist, it actually carried a deadly poison. The Double-Headed Black Crow was not an Evil Devil, but it did possess dark elements like the Evil Devil did, as well as some poisons within its body.

Puh!

Big Yellow didn't look scared at all. He opened up his mouth and spat out a golden colored energy beam, which dispersed the poisonous mist in an instant. Although some of it still touched his body, it was unable to affect Big Yellow at all.

Only now did Jiang Chen recall; when he first met Big Yellow, Jiang Chen had attacked with the Green Hellish Python's poison, and it had no effect on this guy. Big Yellow was invincible against poison.

“Die for daddy now!”

Big Yellow was furious. With his pride, it brought him great shame to fight a black crow at the same level as himself.

A pair of light wings appeared on Big Yellow's back, and it doubled his speed. In the blink of an eye, he sprinted up to the black crow. This time, the black crow was unable to dodge his attack. Big Yellow crushed its head with his mighty head in an instant.

Caw...

The black crow cried out miserably. After that, it let out a weird melody toward the skies.

“Oh no, it is calling for help.”

Jiang Chen's expression changed slightly, he didn't want to get attacked by a huge flock of black crows. He immediately unleashed the True Dragon Palm and crushed the black crow into ashes.

Two black colored demon souls dropped out from the ashes. Jiang Chen extended his hand and grabbed both of them at the same time.

“The black crow has two heads, that must be why it has two demon souls in its body.. not bad.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Buddy, I almost killed it just now, why did you snatch away my prey?”

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen with anger.

“Save your breath, let's leave this place as quickly as possible. The black crow was calling for its mates just now. Before we know more about this place, I'd rather not get into too much trouble.”

Jiang Chen said.

Too bad, although he didn't want to pursue trouble right now, trouble would still pursue him. Just as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were about to leave, noisy sounds could be heard from the woods in front of them. After that, a huge flock of black crows flew out like a storm and surrounded Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“The fuck? How come there are so many double headed black crows?”

Big Yellow cursed out. There were at least 40 black crows surrounding them, and they were all at least at the Heavenly Core realm. Some of them were even at the peak Heavenly Core realm, which is stronger than the black crow they had just killed. The leading black crow had a body twice as big as the other black crows; it was a Divine Core beast.

Big Yellow's face darkened. If it was any other ordinary demon beasts, it wouldn't scare them no matter how many of them there were. However, the black crows were insanely fast, and the Divine Core black crow would be even faster. Surrounded by a huge group of black crows meant huge trouble for them.

“Big Yellow, let's kill them quickly and leave this place. I'm these black crows live in a group, and their nests must be somewhere nearby. There might be some even stronger creatures here, and if we are trapped by hundreds, or even thousands of these black crows, we'll be in deep shit.”

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirit as he told Big Yellow. These kinds of demon beasts who lived in groups were the most frightening. Once trapped by them, the attacks would be endless. Besides, these black crows were extremely fast, and they could even attack with poisonous mist. They were not easy to deal with.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow finally understood the frightening part about Inferno Hell, and why so many people became scared upon mentioning it. They had just arrived here not too long ago, and they had already bumped into a large group of savage black crows. If it was just a single man who bumped into this group of black crows, even if he was a Divine Core warrior, what awaited him was certain death.

“Damn it, these guys are extremely quick, it’s easier said than done to quickly kill them!”

Big Yellow felt somewhat depressed.

“These black crows are demon beasts of the dark elements, and you possess the purest Yang bloodline of all Divine Beasts, which is the perfect rival for them. As for me, I have powerful blood and qi, which is also powerful against them. I will burn them with my True Dragon Flames.”

Jiang Chen said. Right now, there were black crows everywhere, and in order to get out from here, or even kill these black crows, they had to use some massive attacks.

Caw!

The leading black crow cried out loudly. Immediately, all the black crows pointed their sharp beaks towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They flapped their wings and rushed towards their targets.

“Damn you, com on, I’ll let you taste the mightiness of this master dog!”

Big Yellow finally became violent. A golden barrier appeared outside his body, and he suddenly sped towards the flock of black crows.

Bang!

Big Yellow acted like a brutal ancient savage beast. His first charged cause three black crows to explode into blood mists.

“True Dragon Flames, burn them all!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. He waved his hand and unleashed a sea of flames which immediately engulfed six black crows.

The black crows seemed like they had witnessed something really terrifying and bumped into their natural enemies. All of them let out panicked cries. The black crows who were engulfed by the True Dragon Flames couldn’t resist the scorching heat, and were immediately burned to ashes.

“They really fear the True Dragon Flames!”

Jiang Chen was majestic like a dragon, he unleashed another sea of flames which covered another group of black crows. The black crows immediately struggled and rolled around within the flames, but they couldn't escape. Soon, they were all killed by the intense flames.

The True Dragon Flame was the king of all beast flames. It was a fearful attack, and it was the biggest enemy of all dark element beings.

Caw!

Looking at what was happening, the leading black crow let out a shrill cry once again. Immediately, all the other black crows, as if they had received a command, threw themselves at Jiang Chen without considered their own safety.

“Hmph! I'll kill you all!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He unleashed the True Dragon Flames and covered all the black crows who were approaching. At the same time, the Divine Core black crow attacked Jiang Chen from behind.

The leading black crow was using its own peoples' lives in order to tie Jiang Chen up, so it could launch a sneak attack from behind.

If any other person had fallen into the trap, he would most likely be dead by now. But too bad, it was Jiang Chen whom they were trying to attack.

“Trying to sneak attack me? You lack the skills to do so! True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen had an indifferent expression. He was cultivating the Great Soul Derivation skill, and that made him sensitive to his surroundings. No one could successfully sneak attack him.

Bang!

A blood red dragon claw descended from the skies and covered the leading black crow like a gigantic prison.

Caw!

The leading black crow let out a loud cry. It pecked towards the True Dragon Palm with its sharp beak and poked a huge hole into it. This really showed how strong its beak was.

But Jiang Chen would never give it the chance to escape. In an instant, he unleashed the True Dragon Flames within the gigantic dragon claw.